



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

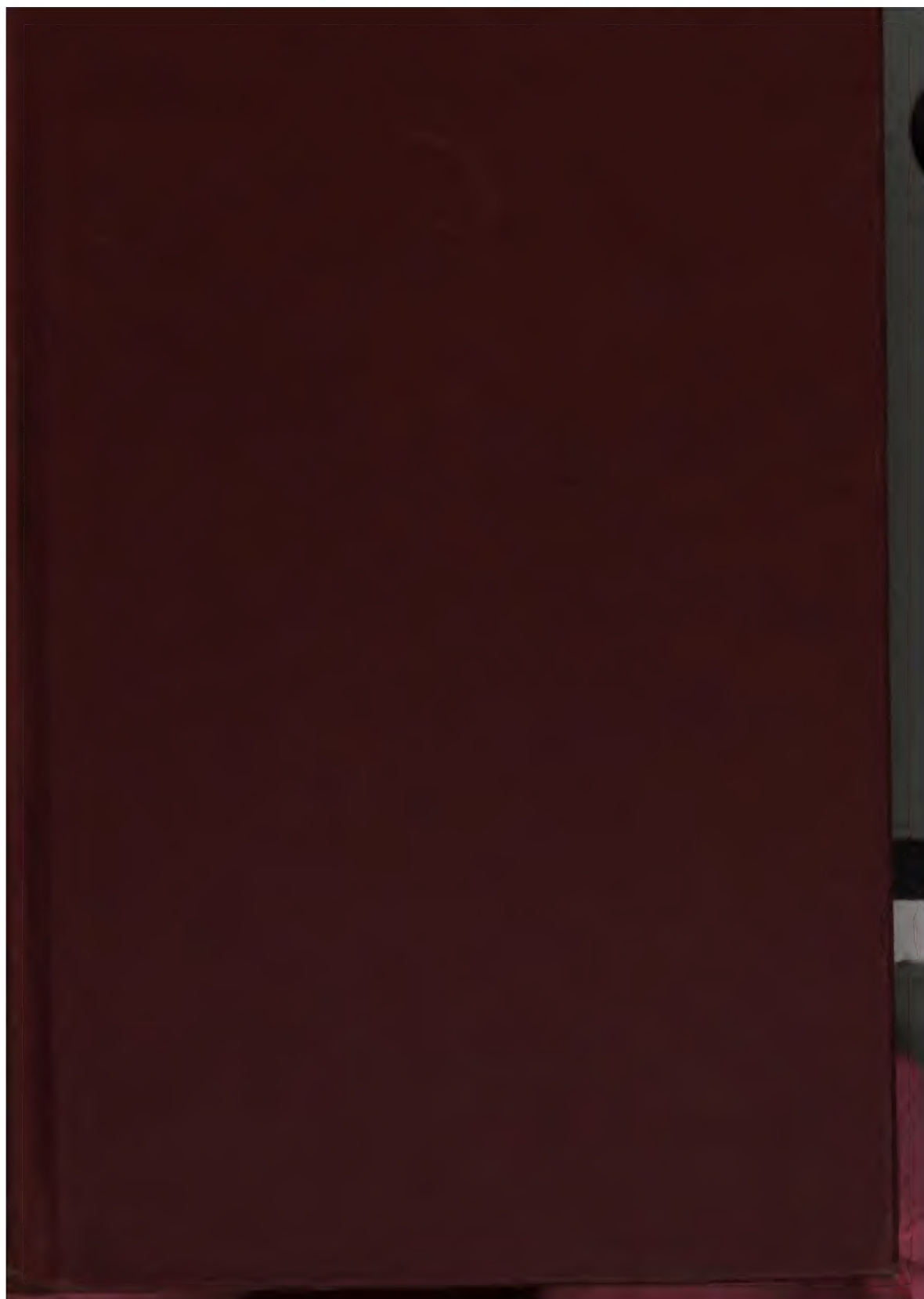
Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>









HARVARD  
COLLEGE  
LIBRARY



A  
*the*  
**LIBRARY OF FATHERS**

OF THE

**HOLY CATHOLIC CHURCH,**

**ANTERIOR TO THE DIVISION OF THE EAST AND WEST.**

TRANSLATED BY MEMBERS OF THE ENGLISH CHURCH



LET SHALL NOT THY TEACHERS BE REMOVED INTO A CORNER ANY MORE, BUT  
THINE EYES SHALL SEE THY TEACHERS. *Isaiah xxx. 20.*

---

**OXFORD,**  
**JOHN HENRY PARKER;**  
**J. G. F. AND J. RIVINGTON, LONDON.**  
MDCCCXLV.

.01.20.3

---

1857, July 20. 15/

Hollis Fund.





TO THE  
MOST REVEREND FATHER IN GOD  
**WILLIAM**  
LORD ARCHBISHOP OF CANTERBURY,  
PRIMATE OF ALL ENGLAND,  
FORMERLY REGIUS PROFESSOR OF DIVINITY IN THE UNIVERSITY OF OXFORD,  
THIS LIBRARY  
OF  
ANCIENT BISHOPS, FATHERS, DOCTORS, MARTYRS, CONFESSORS,  
OF CHRIST'S HOLY CATHOLIC CHURCH,  
IS  
WITH HIS GRACE'S PERMISSION  
RESPECTFULLY INSCRIBED,  
IN TOKEN OF  
REVERENCE FOR HIS PERSON AND SACRED OFFICE,  
AND OF  
GRATITUDE FOR HIS EPISCOPAL KINDNESS.



THE  
HOMILIES  
OF  
S. JOHN CHRYSOSTOM,  
ARCHBISHOP OF CONSTANTINOPLE.

BAXTER, PRINTER, OXFORD.

THE  
HOMILIES  
OF  
S. JOHN CHRYSOSTOM,  
ARCHBISHOP OF CONSTANTINOPLE,  
ON THE  
FIRST EPISTLE OF ST. PAUL THE APOSTLE  
TO THE  
CORINTHIANS.  
TRANSLATED,  
WITH NOTES AND INDICES.

---

OXFORD,  
JOHN HENRY PARKER;  
F. AND J. RIVINGTON, LONDON.  
MDCCCXLV.





## PREFACE.

---

THE history and remains of St. Chrysostom are in one respect more interesting perhaps to the modern reader, than most of the monuments of those who are technically called the Fathers. At the time when he was raised up, and in those parts of the Christian world to which he was sent, the Patriarchates, namely, of Antioch and Constantinople, the Church was neither agitated by persecution from without, nor by any particular doctrinal controversy within, sufficient to attract his main attention, and connect his name with its history, as the name of St. Athanasius, e. g. is connected with the Arian, or that of St. Augustine with the Pelagian, controversy. The labours of St. Athanasius and St. Basil, and their friends and disciples, had come to a happy issue at the second Œcumenical Council; the civil power favoured orthodox doctrine, and upheld Episcopal authority. The Church seemed for the time free to try the force of her morals and discipline against the ordinary vices and errors of all ages and all nations. This is one reason why the Homilies of St. Chrysostom have always been considered as eminently likely among the relics of Antiquity, to be useful as models for preaching, and as containing hints for the application of Scripture to common life, and the consciences of persons around us.

Another reason undoubtedly is the remarkable energy and fruitfulness of the writer's mind, that command of language and of topics, and above all, that depth of charitable and religious feeling, which enabled him, to a very remarkable extent, to carry his hearers along with him, even when the things he recommended were most distasteful to their natures and prejudices. It is obvious how much of the expression of this quality must vanish in translation: the elegance and fluency of his Greek style, the flow of his periods, the quickness and ingenuity of his turns, all the excellencies to which more especially his surname was owing, must in the nature of things be sacrificed, except in cases of very rare felicity, on passing into a modern language. His dramatic manner indeed, which was one of the great charms of his oratory among the Greeks, and his rapid and ingenious selection and variation of topics, these may in some measure be retained, and may serve to give even English readers some faint notion of the eloquence which produced so powerful effects on the susceptible people of the East.

However, it is not of course as compositions that we desire to call attention to these or any other of the remains of the Fathers. Nor would this topic have been so expressly adverted to, but for the two following reasons. First, it is in such particulars as these, that the parallel mainly subsists, which has more than once been observed, between St. Chrysostom and our own Bishop Taylor: and it is good for the Church in general, and encouraging for our own Church in particular, to notice such providential revivals of ancient graces in modern times.

Again, this profusion of literary talent, and eloquence and vehemence and skill in moral teaching, is of itself, as human nature now exists, a matter of much jealousy to considerate persons, who are aware how hardly and how seldom the

lives of such speakers and writers have been found answerable to the profession implied in their works. And therefore it was desirable to dwell on it in this instance, for the purpose of pointing out afterwards how completely his life gave evidence that he meant and practised what he taught.

Happily the details of that life have been preserved to us on very sufficient contemporary evidence. And perhaps these Homilies cannot be better introduced, than by a slight sketch of their author's history, down to the time when they were delivered\*.

JOHN, afterwards ST. JOHN CHRYSOSTOM, was the only son of Secundus and Anthusa, of good family in the city of Antioch, and was born about A.D. 347. His father, who was a person of some note in the Staff of the Master General, either of cavalry or infantry, on the Euphratean border of the empire, died very soon after his birth, leaving him with one sister, not yet two years old, to the care of his mother, who continued in widowhood. Although his parents were both Christians, his Baptism was deferred, as so often happened in that age; on the same erroneous principle, apparently, which causes so many among us to defer introducing their young people to the Holy Eucharist. He was educated with a view to the profession of the law, and had among his instructors the famous Rhetorician Libanius, the friend of Julian the Apostate; who is reported on his death bed, long after, to have borne this testimony to his pupil's ability; that when his friends enquired of him who should take his place, he answered, "John, if the Christians had not stolen him away." Philosophy he learned of Andragathius, who seems to have been a Platonist. But at the age of 18, "considering," says

\* The authorities from which this sketch is taken are, Palladius, Dialogue on the Life of Chrysostom, §. 5. in Bibl. Patr. Gallandi, t. viii; Socrates, E. H. b. vi. §. 3; Sozomen, E. H. vii. 2; Fleury, E. H. xix. 1—9.

Socrates, "the wearisomeness and unfair subtlety of the forensic life," he determined to apply himself to divine studies and worship, and that which was called in those days Christian philosophy; giving up also the pleasures of the stage, for which, he says, he had then a great fancy. In this he was greatly encouraged by the example and advice of a friend of the name of Basil, the same whom he introduces afterwards in his book concerning Priesthood. But his mother most earnestly remonstrated with him, not to separate himself from her so entirely as his present plans seemed to indicate; and in obedience to her he continued in the city, pursuing his studies, and exercising a modified kind of asceticism, under the guidance and patronage of the Patriarch Meletius, for 3 years, when he was baptized, and ordained Reader. In the course of that time he had prevailed upon several others, pupils with himself of Libanius, to follow his example: one of whom, Theodore, afterwards Bishop of Mopsuestia in Cilicia, was within no long time tempted to renounce his good resolutions, engage himself in marriage, and go back to a secular life. This gave St. Chrysostom occasion to remonstrate with him in two Epistles, now extant, which had the effect of bringing him back to his purpose. It appears that at this time Theodore was but 20 years of age: which gives reason for believing that these letters are some of the earliest extant of the compositions of his friend and companion St. Chrysostom.

The instructors of these young men in theology were Carterius and Diodorus, some time Bishop of Tarsus, who at that time presided over eminent monasteries in Antioch. Diodorus was remarkable for confining his public expositions to the letter of the sacred Scriptures, as one who, it is not said "denied," but, "shrunk from, their mysterious significations<sup>b</sup>." This may help to account for the infrequency of

<sup>b</sup> Socr. vi. 3. *ὅτι τινὲς αἰεὶν λαμπρότατος*.—Soz. viii. 2. *ἀσφύγγων*.



mystical allusion in St. Chrysostom's own commentaries: although he fully recognises the principle, and has given some striking exemplifications of it.

He seems to have been about twenty-one years of age at the time that he was made Reader, and soon found something within him which told him not to limit himself to such labours and self-denials as the city afforded. He withdrew accordingly into the neighbouring mountains. Perhaps an additional cause of his retirement might be his dread of being taken by force (no rare event in those times) and made a Priest: at least this seems as probable a date\* as any for the transaction between him and his friend Basil, which gave occasion to the books *De Sacerdotio*. Basil informed Chrysostom that such a proceeding might be expected, and that he himself should be entirely guided by his example in submitting to or withdrawing from it. Chrysostom put him off for the present, saying, there was no hurry to determine immediately, and then returned without his knowledge: so that the people when they made the attempt, found Basil, and succeeded in forcing the sacred office upon him. His disappointment and remonstrance at finding that his friend had "left him to serve alone," is represented as giving occasion to the seven books of that famous treatise, which is conducted in the way of dialogue between the two friends.

St. Chrysostom continued in his retirement six years: four in company with an aged monk of Syria, whom he selected as his model and director in the ascetic discipline, and two by himself, avoiding observation: in such rigour, of watchfulness particularly, (for it is said that he never lay down by day or by night,) as seriously affected his bodily powers, and made it necessary for him to return to Antioch, "Christ's

\* St. Chrysostom's age at the time is certainly a strong objection; but Bingham, 2. 10. 1. gives several instances of such early ordination, though irregular; and it is not easy to assign any later date in his life to which his mother's remonstrance, *De Sacerdot.* i. 2. may be referred.

Providence," says his biographer, "so ordering it for the good of the Church." His employment in his solitude was the study of the two Testaments, and the composition of certain works of morality and piety; particularly of three discourses in defence of the monastic life. Two years after his return, he was ordained Deacon by Meletius, being then thirty-one years of age; in which office he wrote his Books on Providence and several others, and obtained more and more influence by his power of teaching, and by a certain engaging kind of austerity which appeared in his life and conversation.

At length, being certainly not less than thirty-five years old, probably thirty-seven, he was prevailed upon to receive the priestly office at the hands of Flavian, who had succeeded Meletius as Bishop of Antioch. Part of his first sermon after his ordination is extant, and is remarkable for the deep sense which he expresses of the dignity to which he was raised, "as yet in mere boyhood:" so he expresses himself. He continued twelve years in this office, preaching as it appears throughout Lent and on every Sunday besides, and, as his remains uniformly testify, exerting himself to the utmost to turn his oratorical powers, and the influence they gave him, to the real benefit of his hearers and of the Church. In the third year of this his ministry, A. D. 387, occurred the well-known tumult, in which the statues of the Emperor Theodosius and some of his family were thrown down by the populace of Antioch, provoked by certain taxes: in consequence of which the whole city was in a kind of agony for some months, expecting the severest penal decrees from the Emperor. The influence of the Church was signally tried, and we may say blessed, on this occasion: for it was by the intercession of the Bishop, Flavian, that Theodosius was induced to grant a free pardon to the whole city, and to all concerned in the outrage: and the principal support and consolation of the citizens during the Bishop's absence on this errand were the

Homilies and other exhortations of the Priest, Chrysostom. Twenty-one still remain, which were pronounced by him on account of this trouble.

At the end of twelve years, about A. D. 397, he was transferred to Constantinople in the office of Bishop. His further fortunes may be more suitably related in the Preface to some subsequent volumes of this Library. But these few particulars may serve to give an idea of the sort of education by which he was prepared for the high and difficult calling which was in store for him; and the readers of the following pages will be able to judge whether his retirement and self-denying habits had impaired the energy and play of his talents, or lessened his knowledge of mankind, or prevented him from exercising that sympathy towards all sorts of people, which holds so high a place among a Pastor's and Teacher's excellencies. On the other hand, the study of these Homilies may help us to appreciate the difficulties of his subsequent position, and the high qualities which he brought to sustain and overcome them, until he became a Confessor, and died in exile. It will be felt, that whatever were the causes of the persecution which he encountered, want of consideration and condescension on his part could not be one of them; those qualities being so strongly marked in every part of these and all his Homilies: and this will naturally excite grave thoughts of the difficulty, not to say impossibility, of a Ruler of the Church escaping persecution in some shape or other, even under circumstances outwardly the most favourable, if he be really impartial and uncompromising in the exercise of Christian discipline.

The Homilies on the First Epistle to the Corinthians are selected as the first portion of St. Chrysostom's works to appear in this Library, because they have ever been considered by learned and devout men as among the most perfect specimens of his mind and teaching. They are of that mixed



form, between exposition and exhortation, which serves perhaps better than any other, first, to secure attention, and then to convey to an attentive hearer the full purport of the holy words as they stand in the Bible, and to communicate to him the very impression, which the preacher himself had received from the text. Accordingly they come in not unfitly in this series, by way of specimen of the hortatory Sermons of the ancients, as St. Cyril's, of their Catechetical Lectures, and St. Cyprian's, of the Pastoral Letters, which were circulated among them.

The date of these Homilies is not exactly known: but it is certain that they were delivered at Antioch, were it only from Hom. xxi. §. 9. ad fin. Antioch was at that time, in a temporal sense, a flourishing Church, maintaining 3,000 widows and virgins<sup>d</sup>, maimed persons, prisoners, and ministers of the altar; although, St. Chrysostom adds, its income was but that of one of the lowest class of wealthy individuals. It was indeed in a state of division, on account of the disputed succession in the Episcopate between the followers of Paulinus and Meletius since the year 362: but this separation affected not immediately any point of doctrine; and was in a way to be gradually worn out, partly by the labours of St. Chrysostom himself, whose discourse concerning the Anathema seems to have been occasioned by the too severe way in which the partizans on both sides allowed themselves to speak of each other. It may be that he had an eye to this schism in his way of handling those parts of the Epistles to the Corinthians, which so earnestly deprecate the spirit of schism and of party, and the calling ourselves by human names.

The Text which has been used in this Translation is the Benedictine, corrected however in many places by that of Savile. The Benedictine Sections are marked in the margin, thus (2.) For the Translation, the Editors are indebted to the

<sup>d</sup> Hom. 66. on St. Matt. t. ii. p. 422. ed. Savil.

Reverend HUBERT KESTELL CORNISH, M.A. late Fellow of Exeter College, and to the Reverend JOHN MEDLEY, M.A. of Wadham College, Vicar of St. Thomas' in the city of Exeter. The Indices too are almost entirely the result of Mr. Medley's valuable assistance.

J. K.

---

*Note on Hom. xxxiv. §. 4. p. 475.*

The Heretics here referred to were the Eunomians or Anomœans, so called from Eunomius their chief Teacher, (for Aetius first promulgated their opinions,) and from their maintaining not merely the inequality but the dissimilarity (οὐ ὁμοιωσιν) of the Son's nature to that of the Father. By this he carried out Arianism, and made it more consistent and more impious. It seems that he arbitrarily selected the term ἀγεννητός, "unbegotten," as setting forth not merely an attribute of the Father, but the very substance of the Godhead, and upon this proceeded, of course, to deny the proper divinity of the Son, because He was confessed to be γεννητός, "begotten." And he not only thus implied, but expressly maintained, that knowing thus much of God, we know His whole Nature: whence it followed, that St. Paul's professions of ignorance referred not to the Substance, but to some parts of the Providence of God, called here, "dispensations." Against this result of Eunomius' impiety, St. Chrysostom preached the series of five Homilies, "On the Incomprehensible Nature of God:" in the first of which, (t. vi. 393. ed. Savile,) he argues on this passage almost in the same words. The same fallacy may be seen refuted by St. Basil also, Ep. 234, 235; Epiph. Hær. 76 p. 989, &c; Theodoret, ii. 418; and by others. The whole doctrine as grounded on the word ἀγεννητός is exposed at large by St. Basil in his five books against Eunomius, t. i. ed. Bened. In the Appendix to that volume, Eunomius's own treatise is given. The whole forms a melancholy example, how men may deceive themselves by following after simplification and logical consistency, without due reverence for sacred things.





## CONTENTS.

---

### HOMILY I.

Page 5.

1 Cor. i. 1—3.

*Paul, called to be an Apostle of Jesus Christ, through the will of God, and Sosthenes our brother, unto the Church of God which is at Corinth, to them that are sanctified in Christ Jesus, called to be saints, with all that in every place call upon the name of Jesus Christ our Lord, both theirs and ours: Grace be unto you, and peace, from God our Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ.*

### HOMILY II.

Page 12.

1 Cor. i. 4, 5.

*I thank my God always on your behalf, for the grace of God which is given you by Jesus Christ; that in every thing ye are enriched by Him.*

### HOMILY III.

Page 22.

1 Cor. i. 10.

*Now I beseech you, brethren, by the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that ye all speak the same thing, and that there be no divisions among you; but that ye be perfectly joined together in the same mind and in the same judgment.*

### HOMILY IV.

Page 35.

1 Cor. i. 18—20.

*For the preaching of the Cross is to them that perish foolishness; but to us which are saved it is the power of God. For it is written, I will destroy the wisdom of the wise, and will bring to nothing the understanding of the prudent. Where is the wise? Where is the Scribe? Where is the disputer of this world?*

## HOMILY V.

Page 51.

1 Cor. i. 26, 27.

*For behold your calling, brethren; that not many wise men after the flesh, not many mighty, not many noble, [are called;] but God hath chosen the foolish things of the world to confound the wise.*

## HOMILY VI.

Page 66.

1 Cor. ii. 1, 2.

*And I, brethren, when I came to you, came not with excellency of speech, or of wisdom, declaring unto you the testimony of God; for I determined not to know any thing among you, save Jesus Christ, and Him crucified.*

## HOMILY VII.

Page 77.

1 Cor. ii. 6, 7.

*Howbeit, we speak wisdom among them that are perfect, yet not the wisdom of this world, nor of the princes of this world, that come to nought; but we speak the wisdom of God in a mystery, even the hidden wisdom, which God ordained before the world unto our glory.*

## HOMILY VIII.

Page 100.

1 Cor. iii. 1—3.

*And I, brethren, could not speak unto you as unto spiritual, but as unto carnal, even as unto babes in Christ. I have fed you with milk, and not with meat: for hitherto ye were not able to bear it, neither yet now are ye able. For ye are yet carnal.*

## CONTENTS.

xvii

### HOMILY IX.

Page 113.

1 Cor. iii. 12, 13, 14, 15.

*If any man build upon this foundation gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, stubble; every man's work shall be made manifest: for the day shall declare it, because it shall be revealed by fire; and the fire shall try every man's work of what sort it is. If any man's work abide which he hath built thereupon, he shall receive a reward. If any man's work shall be burned, he shall suffer loss: but he himself shall be saved; yet so as by fire.*

### HOMILY X.

Page 124.

1 Cor. iii. 18, 19.

*Let no man deceive himself. If any man seemeth to be wise in this world, let him become a fool, that he may be wise. For the wisdom of this world is foolishness with God.*

### HOMILY XI.

Page 134.

1 Cor. iv. 3, 4.

*But with me it is a very small thing that I should be judged of you, or of man's judgment: yea I judge not mine own self. For I know nothing by myself, yet am I not hereby justified; but He that judgeth me is the Lord.*

### HOMILY XII.

Page 148.

1 Cor. iv. 6.

*And these things, brethren, I have in a figure transferred to myself and to Apollos for your sakes; that ye might learn in us not to think of men above that which is written.*

### HOMILY XIII.

Page 168.

1 Cor. iv. 10.

*We are fools for Christ's sake: [for it is necessary from this point to resume our discourse:] but ye are wise in Christ: we are weak, but ye are strong: ye are honourable, but we despised.*

## HOMILY XIV.

Page 181.

1 Cor. iv. 17.

*For this cause have I sent unto you Timotheus, who is my beloved son and faithful in the Lord, who shall bring you into remembrance of my ways which be in Christ Jesus.*

## HOMILY XV.

Page 193.

1 Cor. v. 1, 2.

*It is reported commonly that there is fornication among you, and such fornication as is not so much as named among the Gentiles, that one should have his father's wife. And ye are puffed up, and have not rather mourned, that he that hath done this deed might be taken away from among you.*

## HOMILY XVI.

Page 208.

1 Cor. v. 9, 10, 11.

*I wrote unto you in an epistle not to company with fornicators: yet not altogether with the fornicators of this world, or with the covetous, or extortioners, or idolaters, for then must ye needs go out of the world. But now I have written unto you not to keep company, if any man that is called a brother be a fornicator, or covetous, or an idolater, or a drunkard, or a railer, or an extortioner; with such an one, no not to eat.*

## HOMILY XVII.

Page 224.

1 Cor. vi. 12.

*All things are lawful for me, but all things are not expedient. All things are lawful for me, but I will not be brought into the power of any.*

## CONTENTS.

xix

### HOMILY XVIII.

Page 234.

1 Cor. vi. 15.

*Know ye not that your bodies are members of Christ? Shall I then take the members of Christ, and make them the members of an harlot? God forbid.*

### HOMILY XIX.

Page 245.

1 Cor. vii. 1, 2.

*Now concerning the things whereof ye wrote unto me: it is good for a man not to touch a woman. Nevertheless, because of fornications, let every man have his own wife; and let every woman have her own husband.*

### HOMILY XX.

Page 260.

1 Cor. viii. 1.

*Now concerning things offered to idols: we know that we all have knowledge. Knowledge puffeth up, but charity edifieth.*

### HOMILY XXI.

Page 276.

1 Cor. ix. 1.

*Am I not an Apostle? am I not free? have I not seen Jesus Christ our Lord? are not ye my work in the Lord?*

### HOMILY XXII.

Page 295.

1 Cor. ix. 13, 14.

*Do ye not know that they which minister about holy things live of the temple? And they which wait at the altar are partakers with the altar? Even so hath the Lord ordained that they which preach the Gospel should live of the Gospel.*

## CONTENTS.

## HOMILY XXIII.

Page 308.

1 Cor. ix. 24.

*Know ye not, that they which run in a race run all, but one receiveth the prize?*

## HOMILY XXIV.

Page 324.

1 Cor. x. 13.

*There hath no temptation taken you, but such as is common to man: but God is faithful, Who will not suffer you to be tempted above that ye are able; but will with the temptation also make a way to escape, that ye may be able to bear it.*

## HOMILY XXV.

Page 337.

1 Cor. x. 25.

*Whatsoever is sold in the shambles, eat, asking no question for conscience sake.*

## HOMILY XXVI.

Page 348.

1 Cor. xi. 2.

*Now I praise you, brethren, that ye remember me in all things, and keep the ordinances, as I delivered them to you.*

## HOMILY XXVII.

Page 369.

1 Cor. xi. 17.

*Now in this that I declare unto you, I praise you not, that ye come together not for the better, but for the worse.*

## HOMILY XXVIII.

Page 383.

1 Cor. xi. 28.

*But let a man examine himself, and so let him eat of that bread, and drink of that cup.*

## CONTENTS.

xxi

### HOMILY XXIX.

Page 395.

1 Cor. xii. 1, 2.

*Now concerning spiritual gifts, brethren, I would not have you ignorant. Ye know that ye were Gentiles, carried away unto these dumb idols, even as ye were led.*

### HOMILY XXX.

Page 411.

1 Cor. xii. 12.

*For as the body is one, and hath many members, and all the members of that one body, being many, are one body; so also is Christ.*

### HOMILY XXXI.

Page 424.

1 Cor. xii. 21.

*And the eye cannot say to the hand, I have no need of thee: nor again the hand to the feet, I have no need of you.*

### HOMILY XXXII.

Page 436.

1 Cor. xii. 27.

*Now ye are the body of Christ, and members in particular.*

### HOMILY XXXIII.

Page 455.

1 Cor. xiii. 4.

*Charity suffereth long, and is kind; charity envieth not; charity vaunteth not itself, is not puffed up.*

### HOMILY XXXIV.

Page 471.

1 Cor. xiii. 8.

*But whether there be prophecies, they shall fail; whether there be tongues, they shall cease; whether there be knowledge, it shall vanish away.*



CONTENTS.

HOMILY XXXV.

Page 487.

1 Cor. xiv. 1.

*Follow after charity, and desire spiritual gifts; but rather that ye may prophesy.*

HOMILY XXXVI.

Page 504.

1 Cor. xiv. 20.

*Brethren, be not children in understanding; howbeit in malice be ye children, but in understanding be men.*

HOMILY XXXVII.

Page 520.

1 Cor. xiv. 34.

*Let your women keep silence in the churches: for it is not permitted unto them to speak; but to be under obedience, as also saith the law.*

HOMILY XXXVIII.

Page 529.

1 Cor. xv. 1, 2.

*Moreover, brethren, I declare unto you concerning the gospel which I preached unto you, which also ye received, and wherein ye stand; by which also ye are saved: by what discourse I preached it unto you.*

HOMILY XXXIX.

Page 547.

1 Cor. xv. 11.

*Therefore whether it were I or they, so we preach, and so ye believed.*

HOMILY XL.

Page 570.

1 Cor. xv. 29.

*Else what shall they do which are baptized for the dead? if the dead rise not at all, why are they then baptized for the dead?*

## CONTENTS.

xxiii

### HOMILY XLI.

Page 582.

1 Cor. xv. 35, 36.

*But some man will say, How are the dead raised up? and with what body do they come? Thou fool, that which thou sowest is not quickened, except it die.*

### HOMILY XLII.

Page 596.

1 Cor. xv. 47.

*The first man is of the earth, earthy; the second man is the Lord from Heaven.*

### HOMILY XLIII.

Page 604.

1 Cor. xvi. 1.

*Now concerning the collection for the saints, as I have given order to the Churches of Galatia, even so do ye.*

### HOMILY XLIV.

Page 615.

1 Cor. xvi. 10.

*But if Timotheus come to you, see that he may be with you without fear.*



HOMILIES  
OF  
S. JOHN CHRYSOSTOM,  
ARCHBISHOP OF CONSTANTINOPLE,  
ON THE  
FIRST EPISTLE OF S. PAUL THE APOSTLE  
TO THE  
CORINTHIANS.

—◆—  
ARGUMENT.

[1.] AS Corinth is now the first city of Greece, so of old it prided itself on many temporal advantages, and more than all the rest, on excess of wealth. And on this account one of the heathen writers entitled the place "the rich<sup>a</sup>." For it lies on the isthmus of the Peloponnesus, and had great facilities for traffic. The city was also full of numerous orators, and philosophers, and one<sup>b</sup>, I think, of the seven called wise men, was of this city. Now these things we have mentioned, not for ostentation's sake, nor to make a display of great learning: (for indeed what is there in knowing these things?) but they are of use to us in the argument of the Epistle.

Paul also himself suffered many things in this city; and Christ too in this city appears to him and says, <sup>1</sup> *Be not silent, but speak*; <sup>1</sup> Acts 18. 10. *for I have much people in this city*: and he remained there two years. In this city<sup>c</sup> also the devil went out, whom the Jews endeavouring to exorcise, suffered so grievously. In this city did those of the magicians, who repented, collect together their books and burn them, and there appeared to be fifty thousand<sup>2</sup>. In this city also, <sup>2</sup> Acts 18. 19. *in the time of Gallio the Proconsul, Paul was beaten before the judgment seat*<sup>d</sup>. <sup>d</sup> *ἀγρυπνίου* omitted.

<sup>a</sup> Homer, Il. ii. 570; Thucyd. i. 13; lapse of memory, for Ephesus.) Strabo, viii. 20.

<sup>b</sup> Periander: but vid. Plutarch. in Solon, tom. i. p. 185. ed. Bryan.

<sup>c</sup> Acts 19. 16. (Corinth put here, by

<sup>d</sup> This is said of Sosthenes, Acts 18. 17. But the context makes it probable that St. Paul was beaten also.

**1 COR. ARGUMENT.** [2.] The Devil therefore, seeing that a great and populous city had laid hold of the truth, a city admired for wealth and wisdom, and the head of Greece; (for Athens and Lacedæmon were then and since in a miserable state, the dominion having long ago fallen away from them;) and seeing that with great readiness they had received the word of God; what doth he? He divides the men. For he knew that even the strongest kingdom of all, divided against itself, shall not stand. He had a vantage ground too for this device; the wealth, the wisdom of the inhabitants. Hence certain men, having made parties of their own, and having become self-ordained, put themselves at the head of the people, and some sided with these, and some with those; with one sort, as being rich; with another, as wise, and able to teach something out of the common. Who on their part, receiving them, set themselves up forsooth to teach more than <sup>1 c. 3. 1.</sup> the Apostle did\*: at which he was hinting, when he said, *'I was not able to speak unto you as unto spiritual;* evidently not his inability, but their infirmity, was the cause of their not having been <sup>2 c. 4. 8.</sup> abundantly instructed. And this, *'Ye have been rich without us,* is the remark of one pointing that way. And this was no small matter, but of all things most pernicious; that the Church should be torn asunder.

And another sin too, besides these, was openly committed there: namely, a person who had had intercourse with his step-mother not only escaped rebuke, but was even a leader of the multitude, and gave occasion to his followers to pride themselves [on him.]

<sup>3 c. 5. 2.</sup> Wherefore he saith, *'And ye are puffed up, and have not rather mourned.*

And after this again, certain of those who as they pretended were of the more perfect sort, and who for gluttony's sake used to eat of things offered unto idols, and sit at meat in the temples, were bringing all to ruin.

Others again, having contentions and strifes about money, committed unto the heathen courts<sup>4</sup> all matters of that kind in which they were concerned.

<sup>4</sup> *οἱς ἡγεῖται δικαστηρίους.* Many persons also wearing long hair used to go about among them; whom he ordereth to be shorn.

There was a certain fault besides, no trifling one; their eating in the churches apart by themselves, and giving no share to the needy.

<sup>5</sup> S. Irenæus, iii. v. 1; points out this as a main topic of heretical teaching. "These most futile of Sophisters affirm that the Apostles taught feignedly, after the capacity of the hearers, and gave answers after the prejudices of those who enquired of them, discouraging with the blind blindly according to their blindness, with the feeble according to their feebleness, and with the erring according to their error."

And again, they were erring in another point, being puffed up with the gifts; and hence jealous of one another; which was also the chief cause of the distraction of the Church.

The doctrine of the Resurrection too was lame<sup>1</sup> and unsound<sup>1</sup> *ἡχέ-λουν*. among them: for some of them had no strong belief that there is any resurrection of bodies, having still on them the disease of Grecian foolishness. For indeed all these things were the progeny of the madness which belongs to Heathen Philosophy, and she was the mother of all mischief. Hence likewise they had become divided; in this respect also having learned of the philosophers. For these latter were no less at mutual variance, always, through love of rule and vain glory, contradicting one another's opinions, and bent upon making some new discovery in addition to all that was before. And the cause of this their condition was, their having begun to trust themselves to reasonings.

[3.] They had written accordingly to him by the hand of Fortunatus and Stephanas and Achaicus, by whom also he himself writes; and this he has indicated in the end of the Epistle: not however upon all these subjects, but about marriage, and virginity. Wherefore also he said, <sup>2</sup> *Now concerning the things whereof ye have* <sup>3</sup> *c. 7. 1. written to me, &c.* And he proceeds to give injunctions, both on the points about which they had written, and about which they had not written; having learnt with accuracy all their failings. Timothy too he sends with the letters, knowing that letters indeed have great force, yet that not a little would be added to them by the presence of the disciple also.

Now whereas from a feeling of shame, those who had divided the Church among themselves, lest they should seem to have done so for ambition's sake, contrived clokes for what had happened, their teaching (forsooth) more perfect doctrines, and being wiser than all others; Paul sets himself first against the disease itself, plucking up the root of the evils, and its offshoot, the spirit of separation. And he uses great boldness of speech: for these were his own disciples, more than all others. Wherefore he saith, <sup>4</sup> *If unto others I be not an Apostle, yet doubtless I am unto* <sup>5</sup> *c. 9. 2. you; for the seal of my apostleship are ye.* Moreover they were in a weaker condition (to say the least of it) than the others. Wherefore he saith, <sup>6</sup> *For I have not spoken unto you as unto* <sup>7</sup> *c. 3. 1, spiritual; for hitherto ye were not able, neither yet even now are ye* <sup>8</sup> *2. οὐκ* <sup>9</sup> *able.* (This he saith, that they might not suppose that he speaks thus in regard of the time past alone.)

However, it was utterly improbable that all should have been

1 COR. corrupted; rather there were some among them who might be  
 ARGU- called very holy. And this he hath signified<sup>f</sup> in the middle of the  
 MENT. Epistle, where he says, *1 To me it is a very small thing that I*  
 1 c. 4. 3, *should be judged of you :* and adds, *these things I have in a figure*  
 6. *transferred unto myself and Apollos.*

Since then from arrogance all these evils were springing, and from men's thinking that they knew something out of the common, this he purgeth away first of all, and in beginning saith,

<sup>f</sup> It appears by the subsequent commentary on these verses, that S. Chrysostom understood the Apostle to be alluding in them to persons among the Corinthians, who had suffered from unjust censure and party spirit. See Hom. ii. §. 1; xi. near the end; and the opening of Hom. xii.

## HOMILY I.

---

1 COR. i. 1—3.

*Paul, called to be an Apostle of Jesus Christ, through the will of God, and Sosthenes our brother, unto the Church of God which is at Corinth, to them that are sanctified in Christ Jesus, called to be saints, with all that in every place call upon the name of Jesus Christ our Lord, both theirs and ours: Grace be unto you, and peace, from God our Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ.*

[1.] SEE how immediately, from the very first beginning, (1.) he casts down their pride, and dashes to the ground all their fond imagination, in that he speaks of himself as *called*. For what I have learnt, saith he, I discovered not myself, nor acquired by my own wisdom, but while I was persecuting and laying waste the Church. Now here of Him that calleth is every thing: of him that is called, nothing, (so to speak,) but only to obey.

*Of Jesus Christ.* Your Teacher is Christ; and do you write yourselves by the names of men, as patrons of your doctrine?

*By the will of God.* For it was God who willed that you should be saved in this way. We ourselves have wrought no good thing, but by the will of God we have attained to this salvation; and because it seemed good to Him, we were called, not because we were worthy.

*And Sosthenes our brother.* Another instance of his modesty: he puts in the same rank with himself one inferior to Apollos: for great was the interval between Paul and Sosthenes. Now if where the interval was so wide he stations with himself one far beneath him, what can they have to say who despise their equals?

*Unto the Church of God.* Not “of this or of that man,” but of God.

*Which is at Corinth.* Seest thou how at each word he puts



HOMIL. down their swelling pride; training their thoughts in every way for heaven? He calls it too the Church "of God;" shewing that it ought to be united. For if it be "of God," it is united, and it is one, not in Corinth only, but also in all the world: for the Church's name<sup>1</sup> is not a name of separation, but of unity and concord.

<sup>1</sup> *ἐκκλησία*: properly an assembly.

*To the sanctified in Christ Jesus.* Again, the Name of Jesus; the names of men he findeth no place for. But what is Sanctification? The Laver, the Purification. For he reminds them of their own uncleanness, from which he had freed them; and so persuades them to lowliness of mind; for not by their own good deeds, but by the loving-kindness of God, had they been sanctified.

*Called to be Saints.* For even this, to be saved by faith, is not, saith he, of yourselves; for ye did not first draw near, but were called; so that not even this small matter is yours altogether. However, though you had drawn near, accountable as you are for innumerable wickednesses, not even so would the grace be yours, but God's. Hence also, writing <sup>2</sup>Eph. 2. to the Ephesians, he said, <sup>3</sup>*By grace are ye saved through faith, and this not of yourselves;* not even the faith is yours altogether; for ye were not first with your belief, but obeyed a call.

*With all who call upon the Name of our Lord Jesus Christ.* Not "of this or that man," but "the Name of the Lord."

[2.] *In every place, both theirs and ours.* For although the letter be written to the Corinthians only, yet he makes mention of all the faithful that are in all the earth; shewing that the Church throughout the world must be one, however separate in divers places; and much more, that in Corinth. And though the place separate, the Lord binds them together, being common to all. Wherefore also uniting them he adds, *both theirs and ours.* And this is far more powerful [to unite,] than the other [to separate.] For as men in one place, having many and contrary masters, become distracted, and their one place helps them not to be of one mind, their masters giving orders at variance with each other, and drawing each their

<sup>3</sup>S. Mat. 6. 24. own way, according to what Christ says, <sup>3</sup>*Ye cannot serve God and Mammon;* so those in different places, if they have not different lords but one only, are not by the places injured in

respect of unanimity, the One Lord binding them together. <sup>1 Cor.</sup>  
 "I say not then, (so he speaks,) that with Corinthians only, you <sup>1. 1-3.</sup>  
 being Corinthians ought to be of one mind, but with all that  
 are in the whole world, inasmuch as you have a common  
 Master." This is also why he hath a second time added  
*ours*; for since he had said, *the Name of Jesus Christ our*  
*Lord*, lest he should appear to the inconsiderate to be making  
 a distinction, he subjoins again, *both our Lord, and theirs.*

[3.] That my meaning may be clearer, I will read it ac-  
 cording to its sense thus. *Paul and Sosthenes to the Church*  
*of God which is in Corinth, and to all who call upon the name*  
*of Him who is both our Lord and theirs in every place, whether*  
*in Rome or wheresoever else they may be: grace unto you and*  
*peace from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.*

Or again thus; which I also believe to be rather more  
 correct. *Paul and Sosthenes to those that are at Corinth, who*  
*have been sanctified, called to be Saints, together with all who*  
*call upon the name of our Lord Jesus Christ in every place,*  
*both theirs and ours*; that is to say, *grace unto you, and peace*  
*unto you, who are at Corinth, who have been sanctified and*  
*called*; not to you alone, but *with all who in every place call*  
*upon the name of Jesus Christ, our Lord and theirs.*

Now if our peace be of grace, why hast thou high thoughts?  
 Why art thou so puffed up, being saved by grace? And if  
 thou hast peace with God, why wish to assign thyself to  
 others? since this is what separation comes to. For what if  
 you be at "peace" with this man, and with the other even find  
 "grace?" My prayer is that both these may be yours from  
 God; both from Him I say, and towards Him. For neither  
 do they abide<sup>1</sup> secure except they enjoy the influence from <sup>μίσου,</sup>  
 above; nor unless God be their object will they aught avail <sup>Savile</sup>  
 you: for it profiteth us nothing, though we be peaceful towards <sup>in marg.</sup>  
 all men, if we be at war with God; even as it is no harm to  
 us, although by all men we are held as enemies, if with God  
 we are at peace. And again it is no good to us, if all men  
 approve, and the Lord be offended; as neither is there any  
 danger, though all shun and hate us, if with God we have  
 acceptance and love. For that which is verily grace, and  
 verily peace, cometh of God, since he who finds grace in

HOMIL. I. God's sight, though he suffer ten thousand horrors, feareth none; I say not only, no man, but not even the devil himself; but he that hath offended God suspects all men, though he seem to be in security. For human nature is unstable, and not friends only and brethren, but fathers also, before now, have been altogether changed; and often for a little thing he whom they begat, the branch of their planting, hath been to them, more than all foes, an object of persecution. Children too have cast off their fathers. Thus, if ye will mark it,

- (2.) David was in favour with God, Absalom was in favour with men. What was the end of each, and which of them is in most honour, ye know. Abraham was in favour with God, Pharaoh with men; for to gratify him they gave up the just man's wife<sup>1</sup>. Which then of the two was the more illustrious, and the happy man? Every one knows. And why speak I of righteous men? The Israelites were in favour with God, but they were hated by men, the Egyptians; but nevertheless they prevailed against their haters, and vanquished them, with how great triumph, is well known to you all.

<sup>1</sup> See S. Chrys. on Gen. 12. 17.

For this therefore let all of us labour earnestly; whether one be a slave, let him pray for this, that he may find grace with God rather than with his master; or a wife, let her seek grace from God her Saviour rather than from her husband; or a soldier, in preference to his king and commander let him seek that favour which cometh from above. For thus among men also wilt thou be amiable.

[4.] But how shall a man find grace with God? How else, except by lowliness of mind? For God, saith one, <sup>2</sup>*resisteth the proud, but giveth grace unto the humble*; and, <sup>3</sup>*the sacrifice of God is a broken spirit, and a heart that is brought low* God will not despise. For if with men humility is so lovely,

<sup>2</sup> S. Jas. 4. 6.  
<sup>3</sup> Ps. 51. 17. ~~etiam~~  
~~etiam~~  
~~etiam~~

<sup>4</sup> Rom. 10. 3.

much more with God. Thus both they of the Gentiles found grace, and the Jews no other way fell from grace; <sup>4</sup>*for they were not subject unto the righteousness of God*. The lowly man of whom I am speaking, is pleasing and delightful to all men, and dwells in continual peace, and hath in him no ground for contentions. For though you insult him, though you abuse him, whatsoever you say, he will be silent, and will bear it meekly, and will have so great peace towards all men as one

cannot even describe. Yea, and with God also. For the <sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. 1. 1—3. commandments of God are to be at peace with men: and thus our whole life is made prosperous, through peace one with another. For no man can injure God: His nature is imperishable, and above all suffering. Nothing makes the Christian so admirable as lowliness of mind. Hear, for instance, Abraham saying, <sup>1</sup> *But I am but dust and ashes*; and <sup>1</sup> Gen. 18. 27. again, God [saying] of Moses, that <sup>2</sup> *he was the meekest of all men*. <sup>3</sup> Numb. 12. 3. For nothing was ever more humble than he; who being leader of so great a people, and having overwhelmed in the sea the king and the host of all the Egyptians, as if they had been flies; and having wrought so many wonders both in Egypt, and by the Red Sea, and in the wilderness, and received such high testimony, yet felt exactly as if he had been an ordinary person, and as a son-in-law, was humbler than his father-in-law<sup>4</sup>, and took advice from him, and was not <sup>5</sup> Exodus 18. 24. indignant, nor did he say, “What is this? After such and so great achievements, art thou come to us with thy counsel?” This is what most people feel; though a man bring the best advice, despising it, because of the lowliness of the person. But not so did he: rather through lowliness of mind he wrought all things well. Hence also he despised the courts of kings<sup>6</sup>, since he was lowly indeed: for the sound and the <sup>7</sup> Heb. 11. 24—26. high spirit are the fruit of humility. For of how great nobleness and magnanimity, thinkest thou, was it a token, to despise the kingly palace and table? since kings among the Egyptians are honoured as gods, and enjoy wealth and treasures inexhaustible. But nevertheless, letting go all these, and throwing away the very sceptres of Egypt, he hastened to join himself unto captives, and men worn down with toil, whose strength was spent in the clay and the making of bricks, men whom his own slaves abhorred, (for, saith he, <sup>8</sup> *The Egyptians abhorred them*;) unto these he ran, <sup>9</sup> 138. λύτρωσις, Sept. and preferred them before their masters. From whence it <sup>10</sup> Ex. 1. 2. is plain, that whoso is lowly, the same is high and great of soul. For, as pride cometh of an ordinary mind and an ignoble spirit, so moderation, of a temper meet for high purposes and high thoughts.

[5.] And if you please, let us try both by certain examples. (3.)

10 *Abraham's Example; true and false Magnanimity.*

HOMIL. For tell me, what was there ever more exalted than Abraham?  
 1. — And yet it was he that said, *I am but dust and ashes*; it was  
 1 Gen. he who said, <sup>1</sup> *Let there be no strife between me and thee*. But  
 13. 8. this man, so humble, <sup>2</sup> despised <sup>3</sup> Persian spoils, and regarded  
 2 Gen. 14. 21— not Barbaric trophies; and this he did of much highmind-  
 24. edness, and of a spirit nobly nurtured. For he is indeed  
 3 "Per- exalted who is truly humble; (not the flatterer nor the  
 sian," i. e. per- dissemler;) for true greatness is one thing, and arrogance  
 haps, "of Elam." another. And this is plain from hence: if one man esteem  
 clay to be clay, and despise it, and another admire the clay as  
 gold, and account it a great thing; which, I ask, is the man of  
 exalted mind? Is it not he who refuses to admire the clay?  
 And which, abject and mean? Is it not he who admires it and  
 sets much store by it? Just so do thou esteem of this case  
 also; that he who calls himself but dust and ashes is exalted,  
 although he say it out of humility; but that he who does not  
 consider himself dust and ashes, but treats himself lovingly  
 and has high thoughts, this man for his part must be counted  
 mean, esteeming little things to be great. Whence it is clear  
 that out of great loftiness of thought the patriarch spoke that  
 saying, *I am but dust and ashes*: from loftiness of thought,  
 not from arrogance.

For as in bodies it is one thing to be healthy and  
 4 <sup>σφιγμένη</sup> plump<sup>4</sup>, and another thing to be swoln, although both  
 5 <sup>σφικτική</sup> are betokened by a full habit of flesh, (but in this case of  
 firm and elastic. unsound, in that of healthful flesh;) so also here: it is one  
 thing to be arrogant, which is, as it were, to be swoln, and  
 another thing to be high-souled, which is to be in a healthy  
 state. And again, one man is tall from the stature of his  
 person; another, being short, by adding buskins<sup>5</sup> becomes  
 taller; now tell me which of the two should we call tall and  
 large? Is it not quite plain, him whose height is from him-  
 self? For the other has it as something not his own; and  
 stepping upon things low in themselves, turns out a tall person.  
 Such is the case with many men who mount themselves up on  
 wealth and glory; which is not exaltation, for he is exalted

<sup>5</sup> *ἰσθαῖα*; a leathern shoe coming half way up the leg, with high heels of cork; used especially by tragic actors to elevate their size. *Æschylus*, says Horace, improving tragedy, "*docuit magnumque loqui, nitique cothurno.*" A. P. 280.

who wants none of these things, but despises them and has <sup>1</sup> *Cor.* his greatness from himself. Let us therefore become humble <sup>1. 1—3.</sup> that we may become exalted; <sup>1</sup> *for he that humbleth himself* <sup>1</sup> *S. Luke* *shall be exalted.* <sup>14. 11.</sup> Now the self-willed man is not such as this; rather he is of all characters the most ordinary. For the bubble too is inflated, but the inflation is not sound: wherefore we call these persons “puffed up.” Whereas the sober-minded man has no high thoughts, not even in high fortunes, knowing his own low estate; but the vulgar even in his trifling concerns indulges a proud fancy.

[6.] Let us then acquire that height which comes by humility. Let us look into the nature of human things, that we may kindle with the longing desire of the things to come; for in no other way is it possible to become humble, except by the love of what is divine, and the contempt of what is present. For just as a man on the point of obtaining a kingdom, if instead of that purple robe one offer him some trivial compliment, will count it to be nothing; so shall we also laugh to scorn all things present, if we desire that other sort of honour. Do ye not see the children, when in their play they make a band of soldiers, and heralds precede them and lictors, and a boy marches in the midst in the general's place, how childish it all is? Just such are all human affairs; yea and more worthless than these: to-day they are, and to-morrow they are not. Let us therefore be above these things; and let us not only not desire them, but even be ashamed if any one hold them forth to us. For thus, casting out the love of these things, we shall possess that other love which is divine, and shall enjoy immortal glory. Which may God grant us all to obtain, through the grace and loving-kindness of our Lord Jesus Christ; to Whom together with the Father and the Holy Spirit be glory, power, honour, now and for evermore, even unto everlasting. Amen.

## HOMILY II.

---

1 COR. i. 4, 5.

*I thank my God always on your behalf, for the grace of God which is given you by Jesus Christ; that in every thing ye are enriched by him.*

(1.) [1.] THAT which he exhorts others to do, saying, <sup>1</sup> *Let*  
<sup>1</sup> Phil. 4, *your requests with thanksgiving be made known unto God*, the  
6. same also he used to do himself: teaching us to begin always from these words, and before all things to give thanks unto God. For nothing is so acceptable to God, as that men should be thankful, both for themselves and for others: wherefore also he prefaces almost every Epistle with this. But the occasion for his doing so is even more urgent here, than in the other Epistles. For he that gives thanks, does so, both as having received a blessing, and as in acknowledgment of a favour: now a favour is not a debt, nor an exchange, nor a repayment: which indeed every where is important to be said, but much more in the case of the Corinthians, who were gaping after the dividers of the Church.

[2.] *Unto my God.* Out of great earnestness he seizes on that which is common, and makes it his own; as the prophets  
• Ps. 43. also from time to time use to say, <sup>2</sup> *O God, my God*; and by  
4; 63. 1. way of encouragement he incites them to use the same language also themselves. For such expressions belong to one who is retiring from all secular things, and moving towards Him whom he calls on with so much earnestness: since he alone can truly say this, who from things of this life is ever mounting upwards unto God, and always preferring Him to all, and giving thanks continually, not [only] for the grace already given\*, but whatever blessing hath been since at any time bestowed, for this also he offereth unto Him the

\* This seems to mean the grace given in Baptism once for all.

same praise. Wherefore he saith not merely, *I give thanks*, 1 COR. but *at all times, for you*; instructing them to be thankful 1. 4—7. both always, and to no one else save God only.

[3.] *For the grace of God.* Seest thou how from every quarter he draws topics for correcting them? For where *grace* is, *works* are not; where *works*, it is no more *grace*. If therefore it be *grace*, why are ye high-minded? Whence is it that ye are puffed up?

*Which is given you.* And by whom was it given? By me or by another Apostle? Not at all, but *by Jesus Christ*. For the expression, *In Jesus Christ*, signifies this. Observe now in divers places he uses the word ἐν, “in,” instead of δι’ αὐτοῦ, “through means of whom;” therefore its sense is no less.

*That in every thing ye have been enriched.* Again, by whom? By Him, is the reply. And not merely *ye have been enriched*, but *in every thing*. Since then it is first of all, *riches*, then, *riches of God*, next, *in every thing*, and lastly, *through the Only-Begotten*, reflect on the ineffable treasure!

Ver. 5. *In all utterance, and in all knowledge.* “Word” [or *utterance*,] not such as the heathen, but that of God. For there is knowledge without “word,” and there is knowledge with “word.” For so there are many who possess knowledge, but have not the power of speech; as those who are uneducated, and unable to exhibit clearly what they have in their mind. Ye, saith he, are not such as these, but competent both to understand and to speak.

Ver. 6. *Even as the testimony of Christ was confirmed in you.* In the course of his praises and thanksgiving he touches them sharply. “For not by heathen philosophy,” saith he, “neither by heathen discipline, but by *the grace of God*, and by the *riches*, and the *knowledge*, and the *word* given by Him, were you enabled to learn the doctrines of the truth, and to be confirmed unto the testimony of the Lord; that is, unto the Gospel. For ye had the benefit of many signs, many wonders, unspeakable grace, to make you receive the Gospel. If therefore ye were established by signs and grace, why do ye waver?” Now these are the words of one both reproofing, and at the same time prepossessing them in his favour.

[4.] Ver. 7. *So that ye come behind in no gift.* A great



14 *How the Gifts of the Corinthians left them carnal.*

HOMIL. question here arises. They who had been *enriched in all*  
 II. *utterance*, so as in no respect to *come behind in any gift*, are they carnal? For if they were such at the beginning, much more now. How then does he call them "carnal?" For,  
<sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. saith he, <sup>1</sup> *I was not able to speak unto you as unto spiritual,*  
 2. 1. *but as unto carnal.* What must we say then? That having in the beginning believed, and obtained all gifts, (for indeed they were zealously affected,) they became remiss afterwards. Or, if not so, that not unto all are either these things said or those; but the one to such as were amenable to his censures, the other to such as were adorned with his praises. For as  
<sup>2</sup> 1 Cor. to the fact that they still had gifts; <sup>2</sup> *Each one*, saith he, *hath*  
 14. 26, *a psalm, hath a revelation, hath a tongue, hath an interpretation;*  
 29. *let all things be done unto edifying.* And, *Let the prophets speak two or three.* Or we may state it somewhat differently; that as it is usual with us to call the greater part the whole, so also he hath spoken in this place. Withal, I think he glances at his own proceedings; for he too had shewn forth signs; even as also he saith in the second Epistle  
<sup>3</sup> 2 Cor. to them, <sup>3</sup> *Howbeit the signs of an Apostle were wrought*  
 12. 12, *among you in all patience:* and again, *For what is it wherein*  
 13. *you were inferior to other churches?*

Either, as I was saying, he reminds them of his own miracles also; or further, he speaks thus with an eye to those who were as yet approved. For many holy men were there who had "*addicted themselves unto the ministry of the saints*," and had become "*the first-fruits of Achaia*;" as he declareth <sup>4</sup> towards the end.

<sup>4</sup> c. 16. [5.] In any case, although the praises be not very close to  
 15. the truth, still however they are inserted by way of secret precaution<sup>5</sup>, preparing the way beforehand for his discourse. For whoever at the very outset speaks things unpleasant, excludes his words from a hearing among the weaker: since if the hearers be his equals in degree they feel angry; if vastly inferior they will be vexed. To avoid this, he forms his exordium out of what seem to be praises. I say, seem; for not even did this praise belong to them, but to the grace of God. For to have had remission of sins, and to have been justified, this was of the Gift from above. Wherefore also he dwells upon these points, which shew

<sup>5</sup> *elaboratus*.

the loving-kindness of God, in order that he may the more fully purge out their malady. <sup>1 Cor. 1. 7, 8.</sup>

[6.] *Waiting for the revelation<sup>1</sup> of our Lord Jesus Christ.* <sup>1 ἀποκάλυψιν.</sup> "Why make ye much ado," saith he, "why are ye troubled that Christ is not come? Nay, He is come; and the Day is henceforth at the doors." And consider his wisdom; how withdrawing them from human considerations he terrifies them by mention of the fearful judgment-seat, and thus implying that not only the beginnings must be good, but the end also. For with all these gifts, and with all else that is good, we must be mindful of that Day: and there is need of many labours to be able to come unto the end.

*Revelation* is his word; implying that although He be not (2.) seen, yet He is, and is present even now, and then shall appear. Therefore there is need of patience: for to this end did ye receive the wonders, that ye may remain firm.

[7.] Ver. 8. *Who shall also confirm you unto the end, that ye may be blameless.* Here he seems to court them, but the saying is free from all flattery; for he knows also how to press them home; as when he saith, <sup>1</sup> *Now some are puffed up, as though* <sup>1 Cor. 4. 18, 21.</sup> *I would not come to you:* and again, *What will ye? shall I come unto you with a rod, or in love, and in the spirit of meekness?* And, <sup>2</sup> *Since ye seek a proof of Christ speaking in* <sup>2 Cor. 13. 3.</sup> *me.* But he is also covertly accusing them: for to say, *He shall confirm*, and the word, *blameless*, marks them out as still wavering, and liable to blame.

But do thou consider how he always fasteneth them as with nails to the Name of Christ. And not any man nor teacher, but continually the Desired One Himself is remembered by him: setting himself, as it were, to arouse those who were heavy-headed after some debauch. For no where in any other Epistle doth the Name of Christ occur so continually. But here it is, many times in a few verses; and by means of it he weaves together, one may say, the whole of the poem. Look at it from the beginning. *Paul called [to be] an Apostle of Jesus Christ, to them that have been sanctified in Jesus Christ, who call upon the Name of our Lord Jesus Christ, grace [be] unto you and peace from God the Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ. I thank my God for the grace which hath been given you by Jesus Christ, even as the testimony of*

HOMIL. *Christ hath been confirmed in you, waiting for the revelation*  
 II. *of our Lord Jesus Christ, who shall confirm you unreprouable*  
*in the day of our Lord Jesus Christ. God is faithful, by*  
*whom ye have been called into communion with His Son*  
*Jesus Christ our Lord. And I beseech you by the Name of*  
*our Lord Jesus Christ.* Seest thou the constant repetition of  
 the Name of Christ? From whence it is plain even to the  
 most unobservant, that not by chance nor unwittingly he  
 doeth this, but in order that by incessant application<sup>b</sup> of that  
 glorious Name he may draw off their swelling humours, and  
 cleanse out the corruption of the disease.

[8.] Ver. 9. *God is faithful, by whom ye were called unto*  
*the fellowship of His Son.* Wonderful! How great a thing  
 saith he here! How vast is the magnitude of the gift which  
 he declares! Into the fellowship of the Only-begotten have  
 ye been called, and do ye addict yourselves unto men? What  
 can be worse than this wretchedness? And how have ye been  
 called? By the Father. For since *through Him*, and *by Him*,  
 were phrases which he was constantly employing in regard of  
 the Son, lest men might suppose that he so mentioneth Him  
 as being less, he ascribeth the same to the Father. For not  
 by this one and that one, saith he, but *by the Father* have ye  
 been called; by Him also have ye been *enriched*. Again, *ye*  
*have been called*; ye did not yourselves approach. But what  
 means, *into the fellowship of His Son*? Hear him declaring

<sup>1 2</sup> Tim. this very thing more clearly elsewhere. <sup>1</sup> *If we suffer, we*

2. 12. *shall also reign with Him, if we die with Him, we shall also*  
*live with Him.* Then, because it was a great thing which  
 he had said, he adds an argument fraught with unanswerable  
 conviction; for, saith he, *God is faithful*, i. e. *true*. Now if  
*true*, what things He hath promised He will also perform.  
 And He hath promised that He will make us partakers of  
 His Only-begotten Son; for to this end also did He call us.

<sup>2</sup> Rom. For <sup>2</sup> *His gifts, and the calling of God*, are without repentance.

11. 29. These things, by a kind of holy artifice<sup>3</sup>, he inserts thus  
<sup>3</sup> *προ-  
ποσην.* early in his discourse, lest after the vehemence of the reproofs  
 they might fall into despair. For assuredly God's part will

<sup>4</sup> *ἀφραδ-  
σιν.* ensue, if we be not quite impatient of His rein<sup>4</sup>. As the

<sup>b</sup> The image here seems to be taken from the vulgar use, in medicine, of a charm or amulet.

Jews, being called, would not receive the blessings; but this was no longer of Him that called, but of their inconsideration. For He indeed was willing to give, but they, by refusing to receive, cast themselves away. For, had He called to a painful and toilsome undertaking, not even in that case were they pardonable in making excuse; however, they would have been able to say, that so it was: but if the call be unto cleansing<sup>1</sup>, and righteousness, and sanctification, and redemption, and grace, and a free gift, and the good things in store, which eye hath not seen, nor ear heard; and it be God that calls, and calls by Himself; what pardon can they deserve, who come not running to Him? Let no one therefore accuse God; for unbelief cometh not of Him that calleth, but of those who start away<sup>2</sup> from Him.

<sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. 1. 4-7.

<sup>2</sup> Comp. inf. v. 30. and c. vi. 11.

<sup>2</sup> ἀποστρέφειν.

[9.] But some man will say, "He ought to bring men in, even against their will." Away with this. He doth not use violence, nor compel; for who that bids to honours, and crowns, and banquets, and festivals, drags people unwilling and bound? No one. For this is the part of one inflicting an insult. Unto hell He sends men against their will, but unto the kingdom He calls willing minds. To the fire He brings men bound and bewailing themselves: to the endless store of blessings not so. Else is it a reproach to the very blessings themselves, if their nature be not such as that men should run to them of their own accord, and count it a great favour.

"Whence is it then," say you, "that all men do not choose them?" From their own infirmity. "And wherefore doth He not cut off their infirmity?" And how, tell me,—in what way,—ought He to have cut it off? Hath He not made a world, to teach His loving-kindness and His power? For<sup>3</sup> the heavens, with one, declare the glory of God. Hath He not also sent prophets? Hath He not both called and honoured us? Hath He not done wonders? Hath He not given a law both written and natural? Hath He not sent His Son? Hath He not commissioned Apostles? Hath He not wrought signs? Hath He not threatened hell? Hath He not promised the kingdom?

(9.)

<sup>3</sup> Ps. 19. 1.

<sup>1</sup> Yet in St. Luke 14. 23, it is "come, sit down with me." But our Lord is there speaking of the kingdom of heaven, not of heaven itself. S. Chrysostom here, of heaven itself.

HOMIL. II. Doth He not every day make His sun to rise? Are not the things which He hath enjoined so simple and plain, that many transcend His commandments in their exceeding love of perfection?<sup>1</sup> *What was there to do unto the vineyard, and I have not done it?*

<sup>1</sup> τῆς  
εὐουρίας  
τῆς φιλο-  
σοφίας  
<sup>2</sup> 1a. b. a.

[10.] "And why," say you, "did He not make knowledge and virtue natural to us?" Who speaketh thus? The Greek or the Christian? Both of them indeed, but not about the same things; for the one raises his objection with a view to knowledge, the other with a view to conduct. First then we will reply to him who is on our side; for I do not so much regard those without, as our own members.

What then saith the Christian? "It were meet to have implanted in us the knowledge itself of virtue." He hath implanted it; for if He had not done so, whence should we have known what things are to be done, what left undone? Whence all the laws and tribunals?

But, "God should have imparted not [merely] knowledge, but also the very mode of action." For what then wouldest thou have to be rewarded, if the whole was to be of God? For tell me, doth God punish in the same manner thee and the Greek upon committing sin<sup>d</sup>? Surely not. For up to a certain point thou hast confidence, viz. that which ariseth from the true knowledge. What then, if any one should now say, that on the score of knowledge thou and the Greek will be accounted of like desert? Would it not disgust thee? I think so indeed. For thou wouldest say that the Greek, having of his own wherewith to attain knowledge, was not willing. If then the latter also should say that God ought to have implanted knowledge in us naturally, wilt thou not laugh him to scorn, and say to him, "But why didst thou not seek for it? why wast thou not in earnest even as I?" And thou wilt insist on it with much confidence, and say, that it was extreme folly to blame God for not implanting knowledge by nature. And this thou wilt say, because thou art right in what appertains to knowledge. So also, wert thou right in

<sup>d</sup> The meaning seems to be, "Whatever other sins you commit, you have not the sin of unbelief to answer for; and would, I suppose, think it hard, if *ceteris paribus* you were counted as

guilty as an unbeliever. Now this your instinctive judgment confutes any hope you may have that nature and circumstances may excuse you in any other sin."

what appertains to practice, thou wouldest not have raised <sup>1 Cor.</sup> these questions : but thou art tired of virtuous practice, there- <sup>1. 4-7.</sup> fore thou shelterest thyself with these inconsiderate words.

But how could it be at all right to cause that by necessity one should become good ? Then shall we next have the brute beasts contending with us about virtue, seeing that some of them are more temperate than ourselves.

But thou sayest, " I had rather have been good by necessity, and so forfeited all rewards, than evil by deliberate choice, to be punished and suffer vengeance." But it is impossible that one should ever be good by necessity. If therefore thou knowest not what ought to be done, shew it, and then we will tell you what is right to say. But if thou knowest that uncleanness is wicked, wherefore dost thou not fly from the evil thing ?

" I cannot," thou sayest. But others who have surpassed thee in well-doing, will plead against thee, and will more than prevail to stop thy mouth. For thou, perhaps, though living with a wife, art not chaste ; but another even without a wife keeps his chastity inviolate. Now what excuse hast thou for not keeping the rule, while another even leaps beyond the lines\* that have been drawn to mark it ?

But thou sayest, " I am not of this sort in my bodily frame, or my turn of mind." That is for want, not of power, but of will. For thus I prove that all have a certain aptness towards virtue : That which a man cannot do, neither will he be able to do though necessity be laid upon him ; but if, necessity being laid upon him, he is able, he that leaveth it undone, leaveth it undone out of choice. The kind of thing I mean is this : to fly up and be borne towards heaven, having a heavy body, is even simply impossible. What then, if a king should command one to do this, and threaten death, saying, " Those men who do not fly, I decree that they lose their heads, or be burnt, or some other such punishment : " would any one obey him ? Surely not. For nature is not capable of it. But if in the case of chastity this same thing were done, and he were to lay down laws, that the unclean should be punished, be burnt, be scourged, should suffer the extremity of torture, would not many obey the law ? " No," thou wilt say : " for there is ap-

\* *Tà endáppara*. The image is borrowed from the gymnastic exercise of leaping.



HOMIL. pointed, even now, a law forbidding to commit adultery<sup>1</sup>, and  
 II. all do not obey it." Not because the fear loses its power, but because the greater part expect to be unobserved. So that if when they were on the point of committing an unclean action the legislator and the judge came before them, the fear would be strong enough to cast out the lust. Nay, were I to apply another kind of force inferior to this; were I to take the man and remove him from the beloved person, and shut him up close in chains, he will be able to bear it, without suffering any great harm. Let us not say then that such an one is by nature good, and such an one by nature evil: for if a man were by nature good, he could never at any time become evil; and if he were by nature evil, he could never be good. But now we see that changes take place rapidly, and that men quickly shift from this side to the other, and from that fall back again into this. And these things we may see not in the Scriptures only; for instance, that publicans have become apostles; and disciples, traitors; and harlots, chaste; and that robbers have found approval, and magicians have adored, and ungodly men passed over unto godliness, both in the New Testament and in the Old; but even every day a man may see many such things occurring. Now if things were natural, they could not change. For so we, being by nature susceptible, could never by any exertions become void of feeling. For that which is whatever it is by nature, can never fall away from such its natural condition. No one, for example, ever fell away altogether from sleeping: no one from a state of corruption [changed] unto incorruption: no one from hunger to the perpetual absence of that sensation. Wherefore neither are these things matters of accusation, nor do we reproach ourselves for them; nor ever did any one, meaning to blame another, say to him, "O thou, corruptible and subject to passion:" but either adultery or fornication, or something of that kind, we always lay to the charge of those who are counted guilty; and we bring them before judges, who blame and punish, and in the contrary cases award honours.

[11.] Since then both from our conduct towards one another,

<sup>1</sup> From the time of Constantine to offence. Gibbon, c. 44. note 197.  
 that of Justinian it was a capital

and from others' conduct to us when judged, and from the <sup>1 COR.</sup> things about which we have written laws, and from the 1. 4—7. things wherein we condemn ourselves, though there be no one to accuse us; and from the instances of our becoming worse through indolence, and better through fear; and from the cases wherein we see others doing well and arriving at the height of self-command<sup>1</sup>, it is quite clear that we also have it <sup>in our power to do well: why do we, the most part, deceive</sup> <sup>ourselves in vain with cold pretexts and excuses, bringing</sup> <sup>nor only no pardon, but even punishment intolerable? when</sup> <sup>we ought to keep before our eyes that fearful day, and to</sup> <sup>give heed to virtue; and after a little labour, obtain the</sup> <sup>incorruptible crowns? For these words will be no defence to</sup> <sup>us; rather our fellow-servants, and those who have practised</sup> <sup>the contrary virtues, will condemn all who continue in sin:</sup> <sup>the cruel man will be condemned by the merciful; the evil,</sup> <sup>by the good; the fierce, by the gentle; the grudging, by the</sup> <sup>courteous; the vain-glorious, by the self-denying; the in-</sup> <sup>dolent, by the serious; the intemperate, by the sober-minded.</sup> Thus will God pass judgment upon us, and will set in their place both companies; on the one bestowing praise, on the other punishment. But God forbid that any of those present should be among the punished and dishonoured, but rather among those who are crowned, and the winners of the divine kingdom. Which may God grant us all to obtain through the grace and loving-kindness of our Lord Jesus Christ; with whom unto the Father and the Holy Ghost be glory, power, honour, now, and ever, and unto everlasting ages. Amen.



## HOMILY III.

1 COR. i. 10.

*Now I beseech you, brethren, by the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that ye all speak the same thing, and that there be no divisions among you; but that ye be perfectly joined together in the same mind and in the same judgment.*

WHAT I have continually been saying, that we must frame our rebukes gently and gradually, this, Paul doth here also: in that, being about to enter upon a subject full of many dangers, and enough to tear up the Church from her foundations, he uses very mild language. His word is, that he *beseeches* them, and beseeches them *through Christ*; as though not even he were sufficient alone to make this supplication and to prevail.

<sup>1</sup> ἀπομνηστέον  
οὐδὲν  
σφαιρῶν  
ἐν τῇ ἐκ-  
κλησίᾳ  
vii. ἀπομνη-  
στέον.

But what is this, *I beseech you through Christ*? “I take Christ to fight on my side, and to aid me, His injured and insulted Name.” An awful way of speaking indeed! lest they should prove hard and shameless: for sin makes men stubborn. Wherefore if at once<sup>1</sup> you sharply rebuke, you make a man fierce and impudent: but if you strike awe into him, you bow down his neck, you check his confidence, you make him hang down his head. Which object being Paul’s also, he is content for a while to beseech them by the Name of Christ. And what, of all things, is the object of his request?

*That ye may all speak the same thing, and that there be no divisions [schisms] among you.* The emphatic force of the word *schism*, I mean the very word, was enough to astound them extremely. For it was not that they had become many parts, each entire within itself, but rather the One [Body which originally existed] had perished. For had they<sup>a</sup> been entire Churches, there might be many of them; but if

<sup>a</sup> i. e. the bodies formed by separation.

they were schisms, then that first One was gone. For that <sup>1Con.1.</sup> which is entire within itself not only does not become many <sup>10, 11.</sup> by division into many parts, but rather the original One is lost. Such is the nature of schisms.

[2.] In the next place, because he had sharply dealt with them by so applying the word *schism*, he again softens and soothes them, saying, *That ye may be perfectly joined together in the same mind and in the same judgment.* That is; since he had said, *That ye may all speak the same thing*; “do not suppose,” he adds, “that I said concord should be only in words; I seek for that harmony which is of the mind.” But since there is such a thing as agreement in words, and that hearty, not however on all subjects, therefore he added this, *That ye may be perfectly joined together.* For he that is united in one thing, but in another falls apart<sup>1</sup>, is no longer *perfectly joined*, nor fitted<sup>1</sup> in to complete accordance. There is also such a thing as <sup>χλω.</sup> <sup>Bened.</sup> harmony of opinions, where there is not yet harmony of <sup>διχνοῦς,</sup> sentiments; for instance, when having the same faith we are <sup>at vari-</sup> not joined together in love: for thus, in opinions we are one, (for we think the same things,) but in sentiments not so. And such was the case at that time; this person choosing one [leader], and that, another. For this reason he saith it is necessary to agree both in *mind* and in *judgment*. For it was not from any difference in faith that the schisms arose, but from the division of their judgment through human contentiousness.

[3.] But seeing that whoso is blamed is unabashed so long as he hath no witnesses, observe how, not permitting them to stand forward and deny the fact, he adduces some to bear witness.

Ver. 11. *For it hath been declared unto me of you, my brethren, by them that are of the house of Chloe.* Neither did he say this at the very beginning, but first he brought forward his charge; as one who put confidence in his informants. Because, had it not been so, he would not have found fault: for Paul was not a person to believe lightly. Neither then did he immediately say, *it hath been declared*, lest he might seem to blame on their authority: neither does

HOMIL. he omit all mention of them, lest he should seem to speak  
III. only from himself.

And again, he styles them *brethren*; for although the fault be plain, there is nothing against calling people brethren still.

Consider also his prudence in not speaking of any distinct person, but of the entire family; so as not to make them hostile towards the informer: for in this way he both protects him, and fearlessly opens the accusation. For he had an eye to the benefit not of the one side only, but of the other also. Wherefore he saith not, *It hath been declared to me by certain*, but he indicates also the household, lest they might suppose that he was inventing.

[4.] What was declared? *That there are contentions among you*. Thus, when he is rebuking them, he saith, *That there be no schisms among you*; but when he is reporting the statements of others, he doth it more gently; saying, *For it hath been declared unto me . . . that there are contentions among you*; in order that he might not bring trouble upon the informants.

Next he declares also the kind of contention.

Ver. 12. *That every one of you saith, I am of Paul, and I of Apollos, and I of Cephas*. "I say, *contentions*," saith he, "I mean, not about private matters, but of the more grievous sort." *That every one of you saith*; for the corruption pervaded not a part, but the whole of the Church. And yet they were not speaking about himself, nor about Peter, nor about Apollos; but he signifies that if these were not to be leaned on, much less others. For that they had not spoken about them, he saith further on: *And these things I have transferred in a figure unto myself and Apollos, that ye may learn in us not to think above what is written*. For if it were not right for them to call themselves by the name of Paul, and of Apollos, and of Cephas, much less of any others. If under the Teacher and the first of the Apostles, and one that had instructed so much people, it were not right to enrol themselves, much less under those who were nothing. In the very strongest way then, withdrawing them from their disease, he sets down these names in haste. Besides, he makes his argument less severe, not mentioning by name the rude dividers of the Church, but concealing them, as behind a sort of masks, with the name of Apostles.

*I am of Paul, and I of Apollos, and I of Cephas.* Not esteeming himself before Peter hath he set his name last, but preferring Peter to himself, and that greatly. He hath arranged his statement in the way of climax<sup>1</sup>, that he might not be supposed to do this for envy; or, for spiteful jealousy's sake, to be detracting from the other's honour. Wherefore also he hath put his own name first. For he who puts himself foremost to be rejected, doth so not for love of honour, but for extreme contempt of this sort of reputation. He puts himself, you see, in the way of the whole attack, and then he mentions Apollos, and then Cephas. Not therefore to magnify himself hath he done this, but in speaking of wrong things he administers the requisite correction in his own person first.

[5.] But that those who addicted themselves to this or that man were in error, is evident. And rightly he rebukes them, saying, "Ye do not well in that ye say, *I am of Paul, and I of Apollos, and I of Cephas.*" But why did he add, *And I of Christ?* For although those who addicted themselves to men were in error, not surely<sup>2</sup> those who dedicated themselves unto Christ. But this was not his charge, that they called themselves by the Name of Christ, but that they did not all call themselves by that Name alone. And I think that he added this of himself, wishing to make the accusation more grievous, and to point out that by this rule Christ must be considered as belonging to one party only: although they were not so using the Name themselves. For that this was his secret meaning he hath declared in the sequel, saying,

Ver. 3. *Is Christ divided?* What he saith comes to this: "Ye have cut in pieces Christ, and distributed His body." Here is anger! here is chiding! here are words full of indignation! For whenever instead of proving he interrogates only, his doing so implies a confessed absurdity.

But some say that he glanced at something else, in saying, *Christ is divided*: as if he had said, "He hath distributed to men and parted the Church, and taken one share Himself, giving them the other." Then, in what follows, he labours to overthrow this absurdity, saying, *Was Paul crucified for you, or were ye baptized in the name of Paul?* Observe

1 COR.  
1.12,13.  
(2.)

1  
αὐτοῦ  
αὐτοῦ.

2  
αὐτοῦ  
Bened.  
οὐ δι' αὐτοῦ  
Savil.





adds, *How shall He not with Him also freely give us all things?* And again, <sup>1</sup>*For if when we were enemies we were reconciled unto God by the death of His Son, much more, being reconciled, we shall be saved.* This was one reason for his not adding what I just mentioned: and also because the one they had not as yet, but of the other they had already made trial. The one were in promise; the other had already come to pass.

[6.] Ver. 14. *I thank God that I baptised none of you but Crispus and Gaius.* “Why are you elate at having baptized, when I for my part even give thanks that I have not done so?” Thus saying, by a kind of divine art<sup>2</sup> he does away with their<sup>2</sup> <sup>since-</sup>swelling pride upon this point; not with the efficacy of the <sup>minis.</sup>Baptism, (God forbid) but with the folly of those who were puffed up at having been baptizers: first, by shewing that the Gift is not theirs; and, secondly, by thanking God therefore. For Baptism truly is a great thing: but its greatness is not the work of the person baptizing, but of Him who is called to the Baptism: since to baptize is nothing as regards man’s labour, but is much less than preaching the Gospel. Yea, again I say, great indeed is Baptism, and without Baptism it is impossible to obtain the kingdom. Still a man of no singular excellence is able to baptize, but to preach the Gospel there is need of great labour.

Ver. 15. He states also the reason, why he giveth thanks, that he had baptized no one. What then is this reason? *Lest any one should say that ye were baptized in my own name.* Why, did he mean to say that so it was in those other cases? Not at all; but “I fear,” saith he, “lest the disease should proceed even to that. For if, when insignificant persons, and of little worth, baptize, a heresy ariseth, had I, the first announcer of Baptism, baptized many, it was likely that some, forming a party, would not only call themselves by my name, but also ascribe the Baptism to me.” For if from the inferiors so great an evil arose, from those of higher order it would perhaps have gone on to something far more grievous.

Ver. 16. By this reason, then, having abashed those who were unsound, and subjoining, *I baptized also the house of Stephanas*, he again tacitly exposes their pride, saying, *as to the rest, I know not whether I baptized any other.* For

HOMIL. by this he signifies that neither did he seek much to enjoy  
 III. the honour accruing hereby from the multitude, nor did he set about this work for glory's sake.

Ver. 17. And not by these only, but also by the next words, he greatly represses their pride, saying, *Christ sent me not to baptize, but to preach the Gospel*: for the more laborious part, and that which needed much toil and a soul of iron, and that on which all depended, was this. And therefore it was that Paul had it put into his hand.

And why, not being sent to baptize, did he baptize? Not in contention with Him that sent him, but in this instance labouring beyond his task. For he saith not, "I was forbidden," but "I was not sent for this, but for that which was of most immediate urgency." For preaching the Gospel is a work perhaps for one or two; but baptizing, for every one endowed with the priesthood. For a man being instructed and convinced, to take and baptize him is what any one whatever might do: for the rest, it is all effected by the will of the person drawing near, and the grace of God. But when unbelievers are to be instructed, there must be great labour, great wisdom. And at that time there was danger also annexed. In the former case the whole thing is done, and he is convinced, who is on the point of initiation: and it is no great thing when a man is convinced, to baptize him. But in the latter case the labour is great, to change the deliberate will, to alter the turn of mind, and to heave up error by the roots, and to plant truth in its place.

Not that he speaks out all this, neither doth he argue in so many words that Baptism has no labour, but that preaching has. For he knows how always to subdue his tone, whereas in the comparison with heathen wisdom he is very earnest, the subject enabling him to use more vehemency of language.

Not therefore in opposition to Him that sent him did he baptize; but, as in the case of the widows<sup>1</sup>, though the Apostles had said, *'It pleases not that we should leave the Word of God and serve tables*, he discharged the office<sup>2</sup> of a deacon, not in opposition to them, but as something beyond his task: so also here. For even now, we commit this matter to the simpler sort of presbyters, but the word of doctrine

<sup>1</sup> Acts 6. <sup>2</sup> Acts 12. 25. <sup>3</sup> the same.

<sup>4</sup> Perhaps the allusion is to such places as Acts 11. 30; 24. 17; 1 Cor. 16. 4; &c.



unto the wiser: for there is the labour and the sweat. Wherefore he saith himself, <sup>1</sup> *Let the Elders who rule well be counted worthy of double honour, especially they who labour in word and doctrine.* For as to teach the wrestlers in the games is the part of a spirited and skilful trainer, but to place the crown on the conqueror's head may be that of one who cannot even wrestle, (although it be the crown which adds splendour to the conqueror,) so also in Baptism. It is impossible to be saved without it, yet it is no great thing which the baptizer doth, finding the will ready prepared.

[7.] *Not with wisdom of words, lest the Cross of Christ should be made of none effect.*

Having brought down the swelling pride of those who were arrogant because of their baptizing, he changes his ground afterwards to meet those who boasted about heathen wisdom, and against them he puts on his armour with more vehemency. For to those who were puffed up with baptizing he said, *I give thanks that I baptized no one; and, for Christ sent me not to baptize.* He speaks neither vehemently nor argumentatively, but, having just hinted his meaning in a few words, passeth on quickly. But here at the very outset he gives a severe blow, saying, *Lest the Cross of Christ be made of none effect.* Why then pride thyself on a thing which ought to make thee hide thy face? Since, if this wisdom is at war with the Cross, and fights with the Gospel, it is not meet to boast about it, but to retire with shame. For this was the cause why the Apostles were not wise; not through any weakness of the Gift, but lest the Gospel preached suffer harm. The sort of people therefore above mentioned were not those employed in advocating the Word: rather they were among its defamers. The unlearned men were the establishers of it. This broke in pieces vain glory, this repressed bloated arrogance, this enforced moderation.

"But if it was *not by wisdom of speech*, why did they send Apollos, who was eloquent?" It was not, he replies, through confidence in his power of speech, but because he was *'mighty in the Scriptures, and confuted the Jews.* And <sup>18. 24, 28.</sup> besides, the point enquired of was, the principals and first disseminators of the word not having been eloquent; since these were the very persons to require some great power, for the expulsion of error in the first instance; and

1 Cor.

1. 17.

1 Tim.

5. 17.



III. then, namely, at the very outset, was the abundant strength needed. Now He who could do without educated persons at first, if afterwards some being eloquent were admitted by Him, He did so not because He wanted them, but because He would make no distinctions. For as He needed not wise men to effect whatever He would, so neither, if any were afterwards found such, did He reject them on that account.

[8.] But prove to me that Peter and Paul were eloquent. Thou canst not: for they were *unlearned and ignorant men*<sup>4</sup>. As therefore Christ, when He was sending out His disciples into the world, having shewn unto them His power in Palestine

first, and said<sup>1</sup>, *When I sent you away without purse and scrip and shoe, lacked ye any thing?* permitted them from that time forward to possess both a scrip and a purse; so also He hath done here: for the point was the manifestation of Christ's power, not the rejection of persons from the Faith on account of their Gentile wisdom, if they were drawing nigh. When the Greeks then charge the disciples with being uneducated, let us be even more forward in the charge than they. Nor let any one say, "Paul was wise;" but while we exalt those among them who were great in wisdom and admired for their excellency of speech, let us allow that all on our side were uneducated; for it will be no slight overthrow, which they will sustain from us in that respect also: and so the spoils of victory will be brilliant indeed.

I have said these things, because I once heard a Christian disputing in a ridiculous manner with a Greek, and both parties in their mutual fray ruining themselves. For what things the Christian ought to have said, these the Greek asserted; and what things it was natural to expect the Greek would say, these the Christian pleaded for himself. As thus: the dispute being about Paul and Plato, the Greek endeavoured to shew that Paul was unlearned and ignorant; but the Christian, from simplicity, was anxious to prove that Paul was more eloquent than Plato. And so the victory was on the side of the Greek, this argument being allowed to prevail. For if Paul was a more considerable person than Plato, many probably would object that it was not by grace but by

<sup>1</sup>S. Luke  
22. 35.  
ἀποδὲν-  
μάταις,  
rec. text  
ἀποδὲν-  
μάταις.

<sup>4</sup> ἡγούμενοι καὶ διδασκαί: Acts iv. 13: and by St. Chrysostom here quoted from there spoken of St. Peter and St. John, memory as of St. Peter and St. Paul.

excellency of speech that he prevailed; so that the Christian's assertion made for the Greek. And what the Greek said made for the Christian; for if Paul was uneducated and yet overcame Plato, the victory, as I was saying, was brilliant; the disciples of the latter, in a body, having been attracted by the former, unlearned as he was, and convinced, and brought over to his side. From whence it is plain that the Gospel was a result not of human wisdom, but of the grace of God.

Wherefore, lest we fall into the same error, and be laughed to scorn, arguing thus with Greeks, (for we were supposing ourselves in controversy with them;) let us charge the Apostles with want of learning; for this same charge is praise. And when they say that the Apostles were rude, let us follow up the remark, and say, that they were also untaught, and unlettered, and poor, and vile, and wanting in acuteness, and insignificant persons. It is not a slander on the Apostles to say so, but it is even a glory that, being such, they should have outshone the whole world. For these untrained, and rude, and illiterate men, as completely vanquished the wise, and powerful, and the tyrants, and those who flourished in wealth and glory, and all outward good things, as though they had not been men at all: from whence it is manifest that great is the power of the Cross; and that these things were done by no human strength. For the results do not keep the course of nature, rather the good done was above all nature. Now when any thing takes place above nature, and exceedingly above it, on the side of rectitude and utility; it is quite plain that these things are done by some Divine power and co-operation. And observe; the fisherman, the tentmaker, the publican, the ignorant, the unlettered, coming from the far-distant country of Palestine, and having beaten off their own ground the philosophers, the masters of oratory, the skilful debaters, alone prevailed against them in a short space of time; in the midst of many perils; the opposition of people and kings, the striving of nature herself, length of time, the vehement resistance of inveterate custom, demons in arms, the devil in battle array and stirring up all, kings, rulers, people, nations, cities, barbarians, Greeks, philosophers, orators, sophists, historians, laws, tribunals, divers kinds of punishments,

1 Cor.  
1. 17.

HOMIL. deaths innumerable and of all sorts. But nevertheless all  
 III. these were confuted, and gave way when the fishermen spake;  
 just like the light dust, which cannot bear the rush of violent  
 winds. Now what I say is, let us learn thus to dispute with  
 the Greeks; that we be not like beasts and cattle, but *pre-*  
 pared as concerning *the hope which is in us*<sup>1</sup>. And let us  
 pause for a while to work out this topic, no unimportant one;  
 and let us say to them, How did the weak overcome the  
 strong; the twelve, the world? Not by using the same  
 armour, but in nakedness contending with men in arms.

<sup>1</sup> S. Pet.  
 3. 15.

For say, if twelve men, unskilled in matters of war, were to  
 leap into an immense and armed host of soldiers, themselves  
 not only unarmed but of weak frame also; and to receive no  
 harm from them, nor yet be wounded, though assailed with  
 ten thousand weapons; if while the darts were piercing them  
 through, with bare naked body they overthrew all their foes,  
 using no weapons but striking with the hand, and in con-  
 clusion killed some, and others took captive and led away,  
 themselves receiving not so much as a wound; would any  
 one have ever said that the thing was of man? And yet the  
 trophy of the Apostles is much more wonderful than that.  
 For a naked man's escaping a wound is not so wonderful by  
 far, as that the ordinary and unlettered person,—that a fisher-  
 man,—should overcome such a body of talent<sup>2</sup>: and neither  
 for fewness, nor for poverty, nor for dangers, nor for prepos-  
 session of habit, nor for so great austerity of the precepts  
 given in charge, nor for the daily deaths, nor for the multitude  
 of those who were deceived, nor for the great reputation of  
 the deceivers, be turned from his purpose.

<sup>2</sup> *diver-*  
*ses.*

[9.] Let this, I say, be our way of overpowering them, and of  
 conducting our warfare against them; and let us, before all  
 words, astound them by our way of life. For this is the main  
 battle, this is the unanswerable argument, the argument from  
 actions. For though we give ten thousand precepts of philo-  
 sophy in words, if we do not exhibit a life better than theirs,  
 the gain is nothing. For it is not what is said that draws their  
 attention, but their enquiry is, what we do; and they say, "Do  
 thou first obey thine own words, and then admonish others.  
 But if while thou sayest, 'Infinite are the blessings in the world  
 to come,' thou seem thyself nailed down to this world, just as



if no such things existed, thy works to me are more credible <sup>1 Cor. 1. 17.</sup> than thy words. For when I see thee seizing other men's goods, weeping immoderately over the departed, doing ill in many other things, how shall I believe thee that there is a Resurrection?" And what if men utter not this in words? they think it, and turn it often in their minds. And this is what stays the unbelievers from becoming Christians.

Let us win them therefore by our life. Many, even among the untaught, have in that way astounded the minds of philosophers, as having exhibited in themselves also that philosophy which lies in deeds, and uttered a voice clearer than a trumpet by their mode of life and self-denial. For this is stronger than the tongue. But when I say, "one ought not to bear malice," and then do all manner of evils to the Greek, how shall I be able by words to win him, while by my deeds I am frightening him away? Let us catch them then by our mode of life; and by these souls let us build up the Church, and of these let us amass our wealth. There is nothing to weigh against a soul, not even the whole world. So that although thou give countless treasure unto the poor, thou wilt do no such work as he who converteth one soul. <sup>1 Jer. 15. 19.</sup> *For he that taketh forth the precious from the vile shall be as my mouth:* so He speaks. A great good it is, I grant, to have mercy on the poor; but it is nothing equal to the withdrawing them from error. For he that doth this resembles Paul and Peter: we being permitted to take up their Gospel, not with perils such as theirs;—with endurance of famines and pestilences, and all other evils, (for the present is a season of peace;)—but so as to display that diligence which cometh of zeal. For even while we sit at home we may practise this kind of fishery. Whoso hath a friend or relation or inmate of his house, these things let him say, these do; and he shall be like Peter and Paul. And why do I say Peter and Paul? He shall be the mouth of Christ. For He saith, *He that taketh forth the precious from the vile shall be as My mouth.* And though thou persuade not to-day, to-morrow thou shalt persuade. And though thou never persuade, thou shalt have thine own reward in full. And though thou persuade not all, a few out of many thou mayest; since neither did the Apostles persuade all men that are; but still they discoursed with all,

**HOMIL.** and for all they have their reward. For not according to the  
**III.** result of the things that are well done, but according to the  
intention of the doers, is God wont to assign the crowns:  
though thou pay down but two farthings, He receiveth them;  
and what He did in the case of the widow, the same will He  
do also in the case of those who teach. Do not thou then,  
because thou canst not save the world, despise the few; nor  
through longing after the greater things, withdraw thyself  
from the lesser. If thou canst not an hundred, take thou  
charge of ten; if thou canst not ten, despise not even five; if  
thou canst not five, do not overlook one; and if thou canst  
not one, neither so despair, nor keep back what may be done  
by thee. Seest thou not how, in matters of trade, they who  
are so employed make their profit not only with gold but  
with silver also? For if we are not come to slighting the  
little things, we shall keep hold also of the great. But if we  
despise the small, neither shall we easily lay hand upon the  
other. Thus individuals become rich, gathering both small  
and great. And so let us act; that in all things enriched, we  
may obtain the kingdom of heaven; through the grace and  
loving-kindness of our Lord Jesus Christ, with whom unto  
the Father together with the Holy Spirit be glory, power,  
honour, now and henceforth and for evermore. Amen.

## HOMILY IV.

---

1 COR. i. 18—20.

*For the preaching of the Cross is to them that perish foolishness; but to us which are saved it is the power of God. For it is written, I will destroy the wisdom of the wise, and will bring to nothing the understanding of the prudent. Where is the wise? Where is the Scribe? Where is the disputer of this world?*

TO the sick and broken-spirited even wholesome meats are <sup>1COR.1.</sup> unpleasant, friends and relations burdensome; who are often- <sup>18—20.</sup> times not even recognised, but are rather accounted intruders. Much like this often is the case of those who are perishing in their souls. For the things which tend to salvation they know not; and those who are careful about them they consider to be troublesome. Now this ensues not from the nature of the thing, but from their disease. And just what the insane do, hating those who take care of them, and ever after reviling them, the same is the case with unbelievers also. But as in the case of the former, they who are insulted then more than ever compassionate them, and weep, taking this as the worst symptom of the disease in its intense form, when they know not their best friends; so also in the case of the Gentiles let us act; yea more than for our wives let us wail over them, because they know not the common salvation. For not so dearly ought a man to love his wife as we should love all mankind, and draw them over unto salvation; be a man a Gentile, or be he what he may. For these then let us weep; *for the preaching of the Cross is to them foolishness, being itself Wisdom and Power. For, saith he, the preaching of the Cross to them that perish is foolishness.*

For since it was likely that they, the Cross being derided by the Greeks, would resist and contend by aid of

HOMIL. that wisdom, which came (forsooth) of themselves, as being  
 1V. disturbed by the expressions of the Greeks; Paul comforting  
 them saith, Think it not strange and unaccountable, which is  
 taking place. This is the nature of that which we now treat  
 of, to have them that perish fail in acknowledging its power.  
 For they are beside themselves, and behave as madmen; and  
 so they rail and are disgusted at the medicines which bring  
 health.

[2.] But what sayest thou, O man? Christ became a slave for  
 Phil. 2. thee, *having taken the form of a slave*<sup>1</sup>, and was crucified,  
 7. and rose again. And when thou oughtest to adore Him risen  
 for this, and admire His loving-kindness; because what  
 neither father, nor friend, nor son, did for thee, all this the  
 Lord wrought, for thee, the enemy and offender—when, I say,  
 thou oughtest to admire Him for these things, callest thou  
 that foolishness, which is full of so great wisdom? Well, it is  
 nothing wonderful; for it is a mark of them that perish not  
 to recognise the things which lead to salvation. Be not  
 troubled therefore, for it is no strange nor unaccountable  
 event, that things truly great are mocked at by those who are  
 beside themselves. Now such as are in this mind you cannot  
 convince by human wisdom. Yea, if you want so to convince  
 them, you do but the contrary. For the things which tran-  
 scend reasoning require faith alone. Thus, should we set  
 about convincing men by reasonings, how God became man,  
 and entered into the Virgin's womb, and not commit the  
 matter unto faith, they will but deride the more. Therefore  
 they who enquire by reasonings, these are they who perish.

And why speak I of God? for in regard of created things,  
 should we do this, great derision will ensue. For suppose a  
 man, wishing to make out all things by reasoning; and let  
 him try by thy discourse to convince himself how we see the  
 light; and do thou try to convince him by reasoning. Nay,  
 thou canst not: for if thou sayest that it suffices to see by  
 opening the eyes, thou hast not expressed the manner, but the  
 fact. For "why see we not," one will say, "by our hearing  
 and with our eyes hear? And why hear we not with the  
 nostril, and with the hearing smell?" If then, he being in  
 doubt about these things, and we unable to give the explana-  
 tion of them, he is to begin laughing, shall not we rather

laugh him to scorn? "For since both have their origin from <sup>1</sup>Cor. 1. 18—20. one brain, since the two members are near neighbours to each other, why can they not do the same work?" Now we shall not be able to state the cause, nor the method of the unspeakable and curious operation; and should we make the attempt, we shall be laughed to scorn. Wherefore, leaving this unto God's power and boundless wisdom, let us be silent.

Just so with regard to the things of God; should we desire to explain them by the wisdom which is from without, great derision will ensue, not from their infirmity, but from the folly of men. For the great things of all no language can explain.

[3.] Now observe: when I say, "He was crucified;" the Greek saith, "And how can this be reasonable? Himself He helped not when undergoing crucifixion and sore trial at the moment of the Cross: how then after these things did He rise again and help others? For if He had been able, before death was the proper time." (For this the Jews actually said<sup>1</sup>) <sup>1</sup>S. Mat. 27. 41, 42. "But He who helped not Himself, how helped He others? There is no reason in it," saith he. True, O man, for indeed it is above reason; and unspeakable is the power of the Cross. For that being actually in the midst of horrors, He should have shewn Himself above all horrors; and being in the enemy's hold should have overcome; this cometh of Infinite Power. For as in the case of the Three Children, their not entering the furnace would not have been so astonishing, as that having entered in they trampled upon the fire;—and in the case of Jonah, it was a greater thing by far, after he had been swallowed by the fish, to suffer no harm from the monster, than if he had not been swallowed at all;—so also in regard of Christ; His not dying would not have been so inconceivable, as that being dead He should loose the bands of death. Say not then, "why did He not help Himself on the Cross?" for He was hastening on to close conflict with death himself<sup>2</sup>. He descended not from the Cross, not because He <sup>2</sup>See Hooker, E. P. v. could not, but because He would not. For Him Whom the tyranny of death restrained not, how could the nails of the Cross restrain? <sup>48. 9.</sup>

[4.] But these things, though known to us, are not so as yet <sup>(2.)</sup> to the unbelievers. Wherefore he said, that *the preaching of*



HOMIL. the Cross is to them that perish foolishness; but to us who are  
 IV. saved it is the power of God. For it is written, *I will destroy the wisdom of the wise, and the understanding of the prudent will I bring to nothing.* Nothing from himself which might give offence, does he advance up to this point; but first he comes to the testimony of the Scripture, and then, furnished with boldness from thence, adopts more vehement words and saith,

Ver. 20, 21. *Hath not God made foolish the wisdom of this world? Where is the wise? Where the Scribe? Where the disputer of this world? Hath not God made foolish the wisdom of this world? For after that, by the wisdom of God, the world by wisdom knew not God, it pleased God, by the foolishness of preaching, to save them that believe.* Having said, *It is written, I will destroy the wisdom of the wise,* he subjoins the demonstration from facts, saying, *Where is the wise? where the Scribe?* at the same time glancing at both Gentiles and Jews. For what sort of philosopher, which among those who have studied logic, which of those knowing in Jewish matters, hath saved us, and made known the truth? Not one. It was the Fishermen's work, the whole of it.

Having then inferred what he had in view, and brought down their pride, and said, *Hath not God made foolish the wisdom of this world?* he states the reason also, why these things were so done. *For after that by the wisdom of God,* saith he, *the world by wisdom knew not God,* the Cross appeared. Now what means, *by the wisdom of God?* The wisdom apparent in those works, whereby it was His will to make Himself known. For to this end did He frame them

<sup>1</sup> ἀπολό-  
γους.

and frame them such as they are, that by a sort of proportion<sup>1</sup>, from the things which are seen, admiration of the Maker might be learned. Is the heaven great, and the earth boundless? Wonder then at Him who made them. For this heaven, great as it is, not only was made by Him, but made with ease; and that boundless earth too, was brought into being even as if it had been nothing. Wherefore of the former He saith<sup>2</sup>, *The works of Thy fingers are the heavens;* and concerning the earth<sup>3</sup>, *Who hath made the earth as it were nothing.* Since then by this wisdom the world was unwilling to acknowledge God, He employed what seemed to be

<sup>1</sup> Ps.  
102. 25.  
τῶν χει-  
ρῶν. lxx.  
<sup>2</sup> Isa. 40.  
23. lxx.

foolishness, i. e. the Gospel, to persuade men; not by reasonings, but by faith. It remains that where God's wisdom is, there is no longer need of man's. For before, to infer that He who made the world, such and so great, must in all reason be a God possessed of a certain uncontrollable, unspeakable power; and by these means to apprehend Him;—this was the part of human wisdom. But now we need no more reasonings, but faith alone. For to believe on Him that was crucified and buried, and to be most fully persuaded that this person Himself both rose again, and sat down on high; this needeth not wisdom, nor reasonings, but faith. For the Apostles themselves came in not by wisdom, but by faith, and surpassed the heathen wise men in wisdom and loftiness, and that so much the more, by how much to raise disputings is less, than to receive by faith the things of God. For this transcends all human understanding.

But how hath He *destroyed wisdom*? Being made known to us by Paul and others like him, He hath shewn it to be unprofitable. For towards receiving the evangelical proclamation, neither is the wise profited at all by wisdom, nor the unlearned injured at all by ignorance. But if one may speak somewhat even wonderful, ignorance rather than wisdom is a condition suitable for that impression, and more easily dealt with. For the shepherd and the rustic will more quickly receive this, once for all repressing all doubting thoughts, and delivering himself to the Lord. In this way then He hath destroyed wisdom. For since she first cast herself down, she is ever after useful for nothing. Thus when she ought to have displayed her proper powers, and by the works to have seen the Lord, she would not. Wherefore though she were now willing to introduce herself, she is not able. For the matter is not of that kind: this way of knowing God being far greater than the other. You see then, faith and simplicity are needed, and this we should seek every where, and prefer it before the wisdom which is from without. For God, saith he, *hath made wisdom foolish*.

But what is *He hath made foolish*? He hath shewn it foolish in regard of receiving the faith. For since they prided themselves on it, He lost no time in exposing it. For what sort of wisdom is it, when it cannot discover the chief of

1 COR.  
1.30, 21.

HOMIL. things that are good? He caused her therefore to appear  
IV. foolish, after she had first convicted herself. For if when discoveries might have been made by reasoning, she proved nothing, now when things proceed on a larger scale, how will she be able to accomplish ought? now when there is need of faith alone, and not of acuteness? You see then, God hath shewn her to be foolish.

It was His good pleasure too by the foolishness of the Gospel to save; foolishness, I say, not real, but appearing to be such. For that which is more wonderful yet is His having prevailed by bringing in, not another such wisdom more abundant than the first, but what seemed to be foolishness. He cast out Plato, for example, not by means of another philosopher of more skill, but by an unlearned fisherman. For thus the defeat became greater, and the victory more splendid.

[5.] Ver. 22—24. Next, to shew the power of the Cross, he saith, *For the Jews require a sign, and the Greeks seek after wisdom: but we preach Christ crucified, unto the Jews a stumbling-block; and unto the Greeks foolishness; but unto them which are called, both Jews and Greeks, Christ the Power of God, and the Wisdom of God.*

- (3.) Vast is the import of the things here spoken! For he means to say how by contraries God hath overcome, and how the Gospel is not of man. What he saith is something of this sort. When, saith he, we say unto the Jews, Believe; they answer, Raise the dead, Heal the demoniacs, Shew unto us signs. But instead thereof what say we? That He was crucified, and died, who is preached. And this is enough, not only to fail in drawing over the unwilling, but utterly to drive away those even who are willing. Nevertheless, it drives not away, but attracts, and holds fast, and overcomes.

Again; the Greeks demand of us a rhetorical style, and the acuteness of sophistry. But we to these also preach the Cross: and that which in the case of the Jews is deemed to be of weakness, this in the case of the Greeks is foolishness. Wherefore, when we not only fail in producing what they demand, but also produce the very opposites of their demand; (for the Cross has not merely no appearance of being a sign

sought out by reasoning, but even the very annihilation of a sign;—is not merely deemed no proof of power, but a conviction of weakness;—not merely no display of wisdom, but a ground for surmising foolishness;)—when therefore they who seek for signs and wisdom not only receive not the things which they ask, but even hear the contrary to what they desire, and then by means of contraries are persuaded;—how is not the power of Him that is preached unspeakable? As if to some one tempest-tost and longing for a haven, you were to shew not a haven but another wilder portion of the sea, and so could make him follow with thankfulness! Or as if a physician could attract to himself the man that was wounded and in need of remedies, by promising to cure him not with drugs, but with burning of him again! For this is a result of great power indeed. So also the Apostles prevailed, not simply by a sign, but even by a thing which seemed contrary to all the known signs. Which thing also Christ did in the case of the blind man. For when He would heal him, He restored him by a thing which increased the blindness: i. e. He put on clay<sup>1</sup>. As then by means of clay He healed the blind man, so also by means of the Cross hath He brought the world to Himself. That certainly was adding an offence, not taking an offence away. So did He also in the Creation, working out things by their contraries. With sand, for instance, He walled in the sea, having made the weak a bridle to the strong. He placed the earth upon water, having taken order that the heavy and the dense might be borne on the soft and fluid. By means of the Prophets again with a small piece of wood He raised up iron from the bottom<sup>2</sup>. In like manner also with the Cross He hath drawn the world to Himself. For as the water beareth up the earth, so also the Cross beareth up the world. You see now, it is proof of great power and wisdom, to convince by means of the things which tell directly against us. Thus the Cross seems to be matter of offence; and yet far from scandalizing, it even attracts.

[6.] Ver. 25. All these things, therefore, Paul bearing in mind, and being struck with astonishment, said, that *the foolishness of God is wiser than men, and the weakness of God is stronger than men*; in relation to the Cross, speaking of a folly and weak-

<sup>1</sup>Cor. 1.  
22—25.

<sup>1</sup>S. John  
9. 6.

<sup>2</sup>Kings  
6. 5—7.



HOMIL IV. ness, not real but apparent. For he is answering with respect unto the other party's opinion. For that which philosophers were not able by means of reasoning to accomplish, this, what seemed to be foolishness did excellently well. Which then is the wiser, he that persuadeth the many or but few, I should say, no one? He who persuadeth concerning the greatest points, or about matters which are nothing<sup>1</sup>? What great labours did Plato endure, and his followers, discoursing to us about a line, and an angle, and a point, and about numbers even and odd, and equal unto one another and unequal, and such-like spiderwebs; (for indeed those webs are not more useless to man's life, than were these subjects :) and without doing good to any one great or small by their means, so he made an end of his life. How greatly did he labour, endeavouring to shew that the soul is immortal! and even as he came he went away, having spoken nothing with certainty, nor persuaded any hearer. But the Cross wrought persuasion by means of unlearned men; yea it persuaded even the whole world: and not about common things, but in discourse of God and the godliness which is according to truth, and the evangelical way of life, and the judgment of the things to come. And of all men it made philosophers: the very rustics, the utterly unlearned. Behold how *the foolishness of God is wiser than men, and the weakness stronger!* How, stronger? Because it overran the whole world, and took all by main force, and while men were endeavouring by ten thousands to quench the name of the Crucified, the contrary came to pass: that flourished and increased more and more, but they perished and wasted away; and the living, in war with the dead, had no power. So that when the Greek calls me foolish, he shews himself exceedingly above measure foolish: since I who am esteemed by him a fool, evidently appear wiser than the wise. When he calleth me weak, then he sheweth himself to be weaker. For the noble things which publicans and fishermen were able to effect by the grace of God, these, philosophers, and rhetoricians, and tyrants, and in short the whole world, running ten thousand ways here and there, could not even form a notion of. For what did not the Cross introduce? The Doctrine concerning the Immortality of the Soul; that concerning the Resurrection

<sup>1</sup> μὴδὲν  
ἀπὸ  
Reg.  
MS. μὴ  
διότι  
Bened.

of the Body; that concerning the contempt of things present; 1COR.1. that concerning the desire of things future. Yea, Angels <sup>25.</sup> it hath made of men, and all, every where, practise self-denial', and shew forth all kinds of fortitude.

[7.] But among them also, it will be said, many have been found contemners of death. Tell me who? was it he who drank the hemlock? But if thou wilt, I can bring forward ten thousand such from within the Church. For had it been lawful when persecution befel them to drink hemlock and depart, all had become more famous than he. And besides, he drank when he was not at liberty to drink or not to drink; but willing or against his will he must have undergone it: no effect surely of fortitude, but of necessity, and nothing more. For even robbers and man-slayers, having fallen under the condemnation of their judges, have suffered things more grievous. But with us it is all quite the contrary. For not against their will did the martyrs endure, but of their will, and being at liberty not to suffer; shewing forth fortitude harder than all adamant. This then you see is no great wonder, that he whom I was mentioning drank hemlock, it being no longer in his power not to drink, and also when he had arrived at a very great age. For when he despised life he stated himself to be seventy years old; if this can be called despising. For I for my part could not affirm it: nor, what is more, can any one else. But shew me some one enduring firm in torments for godliness' sake, as I shew thee ten thousand every where in the world. Who, while his nails were tearing out, nobly endured? Who, while his joints were wrenching<sup>a</sup> asunder? Who, while his body was <sup>ἐκαστα-  
ἐκαστὸν</sup> enduring spoil<sup>b</sup>, member by member? or his head? Who, <sup>καὶ τὸ  
κεφάλαιον</sup> while his bones were being heaved out by levers<sup>c</sup>? Who, <sup>καὶ τὰ  
ὀστέα</sup> while placed without intermission upon frying-pans? Who, <sup>καὶ τὰ  
ὀστέα</sup> when thrown into a caldron? Shew me these instances. <sup>καὶ τὰ  
ὀστέα</sup> For to die by hemlock is all as one with a sleeping man's continuing in a state of sleep. Nay even sweeter than sleep <sup>καὶ τὰ  
ὀστέα</sup> is this sort of death, if report say true. But if certain [of them] did endure torments, yet of these too the praise is gone to nothing. For on some disgraceful occasion they perished; some for revealing mysteries; some for aspiring to dominion; others detected in the foulest crimes; others again at random,

**HOMIL.** and fruitlessly, and ignorantly, there being no reason for it, made  
**IV.** away with themselves. But not so with us. Wherefore of their  
 deeds nothing is said; but these flourish and daily increase.  
 Which Paul having in mind said, *The weakness of God is stronger than all men.*

[8.] For that the Gospel is divine, even from hence is evident; namely, from what quarter could it have occurred to twelve ignorant men to attempt such great things? who sojourned in marshes, in rivers, in deserts; who never at any time perhaps had entered into a city nor into a forum:—whence did it occur, to set themselves in array against the whole world? For that they were timid and unmanly, he shews who wrote of them, not shrinking back, nor enduring to throw their failings into the shade: which indeed of itself is a very great token of the truth. What then doth he say about them? That when Christ was apprehended, after ten thousand wonders, the rest fled; and he who remained, being the leader of the rest, denied. Whence was it then that they who, when Christ was alive, endured not the attack of the Jews; now that He was dead and buried, and, as ye say, had not risen again, nor had any talk with them, nor infused courage into them,—whence did they set themselves in array against so great a world? Would they not have said among themselves, “What ever meaneth this? Himself He was not able to save, and will He protect us? Himself He defended not when alive, and will He stretch out the hand unto us now that He is dead? Himself, when alive, subdued not even one nation; and are we to convince the whole world by uttering His Name?” How, I ask, could all this be reasonable, I will not say, as something to be done, but even as something to be imagined? From whence it is plain, that had they not seen Him after He was risen, and received most ample proof of His power, they would not have ventured so great a cast.

[9.] For suppose they had possessed friends innumerable; would they not presently have got them all for enemies, disturbing ancient customs, and removing their father's land-marks?<sup>1</sup> But as it was, they had before gotten them for enemies, all, both their own countrymen and foreigners. For although they had been recommended to veneration by every thing external, would

<sup>1</sup> *Regim.*  
*M.S.*  
*Reg. 167*  
*Bened.*

not all men have abhorred them, introducing a new polity? <sup>1 Cor. 1.</sup> But now they were even void of all; and it was likely that even <sup>25.</sup> on that account all would hate and scorn them at once. For whom will you name? The Jews? Nay, they had against them an inexpressible hatred on account of the things which had been done unto the Master. The Greeks then? Why, first of all, these had rejected one not inferior to them; and no men know these things so well as the Greeks. For Plato, who wished to strike out a new form of government, or rather a part of government; and that, not by changing the customs relating to the gods, but merely by substituting one line of conduct for another; being cast out of Sicily, went near to lose his life\*. This however did not ensue: so that he lost his liberty alone. And had not a certain Barbarian been more gentle than the tyrant of Sicily, nothing could have rescued the philosopher from slavery throughout life in a foreign land. And yet it is not all one to innovate in affairs of a kingdom, and in matters of religious worship. For the latter more than any thing else causes disturbance and troubles men. For to say, "let such and such an one marry such a woman, and let the guardians<sup>b</sup> [of the commonwealth] exercise their guardianship so and so," is not enough to cause any great disturbance: and especially when all this is lodged in a book, and no great anxiety on the part of the legislator to carry the proposals into practice. On the other hand, to say, "they be no gods which men worship, but demons; He who was crucified is God;" ye well know how great wrath

\* Plutarch. in Dion. t. v. p. 162. ed. Bryan. "Plato having been introduced to Dionysius, they discoursed in general about human virtue; when Plato maintained that any thing might be credible rather than for tyrants to be truly brave. Then changing the subject, he argued concerning Justice, that the life of the just is blessed, of the unjust miserable. The tyrant was not well pleased with the discourse, understanding it as a reproof: and he was vexed with the bystanders, who mightily approved the man, and were taken with his remarks. At last, in anger and bitterness, he asked him what was his object in coming to Sicily. He said, To look for a good man. By heaven, he replied, it is clear you have not yet found him. Now

Dion's friends thought this had been the end of his anger, and as Plato was anxious to go, they provided him with a passage in a galley, in which Pollis the Spartan was sailing to Greece. But Dionysius secretly besought Pollis, if possible, to kill him at sea, but at any rate to sell him for a slave, for that he would never be the worse for it, but just as happy, in that Justice of his, though he became a slave. Upon which it is said that Pollis took Plato to Ægina and sold him there, the Æginetæ being at war with Athens, and having made a decree, that any Athenian coming there should be sold."

<sup>b</sup> *φύλακες*, Plato's word in the Republic for citizens.



HOMIL. it kindled, how severely men must have paid for it, what a  
 IV. flame of war it fanned.

- (5.) For Protagoras, who was one of them, having dared to say, "I know of no gods," not going round the world and proclaiming it, but in a single city, was in the most imminent peril of his life\*. And Diagoras<sup>d</sup> the Milesian\*, and Theodorus, who was called Atheist<sup>e</sup>, although they had friends, and that influence which comes from eloquence, and were held in admiration because of their philosophy; yet nevertheless none of these profited them. And the great Socrates too, he who surpassed in philosophy all among them, for this reason drank hemlock, because in his discourses concerning the gods he was suspected of moving things a little aside. Now if the suspicion alone of innovation brought so great danger on philosophers and wise men, and on those who had attained boundless popularity; and if they were not only unable to do what they wished, but were themselves also driven from life and country; how canst thou choose but be in admiration and astonishment, when thou seest that the fisherman hath produced such an effect upon the world, and accomplished his purposes; hath overcome both Barbarians and Greeks all of them.

[10.] But they did not, you will say, introduce strange gods as the others did. Well, and in that you are naming the very point most to be wondered at: that the innovation is two-fold, both to pull down those which are, and to announce the Crucified. For from whence came it into their minds to proclaim such things? whence, to be confident about their event? Whom of those before them could they perceive to

\* Cic. de Nat. Deor. i. 23. Protagoras of Abdera, a distinguished Sophist of his time, having opened a certain treatise with these words, "Concerning the Gods, I cannot speak of them either as being or as not being;" the Athenians banished him from Athens and Attica, and burned his books in the Assembly. He flourished about B.C. 444. Clinton, *Fasti Hellenici*, i. 53.

<sup>d</sup> B.C. 466. Clinton, *F. H.* i. 39. The Scholiast on Aristophanes calls him "a writer of songs, called an Atheist; a bringer in of strange gods. Whereupon the Athenians condemned

him, voting a talent of silver to whoever should kill him, and two talents to any one who should bring him alive; and prevailed on the Peloponnesians to join with them." Of Theodorus, Cicero says that he was threatened with death by Lysimachus, but he does not say that it was for his "atheism:" this must have been between B.C. 306—281. Clinton, *F. H.* i. 174, 184.

<sup>e</sup> *ἄθεος*. Schol. in Aristoph. *Ran.* 323.

<sup>f</sup> Cic. de N. D. i. 23; *Tusc. Disp.* i. 43.

have prospered in any such attempt? Were not all men worshipping devils? Were not all used to make gods of the elements? Was not the difference [but] in the mode of impiety? But nevertheless they attacked all, and overthrew all, and overran in a short time the whole world, like a sort of winged beings; making no account of dangers, of deaths, of the difficulty of the thing, of their own fewness, of the multitude of the opponents, of the authority, the rank, the wisdom of those at war with them. For they had above all these, mightier aid, the power of Him that had been crucified and was risen again. It would not have been so wondrous, had they chosen to wage war with the world in the literal sense<sup>1</sup>, <sup>1</sup> ἀλλὰ-  
as this which in fact has taken place. For according to the <sup>μὴν αὐ-</sup>  
law of battle they might have stood over against the enemies, <sup>σθενός.</sup>  
and occupying some adverse ground, have arrayed themselves accordingly, to meet the array of their foes, and have taken their time for attack and close conflict. But in this case it is not so. For they had no camp of their own, but were absolutely mingled with their enemies, and thus overcame them. Even in the midst of their enemies as they went about, they glided away from their hold<sup>2</sup>, and became <sup>2</sup> λαβὴς  
superior, and achieved a splendid victory; a victory which <sup>Rev.</sup>  
fulfils the prophecy that saith, *Even in the midst of thine* <sup>βλαβῆς</sup>  
*enemies thou shalt have dominion*<sup>3</sup>. For this it was which <sup>Bened.</sup>  
was full of all astonishment, that their enemies having them <sup>3</sup> Πρ.  
in their power, and casting them into prisons and chains, not <sup>110. 2.</sup>  
only did not vanquish them, but themselves also eventually had to stoop under them: the scourgers to the scourged, the binders in chains to those who were bound, the persecutors to the fugitives. All these things then we say unto the Greeks, yea rather more than these; for the truth has enough and greatly to spare<sup>4</sup>. And if ye will follow the argument, we <sup>4</sup> ἀλλὰ  
will teach you the whole method of fighting against them. <sup>τῆς δὲ λα-</sup>  
In the mean while let us hold fast these two heads; How <sup>θίας ἡ</sup>  
did the weak overcome the strong? and, From whence came <sup>συν-</sup>  
it into their thoughts, being such as they were, to form such <sup>σιν.</sup>  
plans, unless they enjoyed Divine aid?

[11.] So far then as to what we have to say. But let us shew (6.)  
forth by our actions all excellencies of conduct, and kindle

HOMIL. abundantly the fire of virtue. For *ye are lights*, saith he,  
IV. *shining in the midst of the world*<sup>1</sup>. And unto each of us God

<sup>1</sup>Phil. 2.  
15. hath committed a greater function than He hath to the sun:  
greater than heaven, and earth, and sea; and by so much  
greater, as spiritual things be more excellent than things  
sensible. When then we look unto the solar orb, and admire  
the beauty, and the body, and the brightness of the luminary,  
let us consider again that greater and better is the light which  
is in us, as indeed the darkness also is more dreadful unless  
we take heed. And in fact a deep night oppresses the whole  
world. This is what we have to dispel and dissolve. It is  
night not among heretics, nor among Greeks only, but also in  
the multitude on our side, in respect of doctrines and of life.  
For many entirely disbelieve the resurrection; many fortify  
themselves with their horoscope<sup>2</sup>; many adhere to superstitious  
observances, and to omens, and auguries, and presages. And  
<sup>2</sup> γένεσις  
ἡμετέρις  
ἐκτεταχί-  
ζουσι  
some likewise employ amulets and charms. But to these  
also we will speak afterwards, when we have finished what we  
have to say to the Greeks.

In the mean while hold fast the things which have been  
said, and be ye fellow-helpers with me in the battle; by your  
way of life attracting them to us and changing them. For, as I  
<sup>3</sup> πειρῶ  
φιλοσο-  
φίας  
am always saying, He that teaches high morality<sup>3</sup> ought first  
to teach it in his own person, and be such as his hearers cannot  
do without. Let us therefore become such, and make the Greeks  
feel kindly towards us. And this will come to pass if we make  
up our minds not to do ill, but rather to suffer ill. Do we not  
see when little children being borne in their father's arms, give  
him that carries them blows on the cheek, how sweetly the  
father lets the boy have his fill of wrath, and when he sees  
that he has spent his passion, how his countenance brightens  
up? In like manner let us also act; and as fathers with  
children, so let us discourse with the Greeks. For all the  
Greeks are children. And this, some of their own writers have  
said, that "that people are children always, and no Greek is  
an old man." Now children cannot bear to take thought  
for any thing useful; so also the Greeks would be for ever  
at play; and they lie on the ground, grovelling in posture  
and in affections. Moreover, children oftentimes, when we

are discoursing about important things, give no heed to <sup>1</sup>any thing that is said, but will even be laughing all the time: such also are the Greeks. When we discourse of the Kingdom, they laugh. And as spittle dropping in abundance from an infant's mouth, which oftentimes spoils its meat and drink, such also are the words flowing from the mouth of the Greeks, vain and unclean. Even if thou art giving children their necessary food, they keep on vexing those who furnish it with evil speech, and we must bear with them all the while <sup>1</sup>. <sup>25.</sup> Again, children, when they see a robber entering and taking away the furniture, far from resisting, even smile on him in his mischievous craft; but shouldst thou take away the little basket or the jingles<sup>2</sup> or any other of their play-things, they <sup>2</sup>take it to heart and fret, tear themselves, and stamp on the floor; just so do the Greeks also: when they behold the devil pilfering all their paternal wealth, and even the things which support their life, they laugh and run to him as to a friend: but should any one take away any possession, be it wealth or any childish thing whatsoever of that kind, they cry, they tear themselves. And as children expose their limbs unconsciously and blush not for shame; so the Greeks, wallowing in whoredoms and adulteries, and laying bare the laws of nature, and introducing unlawful intercourses, are not abashed.

Ye have given me vehement applause and acclamation<sup>3</sup>; but with all your applause have a care lest you be among those of whom these things are said. Wherefore I beseech you all to become men: since, so long as we are children, how shall we teach them manliness? How shall we restrain

<sup>1</sup> This custom is referred to by St. Chrysostom in many places, as also by St. Augustin and others: the earliest mention of it appears to be the censure passed on Paul of Samosata in the Synod of Antioch, A. D. 272, for demanding and encouraging such applause. vid. Euseb. E. H. vii. 30. St. Chrysostom in his 30th Hom. on the Acts says, "When I am applauded in my speaking, for the moment I feel as an infirm human being, (for why should not one confess the truth?).... but when I am come home and consider that those who have been ap-

plauding are no wise profited, but rather by their applause and acclamation have lost what good they might have attained, I.... feel as if I had said all to no purpose..... And often I have thought of making a law to forbid all signs of applause, and to enforce listening in silence and with becoming order..... Yea, if you please, let us even now pass such a law..... Why do you applaud at the very moment that I am making a rule to check that practice? &c." iv. 784. Ed. Savil. Vid. Bingham Antiquit. xiv. 4. 27; Suicer, v. *αἰνέσις*.

**HOMIL.** them from childish folly ? Let us, therefore, become men ;  
IV. that we may arrive at the measure of the stature which  
bath been marked out for us by Christ, and may obtain  
the good things to come : through the grace and loving-  
kindness, &c. &c.



## HOMILY V.

---

1 COR. i. 26, 27.

*For behold\* your calling, brethren; that not many wise men after the flesh, not many mighty, not many noble, [are called;] but God hath chosen the foolish things of the world to confound the wise.*

HE hath said that *the foolishness of God is wiser than men*; he hath shewed that human wisdom is cast out, both by the testimony of the Scriptures and by the issue of events; by the testimony, where he says, *I will destroy the wisdom of the wise*: by the event, putting his argument in the form of a question, and saying, *Where is the wise? Where the Scribe?* Again; he hath proved at the same time that the thing is not new, but ancient, so as to be presignified and foretold from the beginning. For, *It is written*, saith he, *I will destroy the wisdom of the wise*. Withal he shews that it was neither inexpedient nor unaccountable for things to take this course: (for, *after that by the wisdom of God the world, saith he, knew not God, God was well pleased by the foolishness of preaching to save them which believe*;) and that the Cross is a demonstration of ineffable power and wisdom, and that the foolishness of God is far mightier than the wisdom of man. And this again he proves not by means of the teachers, but by means of the disciples themselves. For, *Behold your calling*, saith he: that not only teachers of an untrained sort, but disciples also of the like class, were objects of His choice; that He chose *not many wise men* (that is his word) *according to the flesh*. And so that of which he is speaking is proved to surpass both in strength and wisdom, in that it convinces both the many and the unwise: it being extremely hard to convince an ignorant person, especially

\* *Behold*. He takes it imperatively; see below. So also the Vulgate, *Videte*.

HOMIL. when the discourse is concerning great and necessary things.

V.

However, they did work conviction. And this he calls the Corinthians themselves to witness. For *behold your calling, brethren*, saith he: consider; examine: for that doctrines so wise, yea, wiser than all, should be received by ordinary men, testifies the greatest wisdom in the teacher.

[2.] But what means, *according to the flesh*? According to what is in sight; according to the life that now is; according to the discipline of the Gentiles. Then, lest he should seem to be at variance with himself, (for he had convinced both the Proconsul<sup>1</sup>, and the Areopagite<sup>2</sup>, and Apollos<sup>3</sup>; and other wise men too we have seen coming over to the Gospel;) he said not, No one wise man, but *Not many wise men*. For he did not, as one assigning fixed portions<sup>4</sup>, call the ignorant and send away the wise, but these also he received, yet the others in much larger number. And why? Because the wise man according to the flesh is full of extreme inconsideration; and it is he who especially answers to the term "foolish," when he will not cast away his corrupt doctrine. And as in the case of a physician, who might wish to teach certain persons the secrets of his art, those who know a few things, having a bad and perverse mode of practising the art, which they make a point of retaining, would not endure to learn quietly, but they who knew nothing would most readily embrace what was said: even so it was here. The unlearned were more open to conviction, for they were free from the extreme of madness, I mean the accounting themselves wise. For indeed the excess of folly is in these more than any, these I say, who commit unto reasonings things which cannot be ascertained except by faith. Thus, suppose the smith by means of the tongs drawing out the red-hot iron; if this sort of person should insist on doing it with his hand, we should vote him guilty of extreme folly: so in like manner the philosophers' reason for disparaging the faith was, because they insisted on finding out these things for themselves. And it was owing to this that they found not out any one of the things they sought for.

*Not many mighty, not many noble*; for these also are filled with pride. And nothing is so useless towards an accurate

<sup>1</sup> Acts 13. 12.

<sup>2</sup> Acts 17. 34.

<sup>3</sup> Acts 18. 26: through Aquila and Priscilla.

<sup>4</sup> *Διωνυσίου*.

knowledge of God, as arrogance, and being nailed down<sup>1</sup> to 1 COR. 1.  
wealth: for these dispose a man to admire things present, and 26—29.  
make no account of the future; and they stop up the ears 1 πρην-  
λαττω.  
through the multitude of cares: but *the foolish things of the world hath God chosen*: which thing is the greatest sign of victory, that they were uneducated by whom He conquers. For the Greek feel not so much shame, when they are (2.)  
defeated by means of *the wise*, but are then confounded, when they see the artisan and the sort of person one meets in the market more of a philosopher than themselves. Wherefore also he said himself, *That He might confound the wise*. And not in this instance alone hath he done this, but also in the case of the other advantages of life. For, to proceed, *the weak things of the world hath He chosen, that He might put to shame the strong*. For not unlearned persons only, but needy also, and contemptible, and obscure, He called, that He might humble those who were in high places.

V. 28. *And the base things of the world, and things which are despised, and things which are not, that He may bring to nought things which are*. Now what doth He call things “which are not?” Those persons who are considered to be nothing because of their great insignificance. Thus hath he shewn forth His great power, casting down the great by means which are accounted to be nothing. The same elsewhere he thus expresses<sup>2</sup>, *For my strength is made perfect in weakness*.<sup>2</sup> 2 Cor. 12. 9.  
For a great power it is, to teach abject persons, and such as never at any time applied themselves to any branch of learning, how all at once to discourse wisely on the things which are above the heavens. For suppose a Physician, an Orator, or any thing else: we then most admire him, when he convinces and instructs those completely uneducated. Now if to instil into an uneducated man the rules of art be a very wonderful thing, much more those which pertain to so high philosophy.

[3.] But not for the wonder's sake only, neither to shew His own power, hath He done this, but for the purpose also of repressing the arrogant. And therefore he both said before, *That He might confound the wise, that He might bring to nought things which are*, and here again,

V. 29. *That no flesh should glory in the presence of God*.



HOMIL. For God doeth all things to this end, to repress vainglory and  
—V—pride, to pull down boasting. “Do you too, saith he, employ yourselves in that work. He doth all, that we may put nothing to our own account; that we may ascribe all unto God. And have ye given yourselves over unto this person or to that? And what pardon will ye obtain?”

For God Himself hath shewn that it is not possible we should be saved only by ourselves: and this He did from the beginning. For neither then could men be saved by themselves, but it required their compassing the beauty of the heaven, and the extent of the earth, and the mass of creation besides; if so they might be led by the hand to the Great Artificer of all the works. And He did this, repressing beforehand the self-sufficiency and wisdom which was after to arise. Just as if a master, who had given his scholar charge to follow wheresoever he might lead, when he sees him forestalling, and desiring to learn all things of himself, should permit him to go utterly astray; and when he hath proved him incompetent to acquire the knowledge, should thereupon at length introduce to him what himself has to teach: so God also commanded in the beginning to trace Him by the idea which the creation gives; but since they would not, He, after shewing by the experiment, that they are not sufficient for themselves, conducts them again unto Him by another way. He gave for a tablet, the world; but the philosophers studied not in those things, neither were willing to obey Him, nor to approach unto Him by that way which Himself commanded. He introduces another way more evident than the former; one that might bring conviction that man is not of himself alone sufficient unto himself. For then, scruples of reasoning might be started, and the Gentile wisdom employed, on their part whom He through the creature was leading by the hand; but now, unless a man become a fool, that is, unless he make void all reasoning and all wisdom, and deliver up himself unto the faith, it is impossible to be saved. You see that besides making the way easy, He hath rooted up hereby no trifling disease, namely, in forbidding to boast, and have high thoughts: *that no flesh should glory*: for hence came the sin, that men insisted on being wiser than the laws of God; not willing so to obtain knowledge as He had enacted: and there-

fore they did not obtain it at all. So also was it from the beginning. He said unto Adam, "Do such a thing, and such another thou must not do." He, as thinking to find out something more, disobeyed; and even what he had, he lost. He spake unto those that came after, "Rest not entirely in the creature; but by means of it contemplate the Creator." They forsooth, as if making out something wiser than what had been commanded, set in motion turnings and windings innumerable. Hence they kept dashing against themselves and one another, and neither found God, nor concerning the creature had any distinct knowledge; nor had any meet and true opinion about it. Wherefore again, with a very high hand<sup>1</sup>, lowering their conceit, He admitted the uneducated first, shewing thereby that all men need the wisdom from above. And not only in the matter of knowledge, but also in all other things, both men and all other creatures He hath constituted so as to be in great need of Him; that they might have this also as a most forcible motive to be subject and own themselves His. For this cause He did not suffer them to be sufficient unto themselves. For if even now, many, for all their indigency, despise Him, were the case not so, whither would they not have wandered in haughtiness? So that He stayed them from boasting as they did, not from any grudge to them, but to draw them away from the destruction thence ensuing.

<sup>1</sup> ἐν ὀνό-  
ματι τοῦ  
πατρὸς.  
τῶν.

[4.] V. 30. *For of Him are ye in Christ Jesus, who of God is made unto us wisdom, and righteousness, and sanctification, and redemption.*

The expression, *of Him*, I suppose he uses here, not of our introduction into being, but with reference to the faith: that is, to our having become children of God, *not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh*<sup>2</sup>. "Think not then, that having with-<sup>2</sup> S. John  
drawn us from our confidence, He left us so: for there is 1. 13.  
another, a greater confidence, His gift. For *in His presence* it is not meet to glory. Ye are His children, having become so through Christ." And since he has said, *The foolish things of the world hath He chosen, and the base*, he signifies that they are nobler than all, having God for their Father. And of this nobility of ours, not this person or that, but Christ, is the cause, having made us wise, and righteous, and holy. For so mean the words, *He is made unto us wisdom*.

HOMIL V.  
(8.) Who then is wiser than we are, who have not the wisdom of Plato, but Christ Himself, God having so willed.

But what means, *of God*? Whenever he speaks great things concerning the Only-begotten, he adds mention of the Father, lest any one should think that the Son is unbegotten. Since therefore he had affirmed His power to be so great,—he had referred the whole unto the Son, saying that He had *become wisdom unto us, and righteousness, and sanctification, and redemption*;—through the Son again referring the whole to the Father, he saith, *of God*.

But why said he not, He hath made us wise, but *hath been made unto us wisdom*? To shew the copiousness of the Gift. As if he had said, He gave unto us Himself. And observe how he goes on in order. For first He made us wise by delivering from error, and then righteous and holy, by giving us the Spirit; and He hath so delivered us from all our evils as to be *of Him*; and this is not meant to express communication of being<sup>1</sup>, but is spoken concerning the faith. Elsewhere we find him saying, *We have been made righteousness in Him*; in these words, *He hath made Him to be sin for us who knew no sin, that we might be made the righteousness of God in Him*<sup>2</sup>: but now he saith, *He hath been made righteousness unto us*; so that whosoever will, may partake plentifully. For it is not this man or that who hath made us wise, but Christ. *He that glorieth*, therefore, *let him glory in Him*, not in such or such an one. From Christ have proceeded all things. Wherefore, having said, *Who hath been made unto us wisdom, and righteousness, and sanctification, and redemption*, he added, *that, according as it is written, he that glorieth, let him glory in the Lord*.

For this cause also he had vehemently inveighed against the wisdom of the Greeks, to teach men this lesson<sup>3</sup>, and no other: that (as indeed is no more than just) they should boast themselves in the Lord. For when of ourselves we seek the things which are above us, nothing is more foolish, nothing weaker than we are. In such case, a tongue well whetted we may have; but stability of doctrine we cannot have. Rather, reasonings, being alone, are like the webs of spiders. For unto such a point of madness have some advanced, as to say that there is nothing real in the whole of being: yea, they maintain positively that all things are contrary to what is most evident.

<sup>1</sup> οὐκ ἐστὶν  
κοινωνία.

<sup>2</sup> 2 Cor.  
5. 21.

<sup>3</sup> οὐκ ἔστιν  
αὐτῶν  
Σαβίλη;  
οὐκ ἔστιν  
αὐτῶν  
Βενέδ.



*The Efforts of the Apostles, if Deceivers, unaccountable. 57*

Say not therefore that any thing is from thyself, but 1 COR. I. 29, 30. in all things glory in God. Impute unto no man any thing at any time. For if unto Paul nothing ought to be imputed, much less unto any others. For, saith he<sup>1</sup>, *I have planted, Apollos watered, but God gave the increase.* 1 ch. 3. 6. He that hath learnt to make his boast in the Lord, shall never be elated, but will be moderate at all times, and thankful under all circumstances. But not such is the mind of the Greeks; they refer all to themselves; wherefore even of men, they make gods. To so great shame hath desperate arrogance exposed them<sup>2</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> ἰξοτε-  
ρήσειν.

[5.] It is time then, in what remains, to go forth to the battle against these. Recollect where we left our discourse on the former day. We were saying that it was not possible, according to human cause and effect, that the fishermen should have got the better of the philosophers. But nevertheless it became possible: from whence it is clear that by grace it became so. We were saying that it was not possible even for them to have conceived such great exploits: and we shewed that they not only conceived, but brought them to a conclusion with great ease. Let us handle, to-day, the same head of our argument: viz. From whence did it enter their thoughts to expect to overcome the world, unless they had seen Christ after He was risen? What? Were they beside themselves, to reckon upon any such thing inconsiderately and at random? For it goes even beyond all madness, to look, without Divine grace, for success in so great an undertaking. How did they succeed in it, if they were insane and frenzied? But if they were in their sober senses, as indeed the events shewed, how, but on receiving credible pledges from the heavens, and enjoying the influence which is from above, did they undertake to go forth to so great wars, and to make all venture against earth and sea, and to strip and stand their ground so nobly, for a change in the customs of the whole world, which had been so long time fixed, they being but twelve men?

And, what is more, what made them expect to convince their hearers, by inviting them to heaven and the mansions above? Even had they been brought up in honour, and wealth, and power, and erudition, not even so would it have been at all likely that they should have been roused to so burthensome

HOMIL. an undertaking. However, there would have been somewhat  
 V. more of reason in their expectation. But as the case now stands, some of them had been occupied about lakes, some about hides<sup>b</sup>, some about the customs: than which pursuits nothing is more unprofitable towards philosophy, and the persuading men to have high imaginations: and especially when a man hath no example to shew.

Nay, they had not only no examples to make their success likely, but they had examples against all likelihood of success, <sup>THEUDAS.</sup> and those within their own doors'. For many for attempting innovations had been utterly quenched, I say not among the Greeks, for all that was nothing, but among the Jews themselves at that very time; who not with twelve men, but with great numbers had applied themselves to the work. Thus both Theudas and Judas, having great bodies of men, perished together with their disciples. And the fear arising from their examples was enough to control these, had they not been strongly persuaded, that victory without divine power is out of the question.

Yea even if they did expect to prevail, with what sort of hopes undertook they such great dangers, except they had an eye to the world to come? But let us suppose that they hoped for no less than victory; what did they expect to gain, from the bringing all men unto Him, "who is not risen again," as ye  
 (4.) say? For if now, men who believe concerning the kingdom of heaven and blessings unnumbered, with reluctance undertake dangers, how could they have undergone so many for nothing, yea rather, for evil? For if the things which were done did not take place, if Christ did not ascend into heaven; surely in their obstinate zeal to invent these things, and convince all the world of them, they were doing what must offend God, and could but expect ten thousand thunderbolts from on high.

[6.] Or, in another point of view; if they had felt all this great zeal while Christ was living, yet on His death they would have let it go out. For He would have seemed to them, had He not risen, as a sort of deceiver and pretender. Know ye not that armies, while the general and the king is alive, even though they be weak, keep together; but when

<sup>b</sup> That is, some were fishers in the Paul, engaged in making tents out of sea or lake of Tiberias, some, as St. hides.

those in such office have departed, however strong they may be, they are broken up? 1 Cor. i.  
26, 27.

Tell me, then, what were the enticing arguments, whereupon they acted, when about to apply themselves to the Gospel, and to go forth unto all the world? Was there any kind of impediment wanting to restrain them? If they had been mad, (for I will not cease repeating it,) there would have been no possibility of their succeeding at all; for no one follows the advice of madmen. But if they succeeded, as in truth they did succeed, and the event proves, then none so wise as they. Now if none were so wise as they, it is quite plain, they would not lightly have come to the Gospel. Had they not seen Him after He was risen, what was there sufficient to draw them out unto this war? What which would not have turned them away from it? He said unto them, *After three days I will rise again*, and He made promises concerning the kingdom of heaven. He said, they should master the whole world, after they had received the Holy Spirit; and ten thousand other things besides these, surpassing all nature. So that if none of these things had come to pass, although they believed in Him while alive, after His death they would not have believed in Him, unless they had seen Him after He was risen. For they would have said, " 'After three days,' He said, 'I will rise again,' and He hath not arisen. He promised that He would give the Spirit, and He hath not sent Him. How then shall His sayings about the other world find credit with us, when His sayings about this are tried and found wanting? "

And why, if He rose not again, did they preach that He was risen? "Because they loved Him," you will say. But surely, it was likely that they would hate Him afterwards, for deceiving and betraying them; and because, having lifted them up with innumerable hopes, and divorced them from house, and parents, and all things, and set in hostility against them the entire nation of the Jews, He had betrayed them after all. And if indeed the thing were of weakness, they might have pardoned it; but now we were supposing it a result of exceeding craft. For He ought to have spoken the truth, and not have promised heaven, being a mortal man, as ye say. So that the very opposite was the likely line for them to take; to proclaim the cheat, and declare Him a pretender

**HOMIL.** and impostor. Thus again would they have been rid of all  
**V.** their perils; thus have put an end to the war. Moreover, seeing that the Jews gave money unto the soldiers to say that they stole the body, if the disciples had come forward and said, "We stole Him, He is not risen again," what honour would they not have enjoyed? Thus it was in their power to be honoured, nay, crowned. Why then did they for insults and dangers barter away these things, if it was not some Divine power which influenced them, and proved mightier than all these?

[7.] But if we do not yet convince, take this also into consideration; that had this not been so, though they were ever so well disposed, they would not have preached this Gospel in His name, but would have treated Him with abhorrence. For ye know that not even the names of those who deceive us in this sort are we willing to hear. But for what reason preached they also His name? Expecting to gain the mastery through Him? Truly the contrary was natural for them to expect; that even if they had been on the point of prevailing, they were ruining themselves by bringing forward the name of a deceiver. But if they wished to throw into the shade former events, their line was to be silent: at any rate, to contend for them earnestly was to give more and more fuel, both for serious hostility and for ridicule. From whence then did it enter their thoughts to invent such things? I say, "invent:" for what they had heard, they had forgotten. But if, when there was no fear, they forgot many things, and of some had not even a notion, (as also the Evangelist himself saith,) now that so great a danger came upon them, how could it be otherwise than that all should fleet away from them? Why speak I of words? when even their love towards their Master Himself began gradually to fade away, through fear of what was coming: wherewith also He upbraided them. For since, before this, they hung upon Him, and were asking continually, *Whither goest Thou*, but afterwards on His drawing out His discourse to so great length, and declaring the terrors which at the very time of the Cross should befall them, they just continued speechless and frozen through fear;—hear how He alleges to them the very point we are now upon, saying, *None of you asketh Me, Whither goest Thou?*



*But because I have said these things unto you, sorrow hath* <sup>1COR.1.</sup> *filled your heart*<sup>26, 27.</sup><sup>1S. John</sup> Now if the expectation that He would die and rise again was such a grief to them, had they failed <sup>16. 5, 6.</sup> to see Him after He was risen, how could it be less than annihilation? Yea, they would have been fain to sink into the depths of the earth, what with dejection at being so deceived, and what with dread of the future, feeling themselves sorely straitened.

Again: from whence came their high doctrines? For the (5.) higher points, He said, they should hear afterwards. For, saith He<sup>2</sup>, *I have many things to speak unto you, but ye* <sup>1S. John</sup> *cannot bear them now*.<sup>16.</sup> So that the things not spoken were higher. And one of the disciples was not even willing to depart with Him into Judea, when he heard of dangers, but said, *Let us also go that we may die with Him*<sup>3</sup>, taking it <sup>1S. John</sup> hardly<sup>11. 16.</sup>, because he expected that He should die. Now if that disciple, while he was with Him, expected to die, and shrunk back on that account, what must he not have expected afterwards, when parted from Him and the other disciples, and when the exposure of their shameless conduct was so complete?

[8.] Besides, what had they to say when they went forth? For the Passion indeed all the world knew: for He had been hanged on high, upon the frame of wood<sup>4</sup>, and in mid-day,<sup>4 Inq. 100.</sup> and in a chief city, and in a principal feast, and that from which it was least permitted that any one should be absent. But the Resurrection no man saw of those who were without: which was no small impediment to them in working conviction. Again, that He was buried, was the common talk of all: and that His disciples stole His body, the soldiers and all the Jews declared: but that He had risen again no one of them who were without knew by sight. Upon what ground then did they expect to convince the world? For if, while miracles were taking place, certain soldiers were per-

<sup>2</sup> S. Chrys. Hom. 62. on St. John. "All feared the violence of the Jews, but Thomas more than the rest. Wherefore also he said, *Let us also &c.* Some indeed say that he desired to share our Lord's death: but it is not so: for it is the saying rather of a coward. Yet he was not reproved. For as yet He went on bearing their weakness. Afterwards,

however, he (St. Thomas) became stronger than any, and irreproachable: this being the great wonder, that one so weak before the time of the Cross, after the Cross and faith in the Resurrection should be seen more zealous than all. So great is the power of Christ."



HOMIL. <sup>V.</sup> suaded to testify the contrary, upon what ground did these expect without miracles to do the work of preachers, and without one farthing's gain, to convince land and sea concerning the Resurrection? Again, if through desire of glory they attempted this, so much the rather would they have ascribed doctrines each one to himself, and not to Him that was dead and gone. Will it be said, men would not have believed them? And which of the two was the likelier, being preached, to win their belief? He that was apprehended and crucified, or those who had escaped the hands of the Jews?

[9.] Next, tell me with what view were they to take such a course? They did not immediately, leaving Judea, go into the Gentile cities, but went up and down within its limit. But how unless they worked miracles, did they convince? For if such they really wrought, (and work them they did,) it was God's power, whatever resulted. If on the other hand they wrought none and prevailed, much more wonderful was the event. Knew they not the Jews—tell me—and their evil practice, and their soul full of grudgings? For they

<sup>1</sup> Numb. 14. 10. comp. Exod. 17. 4. stoned even Moses<sup>1</sup>, after the sea which they had crossed on foot; after the victory, and that marvellous trophy which they raised without blood, by means of his hands, over the Egyptians who had enslaved them; after the manna; after the rocks, and the fountains of rivers which brake out thence; after ten thousand miracles in the land of Egypt, and the Red sea, and the wilderness. Jeremiah they cast into a pit, and many of the prophets they slew. Hear, for example, what saith Elias, after that fearful famine, and that marvellous rain, and the fire which he brought down from heaven, and the strange holocaust; driven, as he was, so very far, to the very extreme edge of their country: *Lord, Thy prophets they have killed, Thine altars they have digged down, and I am*

<sup>2</sup> 1 Kings 19. 10. *left alone, and they seek my life<sup>2</sup>.* Yet were not those (who were so persecuted,) disturbing any of the established rules. Tell me then, what ground had men for attending to these of whom we are speaking? For on the one hand they were meaner persons than any of the prophets; on the other, they were introducing just such novelties, as had caused the Jews to nail even their Master to the Cross.

And in another way too, it seemed less unaccountable for <sup>1Cor.1.26, 27.</sup> Christ to utter such things, than for them; for He, they might suppose, acted thus to acquire glory for Himself; but these they would have hated even the more, as waging war with them in behalf of another.

[10.] But did the laws of the Romans help them? Nay, by these they were more involved in difficulties. For their language was, *'Whosoever maketh himself a king, is not Cæsar's friend.'* <sup>18. John 19. 12.</sup> So that this alone was a sufficient impediment to them, that of Him who was accounted an usurper they were first disciples, and afterwards desirous to strengthen His cause. What in the world then set them upon rushing into such great dangers? And by what statements about Him would they be likely to gain credit? That He was crucified? That He was born of a poor Jewish woman, who had been betrothed to a Jewish carpenter? That He was of a nation hated by the world? Nay, all these things were enough not only to fail of persuading and attracting the hearers, but also to disgust every one; and especially those things which were affirmed by the tent-maker and the fisherman. Would not the disciples then bear all these things in mind? Timid natures can invent more than the reality, and such were their natures. Upon what ground then did they hope to succeed? Nay, rather, they had no hope, there being things innumerable to draw them aside, if so be that Christ had not risen.

Is it not quite plain even unto the most thoughtless, that (6.) unless they had enjoyed a copious and mighty grace, and had received pledges of the Resurrection, they would have been unable, I say not, to do and undertake these things, but even so much as to have them in their minds? For if, when there were so great hindrances in the way of their planning, I say not of their succeeding, they yet both planned and brought to effect, and accomplished things greater than all expectation, every one, I suppose, can see, that not by human power but by divine grace they wrought all things.

Now these arguments we ought to practise, not by ourselves only, but one with another; and thus also the discovery of what remains will be easier to us.

[11.] And do not, because thou art an artisan, suppose that this sort of exercise is out of your province; for even Paul was

HOMIL. a tent-maker. "Yes," saith some one, "but at that time he  
 V. was also filled with abundant grace, and out of that he spake  
 all things." Well; but before this grace he had been at the  
 feet of Gamaliel; yea, moreover, and had received the grace  
 because of this, that he shewed a mind worthy of the grace;  
 and after these things he again put his hand to his craft.  
 Let no one therefore of those who have trades be ashamed;  
 but those, who are brought up to nothing and are idle, who  
 employ many attendants, and are served by an immense  
 retinue. For to be supported by continual hard work is a sort

<sup>1</sup> φιλοσοφίας.  
 φιλίας.  
 ἀδελφίας.  
 comp.  
 Hooker,  
 E. P. v.  
 72. 18. of asceticism<sup>1</sup>. The souls of such men are clearer, and their  
 minds better strung. For the man who has nothing to do is  
 apter to say many things at random, and do many things at  
 random; and he is busy all day long about nothing, a huge  
 lethargy taking him up entirely. But he that is employed  
 will not lightly entertain in himself any thing useless, in  
 deeds, in words, or in thoughts; for his whole soul is alto-  
 gether intent upon his laborious way of livelihood. Let us  
 not therefore despise those who support themselves by the  
 labour of their own hands; but let us rather call them happy  
 on this account. For tell me, what thanks are due unto thee,  
 when after having received thy portion from thy father, thou  
 goest on not in any calling, but lavishing away the whole of  
 it at random? Knowest thou not that we shall not all have  
 to render the same account, but those who have enjoyed  
 greater licence here, a more exact one; those who were  
 afflicted with labour, or poverty, or any thing else of this  
 kind, one not so severe? And this is plain from Lazarus and  
 the rich man. For as thou, for neglecting the right use of  
 thy leisure, art justly accused; so the poor man, who having  
 full employment hath spent his remnant of time upon right  
 objects, great will be the crowns which he shall receive. But  
 dost thou urge that a soldier's duties should at least excuse  
 thee; and dost thou charge them with thy want of leisure? The  
 excuse cannot be founded in reason. For Cornelius was a  
 Centurion, yet in no way did the soldier's belt impair his strict-  
 rule of life. But thou, when thou art keeping holiday with  
 dancers and players, and making entire waste of thy life upon  
 the stage, never thinkest of excusing thyself from such engage-  
 ments by the necessity of military service, or the fear of rulers:

but when it is the Church to which we call you, then occur <sup>1COR.1.</sup> these endless impediments. <sup>26, 27.</sup>

And what wilt thou say in that day, when thou seest the flame, and the rivers of fire, and the chains never to be broken; and shalt hear the gnashing of teeth? Who shall stand up for thee in that day, when thou shalt see him that hath laboured with his own hand, and hath lived uprightly, enjoying all glory, but thyself, who art now in silken robes, and steaming with perfumes, in incurable woe? What good will thy wealth and superfluity do thee? And the artisan,—what harm will his poverty do him?

Therefore that we may not suffer then, let us fear what is said now, and let all our time of occupation be spent in employment on things which are really indispensable. For so, having propitiated God in regard of our past sins, and adding good deeds for the future, we shall be able to attain unto the kingdom of heaven: through the favour and loving-kindness, &c. &c.

## HOMILY VI.

---

1 COR. ii. 1, 2.

*And I, brethren, when I came to you, came not with excellency of speech, or of wisdom, declaring unto you the testimony of God; for I determined not to know any thing among you, save Jesus Christ, and Him crucified.*

NOTHING was ever more prepared for combat than the spirit of Paul; or rather, I should say, not his spirit, (for he was not himself the inventor of these things,) but, nothing was ever equal to the grace working within him, which overcometh all things. For sufficient indeed is what had been said before to cast down the pride of the boasters about wisdom; or rather, though it were but a part of what had been said. But to enhance the splendour of the prize, he contends anew for the points which he had been affirming; trampling upon the prostrate foe. Look at it in this way. He hath brought forward the prophecy which saith, *I will destroy the wisdom of the wise*; he hath shewn the wisdom of God, in that by means of what seemed to be foolishness, He had destroyed the philosophy of the Gentiles; he hath shewn that *the foolishness of God is wiser than men*; he hath shewn that not only did He teach by untaught persons, but also chose untaught persons to learn of Him. Now he sheweth that both the thing itself which was preached, and the manner of preaching it, were enough to stagger people; and yet did not stagger them. As thus: "not only," saith he, "are the disciples uneducated, but I myself also, who am the preacher."

Therefore he saith, *And I, brethren*, (again he useth the word "brethren," to smoothen down the harshness of what he saith,) *came not with excellency of speech, declaring unto you the testimony of God.* "What then? tell me, hadst thou chosen to come *with excellency*, wouldest thou



have been able?" "I, indeed, had I chosen, should not have <sup>1</sup>Cor.2. been able; but Christ if He had chosen, was able. But He <sup>1, 2.</sup> would not; in order that He might render His trophy more brilliant." Wherefore also in a former passage, shewing that it was His work which had been done, His will that the word should be preached in an unlearned manner, he said, *For Christ sent me not to baptize, but to preach the Gospel; not with wisdom of words.* But far greater, yea infinitely greater, than Paul's willing this, is the fact that Christ willed it.

"I do not therefore," saith he, "by display of eloquence, neither armed with arguments from without, do I declare the testimony of God." He saith not *the preaching*, but *the testimony of God*; which word was itself sufficient to withhold him. For he went about preaching death: and for this reason he added, *for I determined to know nothing among you, save Jesus Christ, and Him crucified.* This was the meaning he meant to convey, that he is altogether destitute of the wisdom which is without; as indeed he was saying above, *I came not with excellency of speech*: for that he might have possessed this also is plain; for he whose garments raised the dead, and whose shadow expelled diseases<sup>b</sup>, much more was his soul capable of receiving eloquence. For this is among things which may be taught: but the former transcendeth all art. He then who knows things beyond the reach of art, much more must he have had strength for lesser things. But Christ permitted not; for it was not expedient. Rightly therefore he saith, *For I determined not to know any thing*: "for I too for my part have just the same will as Christ."

And to me it seems that he speaks to them in a lower tone even than to any others, in order to repress their pride. Thus, the expression, *I determined to know nothing*, was spoken in contradistinction to the wisdom which is without. "For I came not weaving syllogisms nor sophisms, nor saying unto you any thing else than *Christ is crucified*. They indeed have ten thousand things to say, and concerning ten thousand things they speak, winding out long courses of words, framing

<sup>a</sup> *et magniter*, the martyrdom, or testimony by death: see 1 Tim. 2. 6.

<sup>b</sup> Here again what is written of St.

Peter is taken as if written of St. Paul: see Acts 19. 12; 5. 15.

HOMIL. calculations and argumentations, compounding sophisms  
 VI. without end. But I came unto you saying no other thing  
 than *Christ is crucified*, and all of them I outstripped: which  
 is a sign, such as no words can express, of the power of Him  
 whom I preach."

[2.] Ver. 3. *And I was with you in weakness, and in fear,  
 and in much trembling.*

This again is another topic: for not only are the believers  
 unlearned persons; not only is he that speaketh unlearned;  
 not only is the manner of the teaching of an unlearned cast  
 throughout; not only was the thing preached of itself enough  
 to stagger people; (for the cross and death were the message  
 brought;) but together with these there were also other  
 hindrances, the dangers, and the plots, and the daily fear,  
 and the being hunted about. For the word *weakness*, with  
 him in many places stands for the persecutions: as also else-  
 where. *My weakness which I had in my flesh ye did not*

<sup>1</sup> Gal. 4. *set at nought*<sup>1</sup>: and again, *If I must needs glory, I will glory  
 13, 14. of the things which concern mine infirmity*<sup>2</sup>. What [infirmity]?

<sup>2</sup> 2 Cor. 11. 30. *The governor under Aretas the king kept the city of the*

<sup>3</sup> v. 32. *Damascenes, desirous to apprehend me*<sup>3</sup>. And again, *Where-*

<sup>4</sup> 2 Cor. 12. 10. *fore I take pleasure in infirmities*<sup>4</sup>: then, saying in what,  
 he added, *In reproaches, in necessities, in distresses.* And

here he makes the same statement; for having said, *And I was  
 in weakness*, &c. he did not stop at this point, but explain-  
 ing the word *weakness*, makes mention of his dangers. He  
 adds again, *and in fear, and much trembling, I was with you.*

"How sayest thou? Did Paul also fear dangers?"  
 He did fear, and dreaded them excessively; for though  
 he was Paul, yet he was a man. But this is no charge  
 against Paul, but the infirmity of human nature; and it  
 is to the praise of his fixed purpose of mind, that when  
 he even dreaded death and stripes, he did nothing wrong  
 because of this fear. So that they who assert that he  
 feared not stripes, not only do not honour him, but they  
 rather abridge him greatly of his praises. For if he feared  
 not, what endurance or what self-restraint was there in  
 bearing the dangers? I, for my part, on this account admire  
 him; because being in fear, and not simply in *fear*, but even  
 in *trembling*, at his perils, he so ran as ever to keep his

crown; and gave not in for any danger, in his task of purging <sup>1COR.2.</sup>  
out<sup>6</sup> the world, and every where both by sea and land sowing <sup>3-5.</sup>  
the Gospel.

[3.] Ver. 4. *And my speech and my preaching was not with enticing words of man's wisdom:* that is, had not the wisdom from without. Now if neither the doctrine preached had any thing subtle, and they that were called were unlearned, and he that preached, of the same description, and thereto was added persecution, and trembling, and fear; tell me how did they overcome? By divine power. And this is why, having said, *My speech and my preaching was not with enticing words of man's wisdom*, he added, *but in demonstration of the Spirit and power.*

Dost thou perceive how *the foolishness of God is wiser* (2.) *than men, and the weakness stronger?* They for their part, being unlearned, and preaching such a Gospel, in their chains and persecution overcame their persecutors. Whereby? was it not by their furnishing that evidence which is of the Spirit? For this indeed is confessed demonstration. For who, tell me, after he had seen dead men rising to life, and devils cast out, could have helped admitting it?

But seeing that there are also deceiving wonders, such as those of sorcerers, he removes this suspicion also. For he said not simply *of power*, but first, *of the Spirit*, and then, *of power*: signifying that the things done were spiritual.

You see, it is no disparagement, that the Gospel was not declared by means of wisdom; rather it is a very great ornament. For this, it will be allowed, is the clearest token of its being divine, and having its roots from above, out of the heavens. Wherefore he added also,

Ver. 5. *That your faith should not stand in the wisdom of men, but in the power of God.*

Seest thou how clearly in every way he hath set forth the vast gain of this *ignorance*, and the great loss of this *wisdom*? For the latter made void the Cross, but the former proclaimed the power of God:—the latter, besides their failing to discover any of those things which they most needed, set them

<sup>6</sup> *Isotolagion*: there seems to be an allusion to the classical fable about Hercules, who is represented as "purging the world" of monsters and oppressors; Soph. Trach. 1078. ed. Musgrave.



HOMIL.  
VI. also upon boasting of themselves; the former, besides their receiving the truth, led them also to be joyful in God. Again, wisdom would have persuaded many to suspect that the doctrine was of man: this clearly demonstrated it to be divine, and to have come down from heaven. Now when demonstration is made by wisdom of words, even the more ordinary sort oftentimes overcome the better, having more skill in words; and falsehood outstrips the truth. But in this case it is not so: for neither doth the Spirit enter into an unclean soul, nor, having entered in, can It ever be subdued; even though all possible talent of reasoning assail It. For the demonstration by works and signs, is far more evident than that by words.

[4.] But one of them may say perhaps, "If the Gospel is to prevail, and hath no need of words, lest the Cross be made of none effect; for what reason are signs withholden now?" For what reason? Speakest thou in unbelief, and not allowing that they were done even in the times of the Apostles, or dost thou truly seek to know? If in unbelief, I will first make my stand against this. I say then, If signs were not done at that time, how did they, chased, and persecuted, and trembling, and in chains, and having become the common enemies of the world, and exposed to all as a mark for ill usage, and with nothing of their own to allure, neither speech, nor show, nor wealth, nor city, nor nation, nor family, nor pursuit<sup>1</sup>, nor glory, nor any such like thing; but with all things contrary, ignorance, meanness, poverty, hatred, enmity, and setting themselves against whole commonwealths, and with such a message to declare; how, I say, did they work conviction? For both the precepts brought much labour, and the doctrines, many dangers. And they that heard and were to obey, had been brought up in luxury, and drunkenness, and in great wickedness. Tell me then, how did they convince? Whence had they their credibility? For, as I said before, If without signs they wrought conviction, far greater does the wonder appear. Do not then urge the fact, that signs are not done now, as a proof that they were not done then. For as then they were profitably wrought; so now profitably are they no longer wrought.

Not that it necessarily followeth, from discourse being the

only instrument of conviction, that now the "preaching" is <sup>1 COR. 2.</sup> by "wisdom." For both they, who from the beginning <sup>5.</sup> sowed the word, were unprofessional<sup>1</sup> and unlearned, and <sup>ἰδιώται.</sup> spake nothing of themselves; but what things they received from God, these they distributed to the world: and we ourselves at this time introduce no inventions of our own; but the things which from them we have received, we speak unto all. And not even now persuade we by argumentation; but from the Divine Scriptures, and from the miracles done at that time, we produce the proof of what we say. On the other hand, even they at that time persuaded not by signs alone, but also by discoursing. And the signs, and the testimonies out of the Old Scriptures, not the cleverness of the things said, made their words appear more powerful.

[5.] How then, you will say, was it expedient that signs should be then, and now inexpedient? Let us suppose a case, (for as yet I am contending against the Greek, and therefore I speak hypothetically of what must certainly come to pass,) let us, I say, suppose a case; and let the unbeliever endure to believe our affirmations, though it be only just for the time of conflict: for instance, That Christ will come. When then<sup>2</sup> <sup>πᾶν</sup> Christ shall come, and all the angels with Him, and be <sup>ἀπὸ</sup> manifested as God, and all things made subject unto Him; <sup>συνδρό-</sup> <sup>μῳ.</sup> will not even the Greek believe? It is quite plain that he will also fall down and worship, and confess Him God, though his stubbornness exceed all reckoning. For who, at (3.) sight of the heavens opened, and Him coming upon the clouds, and all the congregation of the powers above spread around Him, and rivers of fire coming on, and all standing by and trembling, will not fall down before Him and believe Him God? Tell me, then; shall that adoration and knowledge be accounted unto the Greek for faith? No, on no account. And why not? Because this is not faith. For necessity hath done this, and the evidence of the things seen; and it is not of choice, but by the vastness of the spectacle the powers of the mind are dragged along. It follows, that by how much the more evident and overpowering the course of events, by so much is the part of faith abridged. For this reason miracles are not done now.

And that this is the truth, hear what He saith unto

## 72 Signs in one Sense, are wrought under the Gospel:

HOMIL. Thomas<sup>1</sup>; *Blessed are they who have not seen, and yet have*  
 VI. *believed.* Therefore, in proportion to the evidence wherewith

1 S. John  
 20. 29. the miracle is set forth, is the reward of faith lessened. So  
 that if now also miracles were wrought, the same thing would  
 ensue. For that then we shall no longer know Him by faith,  
 Paul hath shewn, saying, *For now we walk by faith, not by*  
 2 S. Cor.  
 5. 7. *sight*<sup>2</sup>. As at that time, although thou believe, it shall not  
 not in  
 the re-  
 ceived  
 text. be imputed unto thee, because the thing is so palpable; so  
 also now, supposing that such miracles were done as were  
 formerly. For when we admit things which in no degree  
 and in no way can be made out by reasoning, then it is faith.  
 It is for this that hell is threatened, but is not shewn: for if  
 it were shewn, the same would again ensue.

[6.] Besides, if signs be what thou seekest after, even now  
 thou mayest see signs, although not of the same kind; the  
 predictions without end, and on an endless variety of subjects:  
 2 φιλαν  
 φαν. the conversion of the world, the self-denying<sup>3</sup> course of the  
 Barbarians, the change from savage customs, the greater  
 intenseness of piety. "What predictions?" you will say.  
 "For all the things just mentioned were written after the  
 present state of things had begun." When? Where? By  
 whom? Tell me. How many years ago? Will you have fifty,  
 or an hundred? They had not then, a hundred years ago,  
 any thing written at all. How then did the world retain the  
 Creed, and all the rest, since memory would not be sufficient?

<sup>4</sup> ἀνιστα-  
 λωμένη. How knew they that Peter was crucified<sup>4</sup>? How could it  
 have entered the minds of men who came after the events  
 had taken place, to foretel, for instance, that the Gospel  
 should be preached in every part of the whole world? that  
 the Jewish institutions should cease, and never return again?  
 And they who gave up their lives for the Gospel, how would  
 they have endured to see the Gospel adulterated? And how  
 would the writers have won credit, miracles having ceased?  
 And how could the writings have penetrated to the region of  
 Barbarians, and of Indians, and unto the very bounds of the  
 ocean, if the relators had not been worthy of credit? The  
 writers too, who were they? When, how, and why, did they  
 write at all? Was it to assume glory to themselves? Why  
 then inscribed they the books with other men's names?  
 "Why, from a wish to recommend the doctrine." As true,



or as false? For if you say, they stuck to it, as being false; <sup>1Cor.2.</sup> their joining it at all was out of all likelihood: but if as being <sup>5.</sup> truth, there was no need of inventions, such as you speak of. And besides, the prophecies are of such a kind, as that even until now time has been unable to force aside the predicted course of things<sup>1</sup>: for the destruction indeed of Jerusalem <sup>1</sup> *ὡς μὲν* took place many years ago; but there are also other pre- <sup>2</sup> *ἰσχυροῦς* dictions which extend along from that time until His <sup>3</sup> *ἡμεῖς τὸ* coming; which examine as you please: for instance, this, *I am with you always, even unto the end of the world*<sup>2</sup>: and, <sup>4</sup> *ὡς ἔστιν* *Upon this Rock I will build My Church, and the gates of hell* <sup>5</sup> *ἡμέτερον* *shall not prevail against it*<sup>3</sup>: and, *This Gospel shall be* <sup>6</sup> *ἡμεῖς* *preached unto all nations*<sup>4</sup>: and that which the woman, <sup>7</sup> *ὡς ἔστιν* which was an harlot, did<sup>5</sup>: and many others more than <sup>8</sup> *ὡς ἔστιν* these. Whence then the truth of this prediction? at least, if it were a forgery. How did *the gates of hell not prevail against the Church*? How is *Christ with us*? For had He not been *with us*, the Church would not have been victorious. How was the Gospel spread abroad in every part of the world? They also who have spoken against us are enough to testify the antiquity of the books; I mean such as Celsus<sup>6</sup> and he of Batanea<sup>7</sup>, who came after him. For they, I suppose, were not speaking against books composed after their time.

[7.] And besides, there is the whole world, which with one consent hath received the Gospel. Now there could not have been so great agreement from one end of the earth to the other, unless it had been the Grace of the Spirit; but the authors of the forgery would have been quickly found out. Neither could so great excellencies have originated from

\* Vid. S. Matt. 26. 13. and comp. S. Luke 7. 37. which two texts St. Chrys. apparently considers as relating to the same person: but in his commentary on St. Matthew 26. 6. he distinctly says they were not the same. The Fathers are divided on this point. Tertullian (de Pudic. c. 11.) and St. Augustine (de Consensu Evangelist. ii. 79.) consider them as the same. St. Augustine adding, that she was led to repeat the action with circumstances that shewed her increased perfection: Ambrosiaster (in loc.) leaves the matter

doubtful.

<sup>6</sup> Celsus, the Epicurean philosopher, against whom Origen wrote, about A.D. 170.

\* Porphyry; so called also by St. Jerome, in the Preface to his Commentary on Galatians: where the Editor's conjecture is, that the name was that of Porphyry's residence or birth, but that it was also a term of reproach, alluding to the fat bulls of Basan, Ps. 22. 12. He is commonly called a Tyrian, but they suppose that Batanea, which is in Syria, was a colony of Tyre.

HOMIL. inventions and falsehood. Dost thou not see the whole world  
 VI. coming in; error extinguished; the austere wisdom<sup>1</sup> of the  
 I φιλοσοφίας. monks shining brighter than the sun; the choirs of the virgins;  
 the piety among Barbarians; all men serving under one yoke?  
 For neither by us alone were these things foretold, but also  
 from the beginning, by the Prophets. For you will not, I  
 trow, cavil at their predictions also: for the books are with  
 their enemies; yea with the Greeks; through the zeal of  
 certain men they have been transferred into the Greek tongue.  
 Many things then do these also foretel concerning these  
 matters, shewing that He was God who should come among  
 us.

- (4.) [8.] Why then do not all believe now? Because things have  
 degenerated: and for this we are to blame. (For from hence  
 the discourse is addressed unto us also.) For surely not even  
 then did they trust to signs alone, but by the mode of life  
 also many of the converts were attracted. For, *Let your  
 light so shine before men*, saith He, *that they may see your*

<sup>2</sup>S. Mat. 5. 16. *good works, and glorify your Father which is in heaven*<sup>1</sup>.  
 And, *They were all of one heart and one soul, neither said any  
 man that aught of the things which he possessed was his own,  
 but they had all things common; and distribution was made*

<sup>3</sup>Acts 4. 32, 36. *unto every man, according as he had need*<sup>3</sup>; and they lived  
 an angelic life. And if the same were done now, we should  
 convert the whole world, even without miracles. But in the  
 mean while, let those who will be saved attend to the Scrip-  
 tures; for they shall find there both these noble doings, and  
 those which are greater than these. For it may be added,  
 that the Teachers themselves surpassed the deeds of the  
 others; living in hunger, in thirst, and nakedness. But we  
 are desirous of enjoying great luxury, and rest, and ease; not  
 so they: they cried aloud, *Even unto the present hour we both  
 hunger, and thirst, and are naked, and are buffeted, and  
 have no certain dwelling place*<sup>4</sup>. And one ran from Jeru-

<sup>4</sup>1 Cor. 4. 11. *salem unto Illyricum*<sup>5</sup>, and another unto the country of the

<sup>5</sup>Rom. 15. 19. *Indians, and another unto that of the Moors, and this to one  
 part of the world, that to another. Whereas we have not the  
 courage to depart even out of our own country; but seek for  
 luxurious living and splendid houses, and all other super-  
 fluities. For which of us ever was famished for the word of*

God's sake? Which ever abode in a wilderness? Which ever <sup>1Cor.2.</sup> set out on a distant peregrination? Which of our teachers <sup>6.</sup> hath lived by the labour of his hands, to assist others? Which hath endured death daily? Hence it is that they also who are with us have become slothful. For suppose that one saw soldiers and generals struggling with hunger, and thirst, and death, and with all dreadful things, and bearing cold and dangers and all like lions, and so prospering; then afterwards, relaxing that strictness, and becoming enervated, and fond of wealth, and addicted to business and bargains, and then overcome by their enemies; it were extreme folly to seek for the cause of all this. Now let us reason thus in our own case and that of our ancestors; for we too have become weaker than all, and are nailed down unto this present life.

And if one be found having a vestige of the ancient wisdom, leaving the cities and the market-places, and the society of the world, and the ordering of others, he betakes himself to the mountains: and if one ask the reason of that retirement, he invents a plea which cannot meet with allowance. For, saith he, "lest I perish too, and the edge of my goodness be taken off, I start aside." Now how much better were it for thee to become less keen, and to gain others, than abiding on high to neglect thy perishing brethren?

When however the one sort are careless about virtue, and those, who do regard it, withdraw themselves far from our ranks, how are we to subdue our enemies? For even if miracles were wrought now, who would be persuaded? Or who of those without would give heed unto us, our iniquity being so on the surface? For so it is, that our upright living seems unto the many the more trustworthy argument of the two: miracles admitting of a bad construction on the part of obstinate and bad men: whereas a pure life will have power to stop the mouth of the devil himself, yea, and much more than so.

[9.] These things I say, both to governors and governed; and, before all others, unto myself; to the end that the way of life shewn forth in us may be truly admirable, that taking our stations, we may look down on all things present; may despise wealth, and not despise hell; overlook glory, and not overlook salvation; endure toil and labour here, lest we fall into punishment there. Thus let us wage war with the

**HOMIL.** Greeks ; thus let us take them captive, with a captivity better  
**VI.** than liberty.

But while we say these things without intermission, over and over, they are realized very seldom. Howbeit, be they realized or not, it is right to employ such topics by way of continual admonition. For if some are engaged in deceiving by their fair speech, so much the more is it the duty of those who allure back unto the truth, not to grow weary of speaking what is profitable. Again: if the deceivers make use of so many contrivances—spending as they do money, and applying arguments, and undergoing dangers, and making a parade of their patronage—much more should we, who are winning men from deceit, endure both dangers, and deaths, and all things ; that we may gain both ourselves and others, and become to our enemies irresistible, and so obtain the promised blessings, through the grace and loving-kindness, &c.



## HOMILY VII.

---

1 COR. ii. 6, 7.

*Howbeit, we speak wisdom among them that are perfect, yet not the wisdom of this world, nor of the princes of this world, that come to nought; but we speak the wisdom of God in a mystery, even the hidden wisdom, which God ordained before the world unto our glory.*

DARKNESS seems to be more suitable than light to those that are diseased in their eyesight: wherefore they betake themselves by preference to some room that is thoroughly shaded over. This also is the case with the wisdom which is spiritual. As the wisdom which is of God, seemed to be foolishness unto those without: so their own wisdom, being foolishness indeed, was accounted by them wisdom. The result has been, just as if a man having skill in navigation, were to promise that without a ship or sails he would pass over a boundless tract of the sea, and then endeavour by reasonings to prove that the thing is possible; but some other person, ignorant of it all, committing himself to a ship and a steersman, and to sailors, were thus to sail in safety. For the seeming ignorance of this man is wiser than the wisdom of the other. For excellent is the art of managing a ship; but when it makes too great professions, it is a kind of folly. And so is every art which is not contented with its own proper limits. Just so the wisdom which is without, [were wisdom indeed\*,] if it had had the benefit of the Spirit. But since it trusted all to itself, and supposed that it wanted none of that help, it became foolishness, although it seemed to be wisdom. Wherefore having first exposed it by the facts, then and not till then he calls it foolishness; and having first called the wisdom of God folly, according to their reckoning, then and not till then he shews it to be wisdom. (For after our proofs, not before, we are best able to abash the gainsayers.)

\* There seems to be a word or two been supplied by conjecture in the wanting in the text here, which has translation.



HOMIL. His words then are, *Howbeit, we speak wisdom among them*  
 VII. *which are perfect*: for when I, accounted as I am foolish, and a preacher of follies, get the better of the wise, I overcome wisdom, not by foolishness, but by a more perfect wisdom; a wisdom too so ample, and so much greater, that the other appears foolishness. Wherefore having before called it by a name such as they named it at that time, and having both proved his victory from the facts, and shewn the extreme foolishness of the other side: he thenceforth bestows upon it its right name, saying, *Howbeit, we speak wisdom among them that are perfect*. Wisdom is the name he gives to the Gospel, to the method of salvation, the being saved by the Cross. *The perfect*, are those who believe. For indeed they are *perfect*, who know all human things, that they are utterly helpless, and who overlook them from conviction, that by such they are profited nothing: such as were the true believers.

*But not the wisdom of this world*. For where is the use of the wisdom which is without, terminating here, and proceeding no further, and not even here able to profit its possessors?

Now by the *princes of the world*, here, he means not certain demons, as some suspect<sup>b</sup>, but those in authority, those in power, those who esteem the thing worth contending about, philosophers, rhetoricians, and writers of speeches<sup>1</sup>. For these were the dominant sort, and often became leaders of the people.

*Rulers of this world* he calls them, because beyond this present world their dominion extends not. Wherefore he adds further, *which come to nought*; disparaging it both on its own account, and from those who wield it. For having shewn that it is false, that it is foolish, that it is unable to discover any thing, that it is weak, he shews moreover that it is but of short duration.

[2.] *But we speak the wisdom of God in a mystery*. What mystery? For surely Christ saith, <sup>a</sup> *What ye have heard in the ear, proclaim upon the housetops*. How then does he call it a mystery? Because that neither angel nor archangel, nor

<sup>a</sup> S. Mat.  
10. 27.  
ἐν τῷ  
αὐτί.  
rec. text  
ἀκούει.

<sup>b</sup> e. g. Origen, in Lament. 4. 11; in Ezek. Hom. 13. §. 1; Com. in S. Matt. §. 125; S. Athanasius on Ps. 108. (109. Heb.) v. 15. t. i. 1194. Ed. Bened.

The Author of the Questions and Answers published with S. Justin Martyr's works agrees with S. Chrysostom; see qu. 108, 170. Why may not both be right?

any other created power knew of it before it actually took place. Wherefore he saith, <sup>1</sup>*That now unto the principalities* <sup>1</sup>*and powers in heavenly places might be known by the Church* <sup>1</sup>*the manifold wisdom of God.* And this hath God done in honour to us, so that they not without us should hear the mysteries. For we too ourselves, whomsoever we make our friends, use to speak of this as a sure proof of friendship towards them, that we tell our secrets to no one in preference to them. Let those hear, who make a sort of triumphal show of the secrets of the Gospel, and unto all indiscriminately display the pearls and the doctrine, and who cast the holy things unto dogs, and swine, and useless reasonings. For the Mystery wants no adornment; but just what the fact is, that it is simply declared to be. Since it will not be a mystery, divine, and whole in all its parts, when thou addest any thing to it of thyself also.

And in another sense too a mystery is so called; because we believe, not the very things which we see, but some things we see and others believe. For such is the nature of our Mysteries. I for instance feel differently upon these subjects from an unbeliever. I hear, *Christ was crucified*; and forthwith I admire His loving-kindness unto men: the other hears, and esteems it weakness. I hear, *He became a servant*; and I wonder at the care which He hath had for us: the other hears, and counts it dishonour. I hear, *He died*; and am astonished at His might, that being in death He was not holden, but even broke the bands of death: the other hears, and surmises it to be helplessness. He hearing of the Resurrection, saith, the thing is a legend; I, aware of the facts which demonstrate it, fall down and worship the economy of God. He hearing of a Laver, counts it merely as water: but I behold not simply the thing which is seen, but the purification of the soul which is by the Spirit. He considers only that my body hath been washed; but I have believed that the soul also hath become both pure and holy; and I count it the Sepulchre, the Resurrection, the Sanctification, the Righteousness, the Redemption, the Adoption, the Inheritance, the Kingdom of heaven, the plenary Effusion<sup>2</sup> of the Spirit. For not by the sight do I judge of the things that

<sup>2</sup> *ἐκκένωσις*. vid. Conc. Ant. A.D. 270. ap. Euseb. E. H. vii. 30.

HOMIL. appear, but by the eyes of the mind. I hear of the "Body  
VII. of Christ:" in one sense I understand the expression, in another sense the unbeliever.

- (2.) And just as children, looking on their books, know not the meaning of the letters, neither know what they see; yea more, if even a grown man be unskilful in letters, the same thing will befall him; but the skilful will find much meaning stored up in the letters, even complete lives and histories: and an epistle in the hands of one that is unskilful, will be accounted but paper and ink; but he that knows how to read will both hear a voice, and hold converse with the absent, and will reply whatsoever he chooses by means of writing: so it is also in regard of the Mystery. Unbelievers, albeit they hear, seem not to hear: but the faithful, having the skill which is by the Spirit, behold the meaning of the things stored therein. For instance, it is this very thing that Paul signified, when he said, that even now, the word preached is hidden: for *unto them that perish*, he saith, *it is hidden*<sup>1</sup>.

- <sup>1</sup> 2 Cor. 4. 3. In another point of view, the word indicates also the Gospel's being contrary to all expectation. By no other name is Scripture wont to call what happens beyond all hope, and above all thought of men. Wherefore also in another place, *My mystery is for Me*<sup>c</sup>, and for Mine. And <sup>c</sup> c. 15. Paul again<sup>a</sup>, *Behold, I shew you a mystery: we shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed*.

- [3.] And though it be every where preached, still is it a mystery; for as we have been commanded, *what things we have heard in the ear, to speak upon the house tops*, so have we been also charged, *not to give the holy things unto dogs, nor yet to cast our pearls before swine*<sup>2</sup>. For some <sup>2</sup> S. Mat. 7. 6. are carnal and do not understand: others have a veil upon their hearts, and do not see: wherefore that is above all things a mystery, which every where is preached, but is not known of those who have not a right mind; and is revealed

<sup>c</sup> This is the rendering, in some old Greek version, though not in the LXX, of the clause in Isaiah 24. 16, which in our authorized version runs, "My leanness, my leanness; woe unto me!"

<sup>a</sup> "Mystery" stands for the Chaldee מֵסֵת "a secret:" which meaning the Tar-

gum of Jonathan gives to the word in this place: as do the Vulgate, and the Syriac according to Walton. The received reading of the LXX may be explained as a paraphrase of this rendering. The words, "*and for mine*," seem added by St. Chrysostom.



not by wisdom, but by the Holy Ghost, so far as is possible <sup>1</sup>Cor.2.6-8. for us to receive it. And for this cause a man would not err, who in this respect also should entitle it a mystery, the utterance whereof is forbidden<sup>1</sup>. For not even unto us, the<sup>1</sup> ~~un-~~ faithful, hath been committed entire certainty and exactness. <sup>per.</sup> Wherefore Paul also said<sup>2</sup>, *We know in part, and we prophesy in part: for now we see through a glass, darkly; but then face to face.*

[4.] For this cause he saith, *We speak wisdom in a mystery, the hidden wisdom which God ordained before the worlds unto our glory.* *Hidden:* that is, that no one of the powers above hath learnt it before us; neither do the many know it now.

*Which He before ordained unto our glory:* and yet, elsewhere he saith, *unto His own glory*, for He considereth our salvation to be His own glory: even as also He calleth it His own riches<sup>3</sup>, though He be Himself the riches of good<sup>3</sup> <sup>vid.</sup> men, and need nothing in order that He may be rich. <sup>Eph. 3. 8.</sup>

*Fore-ordained*, he saith, pointing out the care had of us. For so those are accounted most both to honour and to love us, whosoever shall have laid themselves out to do us good from the very beginning: which indeed is what fathers do in the case of children. For although they give not their goods until afterwards, yet from the first and from the beginning they had predetermined this. And this is what Paul is earnest to point out now; that God always loved us, even from the beginning, and when as yet we were not. For unless He had loved us, He would not have fore-ordained our riches. Consider not then the enmity which hath come between; for more ancient than that was the friendship.

As to the words, *before the worlds*<sup>4</sup>, they mean eternal. For<sup>4</sup> <sup>αὐτὸς ὢν ἀἰώνως.</sup> in another place also He saith thus, *Who is before the worlds.* The Son also, if you mark it, will be found to be eternal in the same sense. For concerning Him he saith<sup>5</sup>, *By Him He* <sup>5</sup>Heb. 1. *made the worlds;* which is equivalent to subsistence before<sup>2</sup> the worlds; for it is plain that the maker is before the things which are made.

[5.] Ver. 8. *Which none of the princes of this world knew; for had they known, they would not have crucified the Lord of Glory.*

Now if they knew not, how said He unto them<sup>6</sup>, *Ye both* <sup>6</sup>S. John 7. 23.

HOMIL. *know Me, and ye know whence I am!* Indeed, concerning  
 VII. Pilate, the Scripture saith, he knew not<sup>1</sup>. It is likely also

<sup>1</sup> chd. S. John 19. that neither did Herod know. These, one might say, are  
 9. called the rulers of this world: but if a man were to say that

this is spoken concerning the Jews also and the Priests, he

would not err. For to these also He saith<sup>2</sup>, *Ye neither know*  
<sup>2</sup> S. John 8. 19. *Me nor My Father*. How then saith He a little before, *Ye*

*both know Me, and ye know whence I am?* However, the  
 manner of this way of knowledge and of that, hath already

been declared in the Gospel<sup>3</sup>; and, not to be continually  
<sup>3</sup> Hom. 49. on S. John. handling the same topic, thither do we refer our readers.

(3.) What then? was their sin in the matter of the Cross for-

given them? For He surely did say, *Forgive them*<sup>4</sup>. If they  
<sup>4</sup> Luke 23. 34. repented, it was forgiven. For even he who set countless

assailants on Stephen, and persecuted the Church, even Paul,  
 became the champion of the Church. Just so then, those

others also, on their choosing to repent, had forgiveness: and  
 this indeed Paul himself meant, when he exclaims<sup>5</sup>, *I say*

*then, have they stumbled that they should fall? God forbid.*  
<sup>5</sup> Rom. 11. 11, 12. *I say then, hath God cast away His people whom He fore-*

*knew? God forbid.* Then, to shew that their repentance

was not precluded, he brought forward as a decisive proof  
 his own conversion, saying, *For I also am an Israelite.*

As to the words, *They knew not*; they seem to me to be  
 said here not concerning Christ's person, but only concerning

the dispensation, hidden in that event<sup>6</sup>; as if he had said, what  
<sup>6</sup> αὐτοὶ οὐκ ᾔδεισαν, ὅτι οὕτως ἔσται ἡ σῶσις τοῦ κόσμου.

meant "the death," and the "Cross," they knew not. For in

that passage also He said not, "They know not Me," but  
<sup>7</sup> οὐκ ᾔδεισαν ὅτι οὕτως ἔσται ἡ σῶσις τοῦ κόσμου.

*They know not what they do*; that is, the dispensation which

is being accomplished, and the mystery, they are ignorant of.

For they knew not that the Cross is to shine forth so brightly;

that it is made the Salvation of the world, and the Recon-

ciliation of God unto men; that their city should be taken;

and that they should suffer the extreme of wretchedness.

By the name of *wisdom*, he calls both Christ, and the

Cross, and the Gospel. Opportunely also he called Him,

*The Lord of glory*. For seeing that the Cross is counted a

matter of ignominy, he signifies that the Cross was great

dispensation: and the wisdom which was without turned out <sup>1COR.2.</sup>  
an obstacle, not to the former only, but to the latter also. <sup>9.</sup>

[6.] Ver. 9. *But as it is written, Eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man, the things which God hath prepared for them that love Him.*

Where are these words written? Why, it is said to have been *written*, then also, when it is set down, not in words, but in actual events, as in the historical books<sup>c</sup>; or when the same meaning is expressed, but not in the very same words, as in this place: for the words, *They to whom it was not told about Him shall see, and they who have not heard shall understand*<sup>d</sup>, are the same with *the things which eye* <sup>1Isa.52.</sup>  
*hath not seen, nor ear heard.* Either then this is his meaning, <sup>15,Sept.</sup>  
or probably it was actually written in some books, and the <sup>Comp.</sup>  
copies have perished. For indeed many books were de- <sup>Rom.15.</sup>  
stroyed, and [but] a few were preserved entire even in the <sup>21; Is.</sup>  
first captivity. And this is plain, in those which remain to <sup>64. 4.</sup>  
us. For the Apostle saith<sup>2</sup>, *From Samuel and the Prophets* <sup>Acts</sup>  
*which follow after, they have all spoken concerning Him:* <sup>3. 24.</sup>  
and these their words are not entirely extant. Paul however, as being learned in the law, and speaking by the Spirit, would of course know all with accuracy. And why speak I of the captivity? Even before the captivity many books had disappeared; the Jews having as it were suffered shipwreck even to the last degree of impiety: and this is plain from the end of the fourth book of Kings<sup>3</sup>, for the book of Deuteronomy <sup>32Kings</sup>  
could hardly be found, having been buried somewhere in a <sup>22. 8.</sup>  
dunghill<sup>4</sup>. <sup>2Chron.</sup>  
<sup>34. 14.</sup>

And besides, there are in many places double prophecies, easy to be apprehended by the wiser sort; from which we may find out many of the things which are obscure.

[7.] What then, hath *eye not seen what God hath prepared*? No. For who among men saw the things which were about to be dispensed? Hath then *ear not heard? neither hath it entered into the heart of man?* How is this? For if the Prophets spoke of it, how saith he, *Ear hath not heard,*

<sup>c</sup> Of which, perhaps, *He shall be called a Nazarene*, S. Matt. 2. 23. is an instance: although that indeed is not said to be "written," but *spoken by the Prophets*.

<sup>d</sup> Two circumstances in this account appear to be traditional: that the book found was that of Deuteronomy; and that the place where it was found was a dunghill.

84 *The Gospel, a Secret, though revealed to the Prophets:*

HOMIL. VII. *neither hath it entered into the heart of man?* It did not enter; for not of these alone is he speaking, but of the whole human race. What then? The Prophets, did not they hear? Yes, they heard; but the prophetic ear was not an ear of man: for not as men heard they, but as Prophets. Where-

<sup>1</sup> Is. 50. fore he said<sup>1</sup>, *He hath added unto me an ear to hear*, meaning by *addition* that which was from the Spirit. From whence it is plain, that before hearing it had not entered into the heart of man. For after the gift of the Spirit, the heart of the Prophets was not the heart of man, but a spiritual heart; <sup>4. Sept.</sup> as also he saith himself, *We have the mind of Christ*<sup>2</sup>, as if he should say, "Before we had the blessing of the Spirit, and had learnt the things which no man can speak, no one of us nor yet of the Prophets conceived them in his mind. How should we? since not even Angels know them? For what need is there to speak," saith he, "concerning *the rulers of this world*, seeing that no man knew them, nor yet the powers above?"

What kind of things then are these? That by what is esteemed to be the foolishness of preaching, He shall overcome the world, and the nations shall be brought in, and there shall be reconciliation of God with men, and so great blessings shall come upon us!

How then have we *known*? *Unto us*, he saith, *God hath revealed them by His Spirit*; not by the wisdom which is without; for this, like some dishonoured handmaid, hath not been permitted to enter in, and stoop down and look into<sup>3</sup> the mysteries pertaining to the Lord. Seest thou how great is the difference between this wisdom and that? The things which Angels knew not, these are what she hath taught us: but she that is without, hath done the contrary. Not only hath she failed to instruct, but she hindered and obstructed, and after the event sought to obscure His doings, making the Cross of none effect. Not then simply by our receiving the knowledge, does he describe the honour vouchsafed to us, nor by our being joined with Angels to receive it, but, what is more, by His Spirit conveying it to us.

<sup>3</sup> See  
E. John  
20. 5.  
(1.)

[7.] Then, to shew its greatness, he saith, If the Spirit which knoweth the secret things of God had not revealed them, we should not have learned them. Such an object of care

was this whole subject to God, as to be among His secrets. <sup>1COR.2.</sup>  
Wherefore we needed also that other Teacher, who knoweth <sup>10—13.</sup>  
these things perfectly; for *the Spirit*<sup>1</sup>, saith he, *searcheth*<sup>17.10—</sup>  
*all things, even the deep things of God. For what man*<sup>12.</sup>  
*knoweth the things of a man, save the spirit of a man*  
*which is in him? Even so, the things of God knoweth no*  
*man but the Spirit of God. Now we have received, not the*  
*spirit of the world, but the Spirit which is of God, that we*  
*might know the things that are freely given to us of God. For*  
the word to *search* is here indicative not of ignorance, but of  
accurate knowledge: at least if we may judge from the fact,  
that this is the very same mode of speaking which he hath  
used even of God, saying, *He that searcheth the hearts*  
*knoweth what is the mind of the Spirit*<sup>2</sup>. Then having<sup>3</sup> <sup>Rom.</sup>  
spoken with exactness concerning the knowledge of the <sup>8.27.</sup>  
Spirit, and having pointed out that it is in such sort fully  
equal to God's knowledge, as the knowledge of a man itself  
to itself; and also, that we have learned all things from it,  
and necessarily from it; he added, *which things also we*  
*speak, not in the words which man's wisdom teacheth, but*  
*which the Holy Ghost teacheth; comparing spiritual things*  
*with spiritual*. Seest thou to what point he hath brought us  
with the Teacher's authority? For so much are we wiser  
than they, as there is difference between Plato and the Holy  
Spirit; they having for masters the heathen rhetoricians; but  
we, the Holy Spirit.

[8.] But what is this, *comparing spiritual things with*  
*spiritual*? When a thing is spiritual, and of dubious meaning,  
we adduce testimonies from the things which are spiritual. For  
instance, I say, Christ rose again,—was born of a Virgin; I  
adduce testimonies, and types, and demonstrations; the abode  
of Jonah in the whale, and his deliverance afterwards; the  
child-bearing of the barren, Sarah, Rebecca, and the rest;  
the springing up of the trees which took place in paradise<sup>3</sup>, <sup>3 Gen. 2.</sup>  
when there had been no seeds sown, no rains sent down, no <sup>5.</sup>  
furrow drawn along. For the things to come were fashioned  
out and figured forth, as in shadow, by the former things,  
that these which are now might be believed—when they came  
in. And again we shew, how of the earth was man, and  
how of man alone, the woman; and this without any inter-



HOMIL. course whatever; how the earth itself of nothing, the power  
 VII. of the Great Artificer being every where sufficient for all things. Thus *with spiritual things* do I *compare spiritual*, and in no instance have I need of the wisdom which is without,—neither its reasonings nor its embellishments. For such persons do but agitate the weak understanding, and confuse it; and are not able to demonstrate clearly any one of the things which they affirm, but even have the contrary effect. They rather disturb the mind, and fill it with darkness and much perplexity. Wherefore he saith, *with spiritual things comparing spiritual*. Seest thou how superfluous he sheweth it to be? and not only superfluous, but even hostile and injurious: for the expressions, *lest the Cross of Christ be made of none effect*, and *that our<sup>1</sup> faith should not stand in the wisdom of men*, had that signification. And he points out here, that it is impossible for those who confidently entrust every thing to it, to learn any useful thing: for

<sup>1</sup> "your  
 faith,"  
 rec. text.

[9.] Ver. 14. *The natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit.*

It is necessary then to lay it aside first. "What then," some man will say; "is the wisdom from without stigmatized? And yet it is the work of God." How is this clear? since He made it not, but it was an invention of thine. For in this place he calls by the term *wisdom* curious research, and superfluous elegance of words. But should any one say, that he means the human understanding; even in this sense the fault is thine. For thou bringest a bad name upon it, who makest a bad use of it; who to the injury and thwarting of God, demandest from it things which indeed it never had. Since then thou boastest therein, and fightest with God, He hath exposed its weakness. For strength of body also is an excellent thing, but when Cain used it not as

<sup>2</sup> Gen. 4. he ought, God struck him with palsy, and made him tremble.  
 12, 14. Wine also is a good thing; but because the Jews indulged in  
 Sept. it immoderately, God prohibited the priests entirely from the  
 "sigh- use of the fruit". And since thou also hast abused wisdom  
 ing and trem- unto the rejecting of God, and hast demanded of it more than  
 bling," it can do of its own strength; in order to withdraw thee from  
 rec. ver. "fugitive human hope, he hath shewed thee its weakness.  
 and va- gabond."

<sup>1</sup> i. e. when they were in course of attendance on the tabernacle. Levit. 10. 8, 9.

For (to proceed) he also is *a natural man*, who attributes <sup>1COR.2.14.</sup> every thing to cold reasonings, and considers not that he needs help from above; which is a mark of sheer folly. For God bestowed it that it might learn and receive help from Him, not that it should consider itself sufficient unto itself. For so the eyes are beautiful and useful, but should they choose to see without light, their beauty profits them nothing; nor yet their natural force, but even doth harm. So, if you mark it, any soul also: if it choose to see without the Spirit, it becomes even an impediment unto itself.

“How then, before this,” it will be said, “did she see all things of herself?” Never at any time did she this of herself, but she had Creation for a book set before her in open view. But when men having left off to walk in the way which God commanded them, and by the beauty of visible objects to know the Great Artificer, had entrusted to disputations the leading-staff of knowledge; they became weak, and sank in a sea of ungodliness; for they presently brought in that which was the abyss of all evil, asserting that nothing was produced from things which were not, but from uncreated matter; and from this source they became the parents of ten thousand heresies.

Moreover in their extreme absurdities they agreed; but in those things wherein they seemed to dream out something wholesome, though it were only as in shadows, they fell out with one another; that on both sides they might be laughed to scorn. For that out of things which are not nothing is produced, nearly all with one accord have asserted and written; and this with great zeal. In these absurdities then they were urged on by the Devil. But in their profitable sayings, wherein they seemed, though it were but darkly<sup>1</sup>, to find some part of what they sought, in these they waged war with one another: for instance, that the soul is immortal; that virtue needs nothing external; and that the being good on the contrary is not of necessity, nor of fate.

Dost thou see the craft of the devil? If any where he saw (5.) men speaking any thing corrupt, he made all to be of one mind; but if any where speaking any thing sound, he raised up others against them; so that the absurdities did not fail, being confirmed by the general consent, and the profitable parts died away, being variously understood. Observe how

HOMIL. VII. in every respect the soul is unstrung<sup>1</sup>, and is not sufficient unto herself. And this fell out as one might expect. For if, being such as she is, she aspire to have need of nothing, and withdraw herself from God; suppose her not fallen into that condition, and into what extreme madness would she not have insensibly sunk? If, endowed with a mortal body, she expected greater things from the false promise of the Devil—

<sup>1</sup> Gen. 3. (for *Ye shall be*, said he, *as gods*<sup>2</sup>)—to what extent would she not have cast herself away, had she received her body also, from the beginning, immortal. For, even after that, she asserted herself to be unbegotten, and of the essence of God, through the corrupt mouth of the Manicheans<sup>4</sup>; and it was this distemperature which gave occasion to her invention of the Grecian gods. On this account, as it seems to me, God hath made virtue laborious, with a view to bow down the soul, and to bring it to moderation. And that thou mayest convince thyself that this is true, (as far as from trifles one may guess at any thing great,) let us learn it from the Israelites. They, it is well known, when they led not a life of toil, but indulged in relaxation, not being able to bear prosperity, fell away into ungodliness. What then did God upon this? He laid upon them a multitude of laws, with a view to restrain their licence. And to convince you that these laws contribute not to any virtue, but were given to them as a sort of curb, providing them with an occasion of perpetual labour; hear what saith the prophet concerning them: *I gave them statutes which were not good*<sup>3</sup>. What means *not good*? Such as did not much contribute towards virtue. Wherefore he adds also, *and ordinances whereby they shall not live*.

[10.] *But the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit.*

For as with these eyes no man could learn the things in the heavens; so neither the soul unaided the things of the Spirit. And why speak I of the things in heaven? It receives not even those in earth, all of them. For so, beholding afar off a square tower, we think it to be round; but such an opinion is mere deception of the eyes: so also

<sup>1</sup> "Manes opposed to each other two diverse and adverse principles, alike eternal and coeternal: and fancied two natures and substances, Good and Bad; in this following elder heretics:" (some of the Gnostics, see S. Aug. above, §. 6, 14, 16, 21, 22.) . . . . "Hence they are compelled to affirm, that good souls are of the same nature with God." S. Aug. *de Hæresibus*, §. 46.

we may be sure, when a man by means of his understanding alone examines the things which are afar off from us, much ridicule will ensue. For not only will he not see them such as indeed they are, but will even account them the contraries of what they are. Wherefore he added, *for they are foolishness unto him*. But this comes not of the nature of the thing, but of his infirmity, unable as he is to attain to their greatness through the eyes of his soul.

[11.] Next, pursuing his contrast, he states the cause of this, saying, *he knoweth not that they are spiritually discerned*: i. e. the things asserted require faith, and to apprehend them by reasonings is not possible, for their magnitude exceeds by a great deal the meanness of our understanding. Wherefore he saith, *but he that is spiritual judgeth all things, yet he himself is judged of no man*. For so he that has sight, beholds himself all things, even such as appertain to the man that has no sight; but no sightless person discerns what the other is about. So also in the case before us, our own matters and those of unbelievers, all of them we for our part know; but ours, they know not henceforth any more. We know what is the nature of things present, what the dignity of things to come; and what some day shall become of the world, when this state of things shall be no more. And what sinners shall suffer, and the righteous shall enjoy, and that things present are nothing worth, we both know, and their meanness we expose; (for to "discern" is also to expose<sup>1</sup>); and that the things to come are immortal, and<sup>1</sup> *ἀνίκητον*, immoveable. All these things are known to the spiritual<sup>πνευματικόν</sup> man; and what the natural man shall suffer when he is departed into that world; and what the faithful shall enjoy when he hath fulfilled his journey from this: none of which are known to the natural man.

[12.] Wherefore also, subjoining a plain demonstration of what had been affirmed, he saith, *For who hath known the mind of the Lord, that he may instruct Him? But we have the mind of Christ*. That is to say, the things which are in the mind of Christ, these we know, even the very things which He willeth, and hath revealed. For since he had said, *the Spirit had revealed them*; lest any one should set aside the Son, [he saith], that Christ also shewed us these things. Not meaning this, that

1 COR. 2.  
14-16.



HOMIL. all the things which He knoweth, we know; but that all  
 VII. things which we know are not human, so as to be open to suspicion, but of His mind, and spiritual.

- (6.) For the mind which we have about these things we have of Christ; that is, the knowledge which we have concerning the things of the faith is spiritual; so that, it is but likely, we should be *judged of no man*. For it is not possible that a natural man should know divine things. Wherefore also he said, *For who hath known the mind of the Lord?* implying that our own mind, which we have about these things, is His mind. And this, *that he may instruct Him*, he hath not added without reason, but with reference to what he had just now said, *the spiritual man no one discerneth*. For if no man is able to know the mind of God, much less to teach and to correct it. For this is the meaning of, *that he may instruct Him*.

Seest thou how from every quarter he repels the wisdom which is without, and shews that the spiritual man knoweth more things and greater? For seeing that those reasons, *That no flesh should glory*; and, *For this cause hath He chosen the foolish things, that He might confound the wise men*; and, *Lest the Cross of Christ should be of none effect*: seemed not to the unbelievers greatly worthy of credit, nor yet attractive, or necessary, or useful, he finishes by laying down the principal cause of all; because in this way we shall most easily see from Whom we may have the means of learning even high things, and things secret, and things which are above us. For reason was absolutely made of none effect, by our inability to apprehend through Gentile wisdom the things above us.

You may observe too that it was more advantageous to learn in this way from the Spirit. For that is the easiest and clearest of all teaching.

*But we have the mind of Christ.* That is, spiritual, divine, that which hath nothing human. For it is not of Plato, nor of Pythagoras, but it is Christ Himself, putting His own things into our mind.

This then, if nought else, let us revere, O beloved, and let our life shine forth as most excellent; since He also Himself maketh this a sure proof of great friendship, viz. the revealing

<sup>1</sup>S. John  
 15. 15. His secrets unto us: where He saith<sup>1</sup>, *Henceforth I call you*

*not servants, for all ye are my friends; for all things which I* <sup>1 Cor. 2.</sup> *have heard from my Father I have told unto you: that is, I* <sup>16.</sup> *have had confidence towards you. Now if this by itself is a proof of friendship, namely, to have confidence: when it appears that He has not only confided to us the doctrinal mysteries<sup>1</sup>, but also by what we are to do<sup>2</sup> imparted to us the* <sup>1 οὐδὲ διὰ</sup> <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> <sup>μυστηρίων</sup> <sup>αὐτοῦ.</sup> *same, consider how vast the love of which this is the fruit.* <sup>δὲ τῶν</sup> <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> *This, if nothing else, let us revere; even though we will not* <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> *make any such great account of hell, yet let it be more fearful* <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> *than hell, to be thankless and ungrateful to such a Friend and* <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> *Benefactor. And not as hired servants, but as sons and free-* <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> *men, let us do all things for the love of our Father; and let us* <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> *at last cease from adhering to the world, that we may put the* <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> *Greeks also to shame. For even now desiring to put out my* <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> *strength against them, I shrink from so doing, lest haply,* <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> *surpass them as we may by our arguments, and the truth of* <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> *what we teach, we bring upon ourselves much derision from* <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> *the comparison of our way of life; seeing that they indeed,* <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> *cleaving unto error, and having no such conviction, abide by* <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> *a strict rule of life, but we do just the contrary. However, I* <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> *will say it. For there may, there may be a chance, that in* <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> *practising how to contend against them, we shall long, as* <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> <sup>ἡμετέρας</sup> *rivals, to become better than they in our mode of life also.*

[14.] I was saying, not long ago, that it would not have entered the Apostles' thoughts to preach what they did preach, had they not enjoyed Divine Grace; and that so far from succeeding, they would not even have devised such a thing. Well then, let us also to-day prosecute the same subject in our discourse; and let us shew that it was a thing impossible so much as to be chosen or thought of by them, if they had not had Christ among them: not because they were arrayed, the weak against the strong, not because few against many, not because poor against rich, not because unlearned against wise, but because the strength of their prejudice too was great. For ye know that nothing is so strong with men as the tyranny of ancient custom. So that although they had not been twelve only, and not so contemptible, and such as they really were, but another world as large as this, and with an equivalent number arrayed on their side, or even much greater; even in this case the result would have been hard to achieve. For the other



MONIL. party had custom on their side, but to these their novelty was  
 VII. an obstacle. For nothing so much disturbs the mind, though it be done for some beneficial purpose, as to innovate and introduce strange things, and most of all when this is done in matters relating to divine worship and the glory of God. And how great force there is in this circumstance I will now make plain; first having made the following statement, that there was added also another difficulty with regard to the Jews. For in the case of the Greeks, they destroyed both their gods and their doctrines altogether; but not so did they dispute with the Jews, but many of their doctrines they abolished, while the God, who had enacted the same, they bade men worship. And affirming that men should honour the legislator, they said, "obey not in all respects the law which is of Him;" for instance, in the keeping the sabbath, or observing circumcision, or offering sacrifices, or doing any other like thing. So that not only was the sacrifice an impediment, but also the fact, that when they bade men worship God, they bade them break many of His laws.

- (7.) [15.] But in the case of the Greeks, great was the tyranny of custom. For if it had been a custom of ten years only, I say not of such a length of time, and if it had preoccupied but a few men, I say not the whole world, when these persons made their approaches; even in this case the revolution would have been hard to effect. But now sophists and orators, and fathers, and grandfathers, and many more ancient than all these had been preoccupied by the error: the very earth and sea, and mountains and groves, and all nations of Barbarians, and all tribes of the Greeks, and wise men and ignorant, rulers and subjects, women and men, young and old, masters and slaves, artificers and husbandmen, dwellers in cities and in countries; all of them. And those who were instructed would naturally say, "What may this be? Have all that dwell in the world been deceived? both sophists and orators, philosophers and historians, the present generation and they who were before this, Pythagoreans, Platonists, generals, consuls, kings, they who in all cities from the beginning were citizens and colonists, Barbarians and Greeks? And are the twelve, fishermen, and tent-makers, and publicans, wiser than all these? Why, who could endure such a statement?" However, they spake not so, nor had

it in their mind, but did endure them, and owned that they <sup>1Cor.2.</sup> were wiser than all. Wherefore they overcame even all. And <sup>16.</sup> custom was no impediment to this, though accounted invincible when she hath acquired her full swing by course of time.

And that thou mayest learn how great is the strength of custom, it hath oftentimes prevailed over the commands of God. And why do I say, commands? Even over very blessings. For so the Jews when they had manna, required garlic; enjoying liberty they were mindful of their slavery; and they were continually longing for Egypt because they were accustomed to it. Such a tyrannical thing is custom.

If thou desire to hear of it from the heathens also; it is said that Plato, although well aware that all about the gods was a sort of imposture, condescended to all the feasts and all the rest of it, as being unable to contend with custom; and as having in fact learnt this from his master. For he too, being suspected of some such innovation, was so far from succeeding in what he desired, that he even lost his life; and this too after making his defence. And how many men do we see now by prejudice held in idolatry, and having nothing plausible to say, when they are charged with being Greeks, but alleging their fathers, and grandfathers and great grandfathers. For no other reason did some of the heathens call custom, second nature. But when doctrines are the subject matter of the custom, it becomes yet more deeply rooted. For a man would change all things more easily than those pertaining to religion. The feeling of shame too, coupled with custom, was enough to raise an obstacle; and the seeming to learn a new lesson in extreme old age, and that of those who were not so intelligent. And why wonder, should this happen in regard of the soul, seeing that even in the body custom hath great force?

[16.] In the Apostles' case, however, there was yet another obstacle, more powerful than these; it was not merely changing custom so ancient and primitive, but there were perils also, under which the change was effected. For they were not simply drawing men from one custom to another, but from a custom wherein was no fear, to an undertaking which held out threats of danger. For the believer must immediately incur confiscation, persecution, exile from his country; must

HOMIL. VII. suffer the worst ills, be hated of all men, be a common enemy both to his own people and to strangers. So that even if they had invited men to a customary thing out of novelty, even in this case it would have been a difficult matter. But when it was from a custom to an innovation, and with all these terrors to boot, consider how vast was the obstacle !

And again, another thing, not less than those mentioned, was added hereto, to make the change difficult. For besides the custom and the dangers, these precepts were both more burdensome, and those from which they withdrew men were easy and light. For their call was from fornication unto chastity; from love of life unto sundry kinds of death; from drunkenness unto fasting; from laughter unto tears and compunction; from covetousness unto utter indigence; from safety unto dangers: and throughout all they required the strictest circumspection. For, *Filthiness*<sup>1</sup>, saith he, and foolish talking, and jesting, let it not proceed out of your mouth. And these things they spake unto those who knew nothing else than how to be drunken, and serve their bellies; who celebrated feasts made up of nothing but of "filthiness" and laughter, and all manner of revellings<sup>2</sup>. So that not only from the matter pertaining to severity of life were the doctrines burthensome, but also from their being spoken unto men who had been brought up in careless ease, and "filthiness," and "foolish talking," and laughter and revellings. For who among those who had lived in these things, when he heard<sup>3</sup>, *If a man take not up his cross and follow Me, he is not worthy of Me*, and<sup>4</sup> *I came not to send peace but a sword, and to set a man at variance with his father, and the daughter at variance with her mother*, would not have felt himself chilled all over<sup>5</sup>? And who, when he heard, *If a man bid not farewell to home and country and possessions, he is not worthy of Me*, would not have hesitated, would not have refused? And yet there were men, who not only felt no chill, neither shrunk away when they heard these things, but ran to meet, and rushed upon the dangers, and eagerly caught at the precepts enjoined. Again, to be told, *For every idle word we shall give account*<sup>6</sup>, and *whosoever looketh upon a woman to lust after her hath committed adultery with her as soon as seen*<sup>7</sup>, and *whosoever is angry without cause shall fall into hell*;—

<sup>1</sup> Ephes.  
5. 4.

<sup>2</sup> πρὸς  
ῥίμας  
ἀσάσση.

<sup>3</sup> Matt.  
10. 38.

<sup>4</sup> Ibid.  
34.

<sup>5</sup> ἐνέ-  
σθη.

(8)

<sup>6</sup> Matt.  
12. 36.

<sup>7</sup> Matt.  
5. 28, 29.



which of the men of that day would not these things have <sup>1Cor.2.</sup> frightened off? And yet all came running in, and many even <sup>16.</sup> leaped over the boundaries of the course. What then was their attraction? Was it not, plainly, the power of Him who was preached? For suppose that the case were not as it is, but just contrary<sup>a</sup>, that this side was the other, and the other this; would it have been easy, let me ask, to hold fast and to drag on those who resisted? We cannot say so. So that in every way that power is proved divine which wrought so excellently. Else how, tell me, did they prevail with the frivolous and the dissolute, urging them toward the severe and rough course of life?

[17.] Well; such was the nature of the precepts. But let us see whether the doctrine was attractive. Nay, in this respect also there was enough to frighten away the unbelievers. For what said the preachers? That we must worship the Crucified, and count Him as God, who was born of a Jewish woman. Now who would have been persuaded by these words, unless Divine Power had led the way? That indeed He had been crucified and buried, all men knew; but that He had risen again, and ascended, no one save the Apostles had seen.

But, you will say, they excited them by promises, and deceived them by an empty sound of words. Nay, this very topic most particularly shews (even apart from all that has been said) that our doctrines are no deceit. For all its hardships took place here, but its consolations they were to promise after the resurrection. This very thing then, for I repeat it, shews that our Gospel is divine. For why did no one of the believers say, "I close not with this, neither do I endure it: Thou threatenest me with hardships here, and the good things thou promisest after the resurrection. Why, how is it plain that there will be a resurrection? Which of the departed hath returned? Which of those at rest hath risen again? Which of these hath said what shall be after our departure hence?" But none of these things entered into their minds; rather they gave up their very lives for the Crucified. So that this bare fact was more than any thing a proof of great power; first, their working conviction at once, touching

<sup>a</sup> i.e. suppose miracles and the attempt to convert had been the other way, from strictness to ease and pleasure.

HOMIL. VII. matters so important, in persons that had never in their lives before heard of any such thing; secondly, that they prevailed on them to take the difficulties upon trial, and to account the blessings as matter of hope. Now if they had been deceiving, they would have done the contrary: their good things they would have promised as of this world<sup>1</sup>; the fearful things they would not have mentioned, whether they related to the present life or the future. For so deceivers and flatterers act. Nothing harsh, nor galling, nor burdensome, do they hold out, but altogether the contrary. For this is the nature of deceit.

<sup>1</sup> *live in this*  
so S.  
John 18,  
36.

[18.] But "the folly," it will be said, "of the greater part caused them to believe what they were told." How sayest thou? When they were under Greeks, were they not foolish? and when they came over to us, did their folly then begin? And yet they were not men of another sort, nor out of another world, that the Apostles took and persuaded: they were men too who simply held the opinions of the Greeks, but ours they received with the accompaniment of dangers. So that if with better reason they had maintained the former, they would not have swerved from them, now that they had so long time been educated therein; and especially as not without danger was it possible to swerve. But when they came to know from the very nature of the things, that all on that side was mockery and delusion, upon this, even under <sup>2</sup> *menaces* - menaces of sundry deaths, they sprang off<sup>2</sup> from their <sup>3</sup> *their* customary ways, and came over voluntarily unto the new; inasmuch as the latter doctrine was according to nature, but the other contrary to nature.

But "the persons convinced," it is said, "were slaves, and women, and nurses, and midwives, and eunuchs." Now in the first place, not of these alone doth our Church consist; and this is plain unto all. But be it of these; this is what especially makes the Gospel worthy of admiration; that such doctrines as Plato and his followers could not apprehend, the fishermen had power on a sudden to persuade the most ignorant sort of all to receive. For if they had persuaded wise men only, the result would not have been so wonderful: but in advancing slaves, and nurses, and eunuchs unto such great severity of life as to make them rivals to angels, they offered the greatest proof of their divine inspiration. Again;

had they enjoined I know not what trifling matters, it were <sup>16.</sup> 1Cor.2. reasonable perhaps to bring forward the conviction wrought in these persons, to shew the trifling nature of the things which were spoken: but if things great, and high, and almost transcending human nature, and requiring high thoughts, were the matter of their lessons of wisdom; the more foolishness thou shewest in those who were convinced, by so much the more dost thou shew clearly that they who wrought the conviction were wise, and filled with divine grace.

But, you will say, they prevailed on them through the excessive greatness of the promises. But tell me, is not this very thing a wonder to thee, how they persuaded men to expect rewards and recompenses after death? For this, were there nothing else, is to me matter of amazement. But this too, it will be said, came of folly. Inform me wherein is the folly of these things: that the soul is immortal; that an uncorrupt tribunal will receive us after the present life; that we shall render an account, both of our deeds and words and thoughts, unto God that knoweth all secrets; that we shall see the evil undergoing punishment, and the good with crowns on their heads. Nay, these things are not of folly, but the highest instruction of wisdom. The folly is in the contrary opinions to these.

[18.] Were this then the only thing, the despising of things (9.) present, the setting much by virtue, the not seeking rewards here, but advancing far beyond in hopes, and the keeping the soul so intent and faithful, as by no present terror to be hindered in respect of the hopes of what shall be; tell me, to what high philosophy must this belong? But would you also learn the force of the promises and predictions in themselves, and the truth of those uttered, both before and after this present state of things? Behold, I shew you a golden chain, woven cunningly from the beginning! He spake some things to them about Himself, and about the churches, and about the things to come; and as He spake, He wrought mighty works. By the fulfilment therefore of what He said, it is plain that both the wonders wrought were real, and the future and promised things also.

But that my meaning may be yet plainer, let me illustrate it from the actual case. He raised up Lazarus by a single



HOMIL. word merely, and shewed him alive. Again, He said, *The*

VII. *gates of hell shall not prevail against the Church*<sup>1</sup>, and He

<sup>1</sup> S. Mat. 16. 18. *that forsaketh father or mother, shall receive an hundred-*

<sup>2</sup> ib. 19. *fold in this life, and shall inherit everlasting life*<sup>2</sup>. The

29.

miracle then is one, the raising of Lazarus; but the predictions are two; made evident, the one here, the other in the world to come. Consider now, how they are all proved by one another. For if a man disbelieve the resurrection of Lazarus, from the prophecy uttered about the Church let him learn to believe the miracle. For the word spoken so many years before, came to pass then, and received accomplishment: for *the gates of hell prevailed not against the Church*. You see that He who spake truth in the prophecy, it is clear that he also wrought the miracle: and He who both wrought the miracle and brings to accomplishment the words which He spake, it is clear that He speaks the truth also in the prediction of things yet to come, when He saith, *He who despiseth things present shall receive an hundred-fold, and shall inherit everlasting life*. For the things which have been already done and spoken, He hath given as the surest pledges of those which shall hereafter come to pass.

Of all these things then, and the like to these, collecting them together out of the Gospels, let us tell them, and so stop their mouths. But if any one say, Why then was not error completely extinguished? this may be our answer; Ye yourselves are to blame, who rebel against your own salvation. For God hath so ordered this matter by His hidden providence<sup>3</sup>, that not even a remnant of the old impiety need be left.

<sup>3</sup> φρονιμ.  
μυστ.

[19.] Now, briefly to recount what things have been said: What is the natural course of things? That the weak should be overcome by the strong, or the contrary? Those who speak things easy, or things of the harsher sort? those who attract men with dangers, or with security? innovators, or those who strengthen custom? those who lead into a rough, or into a smooth way? those who withdraw men from the institutions of their fathers, or those who lay down no strange laws? those who promise all their good things after our departure from this world, or those who flatter in the present life? the few to overcome the many, or the many the few?

But you too, saith one, gave promises pertaining to this <sup>1</sup> *Con.* life. What then have we promised in this life? The For- <sup>2. 16.</sup> giveness of Sins, and the Laver of Regeneration. Now in the first place, Baptism itself hath its chief part in things to come; and Paul exclaims, saying<sup>1</sup>, *For ye are dead, and* <sup>Col. 3.</sup> *your life is hid with Christ in God: when your life shall* <sup>4.</sup> *appear, then shall ye also appear with Him in glory.* But if in this life also it hath advantages, as indeed it hath, this also is more than all a matter of great wonder, that they had power to persuade men who had done innumerable evil deeds, yea such as no one else had done, that they should wash themselves clean of all, and they should give account of none of their offences. So that on this very account it were most of all meet to wonder, that they persuaded Barbarians to embrace such a faith as this, and to have good hopes concerning things to come; and having thrown off the former burden of their sins, to apply themselves with the greatest zeal for the time to come to those toils which virtue requires, and not to gape after any object of sense, but rising to a height above all bodily things, to receive gifts purely spiritual: yea that the Persian, the Sarmatian, the Moor, and the Indian should be acquainted with the purification of the soul, and the power of God, and His unspeakable mercy to men, and the severe discipline of faith, and the visitation of the Holy Spirit, and the resurrection of bodies, and the doctrines of life eternal. For in all these things, and in whatever is more than these, the fishermen, initiating by Baptism divers races of Barbarians, persuaded them to<sup>a</sup> live on high principles. <sup>2 Philoss. 419.</sup>

Of all these things then, having observed them accurately, let us speak unto the Gentiles, and again, let us shew them the evidence of our lives: that by both means we ourselves may be saved, and they drawn over by our means unto the glory of God. For unto Him be the glory for ever. Amen.

## HOMILY VIII.

---

1 COR. iii. 1—3.

*And I, brethren, could not speak unto you as unto spiritual, but as unto carnal, even as unto babes in Christ. I have fed you with milk, and not with meat: for hitherto ye were not able to bear it, neither yet now are ye able. For ye are yet carnal.*

AFTER having overturned the philosophy which is from without, and cast down all its arrogance, he comes unto another argument. For it was likely that they would say, "If we were putting forth the opinions of Plato, or of Pythagoras, or any other of the philosophers, reason were, thou shouldest draw out such a long discourse against us. But if we were announcing the things of the Spirit, for what reason dost thou turn and toss up and down<sup>1</sup> the wisdom which is from without?"

Hear then how he makes his stand against this. *And I, brethren, was not able to speak unto you as unto spiritual.* Why, in the first place, says he, though you had been perfect in spiritual things also, not even so ought you to be elated; for what you preach is not your own, nor such as yourselves have found from your own means. But now even these things ye know not as ye ought to know them, but ye are learners, and the last of all. Whether therefore the Gentile wisdom be the occasion of your high imaginations; that hath been proved to be nothing, nay, in regard to spiritual things to be even contrary unto us: or if it be on account of things spiritual, in these too ye come short, and have your place among the hindmost. Wherefore he saith,

*I was not able to speak unto you as unto spiritual.* He said <sup>1Cor.3.</sup> not, "I have not spoken," lest the thing might seem to <sup>1-3.</sup> proceed from his grudging them somewhat; but in two ways he brings down their high spirit; first, because they knew not the things that are perfect; next, because their ignorance was owing to themselves: yea in a third way besides these, by pointing out that *not even now are they able [to bear it.]* For as to their want of ability at first, that perhaps arose from the nature of the case. In fact, however, he does not leave them even this excuse. For not through any inability on their part to receive high doctrines, doth he say they received them not, but, because they were *carnal*. However, in the beginning this was not so blame-worthy; but that after so long a time, they had not yet arrived at the more perfect knowledge, this was a symptom of most utter dulness.

It may be observed, that he brings the same charge against the Hebrews, not however with so much vehemence. For those, he saith, are such, partly because of tribulation: but these, because of some appetite for wickedness. Now the two things are not the same. He implies too, that in the one case he was intending rebuke, in the other rather stirring them up, when he spake these words of truth. For to these Corinthians he saith, *Neither yet now are ye able*; but unto the others, *'Wherefore leaving the principles of the doctrine of Christ, let us go on unto perfection:* and again, *'we are* <sup>Heb. 6.</sup> <sup>1.</sup> <sup>Ib. 5. 9.</sup> *persuaded better things concerning you, and things which accompany salvation, though we thus speak.*

[2.] And how calleth he those "carnal," who had attained so large a measure of the Spirit; and into whose praises, at the beginning, he had entered so much at large? Because they also were carnal, unto whom the Lord saith, *'Depart from* <sup>S. Mat.</sup> <sup>7. 22, 23.</sup> *Me, ye workers of iniquity, I know you not.* And yet they both cast out devils, and raised the dead, and uttered prophecies. So that it is possible, having wrought even miracles, to be carnal. For so God wrought by Balaam, and unto Pharaoh He revealed things to come, and unto Nebuchadnezzar; and Caiaphas prophesied, not knowing what he said; yea, and some others cast out devils in His name, though they were *'not with Him*; since not for the doers' sake are <sup>Luke</sup> <sup>9. 49.</sup> these things done, but for others' sake: nor is it seldom, that



HOMIL. those who were positively unworthy have been made instrumental to them. Now why wonder, if in the case of unworthy men these things are done for others' sake, seeing that so it is, even when they are wrought by saints? For so  
 VIII.  
 1 1 Cor. Paul saith, <sup>1</sup>*All things are yours; whether Paul, or Apollos,*  
 3. 22. *or Cephas, or life, or death:* and again, <sup>2</sup>*He gave some Apo-*  
 2 Eph. 4. *stles, and some Prophets, and some Pastors and Teachers,*  
 11, 12. *for the perfecting of the Saints unto the work of the ministry.*

For if it were not so, there would have been no security against universal corruption. For it may be that rulers are wicked and polluted, and their subjects good and virtuous; that laymen may live in piety, and priests in wickedness; and there could not have been either Baptism, or the Body of Christ, or Oblation, through such, if in every instance grace required merit. But as it is, God uses to work even by unworthy persons, and in no respect is the grace of Baptism damaged by the conduct of the priest: else would the receiver suffer loss. Accordingly, though such things happen rarely, still, it must be owned, they do happen. Now these things I say, lest any one of the bystanders, busying himself about the life of the priest, should be offended as concerning the things solemnized<sup>3</sup>. “For man introduceth nothing into the things which are set before us<sup>4</sup>, but the whole is a work of the power of God, and He it is who initiates<sup>5</sup> you into the mysteries.”

<sup>3</sup> τὰ ἐκ-  
 λείπονται.

<sup>4</sup> ὁ μὴ  
 σταγυ-  
 γῶν.

[3.] *And I, brethren, could not speak unto you as unto spiritual, but as unto carnal. I have fed you with milk, and not with meat. For ye were not yet able [to bear it.]*

<sup>5</sup> οὗτοι  
 οὐκ  
 ἔχουσιν,  
 to  
 obtain  
 favour.

For lest he should seem to have spoken ambitiously<sup>5</sup> these things which he had just spoken; *the spiritual man judgeth all things, and he himself is judged of no man*, and, *we have the mind of Christ*; with a view also to repress their pride: observe what he saith. “Not on this account, saith he, was I silent, because I was not able to tell you more, but because *ye are carnal: neither yet now are ye able.*”

(2.) Why said he not, *ye are not willing*, but, *ye are not able*? Even because he put the latter for the former. For as to the want of ability, it arises from the want of will. Which to

<sup>5</sup> τὰ ὑπερβύσσου, a liturgical word; Liturgy, and St. Chrysostom's. the Sacred Elements: vid. St. Basil's

them indeed is matter of accusation, but to their teacher, of <sup>1</sup>Cor. 3. excuse. For if they had been unable by nature, one might <sup>1-3.</sup> perhaps have forgiven them: but since it was from choice, they were bereft of all excuse. He then speaks of the particular point also, which makes them carnal. *For whereas there is among you strife, and envying, and division, are ye not carnal, and walk as men?* Although he had fornications also and uncleannesses of theirs to speak of, he sets down rather that offence, which he had been a good while endeavouring to correct. Now if *envying* makes men carnal, it is high time for us all to bewail bitterly, and to clothe ourselves with sackcloth, and lie in ashes. For who is pure from this passion? Except indeed I am but conjecturing the case of others from myself. If *envying* maketh men carnal, and suffereth them not to be *spiritual*, although they prophesy, and shew forth other wonderful works; now, when not even so much grace is with us, what place shall we find for our own doings; when not in this matter alone, but also in others of greater moment, we are convicted?

[4.] From this place we learn that Christ had good reason for saying, *He that doeth evil, cometh not to the light*; and <sup>1</sup>S John 3. 20. that an unclean life is an obstacle to high doctrines, not suffering the clear-sightedness of the understanding to shew itself. As then it is not in any case possible for a person in error, but living uprightly, to remain in error; so it is not easy, for one brought up in iniquity, speedily to look up upon the height of the doctrines delivered to us, but he must be clean from all the passions, who is to hunt after the truth: for whoso is freed from these shall be freed also from his error, and attain unto the truth. For do not, I beseech you, think that abstinence merely from covetousness or fornication may suffice thee for this purpose. Not so. All must concur in him that seeketh the truth. Wherefore saith Peter, <sup>2</sup>*Of a truth* <sup>3</sup>Acts 10. 34, *I perceive that God is no respecter of persons, but in every nation he that feareth Him and worketh righteousness is accepted of Him*: that is, He calls and attracts him unto the truth. Seest thou not Paul, that he was more vehement than any one in warring and persecuting? yet because he led an irreproachable life, and did these things not through human passion, he was both received, and reached a mark beyond



HOMIL. all. But if any one should say, "How doth such a one,  
 VIII. a Greek, who is kind, and good, and humane, continue in error?" this would be my answer: He hath some other passion, vainglory, or indolence of mind, or want of carefulness about his own salvation, accounting that all things which concern him are drifted along disorderly and at random. Paul's phrase for him that *worketh righteousness*, is "he that in all things has been *irreproachable*<sup>1</sup>, according to the righteousness which is in the law<sup>2</sup>. Again, <sup>3</sup> *I give thanks to God, whom I serve from my forefathers with a pure conscience*. How then, you will say, were unclean persons considered worthy of the Gospel? Because they wished and longed for it. Thus the one sort, though in error, are attracted by Him, because they are clean from passions; the others, of their own accord approaching, are not thrust back. Many also even from their ancestors have received the true religion.

<sup>1</sup> ἀμω-  
 νος.  
 rec. text,  
 ἀμω-  
 νος.  
<sup>2</sup> Phil.  
 3. 6.  
<sup>3</sup> 2 Tim.  
 1. 3.

[5.] Ver. 3. *For whereasthere is among you envying and strife.*

At this point he prepares himself to wrestle with those whose part was obedience: for in what went before he hath been casting down the rulers of the Church, where he said that wisdom of speech is nothing worth. But here he strikes at those in subjection, in the words,

Ver. 4. *While one saith, I am of Paul, and, I of Apollos, are ye not carnal?*

And he points out that this, so far from helping them at all, or causing them to acquire any thing, had even become an obstacle to their profiting in the greater things. For this it was which brought forth *envying*, and *envying* had made them *carnal*; and the having become *carnal* left them not at liberty to hear truths of the sublimer sort.

Ver. 5. *Who then is Paul, and who is Apollos?*

In this way, after producing and proving his facts, he makes his accusation henceforth more openly. Moreover he employs his own name, doing away all harshness, and not suffering them to be angry at what is said. For if Paul is nothing and murmur not, much less ought they to think themselves ill used. Two ways, you see, he has of soothing them; first by bringing forward his own person, then by not robbing them of all, as if they contributed nothing. Rather he allows them some small portion: small though

it be, he does allow it. For having said, *Who is Paul, and* <sup>1</sup> *who Apollos*, he adds, *but ministers by whom ye have believed.* <sup>1</sup> *Con. 3. 5.*

Now this in itself is a great thing, and deserving of great rewards: although in regard of the Archetype and the Root of all good, it is nothing. (For not he that *ministers* to our blessings, but he that provides and gives them, he is our Benefactor.) And he said not, *Evangelists*, but *Ministers*, which is more. For they had not merely preached the Gospel, but had also ministered unto us; the one being a matter of word only, while the other hath deed also. And so, if even Christ be a Minister only of good things, and not the Root Himself and the Fountain, (I mean, of course, in that He is a Son,) observe to what an issue this matter is brought<sup>1</sup>. How then, you will ask, doth he say that He (3.)

*was made a Minister of Circumcision?* He is speaking <sup>1</sup> *in that place of His secret dispensation in the Flesh: and* <sup>1</sup> *again not in the same sense which we have now mentioned.* <sup>1</sup> *How* <sup>1</sup> *Yet even there too, by Minister, he means Fulfiller*<sup>2</sup>, in <sup>1</sup> *contradistinction to one that of his own store gives out the* <sup>1</sup> *blessings.* <sup>1</sup> *deep and high it is made to go.* <sup>1</sup> *How.*

Further, he said not, *Those who guide you into the Faith,* <sup>1</sup> *but those by whom ye believed;* again attributing the greater <sup>1</sup> *share to themselves, and indicating by this also the sub-* <sup>1</sup> *ordinate class of ministers*<sup>4</sup>. Now if they were ministering <sup>1</sup> *to another, how come they to seize the authority for them-* <sup>1</sup> *selves? But I would have you consider how in no wise he* <sup>1</sup> *lays the blame on them as seizing it for themselves, but on* <sup>1</sup> *those who endow them with it. For the ground-work of the* <sup>1</sup> *error lay in the multitude; since, had the one fallen away,* <sup>1</sup> *the other would have been broken up. Here are two points* <sup>1</sup> *which he has skilfully provided for: in that first he hath* <sup>1</sup> *prepared, as by mining*<sup>5</sup>, <sup>1</sup> *in the quarter where it was neces-* <sup>1</sup> *sary to overthrow the mischief; and next, on their side, in not* <sup>1</sup> *attracting ill-will, nor yet making them more contentious.*

Ver. 5. *Even as Christ*<sup>6</sup> *gave to every man.*

For not even this small thing itself was of themselves, but <sup>1</sup> *of God, who put it into their hands. For lest they might say,* <sup>1</sup> *What then? are we not to love those that minister unto us?* <sup>1</sup> *Yea, saith he; but you should know to what extent. For* <sup>1</sup> *not even this thing itself is of them, but of God who gave it.*

HOMIL. Ver. 6. *I have planted, Apollos watered, but God gave the*  
 VIII. *increase.*

That is, I first cast the word into the ground; but, in order that the seeds might not wither away through temptations, Apollos added his own part. But the whole was of God.

[6.] Ver. 7. *So then, neither is he that planteth any thing, neither he that watereth, but God that giveth the increase.*

Do you observe the manner in which he soothes them, so that they should not be too much irritated, on hearing, "Who is this person," and "Who is that?" "Nay, both are invidious, namely, both the saying, 'Who is this person? Who the other,'" and the saying, that *neither he that planteth nor he that watereth is any thing*. How then does he soften these expressions? First, By attaching the contempt to his own person, *Who is Paul, and who Apollos?* and next, by referring the whole to God who gave all things. For after he had said, "Such a person planted," and added, *He that planteth is nothing*, he subjoined, *but God that giveth the increase*. Nor does he stop even here, but applies again another healing clause, in the words,

Ver. 8. *He that planteth, and he that watereth, are one.*

For by means of this he establishes another point also, viz. that they should not be exalted one against another. His assertion, that they are one, refers to their inability to do any thing without "God that giveth the increase." And thus saying, he permitted not either those who laboured much to lift themselves up against those who had contributed less; nor these again to envy the former. In the next place, since this had a tendency to make men more indolent, I mean, all being esteemed as one, whether they have laboured much or little; observe how he sets this right, saying, *But every man shall receive his own reward according to his own labour*. As if he said, "Fear not, because I said, Ye are one; for, compared with the work of God, they are one; howbeit, in regard to labours, they are not so, but *every man shall receive his own reward*."

Then he smooths it still more, having succeeded in what he wished; and gratifies them, where it is allowed, with earnestness.

Ver. 9. *For we are workers together with God. Ye are God's husbandry, ye are God's building.*

Seest thou how to them also he hath assigned no small



work, having before laid it down that the whole is of God? <sup>1Cor.3.</sup>  
For since he is always persuading them to obey those that <sup>9-11.</sup>  
have the rule over them, on this account he abstains from  
making very light of their teachers.

*Ye are God's husbandry.*

For because he had said, "I have planted," he kept to the metaphor. Now if ye be God's husbandry, it is right that you should be called not from those who cultivate you, but from God. For the field is not called the husbandman's, but the householder's.

*Ye are God's building.*

Again, the building is not the workman's, but the master's. Now if ye be a building, ye must not be forced asunder: since this were no building. If ye be a farm, ye must not be divided, but be walled in with a single fence, namely, unanimity.

*Ver. 10. According to the Grace of God which hath been given unto me, as a wise master-builder, I have laid the foundation.*

In this place he calls himself wise, not exalting himself, but to give them an ensample, and to point out that this is a wise man's part, to lay one foundation. You may observe, as one instance of his modest bearing, that in speaking of himself as wise, he allowed not this to stand as though it were something of his own: but first dedicating himself entirely unto God, then and not till then calls himself by that name. For, *according to the Grace of God*, saith he, *which is given unto me*. Thus, at once he signifies both that the whole is of God; and that this most of all is Grace, viz. the not being divided, but resting on One Foundation.

[7.] *Another buildeth thereupon: but let every man take heed how he buildeth thereupon.*

Here, I think, and in what follows, he puts them upon their trial concerning practice, after that he had once for all knit them together and made them one.

*Ver. 11. For other foundation can no man lay than that* <sup>1 ed.</sup>  
*is laid, which is Jesus Christ.* <sup>conj. for</sup>  
<sup>266.</sup>

I say, no man can lay it so long as he is a master-builder; <sup>Don-</sup>  
but if he lay it <sup>1</sup>, he ceases to be a master-builder. <sup>næus ap.</sup>  
<sup>Savil.</sup>

See how even from men's common notions he proves the <sup>viii. not.</sup>  
whole of his proposition. His meaning is this, "I have <sup>p. 261.</sup> (4.)

HOMIL. preached Christ, I have delivered unto you the foundation.  
VIII.

Take heed how ye build thereon, lest haply it be in vain-glory, lest haply so as to draw away the disciples unto men." Let us not then give heed unto the heresies. *For other foundation can no man lay than that which is laid.* Upon this then let us build, and as a foundation let us cleave to it, as a branch to a vine; and let there be no interval between us and Christ. For if there be any interval, immediately we perish. For so the branch, by its adherence, draws in the fatness, and the building stands, because it is cemented together. Since, if it stand apart, it perishes, having nothing whereon to support itself. Let us not then merely keep hold of Christ, but let us be joined unto Him, for if we stand apart, we perish. *For they who withdraw themselves far from*

<sup>1</sup> Ps. 73. *Thee, shall perish*<sup>1</sup>; so it is said. Let us cleave then unto Him, and let us cleave by our works. *For he that keepeth*

<sup>2</sup> John 14. 21. *My commandments, the same abideth in Me*<sup>2</sup>. And, accordingly, there are many images, whereby He brings us into union. Thus, if you mark it, He is "the Head," we are "the body:" can there be any interval between the head and body? He is "a Foundation," we "a building:" He "a Vine," we "branches:" He "the Bridegroom," we "the bride:" He "the Shepherd," we "the sheep." He is "the Way," we "they who walk therein." Again, we are "a temple," He "the Indweller:" He "the First-Begotten," we "the brethren:" He "the Heir," we "the heirs together with Him:" He "the Life," we "the living:" He "the Resurrection," we "those who rise again:" He "the Light," we "the enlightened." All these things indicate unity; and they allow no void interval, not even the smallest. For he that removes but to a little distance, will go on till he has become very far distant. For so the body, receiving though it be but a small cut by a sword, perishes: and the building, though there be but a small chink, falls to decay: and the branch, though it be but a little while cut off from the root, becomes useless. So that this trifle is no trifle, but is even almost the whole. Whensoever then we commit some little fault, or even negligence, let us not overlook that little; since this, being disregarded, quickly becomes great. So also when a garment hath begun to be torn and is neglected, it is apt to

prolong its rent all throughout; and a roof, when a few tiles <sup>1 Cor. 3.</sup> have fallen, being disregarded, brings down the whole house. <sup>9—11.</sup>

[8.] These things then let us bear in mind, and never slight the small things, lest we fall into those which are great. But if so be that we have slighted them, and are come into the abyss of evils, not even when we are come there let us despond, lest we fall into recklessness<sup>1</sup>. For to emerge <sup>1. ἀνα-  
βαίνειν.</sup> from thence is hard ever after, for one who is not extremely watchful; not because of the distance alone, but of the very position too, wherein we find ourselves. For sin also is a deep, and is wont to bear down and crush. And just as those who have fallen into a well cannot with ease get out, but will want others to draw them up; so also is he that is come into any depth of sins. To such then we must lower ropes, and draw them up. Nay rather, we need not others only, but ourselves also, that we for our part may fasten on ourselves and ascend, I say not so much as we have descended, but much further, if we be willing: for why? God also helpeth: for He willeth not the death of a sinner so much as his conversion. Let no one then despair; let no one feel the feeling of the heathen; for to them properly belongs this kind of sin: a heathen having come into any depth of evils, makes light of it. So that it is not the multitude of men's sins which causes their despair, but their heathenish mind.

Shouldest thou then have gone all lengths in wickedness, yet say unto thyself, God is loving unto men, and he desires our salvation: for *though your sins be as scarlet, I will whiten you as snow*<sup>2</sup>, saith He; and unto the contrary habit<sup>3</sup> <sup>Is. 1.</sup> I will change you. Let us not therefore give up in despair; <sup>10. Sept.</sup> for to fall is not so grievous, as to lie where we have fallen; nor to be wounded so dreadful, as after wounds to refuse healing. For who shall boast that he has his heart chaste? or who shall say confidently that he is pure from sin? These things I say, not to make you more negligent, but to prevent your despairing.

Wouldest thou know how good our Master is? The <sup>(5.)</sup> Publican went up full of ten thousand wickednesses, and saying only, *Be merciful unto me*, went down justified<sup>4</sup>. Yea, <sup>2 S. Luke</sup> God saith by the prophet, *Because of sin for some little* <sup>18. 13,  
14.</sup>



HOMIL. season I grieved him<sup>1</sup>, and I saw that<sup>2</sup> he was grieved and  
 VIII. went sorrowful, and I healed his ways<sup>3</sup>. What is there

<sup>1</sup> Is. 57.  
 17, 18. equal to this loving-kindness? On condition<sup>4</sup> of his "being  
 Sept. but sorrowful," so he speaks, "I forgave him his sins." But  
<sup>2</sup> 1130. 1131. not in  
 Sept. we do not even this: wherefore we especially provoke God  
<sup>3</sup> 1132. to wrath. (For he, who by little things even is made propi-  
 1133. 1134. tious, when He meets not with so much as these, is of course  
 1135. 1136. indignant, and exacts of us the last penalty: for this comes  
 1137. 1138. of exceeding contempt.) Who is there, for instance, that hath  
 1139. 1140. ever become melancholy for his sins? Who hath bemoaned  
 1141. 1142. himself? Who hath beaten his breast? Who hath taken  
 1143. 1144. anxious thought? Not one, to my thinking. But days without  
 1145. 1146. number do men weep for dead servants; for the loss of money:  
 1147. 1148. while as to the soul, which we are ruining day by day, we give  
 1149. 1150. it not a thought. How then wilt thou be able to render God  
 1151. 1152. propitious, when thou knowest not even that thou hast sinned?

"Yea," saith some one, "I have sinned." "Yea," is thy  
 word to me with the tongue: say it to me with thy mind,  
 and with the word mourn heavily, that thou mayest have  
 continual cheerfulness. Since, if we did grieve for our  
 sins, if we mourned heavily over our offences, nothing else  
 could give us sorrow, this one pang would expel all kinds of  
 dejection. Here then is another thing also, which we should  
 gain by our thorough confession; namely, the not being over-  
 whelmed<sup>5</sup> with the pains of the present life, nor puffed up  
 with its splendours. And in this way, again, we should more  
 entirely propitiate God; just as by our present conduct we  
 provoke Him to anger. For tell me, if thou hast a servant,  
 and he, after suffering much evil at the hands of his fellow-  
 servants, takes no account of any one of the rest, but is only  
 anxious not to provoke his master; is he not able by this  
 alone to do away thine anger? But what, if his offences  
 against thee are no manner of care to him, while on those  
 against his fellow-servants he is full of thought; wilt thou  
 not lay on him the heavier punishment? So also God doeth:  
 when we neglect His wrath, He brings it upon us more  
 heavily; but when we regard it, more gently. Yea, rather,  
 He lays it on us no more at all. He wills that we should  
 exact vengeance of ourselves for our offences, and thenceforth  
 He doth not exact it Himself. For this is why He at all

<sup>5</sup> 1153. 1154.  
 1155. 1156.

threatens punishment; that by fear He may destroy contempt; 1 Cor. 3. 9-11. and when the threat alone is sufficient to cause fear in us, He doth not suffer us to undergo the actual trial. See, for instance, what He saith unto Jeremiah<sup>1</sup>, *Seest thou not what they do?* 1 Jer. 7. 17, 18. *Their fathers light a fire, their children gather sticks together, their women knead dough.* Sept. It is to be feared lest the same kind of thing be said also concerning us. "Seest thou not what they do? No one seeketh the things of Christ, but all their own. Their children run into uncleanness, their fathers into covetousness and rapine, their wives so far from keeping back their husbands from the pomps and vanities of life, do rather sharpen their appetites for them." Just take your stand in the market place; question the comers and goers, and not one wilt thou see hastening upon a spiritual errand, but all running after carnal things. How long, ere we awake from our surfeiting? How long are we to keep sinking down into deep slumber? Have we not had our fill of evils?

[9.] And yet one might think that even without all words the experience itself of things is sufficient to teach you the nothingness of things present, and their utter meanness. At all events, there have been men, who, exercising mere heathen wisdom, and knowing nothing of the future, because they had convicted this world of great worthlessness even when its objects are present, have left them on this account alone. What pardon then canst thou expect to obtain, grovelling on the ground, and not despising the little things and transient for the sake of the great and everlasting: who also hearest God Himself declaring and revealing these things unto thee, and hast such promises from Him? For that things here have no sufficient power to detain a man, those have shewn, who even without any promise of things greater have kept away from them. For what wealth did they expect, that they came to poverty? There was none. But it was from their knowing full well that such poverty is better than wealth. What sort of life did they hope for that they forsook luxury, and gave themselves up unto severe discipline? Not any. But they had become aware of the very nature of things; and perceived that this of the two is more convenient, both for the strict training of the soul, and for the health of the body.

**HOMIL.** These things then duly estimating, and revolving with our-  
**VIII.** selves continually the future blessings, let us withdraw from  
this present world, that we may obtain that other which is to  
come; through the favour and loving-kindness of our Lord  
Jesus Christ, with whom to the Father and the Holy Ghost be  
glory, power, honour, now and always, and unto everlasting  
ages. Amen.

## HOMILY IX.

---

1 COR. iii. 12, 13, 14, 15.

*If any man build upon this foundation gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, stubble; every man's work shall be made manifest: for the day shall declare it, because it shall be revealed by fire; and the fire shall try every man's work of what sort it is. If any man's work abide which he hath built thereupon, he shall receive a reward. If any man's work shall be burned, he shall suffer loss: but he himself shall be saved; yet so as by fire.*

THIS is no small subject of enquiry which we propose, but rather about things which are of the first necessity, and which all men enquire about; namely, whether hell fire have any end. For that it hath no end, Christ indeed declares, when He said, *Their fire shall not be quenched, and their worm shall not die*<sup>1</sup>.

Well: I know that a chill comes over you<sup>2</sup> on hearing these things; but what am I to do? For this is God's own command, continually to sound these things in your ears, where He says, *Charge this people*<sup>3</sup>: and ordained as<sup>4</sup> Fors. we have been unto the ministry of the word, we must give pain to our hearers, not willingly, but on compulsion. Nay rather, if you will, we shall avoid giving you pain. For, saith He<sup>4</sup>, *if thou do that which is good, fear not*: so that it is possible for you to hear me, not only without ill-will, but even with pleasure.

As I said then; that it hath no end, Christ has declared. Paul also saith, in pointing out the eternity of the punishment, that the sinners *shall pay the penalty of destruction*,

<sup>1</sup> Mark 8.44,46, 48.

<sup>2</sup> παρὰ-  
τα.

<sup>3</sup> Fors.

Exod.

19. 10,

20. διὰ-  
μαρτυρίας

Sept.

here διὰ-

συνουχίας.

<sup>4</sup> Rom.

13. 3.

in sub-

stance.

HOMIL. *and that for ever*<sup>1</sup>. And again<sup>2</sup>, *Be not deceived; neither*  
IX. *fornicators, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, shall inherit the*

<sup>1</sup> 2 Thes. *kingdom of God.* And also unto the Hebrews he saith<sup>3</sup>,

<sup>2</sup> 1 Cor. *Follow peace with all men, and holiness, without which no*

<sup>3</sup> Heb. *man shall see the Lord.* And Christ also, to those who said,

<sup>12. 14.</sup> *In Thy Name we have done many wonderful works,* saith,

<sup>4</sup> S. Mat. *Depart from Me, I know you not, all ye workers of iniquity*<sup>4</sup>.

<sup>7. 22.</sup> And the virgins too who were shut out, entered in no more.

<sup>5</sup> S. Mat. And also about those who gave Him no food, He saith<sup>4</sup>,

<sup>45. 38,</sup> *They shall go away into everlasting punishment.*  
<sup>26.</sup>

[2.] And say not unto me, "where is the rule of justice preserved entire, if the punishment hath no end?" Rather when God doeth any thing, obey His decisions, and submit not what is said to human reasonings. But moreover, how can it be any thing else than just, for one who hath experienced innumerable blessings from the beginning, and then committed deeds worthy of punishment, and neither by threat nor benefit improved at all to suffer punishment? For if thou enquire what is absolute justice; it was meet that we should have perished immediately from the beginning, according to the definition of strict justice. Rather not even then according to the rule of justice only; for the result would have had in it kindness too, if we had suffered this also. For when any one insults him that hath done him no wrong, according to the rule of justice he suffers punishment: but when it is his benefactor, who, bound by no previous favour, hath bestowed innumerable kindnesses, who alone is the Author of his being, who is God, who breathed his soul into him, who gave ten thousand gifts of grace, whose will is to take him up into heaven;—when, I say, such an one, after so great blessings, is met by insult, daily insult, in the conduct of the other party; how can that other be thought worthy of pardon? Dost thou not see how He punished Adam for one single sin?

"Yes," you will say; "but He had given him Paradise, and caused him to enjoy much favour." Nay, surely it is not all as one, for a man to sin in the enjoyment of security and ease, and in a state of great affliction. In fact, this is the dreadful circumstance, that thy sins are the sins of one not in any Paradise, but amid the innumerable evils of this life; that thou art not sobered even by affliction, as though one in prison should



still practise his crime. However, unto thee He hath promised things yet greater than Paradise. But neither hath He given them now, lest He should unnerve thee in the season of conflicts; nor hath He been silent about them, lest He should quite cast thee down with thy labours. As for Adam, he committed but one sin, and brought on himself certain death; whereas we commit ten thousand transgressions daily. Now if he by that one act brought on himself so great an evil, and introduced death; what shall not we suffer who continually live in sins, and instead of Paradise, have the expectation of heaven?

The argument is irksome, and pains the hearer: were it only by my own feelings, I know this. For indeed my heart is troubled and throbs; and the more I see the account of hell confirmed, the more do I tremble and shrink through fear. But it is necessary to say these things, lest we fall into hell. What thou didst receive, was not paradise, nor trees and plants, but heaven, and the good things in the heavens. Now if he that had received less was condemned, and no consideration exempted him, much more shall we, who have sinned more abundantly, and have been called unto greater things, endure the woes without remedy.

Consider, for example, how long a time, but for one single sin, our race abides in death. Five thousand years \* and more have passed, and death hath not yet been done away, on account of one single sin. And we cannot even say that Adam had heard prophets, that he had seen others punished for sins, and it was meet that he should have been terrified thereby, and corrected, were it only by the example. For he was at that time first, and alone; but nevertheless he was punished. But thou canst not have any thing of this sort to advance, who after so many examples art become worse; to whom so excellent a Spirit hath been vouchsafed, and yet thou drawest upon thyself not one sin, nor two, nor three, but sins without number! For do not, because the sin is committed in a small moment, calculate that therefore the punishment also must be a matter of a

\* According to the reckoning of the LXX, in Gen. 5. which adding 100 years to the five first generations, and also in the seventh, and making some slight difference in the lives of Methuselah and Lamech, brings the date of the flood to A.M. 2242, and that of our Lord's birth to 5500.

HOMIL. moment. Seest thou not those men, who for a single theft,  
 IX. or a single act of adultery, committed in a small moment of time, oftentimes have spent their whole life in prisons, and in mines, struggling with continual hunger and every kind of death? And there was no one to set them at liberty, or to say, "The offence took place in a small moment of time; the punishment too should have its time, equivalent to that of the sin."

(2.) [3.] But, "They are men," some one will say, "who do these things; as for God, He is loving unto men." Now, first of all, not even men do these things in cruelty, but in humanity. And God Himself, as He is loving unto men, in the same character doth He punish sins. For as His mercy is great, so also is His reproof. When therefore thou sayest unto me, "God is loving unto men," then thou tellest me of so much the greater reason for punishing: namely, our sinning against such a Being. Hence also Paul said<sup>1</sup>, *It is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God.* Endure, I beseech you, the fiery force of the words, for perhaps—perhaps you will have some consolation from hence! Who among men can punish as God has punished? when He caused a deluge and entire destruction of a race so numerous; and again, when, a little while after, He rained fire from above, and utterly destroyed them all? What punishment from men can be like that? Seest thou not that the punishment, even in that instance, is almost eternal? Four thousand years have passed away, and the punishment of the Sodomites abideth at its height. For as His mercy is great, so also is His punishment.

Again: if He had imposed any burdensome or impossible things, one might perhaps have been able to urge the difficulty of the laws: but if they be extremely easy, what can we say for ourselves not regarding even these? Suppose thou art unable to fast, or to practise virginity; although thou art able if thou wilt, and they who have been able are a condemnation to us. But, however, God hath not used this strictness towards us; neither hath He enjoined these things, nor laid them down as laws, but hath left the choice to be at the discretion of the hearers. Nevertheless, thou art able to be chaste in marriage; and thou art able to abstain

<sup>1</sup> Heb.  
10. 31.

from drunkenness. Art thou unable to empty thyself of all thy goods? Nay surely thou art able; and they who have <sup>1COR.3.11-15.</sup> done so prove it. But nevertheless He hath not enjoined this, but hath commanded not to be rapacious, and of our means to assist those who are in want. But if a man say, I cannot even be content with a wife only, he deceiveth himself, and reasoneth falsely; and they condemn him who without a wife lives in chastity. But how, tell me, canst thou not help using abusive words? canst thou not help cursing? Why, the doing these things is irksome, not the refraining from them. What excuse then have we for not observing precepts so easy and light? We cannot name any at all. That the punishment then is eternal is plain from all that hath been said.

[4.] But since Paul's saying appears to some to tell the other way, come let us bring it forward also, and search it out thoroughly. For having said, *If any man's work shall abide which he hath built thereupon, he shall receive a reward; and if any man's work shall be burned, he shall suffer loss*, he adds, *but himself shall be saved, yet so as by fire*. What shall we say then to this? Let us consider first what is *the Foundation*, and what *the gold*, and what *the precious stones*, and what *the hay*, and what *the stubble*.

*The Foundation*, then, he hath himself plainly signified to be Christ, saying, *For other foundation can no man lay than that which is laid, which, he saith, is Jesus Christ*.

Next, the building seems to me to be actions. Although some maintain, that this also is spoken concerning teachers and disciples, and concerning corrupt heresies: but the reasoning doth not admit it. For if this be it, in what sense, while *the work is destroyed*, is *the builder* to be *saved*, though it be *through fire*? Of right, the author ought rather of the two to perish; but now it will be found that the severer penalty is assigned to him who hath been built into the work. For if the teacher was the cause of the wickedness, he is worthy to suffer severer punishment: how then shall he be *saved*? If, on the contrary, he was not the cause, but the disciples became such through their own perverseness, he is no whit deserving of punishment, no, nor yet of sustaining

HOMIL. loss: he, I say, who builded so well. In what sense then  
 IX. doth he say, *he shall suffer loss*?

From this it is plain that the discourse is about actions. For since he means next in course to put out his strength against the man who had committed fornication, he begins high up, and long beforehand, to lay down the preliminaries. For he knew how, while discussing upon one subject, in the very discourse about that thing to prepare the grounds of another, to which he intends to pass on. For so in his rebuke for not awaiting one another at their meals, he laid the grounds of his discourse concerning the mysteries. And also because now he is hastening on towards the fornicator, while speaking about the *Foundation*, he adds, *Know ye not that ye are the Temple of God? and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you? If any man destroy<sup>1</sup> the Temple of God, him will God destroy.* Now these things, he said, as beginning now to agitate with fears the soul of him that had been unchaste.

[5.] Ver. 12. *If any man build upon this foundation, gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, stubble.* For after the faith there is need of edification: and therefore he saith elsewhere, *Edify one another with these words<sup>2</sup>.* For both the artificer and the learner contribute to the edifying.

Wherefore he saith, *But let every man take heed how he buildeth thereupon<sup>3</sup>.* But if faith had been the subject of these sayings, the thing affirmed is not reasonable. For in the faith all ought to be equal, since *there is but one faith<sup>4</sup>;*

but in goodness of life it is not possible that all should be the same. Because the faith is not in one case less, in another more excellent, but the same in all those who truly believe. But in life there is room for some to be more diligent, others more slothful; some stricter, and others more ordinary; that some should have done well in greater things, others in less; that the errors of some should have been more grievous, of others less notable. On this account he saith, *Gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, stubble,—every man's work shall be made manifest:—his conduct; that is what he speaks of here:—If any man's work abide which he hath built thereupon, he shall receive a reward; if any man's work shall be burned, he shall suffer loss.* Whereas, if the saying related to disciples and teachers, he ought not to

<sup>1</sup> perhaps

rec. ver.

sion,

"defile."

18.

(3.)

<sup>2</sup> I Cor.

3. 10.

<sup>4</sup> Eph. 4.

5.



suffer loss for disciples refusing to hear. And therefore he saith, *Every man shall receive his own reward according to his own labour*; not according to the result, but according to the labour. For what if the hearers gave no heed? Wherefore this passage also proves, that the saying is about actions.

Now his meaning is this: If any man lead an ill life with a right faith, his faith shall not shelter him from punishment, his work being burnt up. The phrase, *shall be burned up*, means, "shall not endure the violence of the fire." But just as if a man having golden armour on were to pass through a river of fire, he comes from crossing it all the brighter; but if he were to pass through it with hay, so far from profiting, he destroys himself besides; so also is the case in regard of men's works. For he doth not say this as if he were discoursing of material things being burnt up, but with a view of making their fear more intense, and of shewing how naked of all defence he is who abides in wickedness. Wherefore he said, *He shall suffer loss*: lo, here is one punishment: *but he himself shall be saved, but so as by fire*; lo, again, here is a second. And his meaning is, "He himself shall not perish in the same way as his works, passing into nought, but he shall abide in the fire."

[6.] "He calleth it, however, *Salvation*," you will say; why, that is the cause of his adding *so as by fire*: since we also use to say, "It is preserved in the fire," when we speak of those substances which do not immediately burn up and become ashes. For do not at sound of the word fire, imagine that those who are burning pass into annihilation. And though he call such punishment *Salvation*, be not astonished. For his custom is, in things which have an ill sound to use fair expressions, and in good things the contrary. For example, the word *Captivity* seems to be the name of an evil thing, but Paul has applied it in a good sense, when he says, *Bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ*<sup>1</sup>. And again, to an evil thing he hath applied a good word, saying, *Sin hath reigned*<sup>2</sup>, <sup>10. 5.</sup> <sup>2 Rom.</sup> where surely the term *reigning* is rather of auspicious sound. And so here in saying, *he shall be saved*, he hath but darkly hinted at the intensity of the penalty: as if he



HOMIL. had said, "But himself shall remain for ever in punishment."  
IX.

He then makes an inference, saying,

[7.] Ver. 16. *Know ye not that ye are the Temple of God?*

For since he had discoursed in the section before, concerning those who were dividing the Church, he thenceforward attacks him also who had been guilty of uncleanness; not indeed as yet in plain terms, but in a general way; hinting at his corrupt mode of life, and enhancing the sin, by the Gift which had been already given to him. Then also he puts all the rest to shame, arguing from these very blessings which they had already: for this is what he is ever doing, either from the future, or from the past, whether grievous, or encouraging. First, from things future; *For the day shall declare it, because it shall be revealed by fire.* Again, from things already come to pass; *Know ye not that ye are the Temple of God, and the Spirit of God dwelleth in you?*

Ver. 17. *If any man destroy the Temple of God, him will God destroy.* Dost thou mark the sweeping vehemence of his words? However, so long as the person is unknown, what is spoken is not so invidious, all having among themselves the fear of the rebuke.

*Him will God destroy*, that is, will cause him to perish. And this is not the word of one denouncing a curse, but of one that prophesieth.

*For the Temple of God is holy:* but he that hath committed fornication is profane.

Then, in order that he might not seem to spend his earnestness upon that one, in saying, *for the Temple of God is holy*, he addeth, *which ye are.*

[8.] V. 18. *Let no man deceive himself.* This also is in reference to that person, as thinking himself to be somewhat, and flattering himself for his wisdom. But that he might not seem to press on him at great length in a mere digression; he first throws him into a kind of agony, and delivers him over unto fear, and then brings back his discourse to the common fault, saying, *If any man among you seemeth to be wise in this world, let him become a fool, that he may become<sup>1</sup> wise.* And this<sup>b</sup> he doth afterwards with great boldness

<sup>1</sup> γίν-  
ται. rec.  
veta.  
"be."

<sup>b</sup> i. e. "reproving them for their common fault."

of speech, as having sufficiently beaten them down<sup>c</sup>, and shaken 1 COR. 3. 18.  
with that fear the mind not of that unclean person only, but of  
all the hearers also : so accurately does he measure the reach  
of what he has to say. For what if a man be rich, what if he  
be noble ; he is viler than all the vile, when made captive by  
sin. For as if a man were a king and enslaved to barbarians,  
he is of all men most wretched, so also is it in regard of sin :  
since sin is a barbarian, and the soul which hath been once  
taken captive she knoweth not how to spare, but plays the  
tyrant, to the shame and ruin of all those who admit her.

[9.] For nothing is so inconsiderate as sin : nothing so (4.)  
senseless, so utterly foolish and outrageous. All is overturned  
and confounded and destroyed by it, wheresoever it may  
alight. Unsightly to behold, disgusting and grievous. And  
should a painter draw her picture<sup>d</sup>, he would not, methinks,  
err, in fashioning her after this sort. A woman with the form  
of a beast, savage, breathing flames, hideous, black ; such as  
the heathen poets depict their Scyllas. For with ten thou-  
sand hands she lays hold of our thoughts, and comes on  
unexpected, and tears every thing in pieces, like those dogs  
that bite slyly.

But rather, what need of the painter's art, when we should  
rather bring forward those who are made after sin's likeness ?

Whom then will ye that we should pourtray first ? The  
covetous and rapacious ? And what more shameless than  
those eyes ? What more immodest, more like a greedy dog ?  
For no dog keeps his ground with such shameless importu-  
nity, as he when he is grasping at all men's goods. What  
more polluted than those hands ? What more audacious than  
that mouth, swallowing all down, and not satisfied ? Nay,  
look not on the countenance and the eyes as being a man's.  
For such looks belong not to the eyes of men. He seeth not  
men as men ; he seeth not the heaven as heaven. He does  
not even lift up his head unto the Lord ; but all is money in  
his account. The eyes of men are wont to look upon poor  
persons in affliction, and to be softened ; but these of the

<sup>c</sup> From this to the end of the sentence  
is not in the Benedictine, but in Savile's  
margin, evidently from some MS. It  
seems to complete the connection of the

sentences.

<sup>d</sup> Compare G. Herbert, *Remains*,  
p. 110. ed. 1824.

HOMIL. rapacious man, at sight of the poor, glare like wild beasts'.

IX.

The eyes of men behold other men's goods, not as if they were their own, yea, rather, their own as others; and they covet not the things given to others, but rather exhaust upon others their own means: but these will be content with nothing, except they take all men's property. For it is not a man's eye which they have, but a wild beast's. The eyes of men endure not to see their own body stripped of clothing, (for it is their own, though in person it belong to others,) but these, unless they strip every one, and lodge all men's property in their own home, are never cloyed; yea rather they never have enough. Insomuch that one might say, that their hands are not wild beasts' only, but even far more savage and cruel than these. For bears and wolves, when they are satiated, leave off their kind of eating: but these know not any satiety. And yet for this cause God made us hands, to assist others, not to plot against them. And if we were to use them for that purpose, better had they been cut off, and we left without them. But thou, if a wild beast rend a sheep, art grieved; but when doing the same unto one of thine own flesh and blood, thinkest thou that thy deed is nothing atrocious? How then canst thou be a man? Seest thou not that we call a thing Humane, when it is full of mercy and loving-kindness? But when a man doth any thing cruel and savage, Inhuman is the title we give to such an one. You see then that the stamp of man as we pourtray him, is his shewing mercy; of a beast the contrary; according to the constant saying, "Why, is a man a wild beast, or a dog?" For men relieve poverty; they do not aggravate it. Again, these men's mouths are the mouths of wild beasts; yea, rather these are the fiercer of the two. For the words also, which they utter, emit poison, more than the wild beasts' teeth, working slaughter. And if one were to go through all particulars, one should then see clearly how inhumanity turns those who practise it from men into beasts.

<sup>1</sup> vid. 2  
King<sup>s</sup> 8.  
13.

[10.] But were he to search out the mind also of that sort of people, he would no longer call them beasts only, but demons. For first, they are full of great cruelty and of hatred against their fellow-servant<sup>2</sup>: and neither is

<sup>2</sup>S. Mat.  
18. 33.

love of the kingdom there, nor fear of hell; no reverence <sup>1Cor.3.</sup> for men, no pity, no sympathy: but shamelessness and <sup>18.</sup> audacity, and contempt of all things to come. And unto them the words of God concerning punishment seem to be a fable, and His threats mirth. For such is the mind of the covetous man. Since then within they are demons, and without, wild beasts, yea, worse than wild beasts; where are we to place such as they are? For that they are worse even than wild beasts, is plain from this. The beasts are such as they are by nature: but these, endowed by nature with gentleness, forcibly strive against nature to train themselves to that which is savage. The demons too have the plotters among men to help them; to such an extent, that if they had no such aid, the greater part of their wiles against us would be done away: but these, when such as they have spitefully entreated are vying with them, still try to be more spiteful than they. Again, the devil wages war with man, not with the devils of his own kind: but he of whom we speak is urgent in all ways to do harm to his own kindred and family, and doth not even reverence nature.

I know that many hate us because of these words; but I feel no hatred towards them; rather I pity and bewail those who are so disposed. Even should they choose to strike, I would gladly endure it, if they would but abstain from this their savage mind. For not I alone, but the prophet also with me, banisheth all such from the family of men, saying<sup>1</sup>, <sup>1 Ps. 49.</sup> *Man being in honour hath no understanding, but is compared* <sup>20. Sept.</sup> *unto the senseless beasts.* <sup>ταῖς ἀνέλ-  
τοις.</sup>

Let us then become men at last, and let us look up unto heaven; and that which is according to His image<sup>2</sup>, let us <sup>1 Colos.</sup> receive and recover: that we may obtain also the blessings to <sup>3. 10.</sup> come, through the grace and loving-kindness of our Lord Jesus Christ, with whom to the Father and the Holy Spirit be glory, power, honour, now and always, and unto everlasting ages. Amen.



## HOMILY X.

---

I COR. iii. 18, 19.

<sup>1</sup> *ἐν σοφίᾳ* *Let no man deceive himself. If any man* <sup>1</sup>*seemeth to be*  
omitted. *wise in this world, let him become a fool, that he may be*  
*wise. For the wisdom of this world is foolishness with*  
*God.*

As I said before, having launched out before the proper time into accusation of the fornicator, and having half opened it, obscurely in a few words, and made the man's conscience to quail, he hastens again to the battle with heathen wisdom, and to his accusations of those who were puffed up therewith, and who were dividing the Church: in order that having added what remained, and having completed the whole topic with accuracy, he might thenceforth suffer his tongue to be carried away with vehement impulse against that unclean person, having had but a preliminary skirmishing with him in what he had said before. For this, *Let no man deceive himself*, is the expression of one aiming chiefly at him, and quelling him beforehand by fear: and the saying about the *stubble*, suits best with one hinting at him. And so does the phrase, *Know ye not that ye are the Temple of God, and the Spirit of God dwelleth in you?* For these two things are most apt to withdraw us from sin; when in mind we realize the punishment appointed for the sin; and when we reckon up the amount of our true dignity. By bringing forward then *the hay*, and *the stubble*, he terrifies; but by speaking of the dignity of that noble birth, which was theirs, he puts them to shame; by the former striving to amend the more insensible kind, by the latter the more considerate.



[2.] *Let no man deceive himself; if any man seemeth to* 1 Cor. 3.  
*be wise in this world, let him become a fool.* 18, 19.

As he bids one become, as it were, dead unto the world;—and this deadness harms not at all, but rather profits, being made a cause of life:—so also he bids him become foolish unto this world, introducing to us hereby the true wisdom. Now he becomes a fool unto the world, who slights the wisdom from without, and is persuaded that it contributes nothing towards his comprehension of the faith. As then that poverty which is according to God is the cause of wealth, and lowliness, of exaltation, and to despise glory is the cause of glory; so also the becoming a fool maketh a man wiser than all. For all, with us, goes by contraries.

Further: why said he not, Let him put off wisdom, but, *Let him become a fool*? That he might most exceedingly disparage the heathen instruction. For it was not the same thing to say, “Lay aside thy wisdom,” and, *become a fool*. And besides, he is also training people not to be ashamed at the want of refinement among us; for he quite laughs to scorn all heathen things. And for the same sort of reason he shrinks not from the names, trusting as he does to the power of the things [which he speaks of.]

Wherefore, as the Cross, though counted ignominious, became the author of innumerable blessings, and the foundation and root of glory unspeakable; so also that which was accounted to be foolishness became unto us the cause of wisdom. For as he who hath learned any thing ill, unless he put away the whole, and make his soul level and clear, and so offer it to him who is to write on it, will know no wholesome truth for certain; so also in regard of the wisdom from without. Unless thou turn out the whole, and sweep thy mind clear, and like one that is ignorant yield up thyself unto the faith, thou wilt know accurately nothing excellent. For so those also who see imperfectly, if they will not shut their eyes and commit themselves unto others, but will be trusting their own matters to their own faulty eye-sight, they will commit many more mistakes than those who see not.

But how, you will say, are men to put off this wisdom? By their not acting on its precepts.

[3.] Then, seeing that he bade men so urgently withdraw

HOMIL. themselves from it, he adds the cause, saying, *For the wisdom*  
 X. *of this world is foolishness with God.* For not only it contributes nothing, but it even hinders. We must then withdraw ourselves from it, as doing harm. Dost thou mark with what a high hand he carries off the spoils of victory, having proved that so far from profiting us at all, it is even an opponent?

And he is not content with his own arguments, but he has  
 1 Job 6. also adduced testimony again, saying, *For it is written<sup>1</sup>, He*  
 13. *taketh the wise in their own craftiness.* By *craftiness*, i. e. by their own arms getting the better of them. For seeing that they made use of their wisdom to the doing away of all need of God, by it and no other thing He refuted them, shewing that they are specially in need of God. How and by what method? Because having by it become fools, by it, as was meet, they were taken. For they who supposed that they needed not God, were reduced to so great a strait, as to appear inferior to fishermen and unlettered persons; and from that time forth to be unable to do without them. Wherefore he saith, *In their own craftiness* He took them. For the saying, *I will destroy their wisdom*, was spoken in regard to its introducing nothing useful; but this, *who taketh the wise in their own craftiness*, with a view of shewing the power of God.

(2.) Next, he declares also the mode in which God took them, adding another testimony:

Ver. 20. *For the Lord*, saith he, *knoweth the thoughts of*  
 2 Ps. 94. *the wise<sup>2</sup> that they are vain.* Now when the Wisdom which  
 11. is boundless pronounces this edict concerning them, and  
 Sept. declares them to be such, what other proof dost thou seek of their extreme folly? For men's judgments, it is true, in many instances fail; but the decree of God is unexceptionable and uncorrupt in every case.

[4.] Thus having set up so splendid a trophy of the judgment from on high, he employs in what follows a certain vehemence of style, turning it against those who were under his ministry<sup>3</sup>, and speaking thus:

Ver. 21. *Wherefore let no man glory in human things<sup>4</sup>; for*  
 3 *all things are yours.* He comes again to the former topic, pointing out that not even for their spiritual things ought they to be high-minded, as having nothing of themselves. "Since then the wisdom from without is hurtful, and the spiritual  
 4 *all things are yours.*

gifts were not given by you, what hast thou wherein to boast?" 1 Cor. 3. 21. And in regard to the wisdom from without, *Let no man deceive himself*, saith he, because they were conceited about a thing which in truth did more harm than good. But here, inasmuch as the thing spoken of was really advantageous, *Let no man glory*. And he orders his speech more gently: *for all things are yours*;

Ver. 22. *Whether Paul, or Apollos, or Cephas, or the world, or life, or death, or things present, or things to come, all are yours; and ye are Christ's, and Christ is God's*. For because he had handled them sharply, he refreshes them again. And as above he had said<sup>1</sup>, *We are fellow-workers with God*; and by 1 Cor. 3. 9. many other expressions had soothed them: so here too he saith,

*All things are yours*; taking down the pride of the teachers, and signifying that so far from bestowing any favour on them, they themselves ought to be grateful to the others. Since for their sake they were made such as they were, yea, moreover, had received grace. But seeing that these also were sure to boast, on this account he cuts out beforehand this disease too, saying, *As God gave to every man<sup>2</sup>, and God<sup>3</sup> gave the increase*: to the end that neither the one party might be puffed up as bestowers of good; nor the others, on their hearing a second time, *All things are yours*, be again elated. "For, indeed, though it were for your sakes, yet the whole was God's doing." And I wish you to observe how he hath kept on throughout, making suppositions in his own name and that of Peter.

But what is, *or death*? That even though they die for your sakes they die, encountering dangers for your salvation. Dost thou mark how he again takes down the high spirit of the disciples, and raises the spirit of the teachers? In fact, he talks with them as with children of high birth, who have preceptors, and who are to be heirs of all.

We may say also, in another sense, that both the death of Adam was for our sakes, that we might be corrected; and the death of Christ, that we might be saved.

*And ye are Christ's; and Christ is God's*. In one sense *we are Christ's*, and in another sense *Christ is God's*, and in a third sense is *the world ours*. For we indeed are Christ's, as His work: *Christ is God's*, as a genuine



HOMIL. X. Offspring, not as a work: in which sense neither is the world ours. So that though the saying is the same, yet the meaning is different. For *the world is ours*, as being a thing made for our sakes: but *Christ is God's*, as having Him the Author of his being, in that He is Father. And *we are Christ's*, as having been formed by Him. Now "if they are yours," saith he, "why have ye done what is just contrary to this, in calling yourselves after their name, and not after Christ, and God?"

[5.] C. iv. V. 1. *Let a man so account of us, as of the ministers of Christ, and stewards of the mysteries of God.* After he had cast down their spirit, mark how again he refreshes it, saying, *as the ministers of Christ.* Do not thou then, letting go the Master, receive a name from the servants and ministers. *Stewards*, saith he, indicating that we ought not to give these things unto all, but unto whom it is due, and to whom it is fitting we should minister.

V. 2. *Moreover it is required in stewards, that a man be found faithful:* that is, that he do not appropriate to himself his master's goods, that he do not as a master lay claim for himself, but administer as a steward. For a steward's part is, to administer well the things committed to his charge: not to say that his master's things are his own; but, on the contrary, that his own are his master's. Let every one think on these things, both he that hath power in speech, and he that possesses wealth, namely, that he hath been entrusted with a master's goods, and that they are not his own; let him not keep them with himself, nor set them down to his own account; but let him impute them unto God who gave them all. Wouldest thou see faithful stewards? Hear what saith Peter, *Why look ye so earnestly on us, as though by our own power or holiness we had made this man to walk?*<sup>1</sup>

12. Unto<sup>2</sup> Cornelius also he saith, *We also are men of like passions with you:* and unto Christ Himself, *Lo, we have left all, and followed Thee*<sup>3</sup>. And Paul, no less, when he had said, *I laboured more abundantly than they all*<sup>3</sup>, added, *yet not I, but the grace of God which was with me.* Elsewhere also, setting himself strongly against the same persons,

<sup>1</sup> Acts 3.  
<sup>2</sup> S. Mat. 19. 27.  
<sup>3</sup> 1 Cor. 15. 10.  
<sup>c</sup> These words were addressed by of Lystra when they were about to offer sacrifices to them. Acts 14. 15.

he said, *For what hast thou which thou didst not receive?* <sup>1 Cor. 4. 1, 2.</sup>  
 "For thou hast nothing of thine own, neither wealth, nor <sup>1 c. 4. 7.</sup>  
 speech, nor life itself; for this also is surely the Lord's.  
 Wherefore, when necessity calls, do thou lay down this also.  
 But if thou doatest on life, and being ordered to lay it down  
 refusest, thou art no longer a faithful steward."

"And how is it possible, when God calls, to resist?" Well,  
 that is just what I say too: and on this very account do I chiefly  
 admire the loving-kindness of God, that the things which He  
 is able, even against thy will, to take from thee, these He  
 willeth not to be paid in<sup>a</sup> by thee unwillingly, that thou<sup>a</sup> <sup>1 Cor. 15. 31.</sup>  
 mayest have a reward besides. For instance, He can take  
 away life without thy consent; but His will is to do so with  
 thy consent, that thou mayest say with Paul, *I die daily*.<sup>a</sup> <sup>1 Cor. 15. 31.</sup>  
 He can take away thy glory without thy consent, and bring  
 thee low: but He will have it from thee with thine own good-  
 will, that thou mayest have a recompence. He can make  
 thee poor, though unwilling, but He will have thee willingly  
 become such, that He may weave crowns for thee. Seest thou  
 God's mercy to man? Seest thou our own brutish stupidity?

What if thou art come to great dignity, and hast at any  
 time obtained some office of Church government? Be not  
 high-minded. Thou hast not acquired the glory, but God  
 hath put it on thee. As if it were another's, therefore, use it  
 sparingly; neither abusing it, nor using it upon unsuitable  
 things, nor puffed up, nor appropriating it unto thyself; but  
 esteem thyself to be poor and inglorious. For never,—hadst  
 thou been entrusted with a king's purple to keep,—never  
 would it have become thee to abuse the robe and spoil it, but  
 with the more exactness to keep it for the giver. Is utterance  
 given thee? Be not puffed up; be not arrogant; for the  
 gracious gift is not thine. Be not grudging about thy  
 Master's goods, but distribute them among thy fellow-servants;  
 and neither be thou elated with these things as if they were  
 thine own, nor be sparing as to the distribution of them.  
 Again, if thou hast children, they are God's which thou hast.  
 If such be thy thought, thou wilt both be thankful for having  
 them, and if bereft thou wilt not take it hard. Such was Job  
 when he said<sup>a</sup>, *The Lord gave, the Lord hath taken away*. <sup>a Job 1. 21.</sup>

For we have all things from Christ. Both existence



HOMIL. X. itself we have through Him, and life, and breath, and light, and air, and earth. And if He were to exclude us from any one of these, we are lost and undone. For *we are strangers and sojourners*. And all this about "mine," and "thine," is bare words only, and doth not stand for things. For if thou do but say, the house is thine, it is a word without a reality: since the very air, earth, matter, are the Creator's; and so art thou too thyself, who hast framed it; and all other things also. But supposing the use to be thine, even this is uncertain, not on account of death alone, but also before death, because of the instability of things.

[6.] These things then continually picturing to ourselves, let us live strict lives; and we shall gain two of the greatest advantages. For first, we shall be thankful both when we have and when we are bereaved; and we shall not be enslaved to things which are fleeting by, and things not our own. For whether it be wealth that He taketh, He hath taken but His own; or honour, or glory, or the body, or the life itself: be it that He taketh away thy son, it is not thy son that He hath taken, but His own servant. For thou formedst him not, but He made him. Thou didst but minister to his appearing; the whole was God's own work. Let us give thanks therefore that we have been counted worthy to be His ministers in this matter. But what? Wouldest thou have had him for ever? This again proves thee grudging, and ignorant that it was another's child which thou hadst, and not thine own. As therefore those who part resignedly are but aware that they have what was not theirs; so, whoever gives way to grief, is in fact counting the King's property his own. For, if we are not our own, how can they be ours? I say, we: for in two ways we are His, both on account of our creation, and also on account of the faith. Wherefore David

<sup>1</sup> Ps. 39. saith, *My substance is with Thee*<sup>2</sup>: and Paul too, *For in Him we live and move and have our being*<sup>3</sup>: and plying the argument about the faith, he says<sup>4</sup>, *Ye are not your own, and ye are bought with a price*. For all things are God's. <sup>2</sup> Ps. 139. <sup>3</sup> Acts 17. 28. <sup>4</sup> 1 Cor. 6. 19, 20.

is unnecessary the things which are not thine? Knowest thou <sup>1 Cor. 4.</sup> not that for this we are soon to be put on our trial, that is, <sup>1, 2.</sup> if we have used them badly? But seeing that they are not our's but our Master's, it were right to expend them upon our fellow-servants. It is worth considering that the omission of this was the charge brought against that rich man: and against those also who had not given food to the Lord'. <sup>18. Luke</sup>

[7.] Say not then, "I am but spending mine own, and of mine own I live delicately." It is not of thine own, but of <sup>16. 21.</sup> other men's. Other men's, I say, because such is thine own <sup>S. Matt.</sup> choice: for God's will is that those things should be thine, <sup>25. 42.</sup> which have been entrusted unto thee on behalf of thy brethren. Now the things which are not thine own become thine, if thou spend them upon others: but if thou spend on thyself unsparingly, thine own things become no longer thine. For since thou usest them cruelly, and sayest, "That my own things should be altogether spent on my own enjoyment, is fair:" therefore I call them not thine own. For they are common to thee and thy fellow-servants; just as the sun is common, the air, the earth, and all the rest. For as in the case of the body, each ministration belongs both to the whole body and to each several member; but when it is applied to one single member only, it destroys the proper function of that very member: so also it comes to pass in the case of <sup>(4.)</sup> wealth. And that what I say may be made plainer; the food of the body which is given in common to the members, should it pass into one member, even to that it turns out alien in the end. For when it cannot be digested, nor afford nourishment, even to that part, I say, it turns out alien. But if it be made common, both that part and all the rest have it as their own.

So also in regard of wealth. If you enjoy it alone, you too have lost it: for you will not reap its reward. But if you possess it jointly with the rest, then will it be more your own, and then will you reap the benefit of it. Seest thou not that the hands minister, and the mouth softens, and the stomach receives? Doth the stomach say, Since I have received, I ought to keep it all? Then do not thou I pray, in regard to riches, use this language. For it belongs to the receiver to impart. As then it is a vice in the stomach to retain the food

HOMIL. and not to distribute it, (for it is injurious to the whole body,)   
 —X. so it is a vice in those that are rich to keep to themselves what they have. For this destroys both themselves and others. Again, the eye receives all the light: but it doth not itself alone retain it, but enlightens the entire body. For it is not its nature to keep it to itself, so long as it is an eye. Again, the nostrils are sensible of perfume; but they do not keep it all to themselves, but transmit it to the brain, and affect the stomach with a sweet savour, and by their means refresh the entire man. The feet alone walk; but they move not away themselves only, but transfer also the whole body. In like manner do thou, whatsoever thou hast been entrusted withal, keep it not to thyself alone, since thou art doing harm to the whole, and to thyself more than all.

And not in the case of the limbs only may one see this occurring: for the smith also, if he chose to impart of his craft to no one, ruins both himself and all other crafts. Likewise the cordwainer, the husbandman, the baker, and every one of those who pursue any necessary calling; if he chose not to communicate to any one of the results of his art, will ruin not the others only, but himself also with them.

And why do I say, "the rich?" For the poor too, if they followed after the wickedness of you who are covetous and rich, would injure you very greatly, and soon make you poor; yea rather, they would quite destroy you, were they in your want unwilling to impart of their own: the tiller of the ground, (for instance,) of the labour of his hands; the sailor, of the gain from his voyages; the soldier, of his distinction won in the wars.

Wherefore if nothing else can, yet let this at least put you to shame, and do you imitate their benevolence. Dost thou impart none of thy wealth unto any? Then shouldest thou not receive any thing from another: in which case, the world will be turned upside down. For in every thing to give and receive is the principle of numerous blessings: in seeds, in scholars, in arts. For if any one desire to keep his art to himself, he subverts both himself and the whole course of things. And the husbandman, if he bury and keep the seeds in his house, will bring about a grievous famine. So also the rich man, if he act thus in regard of his wealth, will destroy himself before the poor,

heaping up the fire of hell more grievous upon his own <sup>1Cor.4.</sup> head. <sub>1, 2.</sub>

[8.] Therefore as teachers, however many scholars they have, impart some of their lore unto each ; so let thy possession be, many to whom thou hast done good. And let all say, “ such an one he freed from poverty, such an one from dangers. Such an one would have perished had he not, next to the grace of God, enjoyed thy patronage. This man’s disease thou didst cure, another thou didst rid of false accusation, another being a stranger you took in, another being naked you clothed.” Wealth inexhaustible and many treasures are not so good as such sayings. They draw all men’s gaze, more powerfully than your golden vestments, and horses, and slaves. For these make a man appear even odious<sup>1</sup> : <sup>pag. 1.</sup> they cause him to be hated as a common foe ; but the former <sup>adv. & conj. of Savile’s</sup> proclaim him as a common father and benefactor. And, what is greatest of all, Favour from God waits on thee in every <sup>for pag. 124.</sup> part of thy proceedings. What I mean is, let one man say, He helped to portion out my daughter : another, And he afforded my son the means of taking his station among men<sup>2</sup> : <sup>2 is de- dene in- quation.</sup> another, He made my calamity to cease : another, He delivered me from dangers. Better than golden crowns are words such as these, that a man should have in his city innumerable persons to proclaim his beneficence. Voices such as these are pleasanter far, and sweeter than the voices of the heralds marching before the archons ; to be called, saviour, benefactor, defender, (the very names of God) ; and not, covetous, proud, insatiate, and mean. Let us not, I beseech you, let us not have a fancy for any of these titles, but the contrary. For if these, spoken on earth, make one so splendid and illustrious ; when they are written in heaven, and God proclaims them on the day that shall come, think what renown, what splendour thou shalt enjoy ! Which may it be the lot of us all to obtain, through the grace and loving-kindness of our Lord Jesus Christ ; with whom, unto the Father, and the Holy Spirit, be glory, power, honour, now and always, and unto everlasting ages. Amen.



## HOMILY XI.

---

1 COR. iv. 3, 4.

*But with me it is a very small thing that I should be judged of you, or of man's judgment: yea I judge not mine own self. For I know nothing by myself, yet am I not hereby justified: but He that judgeth me is the Lord.*

TOGETHER with all other ills, I know not how, there hath come upon man's nature the disease of restless prying, and of unseasonable curiosity, which Christ Himself chastised, saying, <sup>18. Mat. 7. 1.</sup> *Judge not, that ye be not judged.* A kind of thing which hath no pleasure as all other sins have, but only punishment and vengeance. For though we are ourselves full of ten thousand evils, and bearing the *beams* in our own eyes, we become exact inquisitors of the offences of our neighbour, which are not at all bigger than *motes*. And so this matter at Corinth was falling out. Religious men and dear to God were enduring ridicule and expulsion for their want of learning; while others, brimful of evils innumerable, were being classed highly because of their fluent speech. Then like persons sitting in public to try causes, these were the sort of votes which they kept rashly passing: "such an one is worthy; such an one is better than such another: this man is inferior to that; that, better than this." And, leaving off to mourn for their own bad ways, they were become judges over others; and in this way again were kindling grievous warfare.

Mark then, how wisely Paul corrects them, doing away with this disease. For since he had said, *Moreover, it is required in stewards that a man be found faithful*, and it seemed as if he were giving them an opening to judge and pry into each man's life, and this was aggravating the party-feeling; lest such should be the effect on them, he draws them



away from that kind of petty disputation, saying, *With me* <sup>1 Cor. 4.</sup> *it is a very small thing that I should be judged of you; again* <sup>3, 4.</sup> in his own person carrying on the discourse.

[2.] But what means, *With me it is a very small thing that I should be judged of you or of man's day*? "I judge myself <sup>ἀμάρταν</sup> unworthy," saith he, "of being judged by you." And why say I, "by you?" I will add, "by <sup>καὶ</sup> any one else." Howbeit, <sup>καὶ</sup> let no one condemn Paul of arrogance; though he saith that <sup>ἐσθλῶ?</sup> no man is worthy to pass sentence concerning him. For first, he saith these things not for his own sake, but wishing to rescue others from the odium which they had incurred from the Corinthians. And in the next place, he limits not the matter to the Corinthians merely, but himself also he deposes from this right of judging; saying, that to decree such things was a matter beyond his decision. At least he adds, *I judge not mine own self*.

But besides what has been said, we must search out the ground upon which these expressions were uttered. For he knew well in many cases how to speak with high spirit: and that, not of pride or arrogance, but of a certain excellent economy<sup>3</sup>, seeing that in the present case also he saith this, not as <sup>οὐκ ἐμὴν</sup> lifting up himself, but as taking down other men's sails, and earnestly seeking to invest the saints with due honour. For in proof that he was one of the very humble, hear what he saith, bringing forward the testimony of his enemies on this point; *His bodily presence is weak, and his speech contemptible*<sup>4</sup>; and again, *Last of all, as to one born out of due* <sup>2 Cor. 10. 10.</sup> *time, He appeared unto me also*<sup>5</sup>. But notwithstanding, see <sup>1 Cor. 15. 8.</sup> this lowly man, when the time called on him, to what a pitch he raises the spirit of the disciples, not teaching pride, but inculcating a wholesome courage. For with these same discoursing he saith, *And if the world shall be judged by you, are ye unworthy to judge the smallest matters*<sup>6</sup>? For as the <sup>1 Cor. 6. 2.</sup> Christian ought to be far removed from arrogance, so also from flattery and a mean spirit. Thus, if any one says, "I count money as nothing, but all things here are to me as a shadow, and a dream, and child's play;" we are not at all to charge him as arrogant; since in this way we shall have to accuse Solomon himself of arrogance, for speaking <sup>φιλοσοφῶν</sup> <sup>σοφῶν</sup> <sup>ἑκκλ.</sup> <sup>1. 2.</sup> *austerely*<sup>7</sup> on these things, saying, *Vanity of vanities*<sup>8</sup>, and

HOMIL. *all is vanity.* But God forbid that we should call the strict  
 XI. rule of life by the name of arrogance. Wherefore to despise these things is not haughtiness, but greatness of soul; albeit we see kings, and rulers, and potentates, making much of them. But many a poor man, leading a strict life, despises them; and we are not therefore to call him arrogant but highminded: just as, on the other hand, if any be extremely addicted to them, we do not call him lowly of heart and moderate, but weak, and poor spirited, and ignoble. For so, should a son despise the pursuits which become his father, and affect slavish ways, we should not commend him as lowly of heart, but as base and servile we should reproach him. What we should admire in him would be, his despising those meaner things, and making much account of what came to him from his father. For this is arrogance, to think one's self better than one's fellow-servants: but to pass the true sentence on things, cometh not of boasting, but of strictness of life.

(2.) On this account Paul also, not to exalt himself, but to humble others, and to keep down those who were rising up out of their places, and to persuade them to be modest, said, *With me it is a very small thing that I should be judged of you or of man's day.* Observe how he soothes the other party also. For whosoever is told that he looks down on all alike, and deigns not to be judged of any one, will not thenceforth any more feel pain, as though himself were the only one excluded. For if he had said, *Of you, only*, and so held his peace; this were enough to gall them as if treated contemptuously. But now, by introducing, *nor yet of man's day*, he hath brought alleviation to the blow; giving them partners in the contempt. However, he himself softens this point again, saying, *not even do I judge myself.* Mark the expression, how entirely free from arrogance: in that not even he himself, he saith, is capable of so great exactness.

[3.] Then because this saying also seemed to be that of one extolling himself greatly, this too he corrects, saying, *Yet am I not hereby justified.* What then? Ought we not to judge ourselves, and our own misdeeds? Yes surely: there is great need to do this when we sin. But Paul said not this, *For I am not*, saith he, *conscious to myself of any thing.* What misdeed then was he to judge, when he was *conscious to*

*himself of nothing?* Yet, saith he, *he was not justified.* 1COR.4. We then who have our conscience filled with ten thousand <sup>3.</sup> wounds, and are conscious to ourselves of nothing good, but quite the contrary; what can we say?

And how could it be, if he were *conscious to himself of nothing*, that he was not justified? Because it was possible for him to have committed certain sins, not however to be himself aware of their being sins. From this make thine estimate, how great shall be the strictness of the future judgment. It is not, you see, as considering himself unblameable, that he saith it is so unmeet for him to be judged by them, but to stop the mouths of those who were doing so unreasonably. At least in another place, even though men's sins be notorious, he permits not judgment unto others, because the occasion required it. *For why dost thou judge thy brother*, saith he<sup>1</sup>, or *thou, why dost thou set at nought thy brother?* 1 Rom. For thou wert not enjoined, O man, to judge others, but to <sup>14, 10.</sup> prove thine own doings. Why then dost thou seize upon the office of the Lord? Judgment is His, not thine.

To which effect, he adds, *Therefore judge nothing before the time, until the Lord come; who both will bring to light the hidden things of darkness, and will make manifest the counsels of the hearts, and then shall every man have praise of God.* What then? Is it not right that our teachers should do this? It is right in the case of open and confessed sins, and that with fitting opportunity, and even then with pain and inward vexation: not as these were acting at that time, of vain-glory and arrogance. For neither in this instance is he speaking of those sins, which all own to be such, but about preferring such an one before another, and making comparisons of modes of life. For these things He alone knows how to judge with accuracy, who is to judge our secret doings, which of these be worthy of greater, and which of less punishment and honour. But we do all this according to what meets our eye. "For if in mine own errors," saith he, "I know nothing clearly, how can I be worthy to pass sentence on other men? And how shall I who know not my own case with accuracy, be able to judge the state of others." Now if Paul felt this, much more we. For (to proceed) he spake these things, not to exhibit himself as faultless, but to

HOMIL. shew that even should there be among them some such  
 XI. person, free from transgression, not even he would be worthy to judge the lives of others: and that if he, though conscious to himself of nothing, declare himself guilty, much more they who have ten thousand sins to be conscious of in themselves.

[4.] Having thus, you see, stopped the mouths of those who pass such sentences, he travails next with strong feeling ready to break out and come upon the unclean person. And like as when a storm is coming on, some clouds fraught with darkness run before it; afterwards, when the rattling of the thunders ariseth, and works the whole heavens even into one black cloud, then all at once the rain bursts down upon the ground: so also did it then happen. For though he might in deep indignation have dealt with the fornicator, he doth not so; but with fearful words he first represses the swelling pride of the man, since in truth, what had occurred was a twofold sin, fornication, and, that which is worse than fornication, the not grieving over the sin committed. For not so much does he bewail the sin, as him that committed it, and did not as yet repent. Thus *I shall bewail many*, saith he, not simply *of those who have sinned before*, but *of those*, he adds, *who have not repented of the uncleanness and impurity which they have wrought*<sup>1</sup>. For he who after sinning hath practised repentance, is a worthy object not of grief but of gratulations, having passed over into the choir of the  
 1 2 Cor. 12. 21.  
 2 Is. 43. 26.  
 righteous. For\* *declare thou thine iniquities first, that thou mayest be justified*: but if after sinning one is void of shame, he is not so much to be pitied for falling, as for lying where he is fallen.

(3.) Now if it be a grievous fault not to repent after sins; to be puffed up because of sins, what sort of punishment doth it deserve? For if he who is elate for his good deeds is unclean, what pardon shall he meet with who has that feeling with regard to his sins?

Since then the fornicator was of this sort, and had rendered his mind so headstrong and unyielding through his sin, he of course begins by casting down his pride. And he neither puts the charge first, for fear of making him hardened, as singled out for accusation before the rest; nor yet later, lest he should suppose that what related to him

was but incidental. But, having first excited great alarm in 1 Cor. 4. him by his plain speaking towards others, then, and not till 3. then, he goes on to him, in the course of his rebuke to others giving the man's wilfulness a share beforehand.

For these same words, viz. *I am conscious to myself of nothing, yet am I not hereby justified*, and this, *He that judgeth me is the Lord, who will both bring to light the hidden things of darkness, and make manifest the counsels of the hearts*, glance not lightly both upon that person, and upon such as act in concert with him, and despise the saints. "For what," saith he, "if outwardly they appear a sort of virtuous and admirable persons? He, the Judge, is not a discernor of externals only, but also brings to light all secrets."

[5.] On two accounts you see, or rather on three, correct judgment belongs not to us. One, because, though we be conscious to ourselves of nothing, still we need one to reprove our sins with strictness. Another, because the most part of the things which are done escape us and are concealed. And for a third besides these, because many things which are done by others seem to us indeed fair, but they come not of a right mind. Why say ye then, that no sin hath been committed by this or that person? That such an one is better than such another? Seeing that this we are not to pronounce, not even concerning him who is conscious to himself of nothing. For He who discerns secrets, He it is who with certainty judges. Behold, for example; I for my part am not conscious to myself of any thing: yet neither so am I justified, that is, I am not quit of accounts to be given, nor of charges to be answered. For he doth not say this, *I rank not among the just; but, I am not pure from sin.* For elsewhere he saith also, *He that is dead is justified* <sup>1 Rom. 6. 7.</sup> *from sin, that is, is liberated.*

Again, many things we do, good indeed, but not of a right mind. For so we commend many, not from a wish to render them conspicuous, but to wound others by means of them. And the thing done indeed is right, for the well-doer is praised; but the mind is corrupt: for it is done of a satanical purpose. For this one hath often done, not rejoicing with his brother, but desiring to wound the other party.

διδασκί-  
ται τού-  
τοις,  
ἀλλά  
λαοίς.



HOMIL. Again, a man hath committed a great error; some other  
 XI. person, wishing to supplant him, says that he hath done nothing, and comforts him forsooth in his error, by recurring to the common frailty of nature. But oftentimes he doth this, from no mind to sympathise, but to make him more easy in his fault.

Again, a man rebukes oftentimes, not so much to reprove  
 and admonish, as publicly to <sup>1</sup>display and exaggerate his neighbour's sin. Our counsels however themselves men do not know: but <sup>2</sup>*He that searcheth the hearts*, knows them perfectly; and He will bring all such things into view at that time. Wherefore he saith, *Who shall bring to light the secret things of darkness, and shall make manifest the counsels of the hearts.*

[6.] Seeing then that neither, where we *know nothing by ourselves*, can we be clean from accusations, and where we do any thing good, but do it not of a right mind, we are liable to punishment; consider how vastly men are deceived in their judgments. For all these matters are not to be come at by men, but by the unsleeping Eye alone: and though we may deceive men, our sophistry will never avail against Him. Say not then, darkness is around me and walls; who seeth me? For He who by Himself formed our hearts, Himself knoweth all things. <sup>3</sup>*For darkness is no darkness with Him.*  
<sup>3</sup> Ps. 139. 12. And yet he who is committing sin, well saith, "Darkness is around me and walls;" for were there not a darkness in his mind, he would not have cast out the fear of God, and acted as he pleased. For unless the ruling principle be first darkened, the entrance of sin without fear is a thing impossible. Say not then, who seeth me? For there is that <sup>4</sup>Heb. 4. <sup>4</sup>*pierceth even unto soul and spirit, joints and marrow*; but thou seest not thyself, nor canst thou pierce the cloud; but as if thou hadst a wall on all sides surrounding thee, thou art without power to look up unto the heaven.

(4.) For whatsoever sin thou wilt first let us examine, and thou shalt see that so it is engendered. For as robbers and they who dig through walls when they desire to carry off any valuable thing, put out the candle and then do their work; so also doth men's perverse reasoning in the case of those who are committing sin. Since in us also surely there is a

light, the light of reason, ever burning. But if the spirit of <sup>1Cor.4.</sup> fornication coming eagerly on with its strong blast quench <sup>3.</sup> that flame, it straightway darkens the soul and prevails against it, and despoils it straightway of the goods laid up therein. For when by unclean desire the soul is made captive, ever as a cloud and mist the eyes of the body, so that desire intercepts the foresight of the mind, and suffers no one to see any distance before him, either precipice, or hell, or fear: but thenceforth, having that deceit as a tyrant over him, he comes to be easily vanquished by sin; and there is raised up before his eyes as it were a partition wall, and no windows in it, which suffers not the ray of righteousness to shine in upon the mind, the absurd conceits of lust enclosing it as with a rampart on all sides. And then, and from that time forward, the unchaste woman is every where meeting him: before his eyes, before his mind, before his thoughts, in station and presence. And as the blind, although they stand at high noon beneath the very central point of the heaven, receive not the light, their eyes being fast closed up; just so these also, though ten thousand doctrines of salvation sound in their ears from all quarters, having their soul preoccupied with this passion, stop their ears against all discourses of that kind. And they know it well who have made the trial. But God forbid that you should know it from actual experience.

[7.] And not only this sin hath these effects, but every misplaced affection as well. For let us transfer, if you please, the argument from the unchaste woman unto money, and we shall see here also thick and unbroken darkness. For in the former case, inasmuch as the beloved object is one and shut up in one place, the feeling is not so violent; but in the case of money which sheweth itself every where, in silversmiths' shops, in taverns, in foundries for gold, in the houses of the wealthy, the passion blows a vehement gale. For when servants swaggering in the market place, horses with golden trappings, men decked with costly garments, are seen with desire by him who has that distemper, the darkness becomes intense which envelopes him. And why speak of houses and silversmiths' shops? for my part I think that such persons, though it be but in a picture and image that they see the wealth, are convulsed, and grow wild, and rave. So

HOMIL. that from all quarters the darkness gathers around them.

XI.

And if they chance to behold a portraiture of a King, they admire not the beauty of the precious stones, nor yet the gold, nor the purple robe, but they pine away. And as the wretched lover before mentioned, though he see but the image of the woman beloved, cleaveth unto the lifeless thing; so this man also, beholding a lifeless image of wealth, is more strongly affected, though in the same kind of way, as being holden of a more tyrannical passion. And he must henceforth either abide at home, or if he venture into the Forum, return home with innumerable hurts. For many are the objects which grieve his eyes. And just as the former seeth nothing else, save the woman, even so the latter hastens by poor persons, and all things else, that he may not obtain so much as a slight alleviation. But upon the wealthy he steadily fixeth his eyes; by the sight of them introducing the fire into his own soul mightily and vehemently. For a fire it is, and such an one as miserably devours the person that falls into it; and if no hell were threatened nor yet punishment, this condition were itself punishment; to be continually tormented, and never able to find an end to the malady.

[8.] Well: these things alone might suffice to recommend our escaping from this distemper. But there is no greater evil than inconsideration, which causes men to be rivetted unto things that bring sorrow of heart and no advantage. Wherefore I exhort that you cut off the passion at its beginning: for just as a fever on its first attack, does not violently burn up the patients with thirst, but on its increase and the heightening of its fire, causes from that time incurable thirst; and though one should let them fill themselves full of drink, it puts not out the furnace, but makes it burn fiercer: so also it happens in regard to this passion; unless when it first invadeth our soul we stop it, and shut the doors against it; having got in, from that time it makes the disease of those who have admitted it incurable. For so things both good and bad, the longer they abide in us, the more powerful they become.

- (5.) And in all other things too, any one may see that this cometh to pass. For so a plant but lately set in the ground is easily pulled up; but no longer so when rooted for a long

time; it then requires great strength in the lever. And a <sup>1</sup>Cor. 4. building newly put together is easily thrown down by those <sup>3.</sup> who push against it; but once well fixed, it gives great trouble to those who attempt to pull it down. And a wild beast that hath made his accustomed haunt in certain places for a long time, is with difficulty driven away.

Those therefore who are not yet possessed by the passion in question, I exhort not to be taken captive. For it is more easy to guard against falling into it, than, having fallen, to get away.

[9.] But unto those who are seized by it and broken down, if they will consent to put themselves into the hands of the Word of healing, I promise large hope of salvation, by the Grace of God. For if they will consider those who have suffered and fallen into that distemper and have recovered, they will have good hopes respecting the removal of the disease. Who then ever fell into this disease and was easily rid of it? That well known Zacchæus. For what could be more fond of money than a publican? But all at once he became a man of strict life<sup>1</sup>, and put out all that blaze.<sup>1</sup> <sup>φιλέω-φω.</sup> Matthew in like manner: for he too was a publican, living in continual rapine. But he likewise all at once stripped himself of the mischief, and quenched his thirst, and followed after spiritual merchandise. Considering therefore these, and the like to them, despair not even thou. For if thou wilt, quickly thou shalt be able to emerge. And if you please, according to the rule of physicians, we will further prescribe accurately what thou shouldest do.

It is necessary then, before all other things, to be right in this, that we never despond, nor despair of our salvation. Next we must look not only upon the examples of those who have done well, but also upon the sufferings of those who have persisted in sin. For as we have considered Zacchæus, and Matthew, even so ought we also to take account of Judas, and Gehazi, and Abaz<sup>2</sup>, and Ahab, and Ananias, and Sapphira, in order that by the one, we may cast out all <sup>2</sup> per-  
despair, and by the other cut off all indolence; and that the <sup>haps</sup> Achan, <sup>Josh. 7.</sup> soul become not reckless to all recommendation of the remedies suggested. And let us teach them of themselves to say, what the Jews said on that day, approaching unto



HOMIL. Peter<sup>1</sup>, *What must we do to be saved?* And let them hear what they must do.

X.  
1 Acts  
2. 37.  
cf. 16.  
30.

[10.] What then must we do? We must know how worthless the things in question are, and that wealth is a run-away slave, and heartless, and encompasseth its possessors with ills innumerable. And such words, like charms, let us sound in their ears continually. And as physicians soothe their patients when they ask for cold water, by saying that they will give it, making excuses about the spring, and the vessel, and the fit time, and many more such, (for should they refuse at once, they go the way to make them wild with phrensy,) so let us also act towards the lovers of money. When they say, we desire to be rich, let us not say immediately that wealth is an evil thing; but let us assent, and say that we also desire it; but in due time; yea, true wealth; yea, that which hath undying pleasure: yea, that which is continually accruing, and not for others, and those often our enemies. And let us produce the lessons of true wisdom, and say, we forbid not riches, but riches with ill-doing. For it is lawful to be rich, but without covetousness, without rapine and violence, and an ill report from all men. With these arguments let us first smooth them down, and not as yet discourse of hell. For the sick man endures not such sayings all at once. Wherefore let us go to this world for all our arguments upon these matters; and say, "Why is it thy choice to be rich through covetousness? That the gold and the silver may be laid up for others, but for thee, curses and accusations innumerable? That he whom you have defrauded may be strong by want of the very necessities of life, and bewail himself, and draw down upon thee the censure of thousands; and may go at fall of evening about the market place, encountering every one in the alleys, and in utter perplexity, and not knowing what to trust to even for that one night? For how is he to sleep after all, with pangs of the belly, restless famine besetting him, and that often while it is freezing, and the rain coming down on him? And while thou, having washed, returnest home from the bath, in a glow with soft raiment, merry of heart and rejoicing, and hastening unto a banquet prepared and costly: he, driven every where about the market place by cold and hunger, takes his round, stooping low and stretching out his hands;



nor hath he even spirit without trembling to make his suit for <sup>1COR.4.</sup>  
his necessary food, to one so full fed, and so bent on taking 4.  
his ease; nay, often he has to retire with insult. When  
therefore thou hast returned home, when thou liest down on  
thy couch, when the lights round thine house shine bright,  
when the table is prepared and plentiful, at that time call to  
remembrance that poor miserable man wandering about, like  
the dogs in the alleys, in darkness and in mire; except indeed  
when, as is often the case, he has to depart thence, not unto  
house, nor wife, nor bed, but unto a pallet of straw; even as  
we see the dogs baying all through the night. And thou, if  
thou seest but a little drop falling from the roof, throwest the  
whole house into confusion, calling thy slaves and disturbing  
every thing: while he, laid in rags, and straw, and dirt, has  
to bear all the cold.

What wild beast would not be softened by these things?  
Who is there so savage and inhuman, as that these things  
should not make him mild? and yet there are some who are  
arrived at such a pitch of cruelty, as even to say that they  
deserve what they suffer. Yea, when they ought to pity, and  
weep, and help to alleviate men's calamities, they on the  
contrary visit them with savage and inhuman censures. Of  
these I should be glad to ask, Tell me, why do they deserve  
what they suffer? Is it because they would be fed, and not  
starve?

No, you will reply; but because they would be fed in  
idleness. And thou, dost not thou wanton in idleness? What  
say I? Art thou not oft-times toiling in an occupation more  
grievous than any idleness, grasping, and oppressing, and  
coveting? Better were it if thou too wert idle after this sort;  
for it is better to be idle in this way, than to be covetous.  
But now thou even tramplest on the calamities of others, not  
only idling, not only pursuing an occupation worse than  
idleness, but also maligning those who spend their days in  
misery.

And let us farther narrate to them the disasters of others;  
the untimely bereavements, the dwellers in prison, those who  
are torn to pieces before tribunals, those who are trembling  
for life; the unlooked for widowhood of women; the sudden  
reverses of the rich: and with this let us soften their minds.

**HOMIL.** For by our narrations concerning others, we shall induce  
 \* **XI.** them by all means to fear these evils in their own case too.

For when they hear that the son of such an one, who was  
<sup>1 ἡ ἑστὴ</sup> a covetous and grasping man, or <sup>δαίμων</sup> the wife of such an one,  
<sup>ἑστὴ</sup> who did many tyrannical actions, after the death of her  
<sup>δαίμων</sup> husband endured afflictions without end; the injured persons  
 setting upon the wife and the children, and a general war  
 being raised from all quarters against his house; although a  
 man be the most senseless of beings, yet expecting himself  
 also to suffer the same, and fearing for his own, lest they  
 undergo the same fate, he will become more moderate. Now  
 we find life full of many such histories, and we shall not be  
 at a loss for correctives of this kind.

But when we speak these things, let us not speak them as  
 giving advice or counsel, lest our discourse become too  
 irksome: but as in the order of the narrative, and by associ-  
 ation with something else, let us proceed in each case unto  
 that kind of conversation, and let us be constantly putting  
 them upon stories of this kind, permitting them to speak of  
 no subject, except these which follow: How such an one's  
 splendid and famous mansion fell down; How it is so entirely  
 desolate, that all things that were in it have come into the  
 hands of others; How many trials have taken place daily  
 about this same property, what a stir; How many of that  
<sup>2 οἰκιστὰς</sup> man's relations<sup>3</sup> have died either beggars, or inhabitants of a  
<sup>probably</sup> prison.  
<sup>οἰκιστὴν.</sup>

All these things let us speak as in pity for the deceased,  
 and as depreciating things present; in order that by fear and  
 by pity we may soften the cruel mind. And when we see  
 men shrinking into themselves at these narrations, then and  
 not till then let us introduce to their notice also the doctrine  
 of hell, not as terrifying these, but in compassion for others.  
 And let us say, But why speak of things present? For far  
 indeed will our concern be from ending with these; a yet  
 more grievous punishment will await all such persons: even  
 a river of fire, and a poisonous worm, and darkness inter-  
 minable, and undying tortures. If with such addresses we  
 succeed in throwing a spell over them, we shall correct both  
 ourselves and them, and quickly get the better of our in-  
 firmity.

And on that day we shall have God to praise us: as also <sup>1</sup>Cor.4. Paul saith, *And then shall every man have praise of God.* —<sup>5.</sup>

For that which cometh from men, is both fleeting, and sometimes it proceeds from no good intentions. But that which cometh from God both abideth continually, and shines out clearly. For when He who knew all things before their creation, and who is free from all passion, gives praise, then also the demonstration of our virtue is even unquestionable.

Knowing these things therefore, let us act so as to be praised of God, and to acquire the greatest blessings; which God grant us all to obtain through the grace and loving-kindness of our Lord Jesus Christ, with whom to the Father and the Holy Spirit be glory, power, honour, now, and always, and unto all the ages of eternity. Amen.

## HOMILY XII.

---

1 COR. iv. 6.

*And these things, brethren, I have in a figure transferred to myself and to Apollos for your sakes; that ye might learn in us not to think of men above that which is written.*

So long as there was need of expressions as harsh as these, he refrained from drawing up the curtain, and went on arguing as if he were himself the person to whom they were addressed; in order that the dignity of the persons censured tending to counteract the censurers, no room might be left for flying out in wrath at the charges. But when the time came for a gentler process, then he strips it off, and removes the mask, and shews the persons concealed by the appellation of Paul and Apollos. And on this account he said, *These things, brethren, I have transferred in a figure unto myself and Apollos.*

And as in the case of the sick, when the child being out of health kicks and turns away from the food offered by the physicians, the attendants call the father or the tutor, and bid them take the food from the physician's hands and bring it, so that out of fear towards them he may take it and be quiet: so also Paul, intending to censure them about certain other persons, of whom some, he thought, were injured, others honoured above measure, did not set down the persons themselves, but conducted the argument in his own name and that of Apollos, in order that reverencing these they might receive his mode of cure. But, that once received, he presently makes known in whose behalf he was so expressing himself.

<sup>1</sup> εὐ-  
παρά-  
βασις.  
<sup>2</sup> οἰκονο-  
μία.

Now this was not hypocrisy, but condescension<sup>1</sup> and œconomy. For if he had said openly, "As for you, the

men whom ye are judging are saints, and worthy of all admiration;" they might have taken it ill, they might even have<sup>1</sup> started off altogether. But now in saying, *But to me<sup>1</sup> it is a very small thing that I should be judged of you*: and again, *Who is Paul, and who is Apollos?* he had rendered his speech easy of reception.

This, if you mark it, is the reason why he says here, *These things have I transferred in a figure unto myself for your sakes, that in us ye may learn not to be wise above what is written*, signifying that if he had applied his argument in their persons, they would not have learnt all that they needed to learn, nor would have admitted the correction, being vexed at what was said. But as it was, revering Paul, they bore the rebuke well.

[2.] But what is the meaning of, *not to be wise above what is written*? It is written, <sup>2</sup>*Why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brother's eye, but considerest not the beam that is in thine own eye?* and, *Judge not, that ye be not judged.* For if we are one, and are mutually bound together, it becometh us not to rise up against one another. For, *he that humbleth himself shall be exalted*, saith he. And <sup>3</sup>*He that will be first of all, let him be the servant of all.* These are the things which are written.

*That no one of you be puffed up for one against another.* Again, having dismissed the teachers, he rebukes the disciples. For it was they who caused the former to be elated.

And besides, the leaders would not quietly receive that kind of speech, because of their desire of outward glory: for they were even blinded with that passion. Whereas the disciples, as not reaping themselves the fruits of the glory, but procuring it for others, would both endure the chiding with more temper, and had it more in their power than the leading men to destroy the disease.

It seems then, that this also is a symptom of being *puffed up*, to be elated on another's account, even though a man have no such feeling in regard of what is his own. For as he who is proud of another's wealth, is so out of arrogance; so also in the case of another's glory.

And he hath well called it *being puffed up*. For when one particular member rises up over the rest, it is nothing else but

1 Cor. 4. 6.

<sup>1</sup> πᾶς  
ἀνὴρ  
ἰσχυρῶς  
ἀντιπαρα-  
στήσει.

<sup>2</sup> S. Mat.  
7. 3, 1.

<sup>3</sup> S. Mat.  
20. 26,  
27;

S. Mark  
10. 43;  
not ver-  
batim.



HOMIL.  
XII.

inflammation and disease; since in no other way doth one member become higher than another, except when a swelling takes place<sup>1</sup>. And so in the body of the Church also; whoever is inflamed and puffed up, he must be the diseased portion; for he is swollen above the proportion of the rest. For this [disproportion] is what we mean by "swelling." And so comes it to pass in the body, when some spurious and evil humour gathers, instead of the wonted nourishment. So also arrogance is born; notions to which we have no right coming over us. And mark with what literal propriety he saith, *Ye are puffed up*: for that which is puffed up hath a certain tumour of spirit from being filled with corrupt humour.

<sup>1</sup> So in  
English  
"proud  
flesh."

These things, however, he saith, not to preclude all soothing, but such soothing as leads to harm. "Wouldest thou wait upon this or that person? I forbid thee not: but do it not to the injury of another." For not that we might be formed in divisions one against another, were teachers given us, but that we might all be mutually united. For so the general to this end is set over the host, that of those who are separate he may make one body. But if he is to break up the army, he stands in the place of an enemy rather than of a general.

[3.] Ver. 7. *For who maketh thee to differ? For what hast thou which thou didst not receive?*

From this point, dismissing the governed, he turns to the governors. What he saith comes to this: From whence is it evident that thou art worthy of being praised? Why, hath any judgment taken place? any injury proceeded? any essay? any severe testing? Nay, thou canst not say it: and if men give their votes, their judgment is not upright. But let us suppose that thou really art worthy of praise, and that thou hast indeed the gracious gift, and that the judgment of men is not corrupt: yet not even in this case were it right to be high-minded; for thou hast nothing of thyself, but from God didst receive it. Why then dost thou pretend to have that which thou hast not? Thou wilt say, "thou hast it:" and others have it with thee: well then, thou hast it upon receiving it; not merely this thing or that, but all things whatsoever thou hast.

For not to thee belong these excellencies, but to the grace of God. Whether you name faith, it came of His calling; or whether it be the forgiveness of sins which you speak of, or the gifts of grace, or the word of teaching, or the miracles; thou didst receive all from thence. Now what hast thou, tell me, which thou hast not received, but hast rather achieved of thine own self? Thou hast nothing to say. Well: thou hast received; and does that make thee high-minded? Nay, but it ought to make thee shrink back into thyself. For it is not thine, what hath been given, but the giver's. What if thou hadst received it? thou receivedst it of him. And if thou receivedst of him, it was not thine which thou receivedst: and if thou didst but receive what was not thine own, why art thou exalted as if thou hadst something of thine own? Wherefore he added also, *Now if thou didst receive it, why dost thou glory, as if thou hadst not received it?*

[4.] Thus having, you see, made good his argument by one rapid onset<sup>1</sup>, he indicates that they have their deficiencies, and those not a few: and saith, "In the first place, though ye had received all things, it were not meet to glory, for nothing is your own; but as the case really stands, there are many things of which ye are destitute." And in the beginning he did but hint at this, saying, *I could not speak unto you as unto spiritual: and, I determined to know nothing among you, save Jesus Christ, and Him crucified.* But here he doth it in a way to abash them, saying,

Ver. 8. *Now ye are full, now ye are rich:* that is, ye want nothing henceforth; ye are become perfect; ye have attained the very summit; ye stand, as ye think, in need of no one, either among Apostles or Teachers.

*Now ye are full.* And well saith he, *now*<sup>2</sup>; pointing out, from the time, the incredibility of their statements, and their unreasonable notion of themselves. It was therefore in mockery that he said to them, "So quickly have ye come to the end;" which thing was impossible in the time: for all the more perfect things wait long in futurity: but to be "full" with a little betokens a feeble soul; and from a little to imagine one's self "rich," a sick and miserable one. For piety is an insatiable thing; and it argues a childish mind to

HOMIL. imagine from just the beginnings that you have obtained the whole: and for men who are not yet even in the prelude of a matter, to be high-minded as if they had laid hold of the end.

Then also by means of what followeth, he puts them yet more out of countenance; for having said, *Now ye are full*, he added, *Now ye are rich, ye have reigned as kings without us: and I would to God ye did reign, that we also might reign with you*. Full of great austerity is the speech: which is why it comes last, being introduced by him after that abundance of reproof. Since then is our admonition respected and easily received, when after our accusations we introduce our humiliating expressions<sup>1</sup>. For this were enough to repress even the shameless soul, and strike it more sharply than direct accusation, and correct the bitterness and hardened feeling likely to arise from the charge brought. It being certain that this more than any thing else is the admirable quality of those arguments, which appeal to our sense of shame, that they possess two contrary advantages. On the one hand, one cuts deeper than by open invective: on the other hand, it causes the person reprimanded to bear that severer stab with more entire patience.

[5.] *Ye have reigned as kings without us*. Herein there is great force, as concerns both the teachers and the disciples: and their ignorance too of themselves<sup>2</sup> is pointed out, and their great inconsideration. For what he saith is this: "In labours indeed," saith he, "all things are common both to us and to you, but in the rewards and the crowns ye are first. Not that I say this in vexation:" wherefore he added also, *I would indeed that ye did reign*: then, lest there should seem to be some irony, he added, *that we also might reign with you*; for, saith he, we also should be in possession<sup>3</sup> of these blessings. Dost thou see how he shews in himself all at once his austerity, and his care over them, and his self-denying mind? Dost thou see how he takes down their pride?

Ver. 9. *For I think that God hath set forth us the Apostles last, as it were appointed unto death*.

There is great depth of meaning and severity implied again in his saying, *us*: and not even with this was he satisfied,

<sup>1</sup> καὶ ἐν-  
ταύταις  
ἐκφράσε-  
σιν

<sup>2</sup> καὶ ἀνο-  
μίας

<sup>3</sup> ἐκτρέ-  
φωμεν,  
MS.  
Reg.  
ἐκτρέ-  
φωμεν  
Edd.

but added also his dignity, hitting them vehemently: *us, the* <sup>1Cor.4.</sup> *Apostles*: who are enduring such innumerable ills; who are <sup>9.</sup> sowing the word of Godliness; who are leading you unto this severe rule of life. These, *He hath set forth last, as appointed unto death*, that is as condemned. For since he had said, *That we also might reign with you*, and by that expression had relaxed his vehemency, in order not to dispirit them; he takes it up again with greater gravity, and saith, *For I think that God hath set forth us the Apostles last, as it were appointed unto death*. "For according to what I see," saith he, "and from what ye say, the most abject of all men, and emphatically the condemned, are we, who are put forward for continual suffering. But ye have already a kingdom, and honours, and great rewards in your fancy." And, wishing to carry out their reasoning to still greater absurdity, and to exhibit it as incredible in the highest degree, he said not merely, "*We are last*," but *God hath made us last*; nor was he satisfied with saying, *last*, but he added also, *appointed unto death*: to the end that even one quite roid of understanding might feel the statement to be quite incredible, and his words to be the words of one vexed, and vehemently abashing them.

Observe too the good sense of Paul. The topics by which, when it is the proper time, he exalts and shews himself venerable, and makes himself great; by these he now puts them to shame, calling himself *condemned*. Of so great consequence is it to do all things at the befitting season. By *appointed unto death*, in this place he means *condemned*, and deserving of ten thousand deaths.

[6.] *For we are made a spectacle unto the world, and unto angels, and unto men.*

What means, *We are become a spectacle unto the world*? "Not in a single corner, nor yet in a small part of the world suffer we these things," saith he; "but every where, and before all." But what means, *unto angels*? It is possible to "become a spectacle unto men," but not so unto angels, when the things done are ordinary. But our wrestlings are such, as to be worthy even of angelic contemplation. Behold, from the things by which he vilifies himself, how again he shews himself great; and from the things about which they are



**HOMIL.** proud, how he displays their meanness. For since to be fools  
**XII.** was accounted a meaner thing than to appear wise; to be weak,  
 than to be made strong; and unhonoured, than glorious and  
 distinguished; and that he is about to cast on them the one  
 set of epithets, while he had himself accepted the other; he  
 signifies that the latter are better than the former; if at least  
 because of them he hath turned the throng I say not of men  
 only, but also of the very angels unto the contemplation of  
 themselves. For not with men only is our wrestling, but  
 also with incorporeal powers. Therefore a mighty theatre  
 is set<sup>1</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> *πύα*  
*θίατρον*  
*αδελφών.* Ver. 10. *We are fools for Christ's sake, but ye are wise in Christ.*

Again, this also he spake in a way to abash them; implying that it is a thing impossible for these contraries to agree, neither can things so distant from one another concur. "For how can it be," saith he, "that you should be wise, but we fools in the things relating to Christ?" That is: the one sort being beaten, and despised, and dishonoured, and esteemed as nothing; the others enjoying honour, and being looked up to by many as a wise and prudent kind of people; it gives him occasion to speak thus: as if he had said, "How can it be, that they who preach such things should be looked upon as practically engaged in their contraries?"

*We are weak, but ye are strong.* That is, we are driven about and persecuted; but ye enjoy security, and are much waited upon: howbeit the nature of the Gospel endureth it not.

*We are despised, but ye are honourable.* Here he setteth himself against the noble, and those who plumed themselves upon external advantages.

*Unto this present hour we both hunger, and thirst, and are naked, and are buffeted, and have no certain dwelling place, and labour, working with our own hands.* That is, "It is not an old story that I am telling, but just what the very time present bears me witness of: that of human things we take no account, nor yet of any outward pomp; but we look unto God only." Which thing we too have need to practise in every place. For not only are angels looking on, but even more than they, He that presides over the spectacle.



[7.] Let us not then desire<sup>1</sup> any others to applaud us. For <sup>10.</sup> 1 Cor. 4. this is to insult Him; hastening by Him, as if insufficient to admire us, we make the best of our way to our fellow servants. <sup>1</sup> ἀδύνατον. <sup>2</sup> ἀνὰ τὴν δόξαν. <sup>3</sup> ἀνὰ τὴν δόξαν. For just as they, who contend in a small theatre, seek a large one, as if this were insufficient for their display; so also do they, who, contending in the sight of God, afterwards seek the applause of men; losing the greater praise and eager for the less, they draw upon themselves severe punishment. What but this hath turned every thing upside down? this puts the whole world into confusion, that we do all things with an eye to men, and, even for our good things, we esteem it nothing to have God as an admirer, but seek the approbation which cometh from our fellow-servants: and for the contrary things again, despising Him, we fear men. And yet surely they shall stand with us before that tribunal, doing us no good. But God, whom we despise now, shall Himself pass the sentence upon us.

But yet, though we know these things, we still gape after men, which is the first of sins. Thus, were a man looking on, no one would choose to commit fornication; but even though he be ten thousand times on fire with that plague, the tyranny of the passion is conquered by his reverence for men. But in God's sight, men not only commit adultery and fornication; but other things also much more dreadful, many have dared and still dare to do. This then alone, is it not enough to bring down from above ten thousand thunderbolts? Adulteries, did I say, and fornications? Nay, things even far less than these we fear to do before men: but in God's sight, we fear no longer. From hence, in fact, all the world's evils have originated; because, in things so bad, we reverence not God but men.

On this account, you see, both things which are truly good, not accounted such by the generality, become objects of our aversion: we not investigating the nature of the things, but having respect unto the opinion of the many: and again, in the case of evil things, acting on this same principle. Certain things therefore not really good, but seeming fair unto the many, we pursue, as goods, through the same habit. So that on either side we go to destruction.

[8.] Perhaps many may find this remark somewhat obscure. Wherefore we must express it more clearly. When we

**HOMIL.** commit uncleanness, (for we must begin from the instances  
**XII.** alleged,) we fear men more than God. When therefore we have thus subjected ourselves unto them, and made them lords over us; there are many other things also, which seem unto these our lords to be evil, not being such; these also we flee for our part in like manner. For instance; To live in poverty, many account disgraceful: and we flee poverty, not because it is disgraceful nor because we are so persuaded, but because our masters count it disgraceful; and we fear them. Again, to be unhonoured, and contemptible, and void of all authority, seems likewise unto the most part a matter of shame and great vileness. This again we flee; not condemning the thing itself, but because of the sentence of our masters.

Again, on the contrary side also we undergo the same mischief. As, wealth is counted a good thing, and pride, and pomps, and to be conspicuous. Accordingly, this again we pursue, not either in this case from considering the nature of the things as good, but persuaded by the opinion of our masters. For the people is our master; and the great  
<sup>ἡ δὲ πολλὴ</sup> mob<sup>1</sup> is a savage master, and a severe tyrant: not so much  
<sup>δυναστεύει.</sup> as a command being needed in order to make us listen to him; it is enough that we just know what he wills, and without a command we submit: so great good will do we bear towards him. Again, God threatening and admonishing day by day, is not heard: but the common people, full of disorder, made up of all manner of dregs, has no occasion for one word of command; enough for it, only to signify with what it is well pleased, and in all things we obey immediately.

[9.] "But how," says some one, "is a man to flee from these masters?" By getting a mind greater than their's; by looking into the nature of things; by condemning the voice of the multitude; before all, by training himself in things really disgraceful to fear not men, but the unsleeping Eye; and again, in all good things, to seek the crowns which come from Him. For thus neither in the other sort of things shall we be able to tolerate them. For whoso, when he doeth right, judges them unworthy to know his good deeds, and contents himself with the suffrage of God; neither will he take account of them in matters of the contrary sort.

"And how can this be?" you will say. Consider what man

is, what God; whom thou desertest, and unto whom thou  
 fliest for refuge; and thou wilt soon be right altogether. Man <sup>1 COR. 4.</sup>  
 lieth under the same sin as thyself, and the same condemn-  
 ation, and the same punishment. *Man is like to vanity*<sup>1</sup>, and <sup>10.</sup>  
 hath not true judgment, and needs the correction from above. <sup>Psalm</sup>  
*Man is dust and ashes*, and if he bestow praise, he will often <sup>144. 4.</sup>  
 bestow it at random, or out of favour, or ill will. And if he <sup>LXX.</sup>  
 calumniate and accuse, this again will he do out of the same  
 kind of purpose. But God doeth not so: rather irreprovable  
 is His sentence, and pure His judgment. Wherefore we  
 must always flee to Him for refuge; and not for these reasons  
 alone, but because He both made, and more than all spares  
 thee, and loves thee better than thou dost thyself.

Why then, neglecting to have so awful<sup>2</sup> an approver, <sup>ὁ ἀνθρώπου</sup>  
 betake we ourselves unto man, who is nothing, all rashness, <sup>ὁπίων.</sup>  
 all at random? Doth he call thee wicked and polluted, when  
 thou art not so? So much the more do thou pity him, and  
 weep because he is corrupt; and despise his opinion, because  
 the eyes of his understanding are darkened. For even the  
 Apostles were thus evil reported of; and they laughed to  
 scorn their calumniators. But doth he call thee good and  
 kind? If such indeed thou art, yet be not at all puffed up  
 by the opinion: but if thou art not such, despise it the more,  
 and esteem the thing to be mockery.

Wouldest thou know the judgments of the greater part  
 of men, how corrupt they are, how useless, and worthy of  
 ridicule; some of them fit only for raving and distracted  
 persons, others for children at the breast? Hear what hath  
 been from the beginning. I will tell thee of judgments,  
 not of the people only, but also of those who passed for  
 the wisest, of those who were legislators from the earliest  
 period. For who would be counted wiser among the multi-  
 tude, than the person considered worthy of legislating for  
 cities and people? But yet to these wise men fornication  
 seems to be nothing evil, nor worthy of punishment. At least  
 no one of the heathen laws makes it penal, or brings men to  
 trial on account of it. And should any one bring another into  
 court for things of that kind, the multitude laughs it to scorn,  
 and the judge will not suffer it. Dice-playing, again, is  
 exempt from all their punishments: nor did any one among

HOMIL. them ever incur penalty for it. Drunkenness and gluttony,  
XII. so far from being a crime, are considered by many, even as a fine thing. And in military carousals it is a point of great emulation; and they who most of all need a sober mind and a strong body, these are most of all given over to the tyranny of drunkenness; both utterly weakening the body and darkening the soul. Yet of the lawgivers not one hath punished this fault. What can be worse than this madness?

Is then the good word of men so disposed an object of desire to thee, and dost thou not hide thyself in the earth? For even though all such admired thee, oughtest thou not to feel ashamed, and cover thy face, at being applauded by men of such corrupt judgment?

Again, blasphemy by legislators in general is accounted nothing terrible. At any rate, no one for having blasphemed God was ever brought to trial and punished. But if a man steal another's garment, or cut his purse, his sides are flayed, and he is often given over unto death: while he that blasphemeth God hath nothing laid to his charge by the heathen legislators. And if a man seduce a female servant, when he hath a wife, it seems nothing to the heathen laws, nor to men in general.

[10.] Wilt thou hear besides of some things of another class which shew their folly? For as they punish not these things, so there are others which they enforce by law. What then are these? They collect crowds to fill theatres, and there they introduce choirs of harlots and children of fornication, yea such as trample on nature herself; and they make the whole people sit on high, and so they captivate their city; so they crown those mighty kings whom they are perpetually admiring for their trophies and victories. And yet, what can be colder than this honour? what more undelightful than this delight? From among these then seekest thou judges to applaud thy deeds? And is it in company with dancers, and effeminate, and buffoons, and harlots, that thou art fain to enjoy the sound of compliment? answer me.

How can these things be other than proofs of extreme infatuation? For I should like to ask them, is it, or is it not, a dreadful thing to subvert the laws of nature, and introduce unlawful intercourse? They will surely<sup>1</sup> say, it is

<sup>1</sup> *ἐάντι*  
*Savile;*  
*ἐάντι*  
*Bened.*



dreadful: at any rate, they make a shew of inflicting a <sup>10.</sup> <sup>1Cor.4.</sup> penalty on that crime. Why then dost thou bring on the stage those abused wretches; and not only bring them in, but honour them also, with honours innumerable, and gifts not to be told? In other places thou punishest those who dare such things; but here even as on common benefactors of the city, thou spendest money upon them, and supportest them at the public expense.

"However," thou wilt say, "they are infamous<sup>1a</sup>." Why <sup>δεντιμοι.</sup> then train them up<sup>2</sup>? Why choose the infamous to pay <sup>παιδα.</sup> honour to kings withal? And why ruin our cities<sup>3b</sup>? Or <sup>ερεβις.</sup> why spend so much upon these persons? Since, if they <sup>δυστρο.</sup> be infamous, expulsion is properest for the infamous. For <sup>Plutarch</sup> why didst thou render them infamous? in praise or in <sup>τις εναι.</sup> condemnation? Of course in condemnation. Is the next <sup>δωι δαυ.</sup> thing to be, that although as after condemnation you make <sup>γης, ο.</sup> them infamous, yet as if they were honourable you run to see them, and admire, and praise, and applaud? Why need I speak of the sort of charm<sup>c</sup> which is found in the horse races? or in the contests of the wild beasts? For those places too being full of all senseless excitement, are a school ever open for the populace to acquire a merciless and savage and inhuman kind of temper, and practise them in seeing men torn in pieces, and blood flowing, and the ferocity of wild beasts confounding all things. Now all these our wise lawgivers from the beginning introduced, being so many plagues; and our cities applaud and admire.

[11.] But if thou wilt, dismissing these things, which clearly and confessedly are absurd, but seemed<sup>d</sup> not [so] to the <sup>οβη</sup> heathen legislators, let us proceed to their grave precepts; and <sup>ιδεξ.</sup> perhaps, <sup>"were</sup> not de- <sup>creed."</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Bingham (b. xvi. c. 4. §. 10.) proves that actors and the like, were debarred from the Sacraments, except they renounced their calling, from very early times: from S. Cyprian, Ep. 61. who says, "I think it inconsistent both with the Majesty of God and the discipline of the Gospel, to allow the Chastity and Glory of the Church to be defiled with so base contagion;" from Tertullian; *de Spectac.* 4; *de Cor. Mil.* 13; and from the Apostolical Constitutions, c. 32.

<sup>b</sup> Gibbon, c. 31. from Ammianus, relates, that on occasion of a scarcity, when all strangers were expelled from Rome, an exception was made in favour of the actors, singers, dancers, &c.

<sup>c</sup> *μαγνησις*. Compare S. Augustine's account in the Confessions of the way in which some persons were bewitched by the gladiatorial shows; of which his friend Alypius in his youth was a remarkable instance. b. vi. §. 13.



HOMIL. thou shalt see these too corrupted through the opinion of the  
XII. multitude. Thus marriage is accounted an honourable thing'  
1 Heb. both by us and by those without: and it is honourable. But  
13. 4. when marriages are solemnized, such a number of ridiculous  
circumstances<sup>d</sup> take place as ye shall hear of immediately:  
because the most part, possessed and beguiled by custom,  
are not even aware of their absurdity, but need others to  
teach them. For dancing, and cymbals, and flutes, and  
shameful words and songs, and drunkenness, and revellings,  
and all the Devil's great heap<sup>e</sup> of garbage is then intro-  
duced.

<sup>e</sup> πάλιν ἡ  
ταῦ δὲ  
βόλου φε-  
ρτοίς.

I know indeed that I shall appear ridiculous in finding fault with these things; and shall incur the charge of great folly with the generality, as disturbing the ancient laws: for, as I said before, great is the deceivableness of custom. But nevertheless I will not cease repeating these things: for there is, there is surely a chance, that although not all, yet some few will receive our saying, and will choose to be laughed to scorn with us, rather than we laugh with them such a laughter as deserves tears, and overflowing punishment and vengeance.

For how can it be other than worthy of the utmost condemnation, that a damsel who hath spent her life entirely in retirement, and been schooled in modesty from earliest childhood, should be compelled on a sudden to cast off all shame,

<sup>d</sup> S. Chrys. on Gen. Hom. 48. near the end, speaking of Rebekah's veiling herself at sight of Isaac: "See the noble breeding of the maiden...and observe here, I pray you, how there is no place here for these superfluous and useless things; for a diabolical procession, for cymbals and flutes and dances, and those revels, the device of Satan, and invectives full of all indecency; but all wisdom, all gravity, all thoughtfulness... Let Rebekah be the pattern of our wives, let our husbands emulate Isaac: be it their endeavour thus to bring home their brides." Then complaining, nearly as in the text, of the Fescennine verses, as they were called, and other had customs, relics of heathenism, "Rather," says he, "should the maiden be trained in all modesty from the beginning, and priests called, and prayers and blessings be used to

rivet fast the concord of their common habitation, that so both the bridegroom's love may increase, and the damsel's purity of soul be heightened. So by all ways shall the deeds of virtue enter into that house, and all the acts of the devil be far off, and they shall pass their life with joy, God's Providence bringing them together." So again Hom. 56. of the marriage of Jacob and Leah: in which place he complains especially of the introduction of people from the stage and orchestra at wedding feasts. See both places in Bingham, xxii. iv. 8; as also the 33d Canon of Laodicea: "It is wrong for Christians attending marriages to practise theatrical gestures or dances, but to take their part soberly in the morning or evening meal, as becometh Christians."

and from the very commencement of her marriage, be instructed in impudence; and find herself put forward in the midst of wanton and rude men, and unchaste, and effeminate? What evil plant will not grow up to that bride from that day forth? Immodesty, petulance, insolence, the love of vain glory: since they will naturally go on and desire to have all their days such as these. Hence our women become expensive and profuse; hence are they void of modesty, hence proceed their unnumbered evils.

And tell me not of the custom: for if it be an evil thing, let it not be done even once: but if good, let it be done constantly. For tell me, is not committing fornication evil? Shall we then allow, just once, this to be done? By no means. Why? Because though it be done only once, it is evil all the same. So also, that the bride be entertained in this way, if it be evil, let it not be done even once; but if it be not evil, let it even be done always.

"What then, saith one, dost thou find fault with marriage? tell me." That be far from me. I am not so senseless: but the things which are so unworthily appended to marriage, the painting the face, the colouring the eyebrows, and all the other niceness of that kind. For indeed from that day she will receive many lovers even before her destined consort.

"But many will admire the woman for her beauty." And what of that? Even if discreet, she will hardly avoid evil suspicion; but if careless, she will be quickly overtaken, having got that very day for a starting point in dissolute behaviour.

Yet though the evils are so great, the omission of these proceedings is called an insult, by certain who are no better than brute beasts, and they are indignant that the woman is not exhibited to a multitude: that she is not set forth as a stage spectacle, common to all beholders: whereas most assuredly they should rather count it insult when these things do take place; and a laughing stock, and a farce. For even now I know, that men will condemn me of much folly and make me a laughing stock: but the derision I can bear, when any gain accrues from it. For I should indeed be worthy of derision, if while I was exhorting to contempt of the

HOMIL. opinion of the many, I myself, of all men, were subdued by  
XII. that feeling.

Behold then what follows from all this. Not in the day only, but also in the evening, they provide on purpose men that have well drunk, besotted, and inflamed with luxurious fare, to look upon the beauty of the damsel's countenance; nor yet in the house only, but even through the market-place do they lead her in pomp, to make an exhibition; conducting her with torches late in the evening, so as that she may be seen of all: by their doings recommending nothing else, than that henceforth she put off all modesty. And they do not even stop here; but with shameful words do they conduct her. And this with the multitude is a law. And runaway slaves and convicts, thousands of them and of desperate character, go on with impunity, uttering whatever they please, both against her and against him who is going to take her to his home. Nor is there any thing solemn, but all base and full of indecency. Will it not be a fine lesson in chastity for the bride to see and hear such things? And there is a sort of diabolical rivalry among the givers of the aforesaid instruction, to outdo one another in their zealous use of reproaches and foul words, whereby they put the whole company out of countenance, and those go away victorious, who have found the largest store of railings, and the greatest indecencies to throw at their neighbours.

<sup>1</sup> Savile  
reads  
this  
sentence  
with a  
ques-  
tion.

Now I know that I am a troublesome sort of person, and disagreeable, and morose, as though I were curtailing life of some of its pleasure. Why, this is the very cause of my mourning, that things so displeasing are esteemed a sort of pleasure. For how, I ask, can it be other than displeasing to be insulted and reviled? to be reproached by all, together with your bride? If any one in the market-place speak ill of thy wife, thou makest ado without end, and countest life not worth living in: and can it be that, disgracing thyself with thy future consort in the presence of the whole city, thou art pleased, and lookest gay on the matter? Why, what strange madness is this!

"But," saith one, "the thing is customary." Nay, for this very reason we ought most to bewail it, because the devil hath hedged in the thing with custom. In fact, since

marriage is a solemn thing, and that which recruits our race, <sup>1Con.4.</sup> and the cause of numerous blessings; that evil one inwardly 6-9. pining, and knowing that it was ordained as a barrier against uncleanness, by a new device introduces into it all kinds of uncleanness. At any rate, in such assemblages many virgins have been even corrupted. And if not so in every case, it is because for the time the devil is content with those words, and those songs, so flagitious; with making a show of the bride openly, and leading the bridegroom in triumph through the market-place.

Moreover, because all this takes place in the evening, that not even the darkness may be a veil to these evils, many torches are brought in, suffering not the disgraceful scene to be concealed. For what means the vast throng, and what the wassail, and what the pipes? Most clearly to prevent even those, who are in their houses and plunged<sup>1</sup> in deep <sup>ἁγνότητος</sup> sleep, from remaining ignorant of these proceedings; that <sup>ζήλου.</sup> being wakened by the pipe, and leaning to look out of the lattices, they may be witnesses of the comedy such as it is.

What can one say of the songs themselves, crammed as they are with all uncleanness, introducing strange amours, and unlawful connections, and subversions of houses, and tragic scenes without end; and making continual mention of the titles of "friend and lover," "mistress and beloved?" And, what is still more grievous, that young women are present at these things, having divested themselves of all modesty; in honour of the bride, rather I should say to insult her, exposing even their own salvation<sup>2</sup>: and in the midst of wanton young men acting a shameless part with their disorderly songs, with their foul words, with their devilish harmony. Tell me then: dost thou still enquire, "Whence come adulteries? Whence fornications? Whence violations of marriage?"

[12.] "But they are not noble nor decent women," you will say, "who do these things." Why then laugh me to scorn for this remonstrance, having been thyself aware of this law, before I said any thing. I say, if the proceedings are right, allow those well-born women also to enact them. For what

<sup>1</sup> οἱ ἁγνοὶ ἀποκρίνομεν ἐρωτίας. τὰς ἁγνὰς: which is here followed.  
The Benedictine translates as if it were



HOMIL. if these others live in poverty? Are not they also virgins?  
 XII. ought not they also to be careful of chastity? But now here is a virgin dancing in a public theatre of licentious youths; and, I ask, seems she not unto thee more dishonoured than a harlot?

But if you say, "Female servants do these things;" neither so do I acquit thee of my charge: for neither to these ought such work to have been committed. For hence all these evils have their origin, that of our household we make no account. But it is enough in the way of contempt to say, "He is a slave," and "They are handmaids." And yet, day

<sup>1</sup> Gal. 3. 28. after day we hear, <sup>1</sup> *In Christ Jesus, there is neither bond nor free.*

Again, were it a horse, or an ass, thou dost not overlook it, but takest all pains not to have it of an inferior kind; and thy slaves who have souls like thine own dost thou neglect? And why do I say slaves, when I might say sons and daughters? What then must follow? It cannot be but grief<sup>2</sup> must immediately enter in, when all these are going to ruin. And often also very great losses must ensue, valuable golden ornaments being lost in the crowd and the confusion.

<sup>2</sup> λῆσιν,  
 qu. λῆ-  
 σιν,  
 "mis-  
 chief."

<sup>3</sup> σῶμα-  
 θελα.

[13.] Then, after the marriage, if perchance a child is born, in this case again we shall see the same folly, and many tokens<sup>3</sup> full of absurdity. For so when the time is come for giving the infant a name, caring not to call it after the saints, as the ancients at first did, they light lamps and give them names, and so name the child after that one which continues burning the longest; from thence conjecturing that he will live a long time. After all, should there be many instances of the child's enduring untimely death, (and there are many,) great laughter on the devil's part will ensue, at his having made sport of them, as if they were silly children. What shall we say about the amulets and the bells which are hung upon the hand, and the scarlet woof, and the other things full of such extreme folly; when they ought to invest the child with nothing else save the protection of the Cross\*. But now that is despised which hath converted the whole world, and given the sore wound to the devil, and overthrown all his power: while the thread, and the woof, and the other amulets of that kind, are entrusted with the child's safety.

\* Compare S. Chrys. on Coloss. Hom. viii. near the end.



Must I mention another thing yet more ridiculous than <sup>1</sup>Cor. 4. this? Only let no one tax us with speaking out of season, 6-9. should our argument proceed with that instance also. For he that would cleanse an ulcer will not hesitate first to pollute his own hands. What then is this so very ridiculous custom? It is counted indeed as nothing; (and this is why I grieve;) but it is the beginning of folly and madness in the extreme. The women in the bath, nurses and waiting-maids, take up mud, and smearing it with the finger make a mark on the child's forehead; and if one ask, What means the mud, and the clay; the answer is, "It turneth away an evil eye, witchcraft and envy!" Astonishing! what power in the mud! what might in the clay! what mighty force is this which it has? It averts all the host of the devil. Tell me, can ye help hiding yourselves for shame? Will ye never come to understand the snares of the devil, how from earliest life he gradually brings in the several evils which he hath devised? For if the mud hath this effect, why dost thou not thyself also do the same to thine own forehead, when thou art a man and thy character is formed; and thou art likelier than the child to have such as envy thee? Why dost thou not as well bemire the whole body? I say, if on the forehead its virtue be so great, why not anoint thyself all over with mud? All this is mirth and stage-play to Satan, not mockery only but hell-fire being the consummation to which these deceived ones are tending.

[14.] Now that among Greeks such things should be done is no wonder: but among the worshippers of the Cross<sup>1</sup>, and <sup>τὴν σταυρὸν προσκυνοῦντες.</sup> partakers in unspeakable mysteries, and professors of such high morality<sup>2</sup>, that such unseemliness should prevail, this is especially to be deplored again and again. God hath <sup>τὸν θεὸν τιμωρῶντα.</sup> honoured thee with spiritual anointing; and dost thou defile thy child with mud? God hath honoured thee, and dost thou dishonour thyself? And when thou shouldst inscribe on his forehead the Cross, the mean of that invincible security; dost thou forego this, and cast thyself into the madness of Satan?

If any look on these things as trifles, let them know

<sup>1</sup> So on Col. ubi supra. "What is all this folly? Here we have ashes, and root, and salt, and the silly old woman again brought into play. Truly it is a mockery and a shame. 'Nay,' says she, 'an evil eye has caught hold of the child! How long will you go on with these diabolical fancies?'" &c.

HOMIL. XII. that they are the source of great evils; and that not even unto Paul did it seem right to overlook the lesser things.

For, tell me, what can be less than a man's covering his head? Yet observe how great a matter he makes of this, and with how great earnestness he forbids it; saying, among many other things, *He dishonoureth his head*<sup>1</sup>. Now if he that covers himself *dishonoureth his head*; he that besmears his child with mud, how can it be less than making it abominable? For how, I want to know, can he bring it to the hands of the Priest? How canst thou require that on that forehead the Seal<sup>2</sup> should be placed by the hand of the Presbyter, where thou hast been smearing the mud? Nay, my brethren, do not these things, but from earliest life encompass them with spiritual armour, and instruct them to seal the forehead with the hand<sup>3</sup>: and before they are able to do this with their own hand<sup>4</sup>, do you imprint upon them the Cross.

<sup>1</sup> ἐν τῇ κεφαλῇ  
ἀντιθέμενος  
σφραγῖς  
ζῶν ἐν  
μικροῖς.

Why should one speak of the other satanical observances in the case of travail-pangs and childbirths, which the midwives introduce with a mischief on their own heads? Of the outcries which take place at each person's death, and as he is being carried to his burial; the irrational wailings, the folly enacted at the funerals; the zeal about men's monuments; the importunate and ridiculous swarm of the mourning women<sup>1</sup>; the observances of days; the days, I mean, of entrance into the world and of departure?

[15.] Are these then, I beseech you, the persons whose good opinion thou followest after? And what can it be but the extreme of folly to seek earnestly the praise of men, so corrupt in their ideas, men whose conduct is all at random? when we ought always to resort to the unsleeping Eye; and look

<sup>2</sup> i. e. the Sign of the Cross in Baptism, made with consecrated balm or ointment, and called σφραγῖς in the Apostolical Constitutions, iii. 17; vid. Bingham xi. 10. 5. St Chrysostom, it may be remarked, takes for granted, 1. that infants would be brought to Baptism; 2. that they would be brought to the Priest.

<sup>3</sup> Compare the well-known passages in Tertullian and St. Cyprian: the first, "At all our goings out and comings in,

&c. we wear our foreheads with the Seal of the Cross;" de Cor. Mil. 3.: the other, "Arm your foreheads with all boldness, that the Sign of the Cross may be safe." Ep. 50: both in Bingham *ubi supra*.

<sup>1</sup> About this custom, of hiring heathen women as mourners, he speaks very strongly elsewhere: Hom. 32. in Matt.; Hom. 4. in Heb.: both which are quoted in Bingham, xxiii. 18.

*a Warning against trusting to their Judgment.* 167

to His sentence in all that we do and speak? For these, even <sup>1COR.4.</sup> if they approve, will have no power to profit us. But He, 6-9. should He accept our doings, will both here make us glorious; and in the future day will impart to us of the unspeakable good things: which may it be the lot of us all to obtain, through the grace and loving-kindness of our Lord Jesus Christ; with whom to the Father and the Holy Spirit be glory, power, honour, now and always, and unto everlasting ages. Amen.

## HOMILY XIII.

---

I COR. iv. 10.

*We are fools for Christ's sake :* [for it is necessary from this point to resume our discourse :] *but ye are wise in Christ : we are weak, but ye are strong : ye are honourable, but we despised.*

HAVING filled his speech with much severity, that point which conveyed a sharper blow than any direct charge, he here handles with his own peculiar dignity; and whereas he had said, *Ye have reigned as kings without us*; and, *God hath set forth us last, as it were, appointed unto death.* By what comes next he signifies how they are *appointed unto death*; saying, *We are fools, and weak, and despised, and hunger, and thirst, and are naked, and are buffeted, and have no certain dwelling place, and labour, working with our own hands*: which were very signs of genuine teachers and apostles. Whereas the others valued themselves on the things which are contrary to these, on wisdom, glory, wealth, consideration.

Desiring therefore to take down their self-conceit, and to point out that in respect of these things, so far from taking credit to themselves, they ought rather to be ashamed; he first of all mocks them, saying, *Ye have reigned as kings without us.* As if he had said, "My sentence is, that the present is not a time of honour, nor of glory, which kind of things you enjoy, but of persecution and insult, such as we are suffering. If however it be not so; if this rather be the time of remuneration: then as far as I see," (but this he saith in irony,) "ye, the disciples, for your part have become no less than kings: but we the teachers, and apostles, and before

all entitled to receive the reward, not only have fallen very <sup>1Cor.4.</sup> far behind you, but even, as persons appointed unto death, <sup>10, 11.</sup> that is, condemned convicts, spend our lives entirely in dishonours, and dangers, and hunger: yea insulted as fools, and driven about, and enduring all intolerable things."

Now these things he said, that he might hereby cause them also to consider, that they should zealously affect the condition of the Apostles; their dangers and their indignities, not their honours and glories. For these, not the former, are what the Gospel requires. But to this effect he speaks not directly, not to shew himself disagreeable to them: rather in a way characteristic of himself he takes in hand this rebuke. For if he had introduced his address in a direct manner, he would have spoken thus; "Ye err, and are beguiled, and have swerved far from the apostolical mode of instruction. For every apostle and minister of Christ ought to be esteemed a fool, ought to live in affliction, and dishonour; which indeed is our state: whereas you are in the contrary case."

But thus might his expressions have jarred on them yet more, as containing but praises of the Apostles; and might have made the other party fiercer, censured as they were for indolence, and vain-glory, and luxuriousness. Wherefore he conducts not his statement in this way, but in another, more striking but less offensive; and this is why he proceeds with his address as follows, saying ironically, *But ye are strong and honourable*; since, if he had not used irony, he would have spoken to this effect; "It is not possible that one man should be esteemed foolish, and another wise; one strong, and another weak; the Gospel not requiring either the one or the other. For if it were in the nature of things that one should be this, and another that, perchance there might be some reason in what you say. But now it is not permitted, neither to be counted wise, nor honourable, nor to be free from dangers. If otherwise, it follows of necessity that you are preferred before us in the sight of God; you, the disciples, before us the teachers, and that after our endless hardships." If this be too bad for any one to say, it remains for you to make our condition your object.

[2.] And "let no one," saith he, "think that I speak of things passed only:"



HOMIL. Ver. 11. *Even unto this present hour we both hunger and*  
 XIII. *thirst and are naked.* Seest thou that all the life of Christians must be such as this; and not merely a day or two? For though the wrestler, who is victorious in a single contest only, be crowned, he is not crowned again if he suffer a fall.

*And hunger;* against the luxurious. *And are buffeted;* against those who are puffed up. *And have no certain dwelling-place;* against those who sink back in weariness. *And are naked;* against the rich.

Ver. 12. *And labour;* here is something against the false apostles, who endure neither toil nor peril, while they themselves receive the fruits. "But not so are we," saith he: "but together with our perils from without, we also strain ourselves to the utmost with perpetual labour. And what is still more, no one can say that we fret at these things, for the contrary of all these is our requital to them that so deal with us: this, I say, is the main point, not our suffering evil, for that is common to all, but our suffering without despondency or vexation. But we, so far from desponding, are full of exultation. And a sure proof of this is, our requiting with the contrary those who do us wrong."

Now as to the fact, that so they did, hear what follows.

[Ver. 12, 13.] *Being reviled, we bless; being persecuted, we endure; being defamed, we intreat; we are become as the filth of the world.* This is the meaning of *fools for Christ's sake*. For whoso suffers wrong, and avenges not himself, nor is vexed, is reckoned a fool by the heathen; and dishonoured, and weak. And in order that he might not render his speech too unpalatable by referring the sufferings he was speaking of to their city, what saith he? *We are made the filth, not, "of your city," but, of the world.* And again, *the offscourings of all men;* not of you alone, but of all. As then when he is discoursing of the providential care of Christ, letting pass the earth, the heaven, the whole creation, the Cross is what he brings forward; so also when he desires to attract them to himself hurrying by all his miracles, he speaks of his sufferings on their account. So also it is our method, when we be injured by any and despised whatsoever we have endured for them, to bring the same forward.

*The offscouring of all men, even unto this present time.* This is a vigorous blow which he gives at the end, *of all*

men; "not of the persecutors only," saith he, "but of those <sup>1Cor. 4. 13, 14.</sup> also for whom we suffer these things: O greatly am I obliged to them." It is the expression of one seriously concerned; not in pain himself, but desiring to make them feel<sup>1</sup>: that he who hath innumerable complaints to make, should even salute them. And therefore did Christ command us to bear insults meekly, that we might both exercise ourselves in a high strain of virtue, and put the other party to the more shame. For that effect one produces not so well by reproach as by silence.

Ver. 14. [3.] Then since he saw that the blow could not well be borne, he speedily heals it; saying, *I write not these things to shame you, but as my beloved sons I warn you.* "For not as abashing you," saith he, "do I speak these things." The very thing which by his words he had done, this he says he had not done: rather he allows that he had done it; not however with an evil and spiteful mind. Why, this mode of soothing is the very best, if we should say what we have to say, and add the apology from our purpose. For not to speak was impossible, since they would have remained uncorrected: on the other hand, after he had spoken, to leave the wound untended, were hard. Wherefore along with his severity he apologizes: for this so far from destroying the effect of the knife, rather makes it sink deeper in, while it moderates the full pain of the wound. Since when a man is told that not in reproach but in love are these things said, he the more readily receives correction.

However, even here also is great severity, and a strong appeal to their sense of shame<sup>2</sup>, in that he said not, *As a<sup>2</sup> teacher*, nor yet *as an apostle*, nor yet *as having you for my<sup>3</sup> disciples*; (which had well suited his claims on them;) but, *as my beloved sons I warn you.* And not simply, *sons*; but *longed after*. *Forgive me*, saith he. "If any thing disagreeable have been said, it all proceeds of love." And he said not, "I rebuke," but *I warn*. Now, who would not bear with a father in grief, and in the act of giving good advice? Wherefore he did not say this before, but after he had given the blow.

"What then?" some might say; "Do other teachers not spare us?" "I say not so, but, they carry not their for-

HOMIL. XIII. bearance so far." This however he spake not out at once, but by their professions and titles gave indication of it; "Preceptor" and "Father" being the terms which he employs.

Ver. 15. [4.] *For though, saith he, ye have ten thousand instructors in Christ, yet have ye not many fathers.* He is not here setting forth his dignity, but the exceeding greatness of his love. Thus neither did he wound the other teachers; since he adds the clause, *in Christ*: but rather soothed them, designating not as parasites but as preceptors those among them who were zealous, and patient of labour: and also manifested his own anxious care of them. On this account he said not, *Yet not many masters*, but, *not many fathers*. So little was it his object to set down any name of dignity, or to argue that of him they had received the greater benefit: but granting to the others the great pains they had taken for the Corinthians, (for that is the force of the word Instructor,) the superiority in love he reserves for his own portion: for that again is the force of the word Father.

And he saith not merely, No one loves you so much; a kind of statement which admitted not of being called to account; but he also brings forward a real fact. What then is this? *For in Christ Jesus I have begotten you through the Gospel. In Christ Jesus.* Not unto myself do I impute this. Again, he strikes at those who gave their own names to their teaching. For ye, saith he, *are the seal of mine Apostleship*. And again, *I have planted*: and in this place, *I have begotten*. He said not, "I have preached the word," but,

<sup>1</sup> τοῖς υἱοῖς  
φύσιν  
ἐκείνου.

*I have begotten*; using the words of natural relationship<sup>1</sup>. For his one care at the moment was, to shew forth the love which he had for them. "For they indeed received you from me, and added incitements; but that you are believers at all came to pass through me." Thus, because he had said,

<sup>2</sup> ἡ δόξα  
αὐτοῦ  
ἐκείνου  
omitted  
in our  
version:  
the  
Vulgate  
has it.  
see c.  
11. 1.

*as sons*; lest you should suppose that the expression was flattery, he produces also the matter of fact.

Ver. 16. [5.] *Wherefore I beseech you, be ye followers of me, as I also am of Christ*<sup>2</sup>. Astonishing! How great is our teacher's boldness of speech! How highly finished the image, when he can even exhort others hereunto! Not that in self-exaltation he doth so, but implying that virtue is an easy

thing. As if he had said, "Tell me not, 'I am not able to 1Cor 4. imitate thee. Thou art a Teacher, and a great one.' For the —16— difference between me and you is not so great as between Christ and me: and yet I have imitated Him."

On the other hand, writing to the Ephesians, he interposes no mention of himself, but leads them all straight to the one point, *Be ye followers of God*, is his word<sup>1</sup>. But in this place, since his discourse was addressed to weak persons, he<sup>1</sup> puts himself in by the way.

And besides, too, he signifies that it is possible even thus to follow Christ. For he who copies the perfect impression of the seal, copies the original model.

Let us see then in what way he followed Christ: for this imitation needs not time and art, but a steady purpose alone. Thus if we go into the study of a painter, we shall not be able to copy the portrait, though we see it ten thousand times. But to copy him we are enabled by hearing alone. Will ye then that we bring the tablet before you, and sketch out for you Paul's manner of life? Well, let it be produced, that picture far brighter than all the images of Emperors: for its material is not boards glued together, nor canvass stretched out; but the material is the work of God: being as it is a soul and a body: a soul, the work of God, not of men; and a body again in like wise.

Did you utter applause here? Nay, not here is the time for plaudits; but in what follows: for applauding, I say, and for imitating too: for so far we have but the material, which is common to all without exception: inasmuch as soul differs not from soul, in regard of its being a soul: but the purpose of heart shews the difference. For as one body differs not from another, in so far as it is a body, but Paul's body is like every one's else, only dangers make one body more brilliant than another: just so is it in the case of the soul also.

[6.] Suppose then our tablet to be the soul of Paul: this tablet was lately lying covered with soot, full of spiders' webs; (for nothing can be worse than blasphemy;) but when He came who transformeth all things, and saw that not through indolence or sluggishness were his lines so drawn, but through inexperience, and his not having the tints<sup>2</sup> of true piety: (for<sup>2</sup> <sup>was</sup> <sup>not</sup> <sup>there</sup> <sup>any</sup> seal indeed he had, but the colours were not there; for he

**HOMIL.**  
**XIII.** had not *the zeal according to knowledge*;) He gives him the tint of the truth, that is grace: and in a moment he hath exhibited the imperial image. For having got the colours, and learnt what he was ignorant of, he waited no time, but forthwith appeared a most excellent artist. And first he shews the head of the king, preaching Christ; then also the remainder of the body; the body of a perfect Christian life. Now painters we know shut themselves up, and execute all their works with great nicety, and in quiet; not opening the doors to any one: but this man, setting forth his tablet in the view of the world, in the midst of universal opposition, clamour, disturbance, did under such circumstances work out this Royal Image, and was not hindered. And therefore he said, *We are made a spectacle unto the world*; in the midst of earth, and sea, and the heaven, and the whole habitable globe, and the world both material and intellectual, he was drawing that portrait of his.

Would you like to see the other parts also thereof, from the head downwards? Or will ye that from below we carry our description upwards? Contemplate then a statue of gold, or rather of something more costly than gold, and such as might stand in heaven; not fixed with lead nor placed in one spot, but hurrying from Jerusalem even unto Illyricum<sup>1</sup>, and setting out into Spain, and borne as it were on wings over every part of the world. For what could be more *beautiful* than these *feet* which visited the whole earth under the sun? This same "beauty" the prophet also from of old proclaimeth, saying<sup>2</sup>, *How beautiful are the feet of them that preach the Gospel of peace!* Hast thou seen how fair are the feet? Wilt thou see the bosom too? Come, let me shew thee this also, and thou shalt behold it far more splendid than these beautiful feet, yea even than the bosom itself of the ancient lawgiver. For Moses indeed carried tablets of stone: but this man within him had Christ Himself: it was the very image of the King which he bore, and of the Mercy Seat<sup>3</sup>.

For this cause he was more awful than the Cherubim. For

<sup>1</sup> Rom.  
15. 19.

<sup>2</sup> Isa.  
52. 7.

<sup>3</sup> That is, probably, "of our Lord's Human Nature:" according to Theodoret on Rom. iii. 25. "The true Mercy Seat is the Lord Christ. The name suits Him as man, not as God: for as God, He Himself gives oracles from the Mercy Seat." And Theophylact on the same place: "It meant certainly the Human Nature, which was the Sheath of the Deity, covering It over." See Suicer on the word *ἱλαστήριον*.



no such voice went out from them as from hence ; but from <sup>1 Cor. 4.</sup> them it talked with men chiefly about things of sense, from <sup>16.</sup> the tongue of Paul on the other hand, about the things above the heavens.

Again, from the mercy-seat it spake oracles to the Jews alone ; but from hence to the whole world ; and there it was by things without life ; but here by a soul instinct with virtue.

This Mercy Seat was brighter even than heaven, not with variety of stars shining forth, nor with rays from the sun, but the very Sun of righteousness was there, and from hence He sent forth His rays. Again, from time to time, as to this our heaven, any cloud coursing over at times makes it gloomy ; but that bosom never had any such storm sweeping across it. Or rather there did sweep over it many storms and oft : but the light they darkened not ; rather in the midst of the temptation and dangers the light shone out. Wherefore also he himself when bound with his chain, kept exclaiming, *The Word of God is not bound.* Thus continually by <sup>12 Tim.</sup> means of that tongue was It sending forth its rays. And no <sup>2. 9.</sup> fear, no danger made that bosom gloomy. Perhaps the bosom seems to outdo the feet ; however, both they as feet are beautiful, and this as a bosom.

Wilt thou see also the belly, with its proper beauty ? Hear what he saith about it. <sup>2</sup> *If meat make my brother to offend,* <sup>2 c. 8. 13.</sup> *I will eat no flesh while the world standeth.* <sup>3</sup> *It is good* <sup>3 Rom.</sup> *neither to eat flesh nor to drink wine, nor any thing whereby* <sup>14. 21.</sup> *thy brother stumbleth, or is offended, or is made weak.* <sup>1</sup> *Meats for the belly and the belly for meats.* What can be <sup>4 c. 6. 13.</sup> more beautiful in its kind than this belly, thus instructed to be quiet, and taught all temperance, and knowing how both to hunger and be famished, and also how to suffer thirst ? For as a well-trained horse with a golden bridle, so also did this walk with measured paces, having vanquished the necessity of nature. For it was Christ walking in it. Now this being so temperate, it is quite plain that the whole body of vice besides was done away.

Wouldest thou see the hands too ? those which he now hath ? Or wouldest thou rather behold first their former wickedness ? <sup>5</sup> *Entering (this very man) into the houses, he* <sup>5 Acts 9.</sup> *haled, of late, men and women, with the hands not of man,* <sup>3.</sup>

HOMIL.  
XIII.

but of some fierce wild beast. But as soon as he had received the colours of the Truth and the spiritual skill, no longer were these the hands of a man, but spiritual; day by day being bound with chains. And they never struck any one, but they were stricken times without number. Once even a viper<sup>1</sup> revered those hands: for they were the hands of a human being no longer; and therefore it did not even fasten on them.

<sup>1</sup> Acts  
28. 3, 5.

And wilt thou see also the back, resembling as it does the other members? Hear what he saith about this also. <sup>2</sup>Five times I received of the Jews forty stripes save one; thrice was I beaten with rods, once was I stoned, thrice I suffered shipwreck, a night and a day I have been in the deep.

<sup>2</sup> 2 Cor.  
11. 24,  
25.

[7.] But lest we too should fall into an interminable deep, and be carried away far and wide, going over each of his members severally; come let us quit the body and look at another sort of beauty, that, namely, which proceeds from his garments; to which even devils shewed reverence; and therefore both they made off, and various diseases took flight. And where-soever Paul happened to shew himself, they all retired and got out of the way, as if the champion of the whole world had appeared. And as they who have been often wounded in war, should they see but some part of the armour of him that wounded them, feel a shuddering; much in the same way the devils also, at sight of "handkerchiefs" only, were astonished. Where be now the rich, and they that have high thoughts about wealth? Where they who count over their own titles, and their costly robes? With these things if they compare themselves, it will be clay in their sight and dirt, all that they have of their own. And why speak I of garments and golden ornaments? Why, if one would grant me the whole world in possession, the mere nail of Paul I should esteem more powerful than all that dominion: his poverty than all luxury: his dishonour, than all glory: his nakedness, than all riches: no security would I compare with the buffeting of that sacred head: no diadem, with the stones to which he was a mark.

<sup>3</sup> 1 Cor.  
9. 27.  
brevit.

§. rec.  
text,  
word.

This crown let us long for, beloved: and if persecution be not now, let us mean while prepare ourselves. For neither was he of whom we speak glorious by persecutions alone: for he said also, <sup>3</sup> I keep under my body; now in this one may

attain excellence without persecutions. And he exhorted <sup>1 Cor. 4. 16.</sup> not to *make provision for the flesh, to fulfil the lusts thereof.* <sup>1 Rom. 13. 14.</sup> And again<sup>2</sup>, *Having food and raiment, let us be therewith content.* For to these purposes we have no need of persecu- <sup>2 1 Tim. 6. 8.</sup> tions. And the wealthy too he sought to moderate, saying<sup>3</sup>, <sup>3 Ibid. 9.</sup> *They that will be rich fall into temptation.*

If therefore we also thus exercise ourselves, when we enter into the contest we shall be crowned: and though there be no persecution before us, we shall receive for these things many rewards. But if we pamper the body and live the life of swine, even in peace we shall often sin, and have to bear our shame.

Seest thou not with whom we wrestle? With the incorporeal powers. How then, being ourselves flesh, are we to get the better of these? For if wrestling with men one have need to be temperate in diet, much more with evil spirits. But when together with fulness of flesh we are also bound down to wealth, whence are we to overcome our antagonists? For wealth is a chain, a grievous chain, to those who know not how to use it; a tyrant savage and inhuman, imposing all his commands by way of outrage on those who serve him. Howbeit, if we will, this bitter tyranny we shall depose from its throne, and make it yield to us, instead of commanding. How then shall this be? By distributing our wealth unto all. For so long as it stands against us, each single handed, like any robber in a wilderness it works all its bad ends: but when we bring it forth among others, it will master us no more, holden as it will be in chains, on all sides, by all men.

[8.] And these things I say, not because riches are a sin: (5.) although there be sin in not distributing them to the poor, and in the wrong use of them. For God made nothing evil, but all things very good; so that riches too are good; i. e. if they do not master their owners; if the wants of our neighbours be done away by them. For neither is that light good which instead of dissipating darkness, rather makes it intense: nor should I call that wealth, which instead of doing away poverty, rather increases it. For the rich man seeks not to take from others but to help others: but he that seeks to receive from others is no longer rich, but is emphatically

HOMIL.  
XIII. the poor man. So that it is not riches that are an evil, but the needy mind which turns wealth into poverty. There are more wretched than those who ask alms in the narrow streets, enduring loss of limb and loathsome bodily harm. I say, clothed in rags as they are, they are not so miserable as those in silks and shining garments. Those who go stately in the market-place are more to be pitied than those who haunt the crossings of the streets, and enter into the courts, and cry from their cellars, and ask charity. For these for their part do utter praises to God, and speak words of mercy and a high sort of morality. And therefore we pity them, and stretch out the hand, and never find fault with them. But those who are rich to bad purpose, cruelty and inhumanity, ravening and satanical lust, are in the words which issue from them. And therefore by all are they detested and laughed to scorn. Do but consider; which of the two among all men is reckoned disgraceful, to beg of the rich, or of the poor? Every one, I suppose, sees it at once:—of the poor. Now this, if you mark it, is what the rich do; for they durst not apply to those who are richer than themselves: whereas those who beg, do so of the wealthy: for one beggar asks not alms of another, but of a rich man; but the rich man tears the poor in pieces.

Again tell me, which is the more dignified, to receive from those who are willing, and are obliged to you, or when men are unwilling, to compel and teaze them? Clearly not to trouble those who are unwilling. But this also the rich do: for the poor receive from willing hands, and such as are obliged to them; but the rich from persons unwilling and repugnant, which is an indication of greater poverty. For if no one would like so much as to go to a meal, unless the inviter were to feel obliged to the guest, how can it be honourable to take one's share of any property with compulsion? Do we not on this account get out of the way of dogs and fly from their baying, because by their much besetting they fairly force us off? This also our rich men do.

“But, that fear should accompany the gift, is more dignified.” Nay, this is of all most disgraceful. For he who moves heaven and earth about his gains, who can be so laughed to scorn as he? For even unto dogs, not seldom,



through fear, we throw whatever we had hold of. Which, I ask <sup>1 Con. 4. 16.</sup> again, is more disgraceful? that one clothed with rags should beg, or one who wears silk? Thus, when a rich man pays court to old and poor persons, so as to get possession of their property, and this when there are children, what pardon can he deserve?

Further: If you will, let us examine the very words; what the rich beggars say, and what the poor. What then saith the poor man? "That he who giveth alms will never have to give by measure"; that he is giving of what is God's: that God <sup>merciful</sup> is loving unto men, and recompenses more abundantly: all <sup>su. per-</sup> which are words of high morality, and exhortation, and <sup>haps</sup> counsel. For he recommends thee to look unto the Lord, <sup>corrupt.</sup> and he takes away thy fear of the poverty to come. And one <sup>conj.</sup> may perceive much instruction in the words of those who ask <sup>will</sup> alms: but of what kind are those of the rich? Why, of <sup>never</sup> swine, and dogs, and wolves, and all other wild beasts. For <sup>hun-</sup> some of them discourse perpetually on banquets, and dishes, and preserves, and wine of all sorts, and ointments, and vestures, and all the rest of that extravagance. And others about the interest of money and loans. And making out accounts and increasing the mass of debts to an intolerable amount, as if it had begun in the time of men's fathers or grandfathers, one they rob of his house, another of his field, and another of his slave, and of all that he has. Why should one speak of their covenants, which are written in blood instead of ink? For either by surrounding them with some intolerable danger, or else bewitching them with some paltry promises, whomsoever they may see in possession of some small property, those they persuade to pass by all their relations, and that oftentimes when perishing through poverty, and instead of them to enter their own names. Is there any madness and ferocity of wild beasts of any sort which these things do not throw into the shade?

[8.] Wherefore I beseech you, all such wealth as this let us flee, disgraceful as it is and in deaths abundant; and let us obtain that which is spiritual, and let us seek after the treasures in the heavens. For whoso possess these, they are the rich, they are the wealthy, both here and there enjoying things; even all things. Since whoso will be poor,



**HOMIL.** according to the word of God, has all men's houses opened  
XIII. to him. For unto him that for God's sake has ceased to possess  
any thing, every one will contribute of his own. But whoso  
will hold a little with injustice, shutteth the doors of all  
against him. To the end, then, that we may attain both to  
the good things here and to those which are there, let us  
choose the wealth which cannot be removed, that immortal  
abundance: which may God grant us all to obtain through  
the grace and loving-kindness of our Lord Jesus Christ, &c.

## HOMILY XIV.

1 COR. iv. 17.

*For this cause have I sent unto you Timotheus, who is my beloved son and faithful in the Lord, who shall bring you into remembrance of my ways which be in Christ Jesus*<sup>1</sup>. <sup>1</sup> 'I'noū om. in rec. text.

CONSIDER here also, I entreat, the noble soul, the soul more glowing and keener than fire: how he was indeed most especially desirous to be present himself with the Corinthians, thus distempered and broken into parties. For he knew well what a help to the disciples his presence was, and what a mischief his absence. And the former he declared in the Epistle to the Philippians, saying, *'Not as in my presence'*<sup>Phil. 2. 12. and om. in rec. text.</sup> *only, but also now much more in my absence, work out your own salvation with fear and trembling.* The latter he signifies in this Epistle, saying, *'Now some are puffed up,'*<sup>Ver. 18.</sup> *as though I were not coming to you; but I will come.* He was urgent, it seems, and desirous to be present himself. But as this was not possible for a time, he corrects them by the promise of his appearance; and not this only, but also by the sending of his disciple. *For this reason,* he saith, *I have sent unto you Timothy. For this reason:* how is that? "Because I care for you as for children, and as having begotten you." And the message is accompanied with a recommendation of his person: *Who is my beloved son, and faithful in the Lord.* Now this he said, both to shew his love of him, and to prepare them to look on him with respect. And not simply *faithful*, but, *in the Lord*; that is, in the things pertaining to the Lord. Now if in worldly things it is high praise for a man to be faithful, much more in things spiritual.

HOMIL. XIV. If then he was his *beloved son*, consider how great was Paul's love, in choosing to be separated from him for the Corinthians' sake. And if *faithful* also, he will be unexceptionable in his ministering to their affairs.

*Who shall bring you in remembrance.* He said not, "shall teach," lest they should take it ill, as being used to learn from himself. Wherefore also towards the end he saith, <sup>1</sup> *For he worketh the work of the Lord, as I also do. Let no man therefore despise him.* For there was no envy among the Apostles, but they had an eye unto one thing, the edification of the Church. And if he that was employed was their inferior, they did as it were reinforce<sup>2</sup> him with all zealousness. Wherefore neither was he contented with saying, *He shall bring you in remembrance*; but purposing to cut out their envy more completely,—for Timothy was young,—with this view, I say, he adds, *my ways*; not *his*, but *mine*; that is, his policies<sup>3</sup>, his dangers, his customs, his laws, his ordinances, his Apostolical Canons, and all the rest. For since he had said, *We are naked, and are buffeted, and have no certain dwelling place*: "all these things," saith he, "he will remind you of;" and also of the laws of Christ; for destroying all heresies. Then, carrying his argument higher, he adds, *which be in Christ*; ascribing all, as was his wont, unto the Lord, and on that ground, establishing the credibility of what is to follow. Wherefore he subjoins, *As I teach every where in every church*. "Nothing new have I spoken unto you: of these my proceedings all the other churches are cognizant as well as you."

Further: he calls them *ways in Christ*, to shew that they have in them nothing human, and that with the aid from that source he doth all things well.

[2.] And having said these things, and so soothed them, and being just about to enter on his charge against the unclean person, he again utters words full of anger; not that in himself he felt so, but in order to correct them: and giving over the fornicator, he directs his discourse to the rest, as not deeming him worthy even of words from himself; just as we act in regard to our servants when they have given us great offence.

Next, after that he had said, *I send Timothy*, lest they

should thereupon take things too easily, mark what he saith: 1 Cor. 4.  
18, 19.

Ver. 18. *Now some are puffed up, as though I were not coming unto you.* For here he glances both at them and at certain others, casting down their highmindedness: since the love of preeminence is in fault, when men abuse the absence of their teacher for their own self-will. For when he addresses himself unto the people, observe how he does it by way of appeal to their sense of shame; when unto the originators of the mischief, his manner is more vehement. Thus unto the former he saith, *We are the offscouring of all*; and soothing them he saith, *Not to shame you I write these things*: but to the latter, *Now as though I were not coming to you, some are puffed up*: shewing that their self-will argued a childish turn of mind. For so boys in the absence of their master wax more negligent.

This then is one thing here indicated; and another is, that his presence was sufficient for their correction. For as the (2.) presence of a lion makes all living creatures shrink away, so was also that of Paul to the corrupters of the Church.

Ver. 19. And therefore he goes on, *But I will come to you shortly, if the Lord will.* Now to say this only would seem to be mere threatening. But to promise himself, and demand from them the requisite proof by actions also; this was a course for a truly high spirit. Accordingly he added this too, saying,

*And I will know, not the speech of them which are puffed up, but the power.* For not from any excellencies of their own, but from their teacher's absence, this self-will arose. Which again itself was a mark of a scornful mind towards him. And this is why, having said, *I have sent Timotheus*, he did not at once add, *I will come*; but waited until he had brought his charge against them, of being *puffed up*: after that he saith, *I will come*. Since, had he put it before the charge, it would rather have been an apology for himself, as not having been deficient, instead of a threat; nor even so <sup>11</sup> *so the* would the statement have been convincing. But as it is, <sup>King's MS.</sup> placing it after the accusation, he hath rendered himself such <sup>as they</sup> as they would both believe, and fear. MS.  
over the  
rec. text.

Mark also how solid and secure he makes his ground: for he saith not simply, *I will come*: but, *If the Lord will*: and he

HOMIL. appoints no set time. For since there was a chance that he  
XIV. might be tardy in coming, by that uncertainty he would fain keep them anxiously engaged. And, lest they should hereupon fall back again, he added, *shortly*.

[2.] *And I will know, not the speech of them that are puffed up, but the power.* He said not, "I will know not the wisdom, nor the signs," but what? *Not the speech*: by the term he employs at the same time depressing the one and exalting the other. And for a while he is setting himself against the generality of them, who were countenancing the fornicator. For if he were speaking of him, he would not say, *the power*; but "the works," the corrupt works which he did.

Now why seekest thou not after *the speech*? "Not because I am wanting in 'speech,' but because all our doings are 'in power.'" As therefore in war success is not for those who talk much, but who effect much; so also, in this case, not speakers, but doers have the victory. "Thou," saith he, art proud of this fine speaking. Well, if it were a contest and a time for orators, thou mightest reasonably be elated thereat: but if of Apostles preaching truth, and by signs confirming the same, why art thou puffed up for a thing superfluous, and unreal; and to the present purpose utterly inefficient? For what could a display of words avail towards raising the dead, or expelling evil spirits, or working any other such deed of wonder? But these are what we want now, and by these our cause stands. Whereupon also he adds,

Ver. 20. *For the kingdom of God is not in word, but in power.* By signs, saith he, not by fine speaking, we have prevailed: and that our teaching is divine, and really announces the kingdom of heaven, we give the greatest proof, namely our miracles, which we work by the power of the Spirit. If those who are now puffed up desire to be some great ones; as soon as I am come, let them shew whether they have any such virtue. And let me not find them sheltering themselves behind a pomp of words: for that kind of art is nothing to us.

[4.] Ver. 21. *What will ye? Shall I come unto you with a rod, or in love, and in the spirit of meekness?*

There is much both of terror and of gentleness in this saying. For to say, *I will know*, was the language of one as yet withholding himself: but to say, *What will ye? Shall*



*I come unto you with a rod?* are the words of one thence-<sup>1COR.4.</sup>  
forth ascending the teacher's seat, and from thence holding <sup>21.</sup>  
discourse with them, and taking upon him all his authority.

What means *with a rod*? With punishment, with vengeance: that is, I will destroy; I will maim: the kind of thing which Peter did in the case of Sapphira, and himself in the case of Elymas the sorcerer. For henceforth he no longer speaks as bringing himself into a close comparison with the other teachers, but with authority. And in the second Epistle too he appears to say the same, when he writes, *Since ye seek a proof of Christ speaking in me.*

*Shall I come with a rod, or in love?* What then? to come with a rod, was it not an instance of love? Of love it was surely\*. But because through his great love he shrinks back in punishing, therefore he so expresses himself.

Further; when he spoke about punishment, he said not, *in the spirit of meekness*, but, [simply,] *with a rod*: and yet of that too the Spirit was author. For there is a spirit of meekness, and a spirit of severity. He doth not, however, choose so to call it, but from its milder aspect<sup>1</sup>. And for a<sup>1</sup> <sup>ἀντὶ τῆς ἡμετέρας ἁγιότητος.</sup> like reason also, God, although avenging himself, has it often affirmed of Him that he is *gracious and long-suffering, and rich in mercy and pity*: but that He is apt to punish, once perhaps or twice, and sparingly, and that upon some urgent cause.

[5.] Consider then the wisdom of Paul; holding the authority in his own hands, he leaves both this and that in the power of others, saying, *What will ye?* "The matter is at your disposal."

For we too have depending on us both sides of the alternative; both falling into hell, and obtaining the kingdom: since God hath so willed it. For *behold*, saith he, *fire and water: whichever way thou wilt, thou mayest stretch forth thine hand*<sup>2</sup>. And, *If ye be willing, and will hearken unto*<sup>3</sup> <sup>Ecclus.</sup>  
*me, ye shall eat the good of the land*<sup>3</sup>.  
<sup>15. 16.</sup>  
<sup>3 Is. 1.</sup>  
<sup>19.</sup>

\* St. Augustine, *cont. Parmen.* iii. 3.

<sup>1</sup> Are we to suppose that the rod at all *represents love*, because he has given this turn to his sentence, 'Shall I come unto you with a rod, or in love?' Nay, the following clause, 'And in the spirit

of meekness,' hints what was passing in his mind—that the rod also has in it love. But love in severity is one thing, love in meekness another thing. The love is the same, but it works diversely in divers cases."

HOMIL.  
XIV.  
(3.) But perhaps one will say, "I am willing; (and no one is so void of understanding as not to be willing;) but to will is not sufficient for me." Nay, but it is sufficient, if thou be duly willing, and do the deeds of one that is willing. But as it is, thou art not greatly willing.

And let us try this in other things, if it seem good. For tell me, he that would marry a wife, is he content with wishing? By no means; but he looks out for women to advance his suit, and requests friends to keep watch with him, and gets together money. Again, the merchant is not content with sitting at home and wishing, but he first hires a vessel, then selects sailors and rowers, then takes up money on interest, and is inquisitive about a market and the price of merchandise. Is it not then strange, for men to shew themselves so much in earnest about earthly things, but that when they are to make a venture for heaven, they should be content with wishing only? rather I should say, not even in this do they shew themselves properly in earnest. For he that wills a thing as he ought, puts also his hand unto the means, which lead to the object of his desire. Thus, because hunger compels thee to take nourishment, thou waitest not for the viands to come unto thee of their own accord, but omittest nothing to gather victuals together. So in thirst, and cold, and all other such things, thou art industrious, and in thy station to take care of the body. Now do this in respect of God's kingdom also, and surely thou shalt obtain it.

For to this end God made thee a free agent, that thou mightest not afterwards accuse God, as though some necessity had bound thee: and thou, in regard of those things wherein thou hast been honoured, dost thou murmur?

For in fact I have often heard people say, "But why did He then make my goodness depend on me?" Nay, but how was He to bring thee, slumbering and sleeping, and in love with all iniquity, and living delicately, and pampering thyself; how was He to bring thee up to heaven? If He had, thou wouldest not have abstained from vice. For if now, even in the face of threatening, thou dost not turn aside from thy wickedness; had He added no less than heaven as the

end of thy race, when wouldest thou have ceased waxing more careless and worse by far?<sup>1</sup>

Neither again wilt thou be able to allege, He hath shewed me indeed what things were good, but gave no help, for abundant also is His promise given thee of aid.

[6.] "But," say you, "Virtue is burdensome and distasteful; while with vice great pleasure is blended; and the one is wide and broad, but the other strait and narrow."

Tell me then, are they respectively such altogether, or only from the beginning? For in fact what thou here sayest, thou sayest, not intending it, in behalf of virtue; so potent a thing is truth. For suppose there were two roads, the one leading to a furnace, and the other to Paradise; and that the one unto the furnace were broad, the other, unto Paradise, narrow; which road wouldest thou take in preference? For although you may now gainsay for contradiction's sake, yet things which are plainly allowed on all hands, however shameless, you will not be able to gainsay. Now that that way is rather to be chosen which hath its beginning difficult but not its end, I will endeavour to teach you from what is quite obvious. And, if you please, let us first take in hand the arts. For these have their beginning full of toil; but the end gainful. "But," say you, "no one applies himself to an art without some one to compel him: for," you add, "so long as the boy is his own master, he will choose rather to take his ease at first, and in the end to endure the evil, how great soever, than to live hardly at the outset, and afterwards reap the fruit of those labours." Well then, to make such a choice comes of a mind left to itself<sup>2</sup>, and of childish idleness: but the contrary choice, of sense and manliness. And so it is with us: were we not children in mind, we should not be like the child aforesaid, forsaken<sup>3</sup> as he is and thoughtless, but like him that hath a father. We must cast out then our own childish mind, and not find fault with the things themselves; and we must set a charioteer over our conscience, who will not allow us to indulge our appetite, but make us run and strive mightily. For what else but absurdity is it, to inure our children with pains at first unto pursuits which have laborious beginnings, but their end good

<sup>1</sup>Cor.4.  
21.

<sup>1</sup> χύμα  
σολλῶ.  
Bened.

<sup>2</sup> ἐρφάν-  
της δι-  
νοίας.

<sup>3</sup> ἐρφάν.

HOMIL. and pleasant; while we ourselves in spiritual things take just  
 XIV. the contrary turn?

And yet even in those earthly things it is not quite plain that the end will be good and pleasant: since before now untimely death, or poverty, or false accusation, or reverse of fortune, or other such things, of which there are many, have caused men after their long toil, to be deprived of all its fruits. What is more, those who have such pursuits, though they succeed, it is no great gain which they will reap. For with the present life all those things are dissolved. But here, not for such cold and perishable things is our race, neither have we fears about the end; but greater and more secure is our hope after our departure hence. What pardon then can there be? what excuse for those who will not strip themselves for the evils to be endured for virtue's sake?

And do they yet ask, "Wherefore is the way narrow?" Why, thou dost not deem it right that any fornicator or lewd

<sup>1 and vñ</sup>  
<sup>ms. in-</sup>  
<sup>serted</sup>  
<sup>from the</sup>  
<sup>King's</sup>  
<sup>MS.</sup> or drunken<sup>1</sup> person should enter into the courts of earthly kings; and claimest thou for men to be let into heaven itself, with licentiousness, and luxury, and drunkenness, and covetousness, and all manner of iniquity? And how can these things be pardonable?

- (4.) [7.] "Nay," you reply, "I say not that, but why has not virtue a *broad way*?" In good truth if we be willing, its way is very easy. For whether is easier, tell me; to dig through a wall and take other men's goods, and so be cast into prison; or to be content with what you have, and freed from all fear? I have not however said all. For whether is easier, tell me; to steal all men's goods, and revel in a few of them for a short time, and then to be racked and scourged eternally; or having lived in righteous poverty for a short time, to live ever after in delights? (For let us not enquire as yet which is the more profitable, but for the present, which is the more easy.) Whether again is it pleasanter, to see a good dream and to be punished in reality, or after having had a disagreeable dream to be really in enjoyment? Of course, the latter. Tell me then, In what sense dost thou call virtue harsh? I grant, it is harsh, tried by comparison with our carelessness. However, that it is really easy and smooth,



hear what Christ saith, <sup>1</sup>*My yoke is easy, and My burden is light.* But if thou perceivest not the lightness, plainly it is <sup>21.</sup> <sup>1</sup>*Con. 4.* for want of courageous zeal: since where that is, even heavy <sup>1</sup>*S. Mat.* things are light; and by the same rule where it is not, even light things are heavy. For tell me, what could be sweeter and more easily obtained than the banquet of manna? Yet the Jews were discontented though enjoying such delightful fare. What more bitter than hunger, and all the other hardships which Paul endured? Yet he leaped up, and rejoiced, and said, <sup>2</sup>*Now I rejoice in my sufferings.* What then is the <sup>2</sup>*Col. 1.* cause? The difference of the mind. If then you frame this <sup>24.</sup> as it ought to be, you will see the easiness of virtue.

"What then," say you, "does she only become such, through the mind of those who pursue her?" She is such, not from their mind alone, but by nature as well. Which I thus prove: If the one had been throughout a thing painful, the other throughout of the contrary sort, then with some plausibility might some fallen person have said, that the latter was easier than the former. But if they have their beginnings, the one in hardship, the other in pleasure, but their respective ends again just opposite to these; and if those ends be both infinite, in the one the pleasure, in the other the burthen; tell me, which is the more easy to choose?

"Why then do many not choose that which is easy?" Because some disbelieve; and others, who believe, have their judgment corrupt, and would prefer pleasure for a season to that which is everlasting. "Is not this then easy?" Not so; but this cometh of a sick soul. And as the reason why persons in a fever long after cool drink, is not upon calculation that the momentary luxury is pleasanter than being burned up from beginning to end, but because they cannot restrain their inordinate desire; so also these. Since if one brought them to their punishment at the very moment of their pleasure, assuredly they never would have chosen it. Thus you see in what sense vice is not an easy thing.

[8.] But if you will, let us try this same point over again by an example in the proper subject matter. Tell me, for instance, which is pleasanter and easier? (only take care that we take not again the desire of the many for our rule in the matter;



HOMIL. since one ought to decide, not by the sick, but by the whole:

XIV. just as you might shew me ten thousand men in a fever, seeking things unwholesome, upon choice to suffer for it afterwards; but I should not allow such their choice:) which, I repeat, brings more ease, tell me; to desire much wealth, or to be above that desire? For I, for my part, think the latter. If you disbelieve it, let the argument be brought to the facts themselves of the case.

- (5.) Let us then suppose one man desiring much, another nothing. Which now is the better state, tell me, and which the more respectable? However, let that pass. For this is agreed upon, that the latter is a finer character than the former. And we are making no enquiry about this at present, but which lives the easier and the pleasanter life? Well then: the lover of money will not enjoy even what he has: for that which he loves he cannot choose to spend; but would gladly even carve<sup>1</sup> himself out, and part with his flesh, rather than with his gold. But he that despises wealth, gains this the while, that he enjoys what he has quietly and with great security, and that he values himself more than it. Which then is the pleasanter; to enjoy what one has with freedom, or to live under a master, namely wealth, and not dare to touch a single thing even of one's own? Why, it seemeth to me to be much the same, as if any two men, having wives and loving them exceedingly, were not upon the same terms with them; but the one were allowed the presence and intercourse of his wife, the other, not even permitted to come near his.

There is another thing which I wish to mention, indicating the pleasure of the one, and the discomfort of the other. He that is greedy of gain will never be stayed in that his desire, not only because it is impossible for him to obtain all men's goods, but also because, whatever he may have compassed, he counts himself to have nothing. But the despiser of riches will deem it all superfluous, and will not have to punish his soul with endless desires. I say, punish; for nothing so completely answers the definition of punishment, as desire deprived of gratification; a thing too which especially marks his perverse mind. Look at it in this way. He that lusts after riches, and hath increased his store, he is the sort of

person to feel as if he had nothing. I ask then, what more complicated than this disease? And the strange thing is not this only, but that although having, he thinks he has not the very things which are in his hold, and as though he had them not, he bewails himself. If he even get all men's goods, his pain is but greater. And should he gain an hundred talents, he is vexed that he hath not received a thousand: and if he receive a thousand, he is stung to the quick that it is not ten thousand: and if he receive ten thousand, he utterly bemoans himself<sup>1</sup>, because it is not ten times as much. And the acquisition of more to him becomes so much more poverty: for the more he receives, so much the more he desires. So then, the more he receives, the more he becomes poor: since whoso desires more, is more truly poor. When then he hath an hundred talents, is he not very poor<sup>2</sup>? for he desires a thousand. When he hath got a thousand, then he becomes yet poorer. For it is no longer a thousand as before, but ten thousand, that he professes himself to want.

1Cor.4.  
21.

<sup>1</sup> ac-  
si-  
ca.

<sup>2</sup> Savile  
reads  
this in-  
terroga-  
tively.

Now if you say that to wish and not to obtain is pleasure, you seem to me to be very ignorant of the nature of pleasure.

[9.] To shew that this sort of thing is not pleasure but punishment, take another case, and refer the question to it, and so let us search it out. When we are thirsty, do we not therefore feel pleasure in drinking, because we quench our thirst; and is it not therefore a pleasure to drink, because it relieves us from a great torment, the desire, I mean, of drinking? Every one, I suppose, can tell. But were we always to remain in such a state of desire, we should be as badly off as the rich man in the parable of Lazarus for the matter of punishment; for his punishment was just this, that vehemently desiring one little drop, he obtained it not. And this very thing all covetous persons seem to me continually to suffer, and to resemble him, where he begs that he may obtain that drop, and obtains it not. For their soul is more on fire than his.

Well indeed hath one<sup>b</sup> said, that all lovers of money are in a sort of dropsy; for as they, bearing much water in their bodies, are the more burnt up: so also the covetous, bearing about

<sup>a</sup> Crescit indulgens sibi dirus Hydrops, Fugerit venis, et aquosus albo  
Nec intum pellit, nisi causa morbi Corpore languor. HOR. Carm. ii. 2.

HOMIL. with them great wealth, are greedy of more. The reason is,  
 XIV. that neither do the one keep the water in the parts of the  
 body where it should be, nor the other their desire in the  
 limits of becoming thought.

<sup>1</sup> *These*  
*and*  
*such*: a  
 play on  
 the  
 sound of  
 the  
 words. Let us then flee this strange and craving<sup>1</sup> disease; let us  
 flee the root of all evils; let us flee that which is present hell;  
 for it is a hell, the desire of these things. Only just lay open  
 the soul of each, of him who despises wealth, and of him who  
 does not so; and you will see that the one is like the distracted,  
 choosing neither to hear nor see any thing: the other, like a  
 harbour free from waves: and he is the friend of all, as the  
 other is the enemy. For whether one take any thing of his,  
 it gives him no annoyance; or if whether, on the contrary,  
 one give him aught, it puffs him not up; but there is a  
 certain freedom about him with entire security. The one is  
 forced to flatter and feign before all; the other, to no man.

If now to be fond of money is to be both poor, and timid,  
 and a dissembler, and a hypocrite, and to be full of fears and  
 great penal anguish and chastisement; while he that despises  
 wealth has all the contrary enjoyments: is it not quite plain  
 that virtue is the more pleasant?

Now we might have gone through all the other bad ways  
 also, whereby it is shewn that there is no vice which hath  
 pleasure in it, had we not spoken before so much at large.

Wherefore knowing these things, let us choose virtue; to  
 the end that we may both enjoy such pleasure as is here, and  
 may attain unto the blessings which are to come, through the  
 grace and loving-kindness, &c. &c.

## HOMILY XV.

---

1 COR. v. 1, 2.

*It is reported commonly that there is fornication among you, and such fornication as is not so much as named among the Gentiles, that one should have his father's wife. And ye are puffed up, and have not rather mourned, that he that hath done this deed might be taken away from among you.*

WHEN he was discoursing about their divisions, he did not indeed at once address them vehemently, but more gently at first; and afterwards he ended in accusation, saying thus, *'For it hath been declared unto me of you, my brethren, by'* <sup>o. 1. 11.</sup> *them which are of the house of Chloe, that there are contentions among you. But in this place, not so; but he lays about him immediately, and he makes the reproach of the accusation as general as possible. For he said not, "Why did such an one commit fornication?" but, *It is reported commonly that there is fornication among you*; that they might, as persons altogether aloof from his charge, take it easily; but might be filled with such anxiety as was natural, when the whole body was wounded, and the Church had incurred reproach. "For no one," saith he, "will state it thus, 'such an one hath committed fornication,' but, 'in the Church of the Corinthians that sin hath been committed.'"*

And he said not, "Fornication is perpetrated," but, *It is reported,—such as is not even named among the Gentiles.* For so continually he makes the Gentiles a topic of reproach to the believers. Thus writing to the Thessalonians, he said,

HOMIL.<sup>1</sup> *Let every one possess his own vessel in sanctification, not in*  
 XV. *the lust of concupiscence, even as the rest of the Gentiles.*

11 Thees.  
 4. 4, 5. And to the Colossians and Ephesians, <sup>2</sup> *That you should no*  
 and επιση  
 om. εα  
 λουα  
 inserted.  
 Eph. 4.  
 17. cf.  
 Col. 3.  
 6, 7. *longer walk, as the other Gentiles walk.* Now if their com-  
 mitting the same sins was unpardonable, when they even  
 outdid the Gentiles, what place can we find for them? tell  
 me: "inasmuch as among the Gentiles," so he speaks, "not  
 only they dare no such thing, but they do not even give it a  
 name." See to what a point he hath aggravated his charge.

For when they are convicted of inventing such modes of uncleanness as the unbelievers, so far from venturing on them, do not even know of, the sin must be exceeding great, beyond all words. And the clause, *among you*, is spoken also emphatically; that is, "Among you, the faithful, who have been favoured with so high mysteries, the partakers of secrets, the guests invited to heaven." Dost thou mark with what indignant feeling his words overflow? with what anger against all? For had it not been for the great wrath of which he was full, had he not been setting himself against them all, he would have spoken thus: "Having heard that such and such a person hath committed fornication, I charge you to punish him." But as it is, he doth not so; he rather challenges all at once. And indeed, if they had written first, this is what he probably would have said. Since however so far from writing, they had even thrown the fault into the shade, on this account he orders his discourse more vehemently.

[2.] *That a man should have his father's wife.* Wherefore said he not, "That he should abuse his father's wife?" The extreme foulness of the deed caused him to shrink. He hurries by it accordingly, with a sort of scrupulousness as though it had been explicitly mentioned before. And hereby again he aggravates the charge, implying that such things are ventured on among them, as even to speak plainly of was intolerable for Paul. Wherefore also, as he goes on, he uses the same mode of speech, saying, *Him who hath so done this thing*: and is again ashamed, and blushes to speak out; which also we are wont to do in regard of matters extremely disgraceful. And he said not, *his step-mother*, but *his father's wife*; so as to strike much more



severely. For so, when the mere terms are sufficient to convey <sup>1 Cor. 5.</sup> the charge, he proceeds with them simply, adding nothing. <sup>1, 2.</sup>

And "tell me not," saith he, that the fornicator is but one: the charge hath become common to all." Wherefore also he added, *and ye are puffed up*: he said not, "with the sin;" for this would imply want of all reason: but with the doctrine you have heard from that person\*. This however he set not down himself, but left it undetermined, that he might inflict a heavier blow.

And mark the good sense of Paul. Having first overthrown the wisdom from without, and signified that it is nothing by itself, although no sin were associated with it; then and not till then he discourses about the sin also. For if by way of comparison with the fornicator, who perhaps was some wise one, he had maintained the greatness of his own spiritual gift; he had done no great thing: but even when unattended with sin to take down the heathen wisdom, and demonstrate it to be nothing, this was indicating its extreme worthlessness indeed. Wherefore first, as I said, having made the comparison, he afterwards mentions the man's sin also.

And with him indeed he condescends not to debate, and thereby signifies the exceeding greatness of his dishonour. But to the others he saith, "You ought to weep and wail, and cover your faces, but now ye do the contrary." And this is the force of the next clause, *And ye are puffed up, and have not rather mourned*.

"And why are we to weep?" some might say. Because the reproach hath made its way even unto the whole body of your Church. "And what good are we to get by our weeping?" *That such an one should be taken away from you*. Not even here doth he mention his name; rather, I should say, not any where; which in all monstrous things is our usual way.

And he said not, "Ye have not rather cast him out," but, as in the case of any disease or pestilence, "there is need of mourning," saith he, "and of intense supplication, *that he*

\* S. Aug. *cont. Parm.* iii. 5. gives their "glorying" a different turn; saying, (with especial reference to v. 6.) "To glory, not for their own sins, but over other men's sins, as in comparison with their own innocence, may seem but 'a little leaven;' while to boast even of one's iniquities is much leaven: however, this also 'leaveneth the whole lump.'"

**HOMIL.** *may be taken away.* And you should have used prayer for <sup>XV.</sup> this, and left nothing undone that he should be cut off."

Nor yet doth he accuse them for not having given him information, but for not having mourned so, as that the man should be taken away; implying that even without their Teacher this ought to have been done, because of the notoriety of the offence.

[3.] Ver. 3. *For I indeed as absent in body, but present in spirit.*

- (2.) Mark his energy. He suffers them not even to wait for his presence, nor to receive him first, and then to pass the sentence of binding: but as if on the point of expelling some contagion, before that it have spread itself into the rest of the body, he hastens to restrain it. And therefore he subjoins the clause, *I have judged already, as though I were present.* These things moreover he said, not only to urge them unto the declaration of their sentence, and to give them no opportunity of contriving something else, but also to frighten them, as one who would know what was done there. For this is the meaning of being *present in spirit*: as Elisha was present

<sup>'2Kings</sup> with Gehazi, and said, *Went not my heart with thee?*  
5. 26. Wonderful! How great is the power of the gift, in that it makes all to be together and as one; and qualifies them to know the things which are far off. *I have judged already as though I were present.*

He permits them not to have any other device. "Now I have uttered my decision, as if I were present: talk not to me then of delays and puttings off: for nothing else must be done."

Then, lest he should be thought too authoritative, and his speech sound rather self-willed, mark how he makes them also partners in the sentence. For having said, *I have judged*, he adds, *concerning him that hath so done this deed, in the Name of our Lord Jesus Christ, when ye are gathered together, and my spirit, with the power of our Lord Jesus Christ, to deliver such an one unto Satan.*

Now what means, *In the Name of our Lord Jesus Christ?* "According to God;" "not possessed with any human prejudice."

Some, however, read thus, *Him that hath so done this thing*

in the Name of our Lord Jesus Christ, and putting a stop <sup>1 Cor. 5.</sup> there or a break, then subjoin what follows, saying, *When you* <sup>3.</sup> *are gathered together and my Spirit to deliver such an one unto Satan:* and they assert that the sense of this reading is as follows, *Him that hath done this thing in the Name of Christ*, saith St. Paul, *deliver ye unto Satan*; that is, "him that hath done insult unto the Name of Christ, him that, after he had become a believer and was called after that Appellation, hath dared to do such things, deliver ye unto Satan." But to me the former way of giving it out<sup>1</sup> appears the truer.

What then is this? *When ye are gathered together in the Name of the Lord.* That is; His Name, in whose behalf ye have met, collecting you together. <sup>1 Inders. it seems to mean "enunciation."</sup>

*And my spirit.* Again he sets himself at their head, in order that when they should pass sentence, they might no otherwise cut off the offender, than as if he were present; and that no one might dare to judge him pardonable, knowing that Paul would be aware of the proceedings.

[4.] Then making it yet more awful, he saith, *with the power of our Lord Jesus Christ*; that is, either that Christ is able to give you such grace, as that you should have power to deliver him to the devil; or that He is Himself together with you passing that sentence against him.

And he said not, "Give up" such an one to Satan, but *deliver*; opening unto him the doors of repentance, and delivering up such an one, as it were, to a schoolmaster. And again it is, *such an one*: he no where can endure to make mention of his name.

*For the destruction of the flesh.* As was done in the case of the blessed Job, but not upon the same ground. For in that case it was for brighter crowns, but here, for loosing of sins; that he might scourge him with a grievous sore, or some other disease. True it is, that elsewhere he saith, *Of the Lord are we judged<sup>2</sup>, when we suffer these things.*<sup>3</sup> 1 Cor. 11. 32. But here, desirous of making them feel it more severely, he "delivereth up unto Satan." And so this too, which God had determined, ensued, that the man's flesh was chastised. For because inordinate eating and carnal luxuriousness are the parents of desires, it is the flesh which he chastises.

*That the spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus;*

**HOMIL.** that is, the soul. Not as though this were saved alone, but  
**XV.** because it was a settled point, that if that were saved, without all controversy the body too would partake in its salvation. For as it became mortal because of the soul's sinning: so if this do righteousness, that also, on the other hand, shall enjoy great glory.

But some maintain, that *the Spirit* is the Gracious Gift, which is extinguished when we sin. "In order then that this may not happen," saith he, "let him be punished; that thereby becoming better, he may draw down to himself God's grace, and be found with it safe to render up in that day." So that all comes as from one exercising a nurse's or a physician's office, not merely scourging, nor punishing rashly and at random. For the gain is greater than the punishment: one being but for a season, the other everlasting.

And he said not simply, *That the spirit may be saved*, but *in that day*. Well and seasonably doth he remind them of that day, in order that both they might more readily apply themselves to the cure, and that the person censured might the rather receive his words, not as it were of anger, but as the forethought of an anxious father. For this cause also he said, *unto the destruction of the flesh*: proceeding to lay down regulations for the devil, and not suffering him to go a

<sup>1</sup> Job 2. step too far. As in the instance of Job, God said, <sup>1</sup> *But touch*  
 6. *not his life*.

- (3.) [5.] Then, having ended his sentence, and spoken it in brief, without dwelling on it, he brings in again a rebuke, directing himself against them;

Ver. 6. *Your glorying is not good*: signifying that it was they, up to the present time, who had hindered him from repenting, by taking pride in him. Next he shews that he is taking this step in order to spare not that person only, but also those to whom he writes. To which effect he adds,

*Know ye not, that a little leaven leaveneth the whole lump?* "For," saith he, "though the offence be his, yet if neglected it hath power to waste the rest of the body of the Church also. For when the first transgressor escapes punishment, speedily will others also commit the same faults."

In these words he indicates moreover, that their struggle and their danger is for their whole Church, not for any one



person. For which purpose he needed also the similitude of <sup>1</sup>Con. 5. the leaven. For "as that," saith he, "though it be but <sup>7, 8.</sup> little, transforms unto its own nature the whole lump; so also this man, if he be let go unpunished, and if this sin turn out unavenged, will corrupt likewise all the rest."

Ver. 7. *Purge out the old leaven*, that is, this evil one. Not that he speaketh concerning this one only; rather he glances at others with him. For, *the old leaven* is not fornication only, but also sin of every kind. And he said not, *purge*, but *purge out*; "cleanse with accuracy, so that there be not so much as a remnant nor a shadow of that sort." In saying then, *purge out*, he signifies that there was still iniquity among them. But in saying, *that ye may be a new lump, as ye are unleavened*, he affirms and declares that not over very many was the wickedness prevailing. But though he saith, *as ye are unleavened*, he means it not as a fact, that all were clean, but as to what sort of people you ought to be.

[6.] *For Christ our Passover is sacrificed for us; therefore let us keep the feast: not with the old leaven, nor with the leaven of malice and wickedness, but with the unleavened bread of sincerity and truth.* So also Christ called His doctrine Leaven. And further he himself dwells upon the metaphor, reminding them of an ancient history, and of the Passover, and unleavened bread, and of their blessings both then and now, and their punishments and their plagues.

It is Festival, therefore, the whole time in which we live. For though he said, *Let us keep the feast*, not with a view to the presence of the Passover or of Pentecost did he say it; but as pointing out that the whole of time is a Festival unto Christians, because of the excellency of the good things which have been given. For what hath not come to pass that is good? The Son of God was made man for thee; hath freed thee from death; hath called thee to a kingdom. Thou therefore who hast obtained and art still obtaining such things, how can it be less than thy duty to *keep the feast* all thy life? Let no one then be downcast about poverty, and disease, and craft of enemies. For it is a Festival, even the whole of our time. Wherefore saith Paul, <sup>1</sup> *Rejoice in the Lord, Rejoice,* <sup>Philip. 4. 4.</sup> *again I say, Rejoice.* Upon the Festival days no one puts <sup>rep. in rec. text</sup> but <sup>twice.</sup>



HOMIL. on filthy garments. Neither then let us do so. For a  
 XV. marriage hath been made, a spiritual marriage. For, *the kingdom of Heaven*, saith He, *is likened unto a certain king which would make<sup>1</sup> a marriage for his son*. Now where it is a king making a marriage, and a marriage for his son, what can be greater than this feast? Let no one then enter in clad in rags. Not about garments is our discourse, but about unclean actions. For if, where all wore bright apparel, one alone, being found at the marriage in filthy garments, was cast out with dishonour, consider how great strictness and purity the entrance into that marriage requires.

<sup>1</sup>S. Mat.  
 22. 1.  
 ὁ βασις  
 ὁ βασις  
 ὁ βασις  
 ὁ βασις  
 ὁ βασις

[7.] However, not on this account only does he remind them of the *unleavened bread*, but also to point out the affinity of the Old Testament with the New; and to point out also that it was impossible, after the *unleavened bread*, again to enter into Egypt; but if any one chose to return, he would suffer the same things as did they. For those things were a shadow of these; however obstinate the Jew may be. Wherefore shouldest thou enquire of him, he will speak no great thing, rather, it is great which he will speak of, but nothing like what we speak of: because he knows not the Truth. For he for his part will say, "the Egyptians who detained us were so changed by the Almighty, that they themselves urged and drove us out, who before held us forcibly; they did not suffer us so much as to leaven our dough." But if a man asketh me, he shall hear not of Egypt, nor of Pharaoh; but of our deliverance from the deceit of demons and the darkness of the devil: not of Moses, but of the Son of God; not of a Red Sea, but of a Baptism overflowing with ten thousand blessings, where the *old man* is drowned.

Again, shouldest thou ask the Jew, why he expels all leaven from all his borders; here he will even be silent, and will not so much as state any reason. And this is because, although some indeed of the circumstances were both types of things to come, and had also certain causes in things then happening; yet others were not so, that the Jews might not deal deceitfully; that they might not abide in the shadow. For tell me, what is the meaning of the Lamb's being a *Male*, and *Unblemished*, and a *year old*, and of, a

bone shall not be broken? and what means the command to <sup>1</sup>Cor. 5. call the neighbours also<sup>1</sup>, and that it should be eaten stand- <sup>7, 8.</sup> ing and in the evening; or the fortifying the house with a <sup>1</sup>Exod. wall of blood? He will have nothing else to say but over and over all about Egypt. But I can tell you the meaning both of the Blood, and of the Evening, and the Eating all together, and of the rule that all should be standing. <sup>12. 4.</sup>

[8.] But first let us explain, why the leaven is cast out of (4.) all their borders. What then is the hidden meaning? The believer must be freed from all iniquity. For as among them he perishes, with whomsoever is found old leaven, so also with us, whosoever is found iniquity: since of course, the punishment being so great in that which is a shadow, in our case it cannot choose but be much greater. For if they so carefully clear their houses of leaven<sup>2</sup>, and pry into mouse-holes; much more ought we to search out the soul, so as to cast out every unclean thought.

This however was done by them of late<sup>3</sup>; but now no longer. For every where there is leaven, where a Jew is found. For it is in the midst of cities that the feast of unleavened bread is kept: a thing which is now rather a game at play than a law. For since the Truth is come, the Types have no longer any place.

So that by means of this example also he mightily drives the fornicator out of the Church. For, saith he, so far from his presence profiting, he even doth harm, injuring, on the contrary, the common estate of the body. For one knows not whence is the evil savour while the corrupt part is concealed, and so one imputes it to the whole. Wherefore he

<sup>1</sup> Lightfoot, *Works*, i. 953. "Seven days there shall be no leaven found in your houses." The Jews to meet this command, that was so exceeding strict, and to make sure for its observance soon enough, 'Did on the fourteenth day, while yet there was some light, make search for leaven by the light of a candle.' (*Talm. in Pesachim*. no. 1.) Thus is the Tradition; in which by the light of the fourteenth day their glossaries tell us that we must understand the 'thirteenth day at even, when it began to be dusky and candle-lighting.' The rubric of the Passover in the Hebrew and Spanish tongues renders it, 'At the entrance of the

fourteenth day of the month Nisan, they searched for leaven in all the places where they were wont to use leaven, even in holes and crannies; and that not by light of the sun and moon, or torch, but by the light of a wax candle, ... because it is the fittest for searching holes and corners, and because the Scripture speaketh of searching Jerusalem with candles." See Zeph. i. 12.

<sup>2</sup> i. e. (as it should seem) it has now become impossible for the Jews to keep this command, since they and their false doctrine are (spiritually) that very leaven, which is to be put away. Compare S. Matt. 16. 6.

HOMI. urges upon them strongly to *purge out the leaven, that ye may be*, saith he, *a new lump, even as ye are unleavened.*  
 XV.

For Christ our Passover is sacrificed for us. He said not, *is dead*, but more in point to the subject in hand, *hath been sacrificed*. Seek not then unleavened bread of this kind, since neither hast thou a lamb of the same kind. Seek not leaven of this description, seeing that thine unleavened bread is not such as this.

[9.] Thus, in the case of material leaven, the unleavened might become leavened, but never the reverse; whereas here there is a chance of the direct contrary occurring. This however he has not plainly declared: and observe his good sense. In the former Epistle he gives the fornicator no hope of return, but orders that his whole life should be spent in repentance, lest he should make him less energetic, through the promise. For he said not, *Deliver him up to Satan*, that having repented he might be commended again unto the Church. But what saith he? *That he may be saved in the last day*. For he conducts him on unto that time, in order to make him full of anxiety. And what favours he intended him after the repentance, he reveals not, imitating his own

<sup>1</sup> Jonah Master. For as God saith, <sup>1</sup> *Yet three days, and Nineveh shall be overthrown*, and added not, "but if she repent she shall be saved:" so also he did not say here, "But if he repent worthily, we will confirm our love towards him<sup>2</sup>." <sup>2</sup> 2 Cor. 2. 8.

But he waits for him to do the work, that so he may then receive the favour. For if he had said this at the beginning, he might have set him free from the fear. Wherefore he not only does not so, but by the instance of leaven, allows him not even a hope of return, but reserves him unto that day: *Purge out* (so he says) *the old leaven*; and, *let us not keep the feast in the old leaven*. But as soon as he had repented, he brought him in with all earnestness.

[10.] But why does he call it "old?" Is it because our former life was of this sort, or because that which is old is *ready to vanish away*<sup>3</sup>, and is unsavoury and foul? which is the nature of sin. For He neither simply finds fault with the old, nor simply praises the new, but with reference to the subject <sup>4</sup> Ecclus. matter. And thus elsewhere He saith <sup>4</sup>, *New wine is as a new friend: but if it become old, then with pleasure shalt thou drink it*: in the case of friendship bestowing his praise

<sup>1</sup> Jonah  
3. 4.  
LXX:  
rec. text,  
"forty  
days."  
<sup>2</sup> 2 Cor.  
2. 8.

<sup>3</sup> Heb.  
8. 13.

<sup>4</sup> Ecclus.  
9. 15.

rather upon the old than the new. And again, *The Ancient of days* sat<sup>1</sup>, here again, taking the term *ancient*, as among those laudatory expressions which confer highest glory. Elsewhere the Scripture takes the term *old* in the sense of blame; for seeing that the things are of various aspect, as being composed of many parts, it uses the same words both in a good and an evil import, not according to the same shade of meaning. Of which you may see an instance in the blame cast elsewhere on the old<sup>2</sup>: *They waxed old, and they halted from their paths*. And again<sup>3</sup>, *I have become old in the midst of all mine enemies*. And again, *O thou that art become old in evil days*. So also the *leaven* is often taken for the kingdom of Heaven, although here found fault with. But in that place it is used with one aspect, and in this with another.

[11.] But I have a strong impression, that the saying about the leaven refers also to the priests, who suffer a vast deal of the old leaven to be within, not purging out from their borders, that is, out of the Church, the covetous, the extortioners, and whatsoever would cast them out of the kingdom of Heaven. For surely covetousness is an *old leaven*; and whenever it lights, and into whatsoever house it enters, makes it unclean: and though you may gain but little by your injustice, it leavens the whole of your substance. Wherefore not seldom the dishonest gain, being but little, hath cast out the stock honestly laid up, however abundant. For nothing is more rotten than covetousness. You may fasten up that man's closet with key, and door, and bolt: you do all in vain, whilst you shut up within covetousness, the worst of all robbers, and able to carry off all.

"But what," say you, "if there are many covetous who do not experience this?" In the first place, they will experience it, though their experience come not immediately. And should they now escape, then do thou fear it the more: for they are reserved for a greater punishment. Add to this, that in the event of themselves escaping, yet those who inherit their wealth will have the same to endure. "But how can this be just," you will say? It is quite just. For he that has succeeded to an inheritance full of injustice, though he have committed no rapine himself, detains nevertheless the property of others; and is perfectly aware of this; and it

1 Con. 5.

7, 8.

1 Dan. 7.

9.

2 Ps. 17.

46. al.

18. 36.

3 Ps. 6.

7. ap.

1. XX.

4 Dan.

13. 52.

Hist.

Susan.

(5.)

**HOMIL.** is fair he should suffer for it. For if this or that person had  
XV. robbed and you received a thing, and then the owner came and demanded it back; would it avail you in defence to say that you had not seized it? By no means. For what would be your plea when accused? tell me. That it was another who spoiled? Well: but you are keeping possession. That it was he who robbed? But you are enjoying it. Why these rules even the laws of the heathen recognise, which acquitting those who have seized and stolen, bid you demand satisfaction from those persons in whose possession you happen to find your things all laid up.

If then you know who are the injured, restore, and do what Zacchæus did, with much increase. But if you know not, I offer you another way yet; I do not preclude you from the remedy. Distribute all these things to the poor: this again will be a way for you to mitigate the evil.

But if some have transmitted these things even to children and descendants, still in retribution they have suffered other disasters.

[12.] And why speak I of things in this present life? In that day at any rate will none of these things be said, when both appear naked, both the spoiled and the spoilers. Or rather not alike naked. Of riches indeed both will be equally stripped; but the one will be full of the crimes to which they gave occasion. What then shall we do on that day, when before the dread tribunal he that hath been evil entreated and lost his all is brought forward into the midst, and you have no one to speak a word for you? What will you say to the Judge? Now indeed you may be able even to corrupt the judgment, being but of men; but in that court, and at that time, it will be no longer so: no, nor yet now will you be able. For even at this moment that tribunal is present: since God both seeth our doings, and is near unto the injured, though not invoked: it being certain that whoever suffers wrong, however in himself unworthy to obtain any redress, yet nevertheless, seeing that what is done pleases not God, he hath most assuredly one to avenge him.

"How then," you will say, "is such an one well off, who is wicked?" Nay, it will not be so unto the end. Hear



what saith the Prophet, <sup>1</sup> *Fret not thyself because of the ungodly, because as grass they shall quickly wither away.* <sup>1 Cor. 5. 7, 8.</sup>  
 For where, tell me, where is he who wrought rapine, after his departure hence? Where are his bright hopes? Where his august name? Are they not all passed and gone? Is it not a dream and a shadow, all that was his? And this you must expect in the case of every such person, both in his own person while living, and in that of him who shall come after him. But not such in the state of the saints, nor will it be possible for you to say the same things in their case also, that it is a shadow, and a dream, and a tale, what belongs to them.

[13.] And if you please, he who spake these things, the tent-maker, the Cilician, the man whose very parentage is unknown, let him be the example we produce. You will say, "How is it possible to become such as he was?" Do you then thoroughly desire it? Are you thoroughly anxious to become such? "Yes," you will say. Well then, go the same way as he went, and they that were with him. Now what way went he? One saith, <sup>2</sup> *In hunger, and thirst, and nakedness.* <sup>2 Cor. 11. 27.</sup>  
 Another, <sup>3</sup> *Silver and gold I have none.* Thus they had <sup>3</sup> *nothing, and yet possessed all things.* <sup>4</sup> *What can be nobler* <sup>2 Cor. 6, 10.</sup>  
 than this saying? what more blessed or more abundant in riches? Others indeed were making their boast in the contrary things, saying, "I have this or that number of talents of gold, and acres of land without end, and houses, and slaves." But this man, in order to be naked of all things, shrinks not from poverty, (which is the feeling of the unwise,) nor hides his face, but he even wears it as an ornament.

Where now be the rich men, they who count up their interest simple and compound, they who take from all men and are never satisfied? Have ye heard the voice of Peter, that voice which sets forth poverty as the mother of wealth? That voice which has nothing, yet is wealthier than those who wear diadems? For this is that voice, which having nothing, was raising the dead, and rearing up the lame, and driving away devils, and bestowing such gracious gifts, as those who are clad in the purple robe and lead the mighty and terrible legions never were able to bestow. This is the voice of those who are now removed into heaven, of those who have attained unto that height.

HOMIL. [14.] Thus it is possible that he who hath nothing may  
XV. possess all men's goods. Thus may all men's goods be acquired: whereas, were we to get all men's goods, we are bereft of all. Perhaps this saying seems to be a paradox; but it is not. "But," you will say, "How does he who hath nothing possess all men's goods? Doth he not much more so, who hath what belongs to all?" By no means: but the contrary. For he who hath nothing commands all, even as they did. And throughout the world all houses were open to them, and they who offered them took their coming as a favour, and they came to them as to friends and kindred. For so they came to the woman who was a seller of purple<sup>1</sup>, and she, like a servant, set before them what she had. And to the keeper of the prison; and he opened to them all his house. And to innumerable others. Thus they had all things, and had nothing: for <sup>2</sup> *they said that none of the things which they possessed was their own*; therefore all things were theirs. For he that considers all things which are to be common, will not only use his own, but also the things of others as if they belonged to him. But he that parts things off, and sets himself as master over his own only, will not be master even of these. And this is plain from an example. He who possesses nothing at all, neither house, nor table, nor garment to spare, but for God's sake is bereft of all, uses the things which are in common as his own; and he shall receive from all whatsoever he may desire. Thus he that hath nothing possesses the things of all: but he that hath some things, will not be master even of these. For first, no one will give to him that hath possessions; and, secondly, his property shall belong to robbers, and thieves, and informers, and changing events, and be any body's rather than his. Paul, for instance, went up and down throughout all the world, carrying nothing with him, though he went neither unto friends nor kindred. Nay, at first he was a common enemy to all: but nevertheless he had all men's goods, after he had made good his entrance. But Ananias and Sapphira, hastening to gain a little more than their own, lost all, together with life itself. Withdraw then from thine own, that thou mayest use others' goods as thine own.

[15.] But I must stop: I know not how I have been carried

<sup>1</sup> Acts  
16. 14.

<sup>2</sup> Acts  
4. 32.

into such a transport in speaking such words as these unto <sup>1</sup>Cor. 5. men, who think it a great thing to impart but ever so little of 7, 8. their own. Wherefore let these my words have been spoken to the perfect. But to the more imperfect, this is what we may say, Give of what you have unto the needy. Increase your substance. For, saith He, <sup>1</sup>He that giveth unto the <sup>1</sup>Prov. poor lendeth unto God. But if you are in a hurry, and wait <sup>19. 17.</sup> not for the time of retribution, think of those who lend money to men: for not even these desire to get their interest immediately; but they are anxious that the principal should remain a good long while in the hands of the borrower, provided only the repayment be secure, and they have no mistrust of the borrower. Let this be done then in the present case also. Leave them with God, that He may pay thee thy wages manifold. Seek not to have the whole here; for if you recover it all here, how will you receive it back there? And it is on this account that God stores them up there, inasmuch as this present life is full of decay. But He gives even here also; for, *Seek ye*, saith He, *the kingdom of heaven, and all these things shall be added unto you*<sup>2</sup>. Well <sup>2</sup>S. Mat. <sup>6. 33.</sup> then, let us look towards that kingdom, and not be in a hurry for the repayment of the whole, lest we diminish our recompense. But let us wait for the fit season. For the interest in these cases is not of that kind, but is such as is meet to be given by God. This then having collected together in great abundance, so let us depart hence, that we may obtain both the present and future blessings; through the grace and loving-kindness of our Lord Jesus Christ, with whom unto the Father and the Holy Spirit be glory, power, honour, now, henceforth, and for evermore. Amen.

## HOMILY XVI.

---

1 COR. v. 9, 10, 11.

*I wrote unto you in an epistle not to company with fornicators: yet not altogether with the fornicators of this world, or with the covetous, or extortioners, or idolaters, for then must ye needs go out of the world. But now I have written unto you not to keep company, if any man that is called a brother be a fornicator, or covetous, or an idolater, or a drunkard, or a railer, or an extortioner; with such an one, no not to eat.*

FOR since he had said, *Ye have not rather mourned, that such an one should be taken away:* and, *Purge out the old leaven;* and it was likely that they would surmise it to be their duty to avoid all fornicators: for if he that has sinned imparts some of his own mischief to those who have not sinned, much more is it meet to keep one's self away from those without: (for if one ought not to spare a friend, on account of such mischief arising from him, much less any others;) and under this impression, it was probable that they would separate themselves from the fornicators among the Greeks also, and the matter thus turning out impossible, they would have taken it more to heart: he used this mode of correction, saying, *I wrote unto you not to keep company with fornicators, yet not altogether with the fornicators of this world:* using the word *altogether*, as if it were an acknowledged thing. For that they might not think that he charged not this upon them, as being rather imperfect, and attempt to do it under the erroneous impression that they were perfect, he shews that this were even impossible to be done, though they wished

it ever so much. For it would be necessary to seek another world. Wherefore he added, *Since ye must needs then go out of the world.* Seest thou that he is no hard master, and that in his legislation he constantly regards not only what may be done, but also what may be easily done. For how is it possible, says he, for a man having care of a house and children, and engaged in the affairs of the city, or who is an artisan or a soldier, (the greater part of mankind being Greeks,) to avoid the unclean who are to be found every where? For by *the fornicators of the world*, he means those who are among the Greeks. *But now I have written unto you, If any brother be of this kind, with such an one no not to eat.* Here also he glances at others who were living in wickedness.

But how can one *that is a brother* be an idolater? As was the case once in regard to the Samaritans, who chose piety but by halves. And besides he is laying down his ground beforehand for the discourse concerning things offered in sacrifice to idols, which after this he intends to handle.

*Or covetous.* For with these also he enters into conflict. Wherefore he said also, *Why do ye not rather suffer wrong? Why do ye not endure to be defrauded? Nay, ye do wrong, and defraud.*

*Or a drunkard.* For this also he lays to their charge further on, as when he says, *One is hungry, and another is drunken: and, meats for the belly, and the belly for meats.*

*Or a railer, or an extortioner:* for these too he had rebuked before.

[2.] Next he adds also the reason why he forbids them not to mix with heathens of that character, implying that it is not only impossible, but also superfluous.

V. 12. *For what have I to do to judge them that are without?* Calling the Christians and the Greeks, "those within" and "those without," as also he says elsewhere<sup>1</sup>, *He must also have a good report of them that are without.* And in the Epistle to the Thessalonians he speaks the same language, saying<sup>2</sup>, *Have no intercourse with him, that he may be put to shame.* And, *Count him not as an enemy, but admonish him as a brother.* Here, however, he does not add the reason. Why?

1 Con. 5.  
9, 10, 11.

1 1 Tim.  
3. 7.

2 2 Thes.  
3. 14.



**HOMIL.** Because in the other case he wished to soothe them, but in **XVI.** this, not so. For the fault in this case and in that was not the same, but in the Thessalonians it was less. For there, he is reproving indolence; but here, fornication and other most grievous sins. And if any one wished to go over to the Greeks, he hinders not him from eating with such persons; this too, for the same reason. So also do we act; for our children and our brethren we leave nothing undone, but of strangers we do not make much account. How then? Did not Paul care for them that were without as well? Yes, he cared for them; but it was not till after they had received the Gospel, and he had made them subject to the doctrine of Christ, that he laid down laws for them. But so long as they despised, it was superfluous to speak the precepts of Christ to those who knew not Christ Himself.

*Do not ye judge them that are within? But them that are without, God judgeth.* For since he had said, *What have I to do with judging those without;* lest any one should think that these were left unpunished, there is another tribunal which he sets over them, and that a fearful one. And this he said, both to terrify those, and to console these; intimating also that this punishment which is for a season snatches them away from that which is undying and perpetual: which also he has plainly declared elsewhere, saying,

<sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. <sup>1</sup> *But now being judged, we are chastened, that we should not*  
11. 52. *be condemned with the world.*

(2.) [3.] *Wherefore take away from among yourselves that wicked person.* He hath mentioned an expression found in the Old

<sup>2</sup> Deut. <sup>2</sup> Testament<sup>2</sup>, partly hinting that they too will be very great  
17. 7. *gainers, in being freed as it were from some grievous plague;* and partly to shew that this kind of thing is no innovation, but even from the beginning thus it seemed good to the legislator, that such as these should be cut off. But in that instance it was done with more severity, in this with more gentleness. On which account one might reasonably question, why in that case he conceded that the sinner should be severely punished and stoned, but in the present instance not so; rather he leads him to repentance. Why then were the lines drawn in the former instance one way and in the latter another way? For these two causes: one, because these

were being led into a greater trial, and needed greater long-<sup>1 COR. 5.</sup>  
suffering; the other, and that the truer one, because these by <sup>12.</sup>  
their impunity were more easily to be corrected, coming as  
they might to repentance: but the others were likely to go  
on to greater wickedness. For if when they saw the first  
undergoing punishment they persisted in the same things,  
had none at all been punished, much more would this have  
been their feeling. For which reason in that dispensation  
death is immediately inflicted upon the adulterer and the  
manslayer; but in this, if through repentance they are  
absolved, they have escaped the punishment. However, both  
here one may see some instances of heavier punishment, and  
in the Old Testament some less severe, in order that it may  
be signified in every way, that the covenants are akin to each  
other, and of one and the same lawgiver: and you may see  
the punishment following immediately both in that covenant  
and in this, and in both often after a long interval. Nay, and  
oftentimes not even after a long interval, repentance alone  
being taken as satisfaction by the Almighty. Thus, on the  
one hand, in the Old Testament, David, who had committed  
adultery and murder, was saved by means of repentance; and  
in the New, Ananias, who withdrew but a small portion of the  
price of the land, perished together with his wife. Now if these  
instances are more frequent in the Old Testament, and those of  
the contrary kind in the New, the difference of the persons pro-  
duces the difference in the economy adopted in such matters.

[4.] C. vi. V. 1. *Dare any one of you, having a matter  
against his brother<sup>1</sup>, go to law before the unjust, and not<sup>1</sup> <sup>εἰς  
ἀδελφόν,</sup>  
before the saints?* <sup>rec. text,  
ἐν τοῖς  
ἁγίοις.</sup>

Here also he again makes his complaint upon acknowledged  
grounds; for in that other place he says, *It is reported com-  
monly that there is fornication among you.* And in this  
place, *Dare any one of you?* From the very first outset giving  
signs of his anger, and implying that the thing spoken of  
comes of a daring and lawless spirit.

Now wherefore did he bring in by the way that discourse  
about covetousness and about the duty of not going to law  
without the Church? In fulfilment of his own rule. For it  
is a custom with him to set to right things as they fall in his  
way; just as when speaking about the tables which they

**HOMIL.** used in common, he launched out into the discourse about  
**XVI.** the mysteries. So here, you see, since he had made mention of covetous brethren, burning with anxiety to correct those in sin, he brooks not exactly to observe order: but he again corrects the sin which had been introduced out of the regular course, and so returns to the former subject.

Let us hear then what he also says about this. *Dare any of you, having a matter with his brother, go to law before the unjust, and not before the saints?* For a while, he employs those personal terms to expose, discredit, and blame their proceedings: nor does he quite from the beginning subvert the custom of seeking judgment before the believers: but when he had stricken them down by many words, then he even takes away entirely all going to law. "For in the first place," says he, "if one must go to law, it were wrong to do so before the unjust. But you ought not to go to law at all." This however he adds afterwards. For the present he thoroughly sifts the former subject, namely, that they should not submit matters to external arbitration. "For," says he, "how can it be otherwise than absurd, that one who is at variance<sup>1</sup> with his friend should take his enemy to be a reconciler between them? And how can you avoid feeling shame and blushing, when a Greek sits to judge a Christian? And if about private matters it is not right to go to law before Greeks, how shall we submit to their decisions about other things of greater importance?"

<sup>1</sup> *μῆγε-  
ψυχον-  
τα.*

Observe, moreover, how he speaks. He says not, "Before the unbelievers," but, *Before the unjust*; using the expression of which he had most particular need for the matter before him, in order to deter and keep them away. For seeing that his discourse was about going to law, and those who are engaged in suits seek for nothing so much as that the judges should feel great interest about what is just; he takes this as a ground of dissuasion, all but saying, "Where are you going? What are you doing, O man, bringing on yourself the contrary to what you wish, and in order to obtain justice committing yourself to unjust men?" And because it would have been intolerable to be told at once not to go to law, he did not immediately add this, but only changed the judges, bringing the party engaged in the trial from without into the Church.

[5.] Then, since it seemed easily open to contempt, I mean <sup>1Cor.6.</sup> our being judged by those who were within, and especially at <sup>1, 8.</sup> that time, (for they were not perhaps competent to comprehend a point, nor were they such as the heathen judges, well skilled in laws and rhetoric, inasmuch as the greater part of them were uneducated men,) mark how he makes them worthy of credit, first calling them *Saints*.

But seeing that this bore witness to purity of life, and not to accuracy in receiving instruction, observe how he orderly handles this part also, saying thus, *Do ye not know that the saints shall judge the world?* How then canst thou, (3.) who art in that day to judge them, endure to be judged by them now? They will not indeed judge, taking their seat in person and demanding account, yet they shall condemn. This at least he plainly said; *And if the world is judged in you, are ye unworthy to judge the smallest matters?* He says not "by you," but *in you*: just as when He said, <sup>1S.Mat.</sup> *The queen of the south shall rise up and* <sup>12. 42.</sup> *condemn this generation:* and, *The men of Nineveh shall arise and shall condemn this generation.* For when, beholding the same sun and sharing all the same things, we shall be found believers but they unbelievers, they will not be able to take refuge in ignorance. For we shall accuse them, simply by the things which we have done. And many such ways of judgment one will find there.

Then, that no one should think he speaks about other persons, mark how he generalizes his speech. *And if the world is judged in you, are ye unworthy to judge the smallest matters?* The thing is a disgrace to you, he says, and an unspeakable reproach. For since it was likely that they would be out of countenance at being judged by those that were within; "nay," saith he, "on the contrary, the disgrace is when you are judged by those without: for those are the very small controversies, not these."

Ver. 3. *Know ye not that we shall judge angels? how much more then the things which pertain to this life?*

Some say that here the priests are darkly spoken of, but away with this. His speech is about demons. For, had he been speaking about corrupt priests, he would have meant them above, when he said, *the world is judged in you*:



HOMIL. (for the Scripture is wont to call evil men also *The world*;) and  
 XVI. he would not have said the same thing twice, nor would he, as if he was saying something of greater consequence, have put it down afterwards. But he speaks concerning those angels, about whom Christ saith, *Go ye into the fire which*  
 1 S. Mat. *is prepared for the devil and his angels*<sup>1</sup>. And Paul, *his*  
 25. 41. *angels are transformed as ministers of righteousness*<sup>2</sup>. For  
 2 2 Cor. when the very incorporeal powers shall be found inferior  
 11. 15. to us who are clothed with flesh, they shall suffer heavier punishment.

But if some should contend that he speaks of priests, "What sort of priests?" let us ask. Those whose walk in life has been worldly, of course. In what sense then does he say, *We shall judge angels, much more things that relate to this life*? He mentions the angels in contradistinction to *things relating to this life*: likely enough; for they are removed from the need of these things, because of the superior excellence of their nature.

[6.] Ver. 4. *If then ye have judgments of things pertaining to this life, set them to judge who are least esteemed in the Church.*

Wishing to instruct us as forcibly as possible, that they ought not to commit themselves to those without, whatsoever the matter might chance to be; having raised what seemed to be an objection, he answers it in the first instance. For what he says is something like this: Perhaps some one will say, "No one among you is wise, nor competent to pass sentence; all are contemptible." Now what follows? "Even though none be wise," says he, "I bid you entrust things to those who are of least weight."

Ver. 5. *But this I speak to your shame.* These are the words of one exposing their objection as being an idle pretext: and therefore he adds, *Is it so, that there is not a wise man among you, no not even one?* Is the scarcity, says he, so great? so great the want of sensible persons among you? And what he subjoins strikes even still harder. For having said, *Is it so, that there is not a wise man among you, not even one?* he adds, *Who shall be able to judge in the case of his brother.* For when brother goes to law with brother, there is never any need of understanding and talent in the



person who is mediating in the cause, the feeling and relationship contributing greatly to the settlement of such a quarrel. 1 Cor. 6.  
5, 6, 7.

*But brother goeth to law with brother, and that before the unbelievers.* Do you observe with what effect he disparaged the judges, at first by calling them unjust; whereas here, to move shame, he calls them Unbelievers? For surely it is extremely disgraceful if the priest could not be the author of reconciliation even among brethren, but recourse must be had to those without. So that when he said, *those who are least esteemed*, his chief meaning was not<sup>1</sup>, the Church's outcasts should be appointed as judges, but to find fault with them. For that it was proper to make reference to those who were able to decide, he has shewn by saying, *Is it so, that there is not a wise man among you, not even one?* And with great impressiveness he stops their mouths, and says, "Even though there were not a single wise man, the hearing ought to have been left to you who are unwise, rather than those without should judge." For what else can it be than absurd, that whereas on a quarrel arising in a house, we call in no one from without, and feel ashamed if news get abroad among strangers of what is going on within doors; where the Church is, the Treasure of the unutterable Mysteries, there all things should be published without?

Ver. 6. *But brother goeth to law with brother, and this before the unbelievers.*

The charge is twofold; both that he *goeth to law*, and *before the unbelievers*. For if even the thing by itself, To go to law with a brother, be a fault, to do it also before aliens, what pardon does it admit of?

[7.] Ver. 7. *Now therefore there is altogether a fault among you, that ye go to law one with another.*

Do you see for what place he reserved this point? And how he has cleared the discussion of it in good time? For "I talk not yet," saith he, "which injures, or which is injured." Thus far, the act itself of going to law brings each party under his censure, and in that respect one is not at all better than another. But whether one go to law justly or unjustly, (4.) that is quite another subject. Say not then, "which did the

HOMIL. wrong?" For on this ground I at once condemn thee, ever  
XVI. for the act of going to law.

Now if being unable to bear a wrong-doer be a fault, what accusation can come up to the actual wrong? *Why do ye not rather take wrong? Why do ye not rather suffer yourselves to be defrauded?*

Ver. 8. *Nay, ye do wrong, and defraud, and that your brethren.*

Again, it is a twofold crime, perhaps even threefold or fourfold. One, not to know how to bear being wronged. Another, actually to do wrong. A third, to commit the settlement of these matters even unto the unjust. And yet a fourth, that it should be so done to a brother. For men's offences are not judged by the same rule, when they are committed against any chance person, and towards one's own member. For it must be a greater degree of stubbornness, to make men venture upon that. In the other case, the nature of the thing is alone trampled on; but in this, the quality of the person also.

[8.] Having thus, you see, abashed them from arguments on general principles, before that, from the rewards proposed<sup>1</sup>; he shuts up the exhortation with a threat, making his speech  
v. 9. more peremptory, and saying thus, *Know ye not that the unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God? Be not deceived: neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with mankind, nor covetous, nor thieves, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the kingdom of God? What sayest thou?*  
v. 10. When discoursing about covetous persons, have you brought in upon us so vast a crowd of lawless men? "Yes," says he, "but in doing this, I am not confusing my discourse, but going on in most regular order." For as when discoursing about the unclean he made mention of all together; so again, on mentioning the covetous he brings forward all, thus making his rebukes familiar to those who have such things on their conscience. For as often as mention is made of others, to hear continually of the punishment laid up for them, makes the reproof easy to be received, when it comes into conflict

<sup>1</sup> i. e. in the clause, *Do ye not know that the Saints shall judge the world?*  
v. 2.

with our own sins. And so in the present instance he utters <sup>1 Cor. 6.</sup> his threat, not at all as being conscious of their doing such <sup>10, 11.</sup> things, nor as calling them to account, a thing which has special force to keep hold of the hearer, and to keep him from starting off; namely, the discourse having no respect unto him, but being spoken indefinitely, and so wounding his conscience secretly.

*Be not deceived.* Here he glances at certain who maintained (what indeed most men assert now) that God is loving and good to man, and takes not vengeance upon our misdeeds: "Let us not then be afraid." For never will He exact justice of any one for any thing. And it is on account of these that he says, *Be not deceived.* For it belongs to the extreme of error and delusion, after depending on good to meet with the contrary; and to surmise such things about God, as even in man no one would think of. Wherefore saith the Prophet in His person<sup>1</sup>, *Thou hast conceived* <sup>Ps. 49.</sup> *iniquity, that I shall be like unto thee: I will reprove thee,* <sup>LXX.</sup> *and set before thy face thine iniquities.* And Paul, here, *Be* <sup>50. Heb.</sup> *not deceived; neither fornicators,* (he puts first the one that <sup>5. 21.</sup> *was already condemned,)* *nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor* <sup>(τὰς ἀσέβεις σου not in rec. text.)</sup> *drunkards, nor revilers, shall inherit the kingdom of God.*

Many have laid hold of this place, as extremely severe, since he places the drunkard and the reviler with the adulterer and the abominable and the abuser of himself with mankind. And yet the offences are not equal: how then is the award of punishment the same? What shall we say then? First, that drunkenness is no small thing, nor reviling, seeing that Christ Himself delivered over to hell, him that called his brother Fool. And often that sin has brought forth death. Again, the Jewish people too committed the greatest of their sins through drunkenness. In the next place, it is not of punishment that he is so far discoursing, but of falling away from the kingdom. Now from the kingdom, both the one and the other are equally thrust out; but whether in hell they will find any difference, it belongs not to this present occasion to enquire. For that subject is not within our purpose just now.

[9.] Ver. 11. *And such were some of you. But ye are washed, but ye are sanctified.*

HOMIL. In a way to abash them exceedingly, he adds this: as if he  
 XVI. said, "Consider from what evils God hath delivered you; how great an experiment and demonstration of loving-kindness He hath afforded you! He hath not limited His redemption to mere deliverance, but hath greatly extended the benefit: for He also hath made thee clean. Was this then all? Nay: but He hath also *sanctified*. Nor even is this all: He hath also *justified*. Yet even bare deliverance from our sins were a great gift: but now He hath filled thee also with countless blessings. And this He hath done, *In the Name of our Lord Jesus Christ*; not in this name or in that: yea also, *In the Spirit of our God*.

Knowing therefore these things, beloved, and bearing in mind the greatness of the blessing which hath been wrought, let us both continue to live soberly, being pure from all things that have been enumerated; and let us avoid the tribunals which are in the forums of the Gentiles; and the noble birth which God hath freely given us, the same let us preserve to the end. For think how full of shame it is, that a Greek should take his seat and deal out justice to thee.

- (5.) But you will say, What if he that is within judge contrary to the law? Why should he? tell me. For I would know by what kind of laws the Greek administers justice? And by what the Christian? Is it not quite plain that the laws of men are the rule of the Greek, but those of God, of the Christian? Surely then with the latter there is greater chance of justice, seeing that these laws are even sent from heaven. For in regard to those without, besides what has been said, there are many other things also to suspect; talent in speakers, and corruption in magistrates, and many other things which are the ruin of justice. But with us, nothing of this sort.

"What then," you will say, "if the adversary be one in high place? Well, for this reason more than all one ought to go to law in Christian courts: for in the courts without he will get the better of you at all events. "But what if he acquiesce not, but both despise those within, and forcibly drag the cause out?" Better were it to submit willingly to what you are likely to endure by compulsion, and not go to

<sup>1</sup>S. Mat. law, that thou mayest have also a reward. For, <sup>1</sup>*If any one*  
 5. 40. *will go to law with thee and take away thy coat, thou shalt*



let him have thy cloke also: and, <sup>1</sup> *Agree with thine adversary* <sup>1 Cor. 6. 11.</sup> quickly whilst thou art in the way with him. And why <sup>v. 25.</sup> need I speak of our rules? For even the pleaders in the heathen courts very often tell us this, saying, "it were better to make up matters out of court." But O wealth, or rather, O the absurd love of wealth! It subverts all things and casts them down; and all things are to the many an idle tale and fables because of money! Now that those who give trouble to courts of law should be worldly men is no marvel: but that many of those who have bid farewell to the world should do the very same, this is a thing from which all pardon is cut off. For if you choose to see how far you should keep from this sort of need, I mean that of the tribunals, by the rule of Scripture, and to learn for whom the laws are appointed, hear what Paul saith; <sup>1</sup> *For a righteous* <sup>1 Tim. 1. 9.</sup> *man a law is not made, but for the lawless and insubordinate.* And if he saith these things about the Mosaic Law, much more about the laws of the heathen.

[10.] Now then, if you commit injustice, it is plain that you cannot be just: but if you are injured, and bear it, (for this is a special mark of a just man,) you have no need of the laws which are without. "How then," say you, "shall I be able to bear it when injured?" And yet Christ hath commanded something even more than this. For not only hath He commanded you, when injured, to bear it, but even to give abundantly more to the wrong-doer; and in your zeal for suffering ill to surpass his eagerness for doing it. For He said not, *to him that will sue thee at law, and take away thy coat, give thy coat, but, together with that give also thy cloke.* For I bid you overcome him, saith He, by suffering, not by doing, evil: for this is the certain and splendid victory. Wherefore also Paul goes on to say, *Now then it is altogether a discomfiture to<sup>3</sup> you, that ye have judg-* <sup>rec. vers. "a fault."</sup> *ments one with another.* And, *Wherefore do ye not rather suffer wrong?* For that the injured person overcomes, rather than he who cannot endure being injured, this I will make evident to you. He that cannot endure injury, though he force the other into court, though he gain the verdict, yet is he then most of all defeated. For that which he would not, he hath suffered; in that the adversary hath compelled him



**HOMIL.** both to feel pain and to incur a law-suit. For what is it to  
**XVI.** the point, that you have prevailed? and what, that you have recovered all the money? You have in the meanwhile borne what you did not desire, having been compelled to decide the matter by law. But if you endure the injustice, you overcome; deprived indeed of the money, but not at all of the victory which is annexed to such self-command. For the other had no power to oblige you to do what you did not like.

And to shew that this is true; tell me, which conquered? The envious one, or he who lay upon the dunghill? Which was defeated? Job, who was stripped of all, or the devil, who stripped him of all? Evidently the devil, who stripped him of all. Whom do we admire for the victory, the devil that smote, or Job that was stricken? Clearly, Job. And yet he could not retain his perishing wealth, nor save his children. Why speak I of riches and children? He could not insure to himself bodily health. Yet nevertheless this is the conqueror, he that lost all that he had. His riches indeed he could not keep; but his piety he kept with all strictness. "But his children when perishing he could not help." And what then? Since what happened both made them more glorious, and besides, this was the mean, whereby he protected himself against the despiteful usage. Now had he not suffered ill and been wronged of the devil, he would not have gained that signal victory. Had it been an evil thing to suffer wrong, God would not have enjoined it upon us: for God enjoineth not evil things. What, know ye not that He is the God of Glory? that it could not be His will to encompass us with shame and ridicule and loss, but to introduce<sup>1</sup> us to the contrary of these? Therefore He commands us to suffer wrong, and doth all to withdraw us from worldly things, and to convince us what is glory, and what shame; what loss, and what gain.

<sup>1</sup> ~~introduce~~  
~~introduces~~

- (6.) "But it is hard to suffer wrong and be spitefully entreated." Nay, O man, it is not, it is not hard. How long will thy heart be fluttering about things present? For God, you may be sure, would not have commanded this, had it been hard. Just consider. The wrong-doer goes his way with the money, but with an evil conscience besides: the receiver of

the wrong, defrauded indeed of some money, but enriched <sup>1 Cor. 6.</sup> with confidence towards God; an acquisition more valuable <sup>11.</sup> than countless treasures.

[11.] Knowing these things, therefore, let us of our free choice go on strict principles, and not be like the unwise, who think that they are then not wronged, when their suffering wrong is the result of a trial. But, quite on the contrary, that is the greatest harm; and so in every case when we exercise self-restraint in these matters, not willingly, but after being worsted in that other quarter. For it is no advantage that a man defeated in a trial endures it; for it becomes thenceforth a matter of necessity. What then is the splendid victory? When thou lookest down on it: when thou refusest to go to law.

"How say you? have I been stripped of every thing," saith one, "and do you bid me keep silent? Have I been shamefully used, and do you exhort me to bear it meekly? And how shall I be able?" Nay, but it is most easy if thou wilt look up unto heaven; if thou wilt behold the beauty that is in sight; and whither God hath promised to receive thee, if thou bear wrong nobly. Do this then; and looking up unto the heaven, think that thou art made like unto Him that sitteth there upon the Cherubim. For He also was injured and He bore it; He was reproached and avenged not Himself; and was spit upon, yet He asserted not His cause. Nay, He made return, in the contrary kind, to those who did such things, even in benefits without number; and He hath commanded us to be imitators of Him. Consider that thou camest naked out of thy mother's womb, and that naked both thou and he that hath done thee wrong, shall depart; rather, he for his part, with innumerable wounds, breeding worms. Consider that things present are but for a season; count over the tombs of thine ancestors; acquaint thyself accurately with past events; and thou shalt see that the wrong-doer hath made thee stronger. For his own affection he hath aggravated, his covetousness I mean; but yours, he hath alleviated, taking away the food of the beast. And besides all this, he hath set you free from cares, agony, envy of informers, trouble, worry, perpetual fear; and the foul mass of evils he hath heaped upon his own head.

"What then," saith one, "if I have to struggle with

HOMIL. hunger?" Thou endurest this with Paul, who saith, '*Even*  
 XVI. *at this present hour we both hunger, and thirst, and are*  
 I 1 Cor. *naked.* But he did it, you will say, "for God's sake:" do  
 4. 10. thou it also, for God's sake. For when thou abstainest from  
 avenging, thou dost so for God's sake.

"But he that wronged me, takes his pleasure with the  
 wealthy." Yea, rather with the devil. But be you crowned  
 together with Paul.

<sup>2</sup> Prov. Therefore fear not hunger, for <sup>2</sup>*the Lord will not kill with*  
 10. 3. *hunger the souls of the righteous.* And again, another saith,

<sup>3</sup> Ps. 54. <sup>3</sup>*Cast upon the Lord thy care, and He will nourish thee.*  
 23.

For if the sparrows of the field are nourished by Him, how  
 shall He not nourish thee? Now let us not be of little faith  
 nor of little soul, O my beloved! For He who hath promised  
 the kingdom of heaven, and such great blessings, how shall  
 He not give things present? Let us not covet superfluous  
 things, but let us keep to a sufficiency, and we shall always  
 be rich. Let shelter be what we seek and food, and we shall  
 obtain all things; both there, and such as are far greater.

But if you are still grieving and bowing yourself down,  
 I should like to shew you the soul of the wrong-doer after  
 his victory, how it is become ashes. For truly sin is that  
 kind of thing: while it is being committed, it affords a  
 certain pleasure; but when it is finished, then the trifling  
 pleasure is gone, one knows not how, and in its place comes  
 dejection. And this is our feeling when we do hurt to any:  
 afterwards, at any rate, we condemn ourselves. So also when  
 we over-reach we have pleasure; but afterwards we are stung  
 by conscience. Seest thou in any one's possession some  
 poor man's home? Weep, not for him that is spoiled, but  
 for the spoiler: for he has not inflicted, but sustained an evil.  
 For he hath robbed the other of things present; but himself  
 he hath cast out of the blessings which cannot be uttered.  
 For if he who giveth not to the poor shall go away into hell;  
 what shall he suffer who takes the goods of the poor?

"Yet," saith one, "where is the gain, if I suffer ill?"  
 Indeed, the gain is great. For not of the punishment of him  
 that hath done thee harm doth God frame a compensation for  
 thee: since that would be no great thing. For what great  
 good is it, if I suffer ill and he suffer ill? And yet I know

of many, who consider this the greatest comfort, and who <sup>1Cor.6.</sup> think they have got all back again, when they see those who <sup>11.</sup> had insulted them undergoing punishment. But God doth not limit His recompense to this.

Wouldest thou then desire to know in earnest how great are the blessings which await thee? He openeth for thee the whole heaven; He maketh thee a fellow-citizen with the Saints; He fits thee to bear a part in their choir: from sins He absolveth; with righteousness He crowneth. For if such as forgive offenders shall obtain forgiveness, those who not only forgive but who also give largely to boot, what blessing shall they not inherit?

Therefore, bear it not with a poor spirit, but even pray for him that injured thee. It is for thyself that thou dost this. Hath he taken thy money? Well: he took thy sins too: which was the case with Naaman and Gehazi. How much wealth wouldest thou not give, to have thine iniquities forgiven thee? This, believe me, is the case now. For if thou endure nobly and curse not, thou hast bound on thee a glorious crown. It is not my word; but thou hast heard Christ speaking, *Pray for those that despitefully use you.* And consider the reward how great! *That ye may be like your Father which is in the heavens.* So then you have been deprived of nothing, yea, you have been a gainer: you have received no wrong, rather you have been crowned; in that you are become better disciplined in soul; are made like to God; are set free from the care of money; are made possessor of the kingdom of heaven.

All these things therefore taking into account, let us restrain ourselves in injuries, beloved, in order that we may both be freed from the tumult of this present life, and cast out all unprofitable sadness of spirit, and may obtain the joy to come; through the grace and loving-kindness of our Lord Jesus Christ, with Whom to the Father and the Holy Spirit, be glory, power, honour, now, henceforth, and for ever and ever. Amen.



## HOMILY XVII.

I COR. vi. 12.

*All things are lawful for me, but all things are not expedient.*

*All things are lawful for me, but I will not be brought into the power of any.*

HERE he glances at the gluttons. For since he intends to assail the fornicator again, and fornication arises from delicacy and want of moderation, he strongly chastises this passion. It cannot be that he speaks thus with regard to things forbidden; such not being *lawful*: but he speaks of things which seem to be indifferent. To illustrate my meaning: "It is lawful," he says, "to eat and to drink; but it is not expedient with excess." And so that marvellous and unexpected turn of his, which he is often wont to adopt<sup>1</sup>; bringing his argument clear round to its contrary, this he manages to introduce here also; and he signifies that to do what is in one's power not only is not expedient, but even is not a part of power, but of slavery.

<sup>1</sup> Cf.  
Rom.  
12. 21;  
1 Cor. 7.  
23.

And first, he dissuades them on the ground of the inexpediency of the thing, saying, *they are not expedient*: in the next place, on that of its contrariety to itself, saying, *I will not be brought under the power of any*. This is his meaning: "You are at liberty to eat," says he; "well then, remain in liberty, and take heed that you do not become a slave to this appetite: for he who uses it properly, he is master of it; but he that exceeds the proper measure is no longer its master but its slave, since gluttony reigns paramount within him." Do you perceive how, where the man thought he had authority, Paul points out that he is under authority? For this is his custom, as I was saying before, to give all ob-



jections a turn the contrary way. It is just this which he <sup>1 Cor. 6. 13.</sup> has done here. For mark; each of them was saying, "I have power to live delicately." He replies, "In doing so, thou art not so much acting as one who had power over a thing, but rather as being thyself subject to some such power. For thou hast not power even over thine own belly, so long as thou art dissolute, but it hath power over thee." And the same we may say of riches also, and of all other things.

Ver. 13. *Meats for the belly.* By *the belly* here he means not the stomach, but the stomach's voraciousness. As when he says, <sup>Phil. 3. 19.</sup> *Whose God is their belly:* not speaking about that part of the body, but about greediness. To prove that so it is, hear what follows: *And the belly for meats; but the body is not for fornication, but for the Lord.* And yet *the belly* also is of *the body*. But he puts down two pairs of things, *meats* and gluttony, (which he terms *the belly*;) *Christ*, and *the body*.

What then is the meaning of, *Meats for the belly?* *Meats*, he says, are on good terms with gluttony, and it with them. It cannot therefore lead us unto Christ, but drags towards these. For it is a strong and brutal passion, and makes us slaves, and puts us upon ministering to the belly. Why then art thou excited and gaping after food, O man? For the end of that service is this, and nothing further shall be seen of it: but as one waiting on some mistress, it abides keeping up this slavery, and advances no further, and has no other employment but this same fruitless one. And the two are connected together and destroyed together; *the belly* with *the meats*, and *the meats* with *the belly*; winding out a sort of interminable course; just as from a corrupt body worms may be produced, and again by worms the body consumed; or as it were a wave swoln high and breaking, and having no further effect. But these things he says not concerning food and the body, but it is the passion of greediness and excess in eatables which he is censuring: and what follows shews it. For he proceeds:

*But God will destroy both it and them;* speaking not of the stomach, but of immoderate desire: not of food, but of high feeding. For with the former he is not angry, but even lays down rules about them, saying, <sup>1 Tim. 6. 8.</sup> *Having food and raiment,*

**HOMIL.** *let us be therewith content.* However, thus he stigmatizes  
**XVII.** the whole thing; its amendment (after advice given) being left by him to prayer.

But some say that the words are a prophecy, declaring the state which shall be in the life to come, and that there shall not be any eating or drinking. Now if that which is moderate shall have an end, much more ought we to abstain from excess.

Then, lest any one should suppose that the body is the object of his censure, and suspect that from a part he is blaming the whole, and say that the nature of the body was the cause of fornication, hear what follows. "I blame not," he says, "the nature of the body, but the immoderate licence of the mind." And therefore he subjoins, *Now the body is not for fornication, but for the Lord*; for it was not formed for this purpose, to live licentiously and commit fornication, as neither was the belly to be greedy; but that it might follow Christ as a Head, and that the Lord might be set over the body. Let us be overcome with shame, let us be horror-struck, that after we have been counted worthy of such great honour, as to become members of Him that sitteth on high, we defile ourselves with so great evils.

[2.] Having now sufficiently condemned the gluttons, he uses also the hope of things to come to divert us from this wickedness: saying,

- (2.) Ver. 14. *But God hath both raised up the Lord, and will raise up us also by His own power.*

Do you perceive again his Apostolical wisdom? For he is always establishing the credibility of the Resurrection from Christ, and especially now. For if our body be a member of Christ, and Christ be risen, the body also shall surely follow the Head.

*Through his own power.* For since he had asserted a thing disbelieved, and not to be apprehended by reasonings, he hath left entirely to His incomprehensible power the circumstances of Christ's own Resurrection, producing this too as no small demonstration against them. And concerning the Resurrection of Christ he did not insert this: for neither did he say, *But God shall also raise up the Lord*;—for the thing was past and gone;—but how? *But God hath both raised up*

the Lord; nor was there need of any proof. But concerning our resurrection, since it has not yet come to pass, he spoke not thus, but how? *And will raise up us also by His own power*: by the reliance to be placed on the power of the Worker, he stops the mouths of the gainsayers.

Further: if he ascribe unto the Father the Resurrection of Christ, let not this at all disturb thee. For not as though Christ were powerless, hath he put this down, for He it is Himself who saith, *'Destroy this Temple, and in three days I will raise it up:* and again, *'I have power to lay down My life, and I have power to take it again.* And Luke also in the Acts says, *'To whom also He shewed Himself alive.* Wherefore then does Paul so speak? Because both the acts of the Son are imputed unto the Father, and the Father's unto the Son. For He saith, *'Whatsoever things He doeth, these also doeth the Son likewise.*

And very opportunely hath he here made mention of the Resurrection, keeping down by those hopes the tyranny of gluttonous desire; and all but saying, Thou hast eaten, hast drunk to excess: and what is the result? Nothing, save only destruction. Thou hast been conjoined unto Christ; and what is the result? A great and marvellous thing: the future Resurrection, that glorious one, and transcending all utterance!

[3.] Let no one therefore go on disbelieving the Resurrection: but if a man disbelieve, let him think how many things He made from nothing, and admit it as a proof also of the other. For the things which are already past are stranger by far, and fraught with overpowering wonder. Just consider. He took earth and mixed it and made man; earth which existed not before this. How then did the earth become man? And how was it produced from nothing? And how, all the things that were made from it? the endless sorts of irrational creatures; of seeds; of plants; no pangs of travail having preceded in the one case, no rains having come down upon the others; no tillage seen, no oxen, no plough, nor any thing else contributing to their production? Why, for this cause the lifeless and senseless thing was made to put forth in the beginning so many kinds of plants, and irrational creatures, in order that from the very first He might instruct thee in the

**HOMIL.** doctrine of the Resurrection. For this is more inexplicable  
**XVII.** than the Resurrection. For it is not the same thing to rekindle an extinguished lamp and to shew fire that has never yet appeared. It is not the same thing to raise up again a house which has fallen down, and to produce one which has never at all had an existence. For in the former case, if nothing else, yet the material was given to work with: but in the latter, not even the substance appeared. Wherefore He made first that which seemed to be the more difficult, to the end that hereby thou mightest admit that which is the more easy; more difficult, I say, not to God, but as far as our reasonings can follow the subject. For with God nothing is difficult: but as the painter who has made one likeness will make ten thousand with ease, so also with God it is easy to make worlds without number and end. Rather, as it is easy for you to conceive a city and worlds without bound, so unto God is it easy to make them; or rather again it is easier by far than what I said. For thou consumest time, brief though it be, in thy conception; but God not even this, but as much as stones are heavier than any of the lightest things, yea even than our minds; so much is our mind surpassed by the rapidity of God's work of creation.

Do you marvel at His power on the earth? Think again how the heaven was made, not yet being; how the innumerable stars, how the sun, how the moon; and all these things not yet being. Again, tell me how after they were made they stood fast, and upon what? What foundation have they? and what the earth? What comes next to the earth? and again, what after that which came next to the earth? Do you see into what an eddy the eye of your mind is plunged, unless you quickly take refuge in Faith and the incomprehensible power of the Maker?

But if you choose from human things also to make conjecture, you will be able by degrees to find wings for your understanding. "What kind of human things?" may be asked. Do you not see the potters, how they fashion the vase which had been broken in pieces and become shapeless? Those who fuse the ore from the mine, how the earth in their hands  
 turns out<sup>1</sup> gold, or silver, or copper? Others again who  
 work in glass, how they transform the sand into one compact

and transparent substance? Shall I speak of the dressers of <sup>1Cor.6.</sup> leather, the dyers of purple vestments; how they make that <sup>14.</sup> which had received their tint shew as one thing when it had been another? Shall I speak of the generation of our own race? Doth not a small seed at first without form and without any impress enter into the womb which receives it? Whence then the so intricate formation of the living creature? What is the wheat? Is it not cast a naked seed into the earth? After it has been cast there, doth it not decay? Whence is the ear, the beard, the stalk, and all the other parts? Doth not often a little grain of a fig fall into the ground, and produce both root, and branches, and fruit? And dost thou hereupon admit each of these, and make no curious enquiries, and of God alone dost thou demand account, in His work of changing the fashion of our body? And how can such things be pardonable?

These things and such like let us speak to the Greeks. (8.)  
For to those who are obedient to the Scriptures, I have no occasion to speak at all.

I say, if you intend to pry curiously into all His doings, what shall God have more than men? And yet even of men there are many about whom we do not so enquire. Much more then ought we to abstain from impertinent inquiry about the wisdom of God, and from demanding accounts of it: in the first place, because He is trustworthy who affirmeth: in the second place, because the matter admits not investigation by reasonings. For God is not so abjectly poor, as to work such things only, as can be apprehended by the weakness of thy reasonings. And if thou comprehendest not the work of an artisan, much less of God, the best of artificers. Disbelieve not then the Resurrection, for very far will ye be from the hope of that which is to come.

But what is the wise argument of the gainsayers; rather, I should say, their exceeding simple one? "Why how, when the body is mixed up with the earth, and is become earth, and this again is removed elsewhere, how," say they, "shall it rise again?" To thee this seems impossible, but not to the unsleeping Eye. For unto that all things are clear. And thou in that confusion seest no distinction of parts; but He knows them all. Since also the heart of thy



HOMIL.  
XVII. neighbour thou knowest not, nor the things in it; but He knoweth all. If then, because of thy not knowing how God raiseth men up, thou believest not that He doth raise them, wilt thou disbelieve that He knoweth also what is in thy mind? for neither is that obvious to view. And yet in the body it is visible matter, though it be dissolved: but those thoughts are invisible. Shall He then who knoweth with all certainty the invisible things, not see the things which be visible, and easily detach the scattered parts of the body? I suppose this is plain to every one.

Do not then disbelieve the Resurrection; for this is a doctrine of the Devil. This is what the Devil is earnest for, not only that the Resurrection may be disbelieved, but good works also may be done away with. For the man who does not expect that he shall rise again, and give an account of the things which he has done, will not quickly apply himself to virtue; and from not applying himself to virtue, will in turn come to disbelieve the Resurrection entirely: for both these are established by each other; vice by unbelief, and unbelief by vice. For the conscience filled with many wickednesses, fearing and trembling for the recompense to come, and not willing to provide itself with comfort by changing to what is most excellent, is fain to repose in unbelief. Thus, when thou deniest resurrection and judgment, the other for his part will say, "Then shall I also not have to render account of my bold deeds."

1 S. Mat.  
22. 29. [4.] But what saith Christ? *'Ye do err, not knowing the Scriptures, nor the power of God.* For God would not have wrought so many things, had He not intended to raise us up again, but to dissolve and blot us out in annihilation. He would not have spread out this heaven, He would not have stretched the earth beneath, He would not have made all the rest of the universe only for this short life. But if all these are for the present, what will He not do for that which is to come? If, on the contrary, there is to be no future life, we are in this respect of far meaner account than the things which have been made for our sakes. For both the heaven, and the earth, and the sea, and the rivers, are more lasting than we are: and some even of the brutes; since the raven, and the race of elephants, and many other

creatures, have a longer enjoyment of the present life. To <sup>1</sup>Cor. 6. 14. us, moreover, life is short and toilsome, but not to them. Theirs is both long, and freer from grief and cares.

"What then? tell me: hath he made the slaves better than the masters?" Do not, I beseech thee, do not reason thus, O man, nor be so poverty stricken in mind, nor be ignorant of the riches of God, having such a Master. For even from the beginning God desired to make thee immortal, but thou wert not willing. Since the things also of that time were dark hints of immortality: the converse with God; the absence of uneasiness from life; the freedom from grief, and cares, and toils, and other things which belong to a temporary existence. For Adam had no need either of a garment or a shelter, or any other provision of this sort; but rather was like to the Angels; and many of the things to come he foreknew, and was filled with great wisdom. Even what God did in secret, he knew, I mean with regard to the woman: wherefore also he said, *This is now bone of my bone, and flesh of my flesh*<sup>1</sup>. Labour came into being afterwards: so <sup>1</sup>Gen. 2. 23. did sweat, so did shame, and cowardice, and want of confidence. But on that day there was no grief, nor pain, nor lamentation. But he abode not in that dignity.

What then, saith one, am I to do? must I perish on his account? I reply, first, It is not on his account: for neither hast thou remained without sin: though it be not the same sin, at least there is some other which thou hast committed. And again, you have not been injured by his punishment, but rather have been a gainer. For if you had been to remain altogether mortal, perchance what is said would have had some reason in it. But now thou art immortal, and if thou wilt, thou mayest shine brighter than the sun itself. (4.)

[5.] "But," says one, "had I not received a mortal body, I had not sinned." Tell me then, had he a mortal body when he sinned? Surely not: for if it had been mortal before, it would not have undergone death as a punishment afterwards. And that a mortal body is no hindrance to virtue, but that it keeps men in order, and is of the greatest service, is plain from what follows. If the expectation of immortality alone so lifted up Adam; had he been even immortal in reality, to

**HOMIL.** what a pitch of arrogance would he not have proceeded?  
**XVII.** And as things are, after sinning you may do away with your sins, the body being abject, falling away, and subject to dissolution: for these thoughts are sufficient to sober a man. But if you had sinned in an immortal body, your sins were likely to have been more lasting.

Mortality then is not the cause of sin: accuse it not: but the wicked will is the root of all the mischief. For why was not Abel at all the worse for his body? Why are the devils not at all the better for being incorporeal? Wilt thou hear why the body's becoming mortal, so far from hurting, has been positively useful? Mark how much thou gainest thereby, if thou art sober. It drags thee back and pulls thee off from wickedness, by griefs and pains, and labours, and all other such things. "But it tempts men out to uncleanness," perhaps you will say. Not the body, but incontinence, doth this. For all these things, which I was mentioning, certainly do belong to the body: on which account it is impossible that a man who has entered into this life should escape disease and pain, and lowness of spirits: but that he commit no uncleanness is possible. Thus it appears that if the affections of vice were part of the nature of the body, they would be universal: since all things natural are so; but to commit fornication is not so. Pain indeed cometh of nature: but to commit fornication proceeds from deliberate purpose.

Blame not the body then: let not the Devil take away thine honour, which God hath given thee. For if we choose, the body is an excellent bridle to curb the wanton sallies of the soul, to pull down haughtiness, to repress arrogance, to minister to us in the greatest achievements of virtue. For tell me not of those who have lost their senses: since we often see horses, after they have thrown out their drivers, dashing with their reins over the precipices, and yet we do not blame the rein. For it is not the breaking of that which caused it all, but the driver not holding them in was the ruin of every thing. Just so do thou reason in this case. If thou seest a young person living in orphanhood and doing innumerable evil things, blame not the body, but the charioteer who is dragged on, I mean, the man's faculty of reasoning. For as the reins give no trouble to the charioteer,

but the charioteer is the cause of all the mischief through his <sup>1COR.6.</sup>  
not holding them properly: (and therefore do they often <sup>14.</sup>  
exact a penalty of him, entangling themselves about him,  
and dragging him on, and compelling him to partake in their  
own mishap:) so is it also in the case before us. "I," say  
the reins, "kept in the horse's mouth, as long as you held  
me: but since you threw me away, I require for satisfaction  
your contempt, and I entwine myself about you, and drag  
you along, so as not to incur the same usage again." Let no  
one then blame the reins, but himself and his own corrupt  
mind. For over us too is a charioteer, even reason: and the  
reins are the body, connecting the horses with the charioteer:  
if then these be in good condition, you will suffer no harm:  
but if you let them go, you have annihilated and ruined every  
thing. Let us be temperate then, and lay all blame not on  
the body, but on the evil mind. For this is the Devil's special  
work, to make foolish men accuse the body, and God, and  
their neighbour, rather than their own perverted minds; lest,  
having discovered the cause, they get free from the root of the  
evils.

But do ye, being aware of his design, direct your wrath  
against him: and having set the charioteer upon the car,  
bend the eye of your minds towards God. For in all other  
instances, he that appoints the games contributes nothing,  
but only awaits the end. But in this case, He is all in all,  
who appointed the contest, even God. Him therefore let us  
render propitious, and surely we shall obtain the blessings in  
store; through the grace and loving-kindness of our Lord  
Jesus Christ, to Whom, with the Father, and the Holy Spirit,  
be glory, power, honour, now, henceforth, and for evermore.  
Amen.

## HOMILY XVIII.

---

1 COR. vi. 15.

*Know ye not that your bodies are members of Christ? Shall I then take the members of Christ, and make them the members of an harlot? God forbid.*

HAVING passed on from the fornicator to the covetous person, he comes back to the former from the latter, no longer henceforth discoursing with him, but with the others who had not committed fornication. And in the act of securing them, lest they fall into the same sins, he assails him again. For he that has committed sin, though you direct your words to another, is stung even in that way; his conscience being thoroughly awakened and scourging him.

Now the fear of punishment indeed was enough to keep them in chastity. But seeing that he does not wish by fear alone to set these matters right, he also adds threatenings and reasons.

Now upon that other occasion, having stated the sin, and prescribed the punishment, and pointed out the harm which intercourse with the fornicator brought upon all, he left off, and passed to the subject of covetousness: and having threatened the covetous and all the rest whom he numbered with expulsion from the kingdom, he so concluded his discourse. But here he takes in hand the work of admonition in a yet more terrific manner. For as he that only punishes a sin, and does nothing to point out its most extreme lawlessness, produces no such great effect by his chastisement: so again, he who only abashes, and fails to terrify by his mode of punishing, does not very keenly hit men of hardened minds. Wherefore Paul does both: here he abashes, saying, *Know ye not that we shall judge angels?* there again he



terrifies, saying, *Know ye not that the covetous shall not inherit the kingdom of God?* <sup>1 Cor. 6. 13.</sup>

And in regard to the fornicator, he again uses this order of discourse. For having terrified him by what he had said before; first cutting him off and delivering him to Satan, and then reminding him of that day which is coming; he abashes him again by saying, *Know ye not that your bodies are members of Christ?* thenceforth speaking as to children of noble birth. For whereas he had said, *Now the body is for the Lord*, he indicates it more plainly now. And in another place as well he does this same thing, saying, *Now ye are the body of Christ, and members in particular.* <sup>1 c. 12. 27.</sup> And the same figure he often employs, not on the same subjects, but at one time to shew His love, and at another to increase their fear. But here he has employed it to startle and fill them with alarm. *Shall I then take the members of Christ, and make them the members of an harlot? God forbid.* Nothing can be apter to strike horror than this expression. He said not, "Shall I take the members of Christ, and join them on to a harlot?" but what? *make them the members of an harlot*; which surely would strike more keenly.

Then he makes out how the fornicator becomes this, saying thus, *Know ye not, that he that is joined unto an harlot is one body?* How is this evident? *For two, saith He, shall be one flesh.*

Ver. 17. *But he that is joined unto the Lord is one spirit.*

For the conjunction suffers the two no longer to be two, but makes them both one.

[2.] Now mark again, how he proceeds by means of the bare general terms, conducting his accusation in the names of the harlot and of Christ.

Ver. 18. *Flee fornication.*

He said not, "abstain from fornication," but *Flee*: that is, with all zeal make to yourselves deliverance from that evil. *Every sin which a man committeth is without the body; but he that committeth fornication sinneth against his own body.* This is less than what went before; but since he had to speak of fornicators, he amplifies that guilt by topics drawn from all quarters, from greater things and smaller alike, making the charge heinous. And in fact, that former topic was addressed

**Romil.** to the more religious, but this to the weaker sort. For this **XVIII.** also is characteristic of the wisdom of Paul, not only to allege the great things wherewith to abash men, but the lesser also, and the consideration of what is disgraceful and unseemly.

"What then," say you, "does not the murderer stain his hand? What, of the covetous person and the extortioner?" I suppose it is plain to every one. But since it was not possible to mention any thing worse than the fornicator, he amplifies the crime in another way, by saying that in the fornicator the entire body becomes defiled. For it is as polluted as if it had fallen into a vessel of filth, and been immersed in defilement. And this too is our way. For from covetousness and extortion no one would make haste to go into a bath, but as if nothing had happened, returns to his house. Whereas from intercourse with an harlot, as having become altogether unclean, he goes to a bath. To such a degree does the conscience retain from this sin a kind of sense of unusual shame. Both however are bad, both covetousness and fornication; and both cast into hell. But as Paul doeth every thing with good management, so by whatever topics he had he magnified the sin of fornication.

[3.] Ver. 19. *Know ye not that your body is the temple of the Holy Ghost which is within you?*

- (2.) He did not merely say, *of the Spirit*, but, *which is in you*; which was the part of one who also was soothing. And again, explaining himself still further, he added, *which ye have from God*. He hath mentioned Him that gave also, both exalting the hearer and putting him in fear, both by the magnitude of the deposit and by the loving desire of Him that has made it.

*And ye are not your own.* This is not only to abash, but even to force men towards virtue. "For what?" says he; "doest thou what thou wilt? thou art not thine own master." But these things he said, not to take away freewill. For so in saying, *All things are lawful for me, but all things are not expedient*, he does not take away our liberty. And here again, writing, *Ye are not your own*, he makes no infringement upon freedom of choice, but he leads away from vice, and indicates the guardian care of the Lord. And therefore he added, *For ye are bought with a price.*

"But if I am not my own, upon what ground do you demand of me duties to be done? And why do you go on to say again, *Glorify therefore God in your body and in your spirit, which are God's!*" What then is the meaning of *ye are not your own*? And what does he wish to prove thereby? To settle them in a state of security against sin, and against following the extravagant desires of the mind. For indeed we have many extravagant wishes: but we must repress them, for we can. And if we could not, exhortation would be in vain. Mark, accordingly, how he secures his ground. For having said, *Ye are not your own*, he adds not, "But are under compulsion;" but, *Ye are bought with a price*. Why sayest thou this? Surely on another ground, one might say perhaps, you should have persuaded men, pointing out that we have a Master. But this is common to the Greeks also together with us: whereas the expression, *Ye are bought with a price*, belongs to us peculiarly. For he reminds us of the greatness of the benefit, and of the mode of our salvation, signifying that when we were alienated, we were bought: and not simply bought, but, *with a price*.

*Glorify then, take up and bear<sup>1</sup>, God in your body, and in your spirit.* Now these things he says, that we may not only flee fornication in the body, but also in the spirit of our mind abstain from every wicked thought, and from driving away grace.

<sup>1</sup> *Agave*  
om. in  
rec. text.  
*portate*  
Vulg.  
so St.  
Ignatius  
was  
called  
Theo-  
phorus.

*Which are God's.* For as he had said *your*, he added therefore, *which are God's*: continually reminding us that all things belong to the Lord, both body and soul and spirit. For so some say, that the words *in the spirit* mean the gracious Gift; for if That be in us, God is glorified. And this will be, if we have a clean heart.

But He has spoken of these things as God's, not only because He brought them into being, but also because, when they were alienated, He won them again a second time, paying as the price, the blood of the Son. Mark how He has brought the whole to completion in Christ, how He hath raised us up into heaven. *Ye are members of Christ*, saith he, *ye are the temple of the Spirit*. Become not then *members of a harlot*: for it is not your body which is insulted; since it is not your body at all, but Christ's. And

**HOMIL.** these things he spake, both to make manifest His loving-kindness, in that our body is His, and to withdraw us from all evil licence. For if the body be another's, "you have no authority," says he, "to insult another's body; and especially when it is the Lord's; nor yet to pollute the temple of the Spirit." For if any one who invades a private house, and makes his way revelling into it, must answer for it most severely; think what dreadful things he shall endure who makes the temple of the King a robber's lurking place.

**XVIII.** Considering these things therefore, reverence thou Him that dwelleth within. For the Paraclete is He. Thrill before Him that is enfolded and cleaves unto thee; for Christ is He. Hast thou indeed made thyself members of Christ? Think thus, and continue chaste: whose members they were, and Whose they have become. Erewhile they were members of an harlot, and Christ hath made them members of His own Body. Thou hast therefore henceforth no authority over them. Serve Him that hath set thee free.

For supposing you had a daughter, and in extreme madness had let her out to a procurer for hire, and made her live a harlot's life, and then a king's son were to pass by, and free her from that slavery, and join her in marriage to himself; you could have no power thenceforth to bring her into the brothel. For you have given her up once for all, and sold her. Such as this is our case also. We let out our own flesh for hire unto the Devil, that grievous procurer: Christ saw and set it free, and withdrew it from that evil tyranny; it is not then ours any more, but His who delivered it. If you be willing to use it as a King's bride, there is none to hinder; but if you bring it where it was before, you will suffer just what they ought, who are guilty of such outrages. Wherefore you should rather adorn instead of disgracing it. For you have no authority over the flesh in the wicked lusts, but in those things alone which God may enjoin. Let the thought enter your mind at least from what great outrage God hath delivered it. For in truth never did any harlot expose herself so shamefully as our nature before this. For robberies, murders, and every wicked thought entered in and lay with the soul, and for a small and vulgar hire, the present pleasure. For the soul, being mixed up with



all wicked devices and deeds, reaped this reward and no other. 1 Cor. 6.  
19.

However, in the time before this, bad though it were to be (3.) such as these, it was not so bad: but after heaven, after the King's courts, after partaking of the tremendous Mysteries, again to be contaminated, what pardon shall this have? Or, dost thou not think that the covetous too, and all those whom he recounted before, have the Devil to lie with them? And dost thou not judge, that the women who beautify themselves for pollution have intercourse with him? Why, who shall gainsay this word? But if any be contentious, let him uncover the soul of the women who behave in this unseemly manner, and he will surely see that wicked demon closely entwined with them. For it is hard, brethren, it is hard, perchance even impossible, when the body is thus beautified, for the soul to be beautified at the same time: but it must needs be that the one must needs be neglected, while the other is cared for. For it is not natural that these should take place together.

[4.] Wherefore he saith, *He that is joined to an harlot is one body; but he that is joined to the Lord is one Spirit.* For such an one becomes thenceforth Spirit, although a body envelope him. For when nothing corporeal nor gross nor earthly is around him, the body doth but merely envelope him. When the whole government of him is in the soul and the Spirit, in this way God is glorified. Wherefore both in the Prayer we are commanded to say, *Hallowed be Thy Name:* and Christ saith also, *Let your light shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father which is in heaven.*

So do the heavens also glorify Him, uttering no voice, but by the view of them attracting wonder, and referring the glory unto the Great Artificer. So let us glorify Him also, or rather more than they. For we can if we will. For not so much do the heaven, nor the day, nor night, glorify God, as a holy soul. For as one that gazeth upon the beauty of the heaven, saith, "Glory be to Thee, O God! How fair a work hast Thou formed!" so too when beholding virtue in any man: nay, and much more so in the latter instance. For from those works of creation all do not glorify God; but many even assert that the things which exist are self-moving: and others impute to demons the workmanship of the world, and providence; and



**HOWIL.** these indeed greatly and unpardonably err: but in regard to the  
**XVIII.** virtue of man, no one shall have power to hold these shameless opinions, but shall assuredly glorify God, when he seeth him that serveth Him living in goodness. For who shall help being astonished, when one being a man, and partaking of our common nature, and who lives among other men, like adamant yields not at all to the swarm of passions? When being in the midst of fire and iron and wild beasts, he is even harder than adamant, and vanquishes all for the Word of godliness' sake? when he is injured, and blesses; when he is evil reported of, and praises; when he is despitefully used, and prays for those who injure him; when he is plotted against, and does good to those that fight with him, and lay snares for him? For these things, and such as these, will glorify God far more than the heaven. For the Greeks, when they behold the heavens, feel no awe; but when they see a holy man exhibiting a severe course of life with all strictness, they shrink away and condemn themselves. Since when he that partakes of the same nature as themselves is so much above them, a great deal more so than the heaven is above the earth, even against their inclination they think, that it is a Divine power which works these things. Wherefore He saith, *And may glorify your Father which is in the heavens.*

[5.] Wilt thou learn also from another place how by the life of His servants God is glorified, and how by miracles? Nebuchadnezzar, once on a time, threw the Three Children into the furnace. Then when he saw that the fire had not prevailed over them, he saith, *'Blessed be God, who hath sent His Angel, and delivered His servants out of the furnace, because they trusted in Him, and have changed the word of the king.* "How sayest thou? Hast thou been despised, and dost thou admire those who have spit upon you?" "Yes," saith he, "and for this very reason, that I was despised." And of the marvel he gives this reason. So that not because of the miracle alone was glory given to God, at that time, but also because of the purpose of those who had been thrown in. Now if any one would examine this point and the other, as they are in themselves, this will appear not less than that: for to persuade souls to brave a furnace is not less

<sup>1</sup> Dan.  
 3. 28.  
 LXX.  
 is eius  
 captivus  
 added.

in respect of the wonder than to deliver from a furnace. For <sup>1COR.6.12.</sup> how can it be otherwise than astonishing, for the Emperor of the world, with so many arms around him, and legions, and generals, and viceroys, and consuls, and land and sea subject to his sway, to be despised by captive children; for the bound to overcome the binder, and conquer all that army? Neither was there any power in the king and his company to do what they would, no, not even with the furnace for an ally. But the naked, and the slaves, and the strangers, and the few, (for what number could be more contemptible than three?) being in chains, vanquished an innumerable army. For already now was death despised, since Christ was henceforth about to sojourn in the world. And as when the sun is on the point of rising, and before his rays appear the light of the day groweth bright; so also when the Sun of Righteousness was about to come, death henceforth began to withdraw himself. What could be more splendid than that theatre? What more conspicuous than that victory? What more signal than those new trophies of theirs?

The same thing is done in our time also. Even now is there a king of the Babylonish furnace, even now he kindles a flame fiercer than that. There is even now such an image, and one who giveth command to admire it. At his side are satraps and soldiers, and bewitching music. And many gaze in admiration upon this image, so artful, so great. For somewhat of the same kind of thing as that image, is covetousness, which doth not despise even iron<sup>a</sup>, but unlike as the materials are, whereof it is composed, it giveth command to admire all, both brass and iron, and things much more ordinary than they.

But as these things are, so also even now are there some, who are emulous of these children: who say, "*thy gods we were not, and thine image we worship not*"; but both the furnace of poverty we endure, and all other distress, for the sake of God's laws." And the wealthy for their part, even as those at that time, worship this image too oftentimes, and are burnt. But those who possess nothing, despise even this, and although in poverty, are more in the dew<sup>b</sup>

<sup>a</sup> St. Chrysostom evidently considers the image which Nebuchadnezzar set up as intended to represent the image which he had seen in his dream.

<sup>b</sup> Μαλλον εις θεον. Alluding to the words in LXX. Ιωαννης το μίσην τῆς σαρκὸς ὡς πνῦμα θεοῦ ἐκ διαφόρων. v. 26.

**HOMIL.** than those who live in affluence. Even as at that time, they  
**XVIII.** who cast into the fire were burnt up: but those in the midst of it found themselves, as it were, in rain and dew. Then also that tyrant was more burnt up with the flame, his wrath kindling him violently, than those children. As to them, the fire had no power even to touch the ends of their hair: but more fiercely than that fire did wrath burn up his mind. For consider what a thing it was, that with so many to look on, he should be scorned by captive children. And it was a sign for the time to come, that his taking their city also had not been through his own might, but by reason of the sin of the multitude among them. Since, if he had not power to overcome these men in chains, and that, when they were cast into a furnace, how could he have overcome the Jews in regular warfare, had they been all such as these? From which it is plain, that the sins of the multitude betrayed the city.

[6]. But mark also the children's freedom from vain-glory. For they did not leap into the furnace, but they kept before-  
**S. Mat.** hand the commandment of Christ, where He says, *'Pray that*  
**26. 41.** *ye enter not into temptation.* Neither did they shrink when they were brought to it; but stood in the midst nobly, neither contending without a summons, nor yet when summoned, playing the coward: but ready for every thing, and noble, and full of all boldness of speech.

But let us hear also what they say, that from this also we may learn their <sup>2</sup>high self-commanding spirit. <sup>3</sup>*There is a*  
**MS.** *God in heaven able to deliver us:* they take no care for  
**Reg.** themselves, but even when about to be burned, the glory of  
**Philos.** God is all their thought. For what they say comes to this,  
**"de-** "Lest perchance, if we are burnt, thou shouldest charge God  
**vout."** with weakness, we now declare unto thee accurately our whole  
**Bened.** doctrine. *There is a God in heaven,* not such as this image here  
**Philos.** on earth, this lifeless and mute thing, but able to snatch even  
**from.** from the midst of the burning fiery furnace. Condemn Him  
**S. Dan.** not then of weakness for permitting us to fall into it. So  
**3. 17.** powerful is He, that after our fall, He is able to snatch us out again out of the flame. *But if not, be it known unto thee, O king, that we will not serve thy gods, nor worship the golden image which thou hast set up.* Observe that they, by a special dispensation, are ignorant of the future: for if they

had foreknown, there would have been nothing admirable in <sup>1</sup>Cor. 6. 12. their doing what they did. For what marvel is it, if when they had a guarantee for safety, they defied all terrors? Then God indeed would have been glorified, in that He was able to deliver from the furnace: but they would not have been wondered at, inasmuch as they would not have cast themselves into any dangers. For this cause He suffered them to be ignorant of the future, that He might glorify them the more. And as they cautioned<sup>1</sup> the king that he was not to condemn God of weakness, though they might be burnt, so God accomplished both purposes; the shewing forth His own power, and the causing the zeal of the children to appear more conspicuous.

From whence then arose their doubting, and their not feeling confident that they should at all events be preserved? Because they esteemed themselves assuredly too mean, and unworthy of such a benefit. And to prove that I say not this upon conjecture; when they fell into the furnace, they bewailed themselves after this sort, saying, <sup>2</sup>*We have sinned*, <sup>3</sup>v. 6, 10. *we have done iniquity, we cannot open our mouth.* And therefore they said, *But if not.* But if they did not plainly say this, namely, "God is able to deliver us; but if he deliver us not, for our sin's sake He will not deliver us;" wonder not at it. For they would have seemed to the barbarians to be sheltering the weakness of God under the pretext of their own sins. Wherefore His power only is what they speak of: the reason, they allege not. And besides, they were well disciplined not to be over-curious about the judgments of God.

With these words then, they entered into the fire; and they neither cast insult upon the king, nor overturned the statue<sup>4</sup>. For such should the courageous man be, temperate and mild; and that especially in dangers; that he may not seem to go forth to such contests in wrath and vain-glory, but with fortitude and self-possession. For whoso deals insolently, undergoes the suspicion of those faults: but he that endures, and is forced into the struggle, and goes through the trial with meekness, is not only admired as brave, but his self-possession

<sup>1</sup> This may be a covert allusion to the outrage on the statues of Theodorus, which had brought Antioch into  
<sup>2</sup> no great trouble in the second year of S. Chrysostom's ministry there.

**HOMIL.** also and consideration cause him to be no less extolled. And  
**XVIII.** this is what they did at that time; shewing forth all fortitude and gentleness, and doing nothing for reward, nor for recompense or return. “*Though He be not willing* (so it stands) *to deliver us, we will not serve thy gods*: for we have already our recompense, in that we are counted worthy to be kept from all impiety, and for that end to give our bodies to be burned.”

We then also having already our recompense, (for indeed we have it, in that we have been vouchsafed the full knowledge of Him, vouchsafed to be made members of Christ,) let us take care that we make them not members of an harlot. For with this most tremendous saying we must conclude our discourse, in order that having the fear of the threat in full efficacy, we may remain purer than gold, this fear helping to make us so. For so shall we be able, delivered from all fornication, to see Christ. Whom God grant us all to behold with boldness at that day, through the grace and loving-kindness of our Lord Jesus Christ; with Whom to the Father and the Holy Spirit be glory, power, honour, now, henceforth, and for evermore. Amen.



## HOMILY XIX.

---

1 COR. vii. 1, 2.

*Now concerning the things whereof ye wrote unto me : it is good for a man not to touch a woman. Nevertheless, because of fornications, let every man have his own wife ; and let every woman have her own husband.*

HAVING corrected the three heaviest things laid to their charge, one, the distraction of the Church, another, about the fornicator, a third, about the covetous person, he thenceforth uses a milder sort of speech. And he interposes some exhortation and advice about marriage and virginity, giving the hearer some respite from more unpleasant subjects. But in the second Epistle he does the contrary ; he begins from the milder topics, and ends with the more distressing. And here also, after he has finished his discourse about virginity, he again launches forth into matter more akin to reproof ; not setting all down in regular order, but varying his discourse in either kind, as the occasion required, and the exigency of the matters in hand.

Wherefore he says, *Now as concerning the things whereof ye wrote unto me.* For they had written to him, "Whether it was right to abstain from one's wife, or not:" and writing back in answer to this, and giving rules about marriage, he introduces also the discourse concerning virginity: *It is good for a man not to touch a woman.* "For if," says he, "thou enquire what is the excellent and greatly superior course, it is better not to have any connection whatever with a woman: but if, what is safe, and helpful to thine own infirmity, be connected by marriage."

HOMIL. But since it was likely, as also happens now, that the  
 XIX. husband might be willing but the wife not, or perhaps the reverse, mark how he discusses each case. Some indeed say that this discourse was addressed by him to priests. But I, judging from what follows, could not affirm that it was so: since he would not have given his advice in general terms. For if he were writing these things only for the priests, he would have said, "It is good for the teacher not to touch a woman." But now he has made it of universal application, saying, *It is good for man*; not for priest only. And again, *Art thou loosed from a wife? Seek not a wife*. He said not, "You who are a priest and teacher," but indefinitely. And the whole of his speech goes on entirely in the same tone. And after he had said, *Nevertheless because of fornications let every man have his own wife*, by the very cause alleged for the concession, he guides man to continence.

<sup>1</sup> *επισημ.* [2.] Ver. 3. *Let the husband pay the wife the honour<sup>1</sup> due*  
 rec. text,  
*servant.* *to her: in like manner the wife the husband.*

Now what is the meaning of *the due honour*? *The wife hath not power over her own body*; but is both the slave and the mistress of the husband. And if you decline the service which is due, you have offended God. But if thou wish to withdraw thyself, it must be with the husband's permission, though it be but for a short time. For this is why he calls the matter a debt, to shew that no one is master of himself, but that they are servants to each other.

When therefore thou seest an harlot tempting thee, say, "My body is not mine but my wife's." The same also let the woman say to those who would undermine her chastity, "My body is not mine but my husband's."

Now if neither husband nor wife hath power even over their own body, much less have they over their property. Hear ye, all that have husbands and all that have wives: that if you must not count your body your own, much less your money.

<sup>2</sup> & *ἀπο-*  
*εὐσεβή*  
*σεν.*  
 LXX. Elsewhere I grant He gives to the husband abundant pre-  
 cedence, both in the New and the Old Testament, saying,  
 Gen. 3. <sup>3</sup> *Thy turning shall be towards thy husband, and he shall rule*  
 over thee. Paul doth so too, by making a distinction thus, and  
 writing<sup>3</sup>, *Husbands, love your wives; and let the wife see that*

the reverence her husband. But in this place we hear no more of greater and less, but it is one and the same right. 1 Cor. 7.  
5.

Now why is this? Because his speech was about chastity.

"In all other things," says he, "let the husband have the prerogative; but not so where the question is about chastity."

*The husband hath not power over his own body, neither the wife.* There is great equality of honour, and no prerogative.

[3.] Ver. 5. *Defraud not one the other, except it be with consent for a time.*

What then can this mean? "Let not the wife," says he, "exercise continence, if the husband be unwilling; nor yet the husband without the wife's consent." Why so? Because great evils spring from this sort of continence. For adulteries, and fornications, and the ruin of families, have often arisen from hence. For if when men have their own wives they commit fornication, much more if you defraud them of this consolation. And well says he, *Defraud not; fraud* here, and *debt* above, that he might shew the strictness of the right of dominion in question. For that one should practise continence against the will of the other is *defrauding*; but not so, with the other's consent: any more than I count myself defrauded, if after persuading me you take away any thing of mine. Since he only defrauds, who takes against another's will, and by force. A thing which many women do, working sin rather than righteousness, and thereby becoming accountable for the husband's uncleanness, and rending all sunder. Whereas they should value concord above all things.

Now since this is more important than all beside, we will, if you please, consider it with a view to actual cases. Thus, suppose a wife and husband, and let the wife be continent, without consent of her husband; well then, if hereupon he commit fornication, or though abstaining from fornication, fret, and grow restless, and be heated, and quarrel, and give all kind of trouble to his wife; where is all the gain of the fasting and the continence, a breach being made in charity? There is none. For what strange reproaches, how much trouble, how great a war must of course arise! since, when in an house man and wife are at variance, the house will be no better off than a ship in a storm, when the master is upon ill terms with the man at the head. Wherefore he saith, *De-*

HOMIL.  
XIX. *fraud not one another, unless it be by consent for a time, that ye may have leisure for fasting and prayer.* It is prayer with unusual earnestness, which he here means. For if he is forbidding those who have intercourse with one another to pray, how could *Pray without ceasing* have any place? It is possible then to live with a wife, and yet give heed unto prayer. But by continence prayer is made more perfect. For he did not say merely, "That ye may pray;" but *That ye may have leisure for it*; as though what he speaks of might cause, not uncleanness, but much occupation.

*And come together again,\* that Satan tempt you not.* Thus, lest it should seem to be a matter of express enactment, he adds the reason. And what is it? *That Satan tempt you not.* And that you may understand that it is not the devil only who causeth this crime, I mean adultery, he adds, *because of your incontinence.*

*But this I say by permission, and not of commandment. For I would that all men were even as I myself;* in a state of continence. This he doth in many places, when he is advising about difficult matters; he brings forward himself, and says, *Be ye followers of me.*

*But every one hath his own gift of God, one after this manner and another after that.* Thus, since he had heavily charged them, saying, *for your incontinence*, he again comforteth them by the words, *every one hath his own gift of God*: not declaring this, that towards that virtue there is no need of zeal on our parts, but, as I was saying before, to comfort them. For if it be a *gift*, and man contributes nothing thereunto, how sayest thou, *But<sup>1</sup> I say to the unmarried and widows, it is good for them if they remain even as I:* <sup>2</sup> *But if they cannot contain themselves, let them marry?* Do you see the strong sense of Paul, how he both signifies that continence is better, and yet puts no force on the person who cannot attain to it; fearing lest some offence arise?

*For it is better to marry than to burn.* He indicates how great is the tyranny of concupiscence. What he means is something like this: "If you have to endure much violence and burning desire, withdraw yourself from your pains and toils, lest haply you be subverted."

[4.] Ver. 10. *But to the married I command, yet not I,* <sup>1 Cor. 7. 10--12.</sup>  
*but the Lord.*

Because it is a law expressly appointed by Christ, which he is about to read to them, about the *not putting away a wife without fornication*<sup>1</sup>; therefore he says, *Not I.* True it<sup>1</sup> S. Mat. 5. 32; is, that what was before spoken, though it be not expressly 19. 9; stated, yet it also is His decree. But this, you see, He S. Mark 10. 11; had delivered in express words. So that the words *I* and S. Luke 16. 18. *not I* have this difference of meaning. For that you might not imagine even his own words to be human, therefore he added, *For I think that I also have the Spirit of God.*

Now what is that which *to the married the Lord hath commanded?* That a wife should not be separated from her husband<sup>2</sup>: but if she be separated, let her remain unmarried,<sup>2</sup> v. 11. or be reconciled unto her husband. And that the husband should not put away his wife. Here, seeing that both on the score of continence, and other pretexts, and because of infirmities of temper<sup>3</sup>, it fell out that separations took place: it<sup>3</sup> were better, he says, that such things should not be at all; <sup>μυγε-  
ψοζις.</sup> but however if they take place, let the wife remain with her husband, if not to cohabit with him, yet so as not to introduce any other to be her husband.

Ver. 12. *But to the rest speak I, not the Lord. If any brother have a wife that believeth not, and she be well pleased to dwell with him, let him not put her away. And if any woman have an husband that believeth not, and he be well pleased to dwell with her, let her not leave him.*

For as when discoursing about separating from fornicators, he made the matter easy by the correction which he applied to his words, saying, *Howbeit, not altogether with the fornicators of this world*; so also in this case he provideth for the abundant easiness of the duty, saying, *If any wife have a husband, or husband a wife, that believeth not, let him not put her away.* What sayest thou? If he be an unbeliever, let him remain with the wife, but not if he be a fornicator? And yet fornication is a less sin than unbelief." I grant, fornication is a less sin: but God spares thine infirmities extremely. And this is what He doth about the sacrifice, saying<sup>4</sup>, *Leave the sacrifice, and be reconciled to thy brother.* <sup>4</sup> Matt. 5. 24. This also, in the case of the man who owed ten thousand



HOMIL. talents. For him too, He did not punish for owing him ten  
 XIX. thousand talents, but for demanding back a hundred pence  
 from his fellow-servant, He took vengeance on him.

Then lest the woman might fear, as though she became unclean because of intercourse with her husband, he says, *For the unbelieving husband is sanctified by the wife, and the unbelieving wife is sanctified by the husband.* And yet, *if he that is joined to an harlot is one body*, it is quite clear that the woman also who is joined to an idolater is one body. Well: it is one body; nevertheless she becomes not unclean, but the cleanness of the wife overcomes the uncleanness of the husband; and again, the cleanness of the believing husband overcomes the uncleanness of the unbelieving wife.

- (3.) How then in this case is the uncleanness overcome, and therefore the intercourse allowed; while in the woman with whom fornication was committed, the husband is not condemned in casting her out? Because here there is hope that the lost member may be saved through the marriage; but in the other case the marriage has already been dissolved; and there again both are corrupted; but here the fault is in one only of the two. I mean something like this: she that has been but once guilty of fornication is abominable: if then *he that is joined to an harlot is one body*, he also becomes abominable by having connection with an harlot; wherefore all the purity flits away. But in the case before us it is not so. But how? The idolater is unclean, but the woman is not unclean. For if indeed she were a partner with him in that wherein he is unclean, I mean his impiety, she herself would also become unclean. But now the idolater is unclean in one way, and the wife holds communion with him in another, wherein he is not unclean. For marriage and mixture of bodies is that wherein the communion consists.

Again, there is a hope that this man may be reclaimed by his wife, for she is made completely his own: but for the other it is not very easy. For how will she who dishonoured him in former times, and became another's, and destroyed the rights of marriage, have power to reclaim him whom she had wronged; him, moreover, who still remains to her as an alien?

Again in that case, after the fornication the husband is not a

husband: but here, although the wife be an idolatress, the husband's rights are not destroyed. 1 Cor. 7.  
15.

However, he doth not simply recommend cohabitation with the unbeliever, but with this qualification, that he wills it. Wherefore he said, *And he himself be well-pleased to dwell with her.* For, tell me, what harm is there, when the duties of piety remain unimpaired, and there are good hopes about the unbeliever, that those already joined should so abide, and not bring in occasions of all sorts of unnecessary warfare? For the question now is not about those who have never yet come together, but about those who are already joined. He did not say, If any one wish to take an unbelieving wife, but, *If any one hath an unbelieving wife.* Which means, If any after marrying or being married have received the word of godliness, and then the other party which had continued in unbelief, still yearn for them to dwell together, let not the marriage be broken off. For, saith he, *the unbelieving husband is sanctified by his wife.* So great is the superabundance of thy purity.

What then, is the Greek holy? Certainly not: for he said not, *He is holy*; but, *He is sanctified by his wife.* And this he said, not to signify that he is holy, but to deliver the woman as completely as possible from her fear, and lead the man to desire the truth. For the uncleanness is not in the bodies wherein there is communion, but in the mind and the thoughts. And here follows the proof: namely, that if thou, continuing unclean, have offspring, the child, not being of thee alone, is of course unclean, or half clean. But now it is not unclean. To which effect he adds, *else were your children unclean; but now are they holy*; that is, not unclean. But the Apostle calls them, *holy*, by the intensity of the expression again casting out the dread arising from that sort of suspicion.

Ver. 15. *But if the unbelieving depart, let him depart,* for in this case the matter is no longer fornication. But what is the meaning of, *if the unbelieving depart*? For instance, if he bid thee sacrifice and take part in his ungodliness on account of thy marriage, or part company; it were better the marriage were annulled, and no breach made in godliness. Wherefore he adds, *A brother is not bound, nor*

HOMIL. *yet a sister, in such cases.* If day by day he buffet thee, and  
 XIX. keep up combats on this account, it is better to separate.  
 For this is what he glances at, saying, *But God hath called us  
 unto peace.* And when it comes to that, it is the other party  
 who hath furnished the ground of separation, even as he did  
 who committed uncleanness.

Ver. 16. *For what knowest thou, O wife, whether thou shalt  
 not save thine husband?* This again refers to that expression,  
*let her not leave him.* That is, "if he make no disturbance,  
 remain," saith he, "for there is even profit in this;  
 remain, and advise, and give counsel, and persuade." For  
 no teacher will have such power to convince<sup>1</sup>, as a wife.  
 And neither, on the one hand, doth he lay any necessity upon  
 her, and absolutely demand the point of her, that he may not  
 again do what would be too painful; nor, on the other hand,  
 doth he tell her to despair: but he leaves the matter in  
 suspense through the uncertainty of the future, saying, *For  
 what knowest thou, O wife, whether thou shalt save thy  
 husband? or how knowest thou, O man, whether thou shalt  
 save thy wife?*

<sup>1</sup> Reg.  
 orien.  
 Bened.  
 lex. deu.

[5.] And again, ver. 17. *But as God hath distributed to  
 every man as the Lord hath called everyone, so let him walk.  
 Is any one called being circumcised? let him not be uncir-  
 cumcised. Is any called in uncircumcision? let him not be  
 circumcised. Circumcision is nothing, and uncircumcision  
 is nothing; but the keeping of the commandments of God.  
 Let every man abide in the same calling wherein he was  
 called. Art thou called, being a slave? Care not for it.  
 These things contribute nothing unto faith, saith he. Be not  
 then contentious, neither be troubled; for the faith hath cast  
 out all these things.*

*Let every one abide in the same calling wherein he was  
 called.* Hast thou been called, having an unbelieving wife?  
 Continue to have her. Cast not out thy wife for the faith's  
 sake. Hast thou been called, being a slave? Care not for it.  
 Continue to be a slave. Hast thou been called, being in  
 uncircumcision? Remain uncircumcised. Being circum-  
 cised, didst thou become a believer? Continue circumcised.  
 For this is the meaning of, *As God hath distributed unto  
 every man.* For these are no hindrances to piety. Thou

art called, being a slave; another, with an unbelieving wife; <sup>1 Cor. 7.</sup> another, being circumcised. <sub>23.</sub>

Astonishing! where has he put slavery? As circumcision profits not; and uncircumcision does no harm; so neither doth slavery, nor yet liberty. And that he might point out this with surpassing clearness, he says, *But even<sup>1</sup> if thou<sup>1</sup> canst become free, use it rather*: that is, rather continue a slave. Now upon what possible ground does he tell the person who might be set free to remain a slave? He means to point out that slavery is no harm, but rather an advantage.

Now we are not ignorant that some say, the words, *use it rather*, are spoken with regard to liberty: interpreting it, *if thou canst become free, become free*. But the expression would be very contrary to Paul's manner if he intended this. For he would not, when consoling the slave, and signifying that he was in no respect injured, have told him to get free. Since perhaps some one might say, "What then, if I am not able? I am an injured and degraded person." This then is not what he says: but as I was explaining, meaning to point out that a man gets nothing by being made free, he says, *Though thou hast it in thy power to be made free, remain rather in slavery*.

Next he adds also the cause; *For he that is called in the Lord being a slave, is the Lord's free man: likewise also he that is called being free, is Christ's servant*. "For," saith he, "in the things that relate to Christ, both are equal: and like as thou art the slave of Christ, so also is thy master. How then is the slave a free man? Because He has freed thee not only from sin, but also from outward slavery, continuing a slave. For he suffers not even the slave to be a slave, not though he be a man abiding in slavery: and this is the great wonder.

But how is the slave a free man, while continuing a slave? When he is freed from passions and the diseases of the mind: when he looks down upon riches, and wrath, and all other the like passions.

Ver. 23. *Ye are bought with a price: be not ye the servants of men*. This saying is addressed not to slaves only, but also to free men. For it is possible for one who is a slave not to

HOMER. be a slave; and for one who is a free man to be a slave.

XIX. "And how can one be a slave and not a slave?" When he doeth all for God: when he feigns nothing, and doeth nothing out of eye-service towards men: that is how one that is a slave to men can be free. Or again, how doth one that is free become a slave? When he serves men in any evil service, either for gluttony, or desire of wealth, or for office's sake. For such an one, though he be free, is of a more slavish sort than all men.

And consider both these points. Joseph was a slave, but not a slave to men: wherefore even in slavery he was freer than all that are free. For instance, he yielded not to his mistress; yielded not to the purposes which she who possessed him desired. Again, she was free; yet none ever so like a slave, courting and beseeching her own servant. But she prevailed not on him, who was free, to do what he would not. This then was not slavery; but it was liberty of the most exalted kind. For what impediment to virtue had he from his slavery? Let men hear, both slaves and free. Which was the slave? He that was entreated, or she that did entreat? She that besought, or he that despised her supplication?

In fact, there are limits set to slaves by God Himself; and up to what point one ought to keep them, this is also exacted, and to transgress them is wrong. Namely, when your master commands nothing which is displeasing to God, it is right to follow and to obey; but no farther. For thus the slave becomes free. But if you go further, even though you are free, you are become a slave. At least he intimates this, saying, *Be not ye the servants of men.*

But if this be not the meaning, if he bade them forsake their masters, and strive contentiously to become free, in what sense did he exhort them, saying, <sup>1</sup> *Let every one remain in the calling in which he is called?* And in another place, *As many servants as are under the yoke, let them count their own masters worthy of all honour; and those that have believing masters, let them not despise them, because they are brethren who partake of the benefit.* And writing to the Ephesians also, and Colossians, he ordains and exacts the same rules. Whence it is plain, that it is not this slavery

<sup>1</sup> 1 Tim. 6. 1, 2.



which he annuls, but that which, caused as it is by vice, <sup>1Cor.7.</sup> befalls free men also: and this is the worst kind of slavery, <sup>23.</sup> though he be a free man who is in bondage to it. For what profit had Joseph's brethren of their freedom? Were they not more servile than all slaves; both speaking lies to their father, and to the merchants using false pretences, as well as to their brother? But not such was the free man: rather every where and in all things he was true. And nothing had power to enslave him, neither chain, nor bondage, nor the love of his mistress, nor his being in a strange land. But he abode free every where. For this is liberty in the truest sense, when even in bondage it shines through.

[6.] Such a thing is Christianity; in slavery to bestow freedom. And as that which is by nature an easily vulnerable body then shews itself to be invulnerable, when having received a dart it suffers no harm; so also he that is strictly free then shews himself, when even under masters he is not enslaved. For this cause his bidding is, "remain a slave." But if it is impossible for one who is a slave to be a Christian such as he ought to be, the Greeks will condemn true religion of great weakness: whereas, if they can be taught that slavery in no way impairs godliness, they will admire our doctrine. For if death hurt us not, nor scourges, nor chains, much less slavery. Fire, and iron, and tyrannies innumerable, and diseases, and poverty, and wild beasts, and countless things more dreadful than these, have not been able to injure the faithful men; nay, they have made them even mightier. And how shall slavery be able to hurt? It is not slavery itself, beloved, that hurts; but the real slavery is that of sin. And if thou be not a slave in this sense, be bold and rejoice. No one shall have power to do thee any wrong, having the temper which cannot be enslaved. But if thou be a slave to sin, even though thou be ten thousand times free, thou hast no good of thy liberty.

For, tell me, what profit is it, when, though not in bondage to a man, thou liest down in subjection to thy passions? Since men indeed often know how to spare; but those masters are never satiated with thy destruction. Art thou in bondage to a man? Why, thy master also is slave to thee,

HOMIL. in arranging about thy food, in taking care of thy health, and  
 XIX. clothes, and in looking after thy shoes, and all the other things. And thou dost not fear so much lest thou shouldest offend thy master, as he fears lest any of those necessities should fail thee. "But he sits down, while thou standest." And what of that? Since this may be said of thee as well as of him. Often, at least, when thou art lying down and sleeping sweetly, he is not only standing, but undergoing endless discomforts, in the market-place; and he lies awake more painfully than thou.

For instance; what did Joseph suffer from his mistress to be compared with what she suffered from her evil desire? For he indeed did not the things which she wished to put upon him; but she performed every thing which her mistress ordered her, I mean her spirit of unchastity: which left not off until it had put her to open shame. What master commands such things? what savage tyrant? "Intreat thy slave," that is the word: "flatter the person bought with thy money, supplicate the captive; even if he reject thee with disgust, again besiege him: even if thou speakest to him oftentimes, and he consent not, watch for his being alone, and force him, and become an object of derision." What can be more dishonourable, what more shameful, than these words? "And if even by these means you make no progress, why, accuse him falsely, and deceive your husband." Mark how mean, how shameful are the commands, how unmerciful, and savage, and frantic. What command does the master ever lay on his slave, such as those which her wantonness then laid upon that royal woman? And yet she dared not disobey. But Joseph underwent nothing of this sort, but every thing on the contrary which brought glory and honour.

Would you like to see yet another man under severe orders from a hard mistress, and without spirit to disobey any of them? Consider Cain, what commands were laid on him by his envy. She ordered him to slay his brother, to lie unto God, to grieve his father, to cast off shame; and he did it all, and in nothing refused to obey. And why marvel, that over a single person so great should be the power of this mistress? She hath often destroyed entire nations. For

instance, the Midianitish women took the Jews and all but <sup>1COR.7.</sup> bound them in captivity; their own beauty kindling desire, <sup>25—28.</sup> was the means of their vanquishing that whole nation. Paul then, to cast out this sort of slavery, said, *Become not servants of men*; that is, "Obey not men commanding unreasonable things: nay, obey not yourselves." Then having raised up their mind, and made it mount on high, he says,

[7.] Ver. 25. *Now concerning virgins, I have no commandment of the Lord; but I give my judgment, as one that hath obtained mercy of the Lord to be faithful.*

Advancing on his way in regular order, he proceeds next to speak concerning virginity. For after that he had exercised them, and prescribed measures to them, in his words concerning continence, he goes forth towards what is greater, saying, *I have not any commandment, but I esteem it to be good.* For what reason? For the self-same reason as he had mentioned respecting continence.

Ver. 27. *Art thou bound unto a wife? Seek not to be loosed. Art thou loosed from a wife? Seek not a wife.*

These words carry no contradiction to what had been said before, but rather the most entire agreement with them. For he says in that place also, *Except it be by consent*: as here he says, *Art thou bound unto a wife? Seek not separation.* This is no contradiction. For its being against consent makes a dissolution: but if with consent both live continently, it is no dissolution.

Then, lest this should seem to be laying down a law, he subjoins<sup>1</sup>, *but if thou marry, thou hast not sinned.* He next<sup>1</sup> v. 28. alleges the existing state of things, *the present distress, the shortness of the time, and the affliction.* For marriage draws along with it many things, which indeed he hath glanced at, as well here, as also in the discourse about continence: there, by saying, *the wife hath not power over herself*; and here, by the expression, *Thou art bound.*

*But if thou marry, thou hast not sinned.* He is not speaking about her who hath made choice of virginity, for if it comes to that, she hath sinned. Since, if the widows<sup>a</sup> are condemned for having to do with second marriages, after they have once chosen widowhood, much more the virgins.

<sup>a</sup> i. e. the widows whom St. Paul mentions, 1 Tim. 5. 11, 12.

HOMIL. *But such shall have trouble in the flesh.* "And pleasure  
XX. too," you will say: but observe how he curtails this by the

- 1 v. 28. shortness of the time, saying<sup>1</sup>, *the time is short*; that is, "we are exhorted to depart now and go forth, but thou art running further in." And yet even although marriage had no troubles, even so we ought to press on towards things to come. But when it hath affliction too, what need to draw on one's self an additional burden. What occasion to take up such a load, when even after taking it, you must use it as having it not? For those even that have wives must be, he saith, *as though they had none.*

Then, having interposed something about the future, he brings back his speech to the present. For some of his topics are spiritual; as that, *the one careth about the things which be her husband's, the other about those which be God's.* Others relate to this present life; as, *I would have you without carefulness.* But still, with all this he leaves it to their own choice: inasmuch as he, who after proving what is best, goes back to compulsion, seems as if he did not trust his own statements. Wherefore he rather attracts them by concession, and checks them as follows:

Ver. 35. *But this I speak for your own profit, not that I may cast a snare upon you, but for that which is comely, and that ye may persevere in attendance.*

Let the virgins hear, that not by that one point is virginity defined; for she that is careful about the things of the world, cannot be a virgin, nor comely. Thus, when he said, *There is difference between a wife and a virgin*, he added this as the difference, and that wherein they are distinguished from each other. And laying down the definition of a virgin and her that is not a virgin, he names, not marriage nor continence, but leisure and multiplicity of engagement. For the evil is not in the cohabitation, but in the impediment to the strictness of life.

Ver. 36. *But if any man think that he behaveth himself uncomely toward his virgin.*

Here he seems to be talking about marriage; but all that he says relates to virginity; for he allows even a second marriage, saying, *only in the Lord.* Now what means, *in the Lord*? With chastity, with honour: for this is needed

**every where, and must be pursued ; for else we cannot see** 1Cor.7.  
36.  
**God.**

Now if we have passed lightly by what he says of virginity, let no one accuse us of negligence; for indeed an entire book hath been composed by us upon this topic; and as we have there with all the accuracy which we could gone through every branch of the subject, we considered it a waste of words to introduce it all again here. Wherefore, referring the hearer to that work, as concerns these things, we will say this one thing here: We must follow after continence. For, saith he, *follow after peace, and holiness, without which no one shall see the Lord.* Therefore that we may be accounted worthy to see Him, whether we be in virginity, or in the first marriage or the second, let us follow after this, that we may obtain the kingdom of heaven, through the grace and loving-kindness of our Lord Jesus Christ; to Whom, with the Father and the Holy Spirit, be glory, power, honour, now, henceforth, and for everlasting ages. Amen.



## HOMILY XX.

---

1 COR. viii. 1.

*Now concerning things offered to idols: we know that we all have knowledge. Knowledge puffeth up, but charity edifieth.*

It is necessary first to say, what the meaning of this passage is: for so shall we readily comprehend the Apostle's discourse. For he that sees a charge brought against any one, except he first perceive the nature of the offence, will not understand what is said. What then is it, of which he was then accusing the Corinthians? A heavy charge, and the cause of many evils.

<sup>1 S. Mat.</sup> Well, what is it? Many among them, having learnt that <sup>16. 11.</sup> *'not the things which enter in defile the man, but the things which proceed out,* and that idols of all kinds, wood and stone, and demons, have no power to hurt or help, had made an immoderate use of their perfect knowledge of this, to the harm both of others and of themselves. They had both gone in where idols were, and had partaken of the tables there, and were producing thereby great and ruinous evil. For on the one hand, those who still retained the fear of idols, and who knew not how to condemn them, took part in those meals, because they saw the more perfect sort doing this; and hence they got the greatest injury: since they did not touch what was set before them with the same mind as the others, but as things offered in sacrifice to idols; and the thing was becoming a way to idolatry. On the other hand, these very persons who pretended to be more perfect were injured in no common way, partaking in the tables of devils.

This then was the subject of complaint. Now this blessed <sup>1Cor.8.</sup>  
man, being about to correct it, did not immediately begin to <sup>1.</sup>  
speak vehemently; for that which was done came more  
of folly than of wickedness: wherefore in the first instance  
there was need rather of exhortation than of severe rebuke  
and wrath. Now herein observe his good sense, how he  
immediately begins to admonish.

*Now as touching things offered to idols, we know that we  
all have knowledge.* Leaving alone the weak, which he  
always doth, he discourses with the strong first. And this is  
what he did also in the Epistle to the Romans, saying, <sup>1</sup> *But* <sup>Rom.</sup>  
*thou, why dost thou judge thy brother?* for this is the sort <sup>14. 10.</sup>  
of person that is able to receive rebuke also with readiness.  
Exactly the same then he doth here also.

And first he makes void their haughtiness, by declaring that  
this very thing which they considered as peculiar to themselves,  
the having perfect knowledge, was common to all. Thus, *we  
know*, saith he, *that we all have knowledge.* For if, allowing  
them to have high thoughts, he had first pointed out how  
hurtful the thing was to others, he would not have done them  
so much good as harm. For the ambitious soul, when it plumes  
itself upon any thing, even though the same do harm to others,  
yet strongly adheres to it, because of the tyranny of vain-glory.  
Wherefore Paul first examines the matter itself by itself:  
just as he had done before in the case of the wisdom from  
without, demolishing it with a high hand. But in that case  
he did it as we might have expected: for the whole thing  
was altogether blameworthy, and his task was very easy.  
Wherefore he signifies it to be not only useless, but even  
contrary to the Gospel. But in the present case it was not  
possible to do this. For what was being done was of know-  
ledge, and perfect knowledge. It was not then either safe to  
overthrow it, and yet in no other way was it possible to cast  
out the vain-glory which had resulted from it. What then  
doeth he? First, by signifying that it was common, he curbs  
that swelling pride of theirs. For they who possess some-  
thing great and excellent are more elated, when they are the  
only ones who have it; but if it be made out that they possess  
it in common with others, they no longer have so much of  
this feeling. First then he makes it common property, because  
they considered it to belong to themselves alone.

HOMIL. Next, having made it common, he does not make him-  
 XX. self singly a sharer in it with them; for in this way too he would have rather set them up; for as to be the only possessor elates, so to have one partner or two perhaps among leading persons has this effect just as much. For this reason he does not mention himself, but all: he said not, "I too have knowledge," but *we know that we all have knowledge*.

[2.] This then is one way, and the first, by which he cast down their swelling pride; the next hath greater force. What then is this? In that he shews, that not even this thing itself was in all points complete, but imperfect, and extremely so. And not only imperfect, but also injurious, unless there were another thing joined together with it. For having said that *we have knowledge*, he added, *Knowledge puffeth up, but charity edifieth*: so that when it is without charity, it lifts men up to absolute arrogance.

"And yet not even charity," you will say, "without knowledge hath any advantage." Well: this he did not say; but omitting it as a thing allowed by all, he signifies that knowledge stands in extreme need of charity. For he who loves, inasmuch as he fulfils the commandment which is most absolute of all, even though he have some defects, will quickly be blessed with knowledge because of his love; as Cornelius and many others. But he that hath knowledge, but hath not charity, not only shall gain nothing more, but shall also be cast out of that which he hath, in many cases falling into arrogance. It seems then that knowledge is not productive of charity, but on the contrary debars from it him that is not on his guard, puffing him up and elating him. For arrogance is wont to cause divisions: but charity both draws together, and leads to knowledge. And to make this plain he saith, *But if any man love God, the same is known of Him*. So that "I forbid not this," saith he, "namely, your having perfect knowledge; but your having it with charity, that I enjoin; else is it no gain, but rather loss."

- (2.) Do you see how he already sounds the first note of his discourse concerning charity? For since all these evils were springing from the following root, i. e. not from perfect knowledge, but from their not greatly loving nor sparing their neighbours; whence ensued both their variance, and

their self-satisfaction, and all the rest which he had charged them with; both before this and after he is continually providing for charity; so correcting the fountain of all good things. "Now why," saith he, "are ye puffed up about knowledge? For if ye have not charity, ye shall even be injured thereby. For what is worse than boasting? But if the other be added, the first also will be in safety. For although you may know something more than your neighbour, if you love him you will not set yourself up, but lead him also to the same." Wherefore also having said, *Knowledge puffeth up*, he added, *but charity edifieth*. He did not say, "Behaveth itself modestly," but what is much more, and more gainful. For their knowledge was not only puffing them up, but also distracting them. On this account he opposes the one to the other.

[3.] And then he adds a third consideration, which was of force to set them down. What then is this? that although charity be joined with it, yet not even in that case is this our knowledge perfect. And therefore he adds,

Ver. 2. *But if any man think that he knoweth any thing, he knoweth nothing yet as he ought to know.* This is a mortal blow. "I dwell not," saith he, "on the knowledge being common to all. I say not that by hating your neighbour and by arrogance, you injure yourself most. But even though you have it by yourself alone, though you be modest, though you love your brother, even in this case you are imperfect in regard of knowledge. *For as yet thou knowest nothing as thou oughtest to know.*" Now if we possess, as yet, exact knowledge of nothing, how is it that some have rushed on to such a pitch of frenzy, as to say that they know God with all exactness? Whereas, though we had an exact knowledge of all other things, not even in this case were it possible to possess this knowledge to such an extent. For how wide He is apart from all things, it is impossible even to say.

And mark how he pulls down their swelling pride: for he said not, "of the matters before us ye have not the proper knowledge," but, "about every thing." And he did not say, "ye," but, "no one whatever," be it Peter, be it Paul, be it any one else. For by this he both soothed them, and carefully kept them under.

1 COR. 8.  
1, 2.



HOMIL. Ver. 3. *But if any man love God, the same*, he doth not say,  
 XX. *knoweth Him*, but, *is known of Him*. For we have not known  
 Him, but He hath known us. And therefore did Christ say,

<sup>1</sup> S. John 15. 16. *Ye have not chosen me, but I have chosen you.* And Paul else-  
<sup>2</sup> c. 13. where, *Then shall I know perfectly<sup>2</sup>, even as also I am known.*

<sup>12. 1st. 12. 1st. 12. 1st.</sup> Observe now, I pray, by what strong considerations he  
 brings down their high-mindedness. First he points out,  
 that not they alone knew the things which they knew; for  
*we all*, he saith, *have knowledge*. Next, that the thing itself  
 was hurtful so long as it was without charity; for *knowledge*,  
 saith he, *puffeth up*. Thirdly, that even joined with charity  
 it is not complete nor perfect. *For if any man thinketh*  
*that he knoweth any thing, he knoweth nothing as yet as*  
*he ought to know*, so he speaks. In addition to this, that  
 they have not even this from themselves, but by gift from  
 God. For he said not, "hath known God," but, *is known*  
*of Him*. Again, that this very thing comes of charity, which  
 they have not as they ought. For, *if any man*, saith he, *love*  
*God, the same is known of Him*. Having then so much at  
 large allayed their irritation, he begins to speak doctrinally,  
 saying thus.

[4.] Ver. 4. *With regard then to the eating of things offered*  
*to idols, we know that an idol is nothing in the world, and that*  
*there is none other God save one.* Look what a strait he hath  
 fallen into! For indeed his mind is to prove both; that one  
 ought to abstain from this kind of banquet, and that it hath no  
 power to hurt those who partake of it: things which were not  
 greatly in agreement with each other. For when they were  
 told that they had no harm in them, they would naturally run  
 to them, as indifferent things. But when forbidden to touch  
 them, they would suspect, on the contrary, that their having  
 power to do hurt occasioned the prohibition. Wherefore, you  
 see, he puts down their opinion about idols, and then states as  
 a first reason for their abstaining, the scandals which they  
 place in the way of their brethren; in these words: *Now*  
*concerning the eating things offered to idols, we know that*  
*an idol is nothing in the world.* Again he makes it common  
 property, and doth not allow this to be theirs alone, but  
 extends the knowledge all over the world. For "not among  
 you alone," says he, "but every where on earth this doctrine



prevails." What then is it? *That an idol is nothing in the world; that there is none other God but one.* What then? <sup>1COR.8.4,5.</sup> are there no idols? no statues? Indeed there are; but they have no power: neither are they gods, but stones and demons. For he is now setting himself against both parties; both the grosser sort among them, and those who were accounted lovers of wisdom. Thus, seeing that the former know of no more than the mere stones, the others assert that certain powers reside in them\*, which they also call gods; to the former accordingly he says, that *an idol is nothing in the world;* to the other, that *there is none other God save one.*

Do you mark how he writes these things, not simply (3.) as laying down doctrine, but in contradistinction to those without? A thing indeed which we must at all times narrowly observe, whether he says any thing abstractedly, or whether he is opposing any persons. For this contributes in no ordinary way to the accuracy of our doctrinal views, and to the exact understanding of his expressions.

[5.] Ver. 5. *For though there be that be called gods, whether in heaven or upon earth, as there be gods many and lords many; but to us there is one God, the Father, of Whom are all things, and we in Him; and one Lord Jesus Christ, by Whom are all things, and we by Him.* Since he had said, that *an idol is nothing*, and that *there is no other God*; and yet there were idols, and there were those that were called gods; that he might not seem to be contradicting plain facts, he goes on to say, *For though there are that be called gods, as indeed there are; not absolutely, there are; but, called, not in reality having this but in name: be it in heaven or be it in earth:—in heaven*, meaning the sun, and the moon, and the remainder of the choir of stars; for these too the Greeks worshipped: but upon the earth demons, and all those who had been made gods of men:—*but to us there is but One God, the Father.* In the first instance having expressed it without the word *Father*, and said, *there is none other God but one*, he now adds this also, when he had utterly cast out the others.

\* Olympius the Sophist, of Alexandria, A. D. 389, thus comforted the people when their idols were destroyed: *These are and counterfeits they were, fashioned of matter subject unto cor-*

*ruption, therefore to grind them to dust was easy; but those celestial powers which dwelt and resided in them are ascended into Heaven."* Sozom. vii. 15. quoted by Hooker, E. P. v. 65. 15.

HOMIL. Next, he adduces, what indeed is the greatest token of  
XX. divinity; *of Whom are all things.* For this implies also

<sup>1</sup> Jer. 10. that those others are not gods. For it is said<sup>1</sup>, *Let the gods*  
 11. *who made not the heaven and the earth perish.* Then he

subjoins what is not less than this, *and we in Him.* For  
 when he saith, *of Whom are all things*, he means the creation,  
 and the bringing of things out of nothing into existence.

But when he saith, *and we in Him*, he speaks of the word of  
 faith and mutual appropriation<sup>2</sup>, as also he said before, <sup>3</sup> *but*

<sup>2</sup> *of Him are ye also in Christ Jesus.* In two ways we are of  
<sup>3</sup> 1 Cor.

1. 30. Him, by being made when we were not, and by being made  
 believers. For this also is a creation: a thing which he also

<sup>4</sup> Eph. 3. declares elsewhere; <sup>4</sup> *that He might create in Himself of*  
 15. *twain one new man.*

*And there is one Lord Jesus Christ, by Whom are all things, and we by Him.* And in regard to Christ again, we must conceive of this in like manner. For by Him both the race of men was produced out of nothing into existence, and returned from error to truth. So that as to the phrase *of Whom*, it is not to be understood apart from Christ. For of Him, through Christ, were we created.

[6.] Nor yet, if you observe, hath he distributed the names, as if by allotment, assigning to the Son, the name Lord, and to the Father, God. For the Scripture useth also often to inter-

change them, as when it saith, <sup>5</sup> *The Lord saith unto My Lord;*  
<sup>5</sup> Psalm 110. 1.

and again, <sup>6</sup> *Wherefore God Thy God hath anointed Thee;*  
<sup>6</sup> Psalm 45. 8.

and, <sup>7</sup> *Of Whom is Christ according to the flesh, Who is God*  
<sup>7</sup> Rom. 9. 5.

*over all.* And in many instances you may see these names

changing their places. Besides, if they were allotted to each nature severally, and if the Son were not God, and God as the Father, yet continuing a Son; after saying, *but to us there is but One God*, it would have been superfluous, his adding the word *Father*, with a view to declare the Unbegotten. For the word God was sufficient to explain this, if it were such as to denote Him only.

And this is not all, but there is another remark which may be made: that if you say, "Because it is said *One God*, therefore the word God doth not apply to the Son;" observe that the same topic holds of the Son also. For the Son also is called *One Lord*, yet we do not maintain that therefore the

term Lord applies to Him alone. So then, the same force as <sup>1</sup>Cor. 8. the expression *One* has, applied to the Son, it has also, ap-<sup>5.</sup>plied to the Father. And as the Father is not thrust out from being the Lord, in the same sense as the Son is the Lord, because He, the Son, is spoken of as One Lord; so neither does it cast out the Son from being God, in the same sense as the Father is God, because the Father is styled One God.

[7.] Now if any were to say, "Why hath he made no mention of the Spirit?" our answer might be this: His argument was with idolaters, and the contention was about *gods many and lords many*. And this is why, having called the Father, God, he called the Son, Lord. If now he ventured not to call the Father Lord together with the Son, lest they might suspect him to be speaking of two Lords; nor yet the Son, God, with the Father, lest he might be supposed to speak of two Gods: why marvel at his not having mentioned the Spirit? His contest was, so far, with the Gentiles: his point, to signify that with us there is no plurality of Gods. Wherefore he keeps hold continually of this word, *One*; saying, *There is none other God but One*; and to us *there is One God, and One Lord*. From which it is plain, that to spare the weakness of the hearers he used this mode of explanation, and for this reason made no mention at all of the Spirit. For if it be not this, neither ought he to make mention of the Spirit elsewhere, nor to join Him with the Father and the Son. For if He be rejected from the Father and Son, much more ought He not to be put in the same rank with them in the matter of Baptism; where most especially the dignity of the Godhead appears, and when gifts are bestowed which pertain to God alone to afford. Thus then I have assigned the cause why in this place He is passed over in silence. Now do thou, if this be not the true reason, tell me, why He (4.) is ranked with Them in Baptism? But thou canst not give any other reason, but His being of equal honour. At any rate, when he has no such constraint upon him, he puts Him in the same rank, saying thus: <sup>1</sup> *The grace of our Lord Jesus* <sup>2</sup> *Christ, and the love of God and the Father*, and the fellow-ship of the Holy Ghost, be with you all: and again, <sup>3</sup> *There are diversities of gifts, but the same Spirit; and there are*

<sup>1</sup> 2 Cor.

13. 14.

<sup>2</sup> and

Πατρὶς,

om. in

rec. text.

5c. 12. 4.



HOMIL. *diversities of administrations, but the same Lord; and there*  
 XX. *are diversities of operations, but the same God.* But because  
 now his speech was with Greeks, and the weaker sort of the  
 converts from among Greeks, for this reason he husbands it<sup>1</sup>  
 so far. And this is what the prophets do in regard of the  
 Son; no where making mention of Him plainly, because of  
 the infirmity of the hearers.

<sup>1</sup> ἡμε-  
 ῖς τε.

Ver. 7. *But not in all is knowledge, saith he.* What  
 knowledge doth he mean? about God, or about things offered  
 in sacrifice to idols? For either he here glances at the  
 Greeks, who say that there are many gods and lords, and  
 who know not Him that is truly God; or at the converts  
 from among Greeks who were still rather infirm, such as did  
 not yet know clearly that they ought not to fear idols, and  
 that *an idol is nothing in the world.* But having said this,  
 he gently soothes and encourages the latter. For there was  
 no need of mentioning all he had to reprove, particularly as  
 he intended to visit them again with more severity.

[8.] *But some with conscience of the idol unto this present  
 day eat it as a thing offered in sacrifice unto idols, and their  
 conscience being weak is defiled.* They still tremble at idols,  
 he saith. For tell me not of the present state of things, and  
 that you have received the true religion from your ancestors.  
 But carry back your thoughts to those times, and consider  
 when the Gospel was just set on foot, and impiety was still  
 at its height, and altars burning, and sacrifices and libations  
 offering up, and the greater part of men were Gentiles; think,  
 I say, of those who from their ancestors had received impiety,  
 and who were the descendants of fathers and grandfathers  
 and great-grandfathers like themselves, and who had suffered  
 great miseries from the demons. How must they have felt  
 after their sudden change! How would they tremble at and  
 dread the assaults of the demons! For their sake also he  
 employs some reserve, saying, *But some with conscience of  
 the thing offered in sacrifice to idols*<sup>2</sup>. Thus he neither  
 exposes them openly, not to strike them hard; nor doth he  
 pass by them altogether: but makes mention of them in a  
 vague manner, saying, *Now some with conscience of the idol-  
 sacrifice even until now eat it as a thing offered in sacrifice  
 to an idol;* that is, with the same thoughts as they did in

<sup>2</sup> τοὺς  
 ἡμετέρας  
 ὁσίων.  
 rec. text.  
 ἡμετέρας

former times: *and their conscience being weak is defiled*; <sup>1 Cor. 8.</sup> not yet being able to despise and once for all laugh them to <sub>7, 8.</sub> scorn, but still in some doubt. Just as if a man were to think, that by touching a dead body he should pollute himself, according to the Jewish custom, and then seeing others touching it with a clear conscience, but not with the same mind touching it himself, would be polluted. This was their state of feeling at that time. *For some, saith he, with conscience of the idol do it even until now.* Not without cause did he add, *even until now*; but to signify that they gained no ground by their refusing to condescend. For this was not the way to bring them in, but in some other way persuading them by word and by doctrine.

*And their conscience being weak is defiled.* No where as yet doth he state his argument about the nature of the thing, but turns himself this way and that, as concerning the conscience of the person partaking. For he was afraid lest, in his wish to correct the weak person, he should inflict a heavy blow upon the strong one, and make him weak. On which account he spares the one no less than the other. Nor doth he allow the thing itself to be thought of any consequence, but makes his argument very full to prevent any suspicion of the kind.

[9.] Ver. 8. *But meat commendeth us not to God. For neither if we eat are we the better, neither if we eat not are we the worse.* Do you see how again he takes down their high spirit? in that, after saying that "not only they but all of us have knowledge," and that "no one knoweth any thing as he ought to know," and that "knowledge puffeth up;" then having soothed them, and said that "this knowledge is not in all," and that "weakness is the cause of these being defiled," in order that they might not say, "And what is it to us, if knowledge be not in all? Why then has not such an one knowledge? Why is he weak?"—I say, in order that they might not rejoin in these terms, he did not proceed immediately to point out clearly, that for fear of the other's harm one ought to abstain: but having first made but a sort of skinnish upon mention of him, he points out what is more than this. What then is this? That although no one were injured, nor any perversion of another ensued, not even in this



HOMIL.  
X N. case were it right so to do. For the former topic by itself is labouring in vain. Since he that hears of another being hurt, while himself has the gain, is not very apt to abstain; but then rather he doth so, when he finds out that he himself is no way advantaged by the thing. Wherefore he puts this down first, saying, *But meat commendeth us not to God.* See how cheap he holds that which was accounted to spring from perfect knowledge! *For neither if we eat are we the better,* (that is, stand higher in God's estimation, as if we had done any thing good or great:) *neither, if we eat not, are we the worse,* that is, fall in any way short of others. So far then he hath signified that the thing itself is superfluous, and as nothing. For that which being done profits not, and which being left undone injures not, must be superfluous.

(5.) [10.] But as he goes on he discloses all the harm which was likely to arise from the matter. For the present, however, that which befel the brethren is his subject.

Ver. 9. *For take heed, saith he, lest any how this liberty of yours become a stumbling block to the weak among the brethren*<sup>1</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> ὅτι  
ἀδελφῶν  
not in  
rec.text.

He did not say, "Your liberty is become a stumbling block," nor did he positively affirm it, that he might not make them more shameless; but how? *Take heed;* frightening them, and making them ashamed, and leading them to disavow any such conduct. And he said not, "This your knowledge," which would have sounded more like praise; nor "this your perfectness;" but *your liberty*; a thing which seemed to savour more of rashness and obstinacy and arrogance. Neither, said he, "To the brethren," but *To those of the brethren who are weak*; enhancing his accusation, from their not even sparing the weak, and those too their brethren. For let it be so, that you correct them not, nor arouse them: yet why supplant them too, and make them to stumble, when you ought to stretch out the hand? but for that you have no mind: well then, at least avoid casting them down. Since, if one were wicked, he required punishment; if weak, healing: but now he is not only weak, but also a brother.

Ver. 10. *For when any one seeth thee, who hast knowledge, sitting down in an idol's temple, shall not the conscience of*

him that is weak be emboldened<sup>1</sup> unto the eating of things offered in sacrifice to idols?

1 Cor. 8.  
7, 8.

After having said, *Take heed lest this your liberty become a stumbling block*, he explains how, and in what manner it becomes so: and he continually employs the term "weakness," that the mischief may not be thought to arise from the nature of the thing, nor demons appear formidable. As thus: "At present," saith he, "a man is on the point of withdrawing himself entirely from all idols; but when he sees you fond of loitering about them, he takes the circumstance for a recommendation, and abides there himself also. So that not only his weakness, but also your ill-timed behaviour, helps to further the plot against him; for it is you who make him weaker."

<sup>1</sup> *emboldens*.  
"estab-  
lished,"  
"edi-  
fied."

V. 11. *And through thy meat<sup>2</sup> the weak brother will perish, for whom Christ died.*

<sup>2</sup> *Beatus*,  
rec. text,  
*propter*.  
comp.  
Rom.  
14. 15.

For there are two things which deprive you of excuse in this mischief, one, that he is weak, the other, that he is thy brother: rather, I should say, there is a third also, and one more terrible than all. What then is this? That whereas Christ refused not even to die for him, thou canst not bear even to accommodate thyself to him. By these means, you see, he reminds the perfect man also, what he too was before, and that for him He died. And he said not, "For whom even to die was thy duty;" but what is much stronger, that even Christ died for his sake. "Did thy Lord then not refuse to die for him, and dost thou so make him of none account, as not even to abstain from a polluted table for his sake? Yea, dost thou permit him to perish, after the salvation so wrought, and, what is most grievous of all, *for a morsel of meat*?" For he said not, "for thy perfectness," nor "for thy knowledge," but *for thy meat*. So that the charges are four, and these extremely heavy: that it was a brother, that he was weak, and one of whom Christ made so much account as even to die for him, and that after all this for a *morsel of meat* he is destroyed.

V. 12. *But when ye sin thus against the brethren, and wound their weak conscience, ye sin against Christ.*

Do you observe, how quietly and gradually he hath brought their offence up to the very summit of iniquity? And again, he

HOMIL. makes mention of the infirmity of the other sort: and so, the  
 XX. very thing which these considered to make for them, that he every where turns round upon their own head. And he said not, "Putting stumbling blocks in their way," but, *wounding*; so as by the force of his expression to indicate their cruelty. For what can be more savage than a man who wounds the sick? and yet no wound is so grievous, as making a man to offend. Often, in fact, is this also the cause of death.

But how do they *sin against Christ*? In one way, because He considers the concerns of His servants as His own; in another, because those who are wounded go to make up His Body and that which is part of Him: in a third way, because that work of His which He built up by His own blood, these are destroying for their ambition's sake.

[11.] Ver. 13. *Wherefore, if meat make my brother to offend, I will eat no meat for ever.* This is like the best of teachers, to teach, in his own person, the things which he speaks. Nor did he say whether justly or unjustly; but in any case. "I say not," (such is his tone,) "meat offered in sacrifice to an idol, which is already prohibited for another reason; but if any even of those things, which are within license and are permitted, gives offence, from these also will I abstain: and not one or two days, but all the time of my life." For he saith, *I will eat no flesh for ever.* And he said not, "Lest I destroy my brother," but simply, *Lest I give offence to my brother.* For indeed it comes of folly in the extreme, that what things are greatly cared for by Christ, and such as He should have even chosen to die for them, these we should esteem so entirely beneath our notice, as not even to abstain from meats on their account.

Now these things might be seasonably spoken not to them only, but also to us, apt as we are to esteem lightly the salvation of our neighbours, and to utter those satanical words. I say, satanical: for the expression, "What care I, though such an one be offended, and such another perish?" savours of his cruelty and inhuman mind. And yet in that instance, the infirmity also of those who were offended had some share in the result: but in our case it is not so, sinning as we do in such a way as to offend even the strong. For when we smite, and raven, and over-reach, and use the free



as if they were slaves, whom is not this enough to offend? <sup>1 Cor. 8. 19.</sup>  
Tell me not of such a man's being a shoemaker, another a dyer, another a brazier: but bear in mind that he is a believer and a brother. Why these are they whose disciples we are; the fishermen, the publicans, the tent-makers, of Him who was brought up in the house of a carpenter; and who deigned to have His betrothed wife for a mother; and who was laid, after His swaddling clothes, in a manger; and who had not where to lay His head;—of Him whose journeys were so long, that His very journeying was enough to tire Him down; of Him who was supported by others.

[12.] Think on these things, and esteem the pride of man to (6.) be nothing. But count the tent-maker as well thy brother, as him that is borne upon a chariot, and hath innumerable servants, and makes a grand show in the market-place: nay, rather the former than the latter; since the term brother would more naturally be used, where there is the greater resemblance. Which then resembles the fishermen? He who is supported by daily labour, and hath neither servant nor dwelling, but is quite beset with privations; or that other, who is surrounded with such vast pomp, and who acts contrary to the laws of God? Despise not then him that is more of the two thy brother, for he comes nearer to the Apostolic pattern.

"Not however," say you, "of his own accord, but by compulsion; for he doeth not this of his own mind." How comes this? Hast thou not heard, *Judge not, that ye be not judged*? But, to convince thyself that he doeth it not against his inclination, approach and give him ten thousand talents of gold, and thou shalt see him putting it away from him. And thus, even though he have received no wealth by inheritance from his ancestors, yet when it is in his power to take it, and he lets it not come near him, neither adds to his goods, he exhibits a mighty proof of his contempt of wealth. For so John was the son of Zebedee, that extremely poor man: yet I suppose we are not therefore to say that his poverty was forced upon him.

Whensoever then thou seest one clearing wood, smiting with a hammer, covered with soot, do not therefore hold him cheap, but rather for that reason admire him. Since even

HOMIL. Peter girded himself, and handled the drag-net, and went a  
XX. fishing, after the Resurrection of the Lord.

And why say I Peter? For this same Paul himself, after his incessant runnings to and fro, and all those vast miracles, standing in a tent-maker's shop, sewed hides together: while angels were reverencing him, and demous trembling. And he was not ashamed to say, *'Unto my necessities, and to those who were with me, these hands have ministered.* What say I, that he was not ashamed? Yea, he gloried in this very thing.

<sup>1</sup> Acts  
20, 34.

But you will say, "Who is there now to be compared with the virtue of Paul?" I too am well aware that there is no one, yet not on this account are those who live now to be despised: for if for Christ's sake thou give honour, though one be last of all, yet if he be a believer, he shall justly be honoured. For suppose a general and a common soldier both present themselves before you, being friends of the king, and you open your house to both; in which of their persons would you seem to pay most honour to the king? Plainly in that of the soldier. For there were in the general, beside his loyalty to the king, many other things apt to win such a mark of respect from you: but the soldier had nothing else but his loyalty to the king.

<sup>2</sup> *μνη-  
στειναι  
αυτους.*

Wherefore God bade us call to our suppers and our feasts the lame, and the maimed, and those who cannot repay us; for these are most of all properly called good deeds, which are done for God's sake. Whereas if thou entertain some great and distinguished man, it is not such pure mercy, what thou doest: but some portion many times is assigned to thyself also<sup>2</sup>, both by vain-glory, and by the return of the favour, and by thy rising in many men's estimation on account of thy guest. At any rate, I think I could point out many, who with this view pay court to the more distinguished among the saints, namely, that by their means they may enjoy a greater intimacy with rulers, and that they may find them thenceforth more useful in their own affairs, and to their families. And many such favours do they ask in recompense from those saints; a thing which mars the repayment of their hospitality, they seeking it with such a mind.

And why need I say this about the saints? Since he who



seeks, even from God, the reward of his labours in the present <sup>1</sup>Cor. 3. life, and follows after virtue for this world's good, is sure to <sup>13.</sup> diminish his recompense. But he that asks for all his crowns wholly there, is found far more admirable; like that Lazarus, who even now is *receiving*<sup>1</sup> there all *his good things*; like <sup>18.</sup>Luke those Three Children, who when they were on the point of <sup>16. 25.</sup> being thrown into the furnace, said, <sup>2</sup>*There is a God in* <sup>3</sup>Dan. 3. *heaven able to deliver us; and, if not, be it known unto thee,* <sup>17, 18.</sup> *O king, that we serve not thy gods, nor worship the golden image which thou hast set up:* like Abraham, who even offered<sup>4</sup> his son and slew him; and this he did, not for any <sup>5</sup>Advyn- reward, but esteeming this one thing the greatest recompense, <sup>7.</sup> to obey the Lord.

These let us also imitate. For so shall we be visited with a return of all our good deeds, and that abundantly, because we do all with such a mind as this: so shall we obtain also the brighter crowns. And God grant that we may all obtain them, through the grace and loving-kindness of our Lord Jesus Christ, with Whom, to the Father and the Holy Spirit, be glory, power, honour, now, henceforth, and for everlasting ages. Amen.

## HOMILY XXI.

---

1 COR. ix. 1.

*Am I not an Apostle? am I not free? have I not seen Jesus Christ our Lord? are not ye my work in the Lord?*

<sup>1</sup> *deeds*  
conj.  
*deeds*

INASMUCH as he had been<sup>1</sup> saying, *If meat make my brother to offend, I will eat no flesh while the world standeth, lest I make my brother to offend*; a thing which he had not yet done, but professed he would do, if need require: lest any man should say, "Thou vauntest thyself at random, and art severe in discourse, and utterest words of promise, a thing easy to me or to any body; but if these sayings come from thy heart, shew by deeds something which thou hast slighted in order to avoid offending thy brother:" for this cause, I say, in what follows he is compelled to enter on the proof of this also, and to point out how he was used to forego even things permitted, that he might not give offence, although without any law to enforce his doing so.

And we are not yet come to the admirable part of the matter: though it be admirable, his abstaining even from things lawful, to avoid offence: but it is his habit of doing so at the cost of so much trouble and danger<sup>a</sup>. "For why," saith he, "speak of the idol sacrifices? Since although Christ had enjoined that those who preach the Gospel should live at the charge of their disciples, I did not so, but chose, if need were, to end my life with famine, and die the most grievous of deaths, so I might avoid receiving of those whom I instruct."

Not because they would otherwise be offended, but because his not receiving would edify them<sup>b</sup>: a much greater thing

<sup>a</sup> The reading here adopted is Savile's.

<sup>b</sup> A slight transposition has been made here: the sense seeming to require it.

for him to do. And to witness this he summons themselves, <sup>1</sup> *1 Cor. 9.*  
among whom he was used to live in toil, and in hunger, <sup>1.</sup>  
nourished by others, and put to straits, in order not to offend  
them. And yet there was no ground for their taking offence,  
for it would but have been a law which he was fulfilling.  
But for all this, by a sort of supererogation<sup>1</sup>, he used to spare <sup>1</sup> *in ex-*  
them. <sup>1</sup> *cessitas.*

Now if he did more than was enacted, lest they should  
take offence, and abstained from permitted things to edify  
others; what must they deserve who abstain not from idol  
sacrifices? and that, when many perish thereby? a thing  
which even apart from all scandal one ought to shrink from,  
as being *the Table of Devils*.

The sum therefore of this whole topic is this, which he  
works out in many verses. But we must resume it, and make  
a fresh entrance on what he hath alleged. For neither hath (2.)  
he set it down thus expressly, as I have worded it; nor doth  
he leap at once upon it; but begins from another topic, thus  
speaking;

[2.] *Am I not an Apostle?* For besides all that hath been said,  
this also makes no small difference, that Paul himself is the  
person thus conducting himself. As thus: To prevent their  
alleging, "You may taste of the sacrifices, sealing yourself"  
at the same time:" for a while he withstands not that state-  
ment, but argues, "Though it were lawful, your brethren's  
harm should keep you from doing so;" and afterwards he  
proves that it is not even lawful. In this particular place,  
however, he is engaged in establishing the former point from  
circumstances relating to himself. And intending presently  
to say that he had received nothing from them, he sets it not  
down at once, but his own dignity is what he first affirms:  
*Am I not an Apostle? am I not free?*

Thus, to hinder their saying, "True; thou didst not  
receive, but the reason thou didst not was its not being law-  
ful;" he sets down therefore first the causes, why he might  
reasonably have received, had he been willing to do so.

Further: that there might not seem to be any thing in-  
vidious in regard of Peter and such as Peter, in his saying

<sup>c</sup> i. e. making the sign of the Cross: *σφραγίζων.*

**HOMIL.**  
**XXI.** these things, (for they did not use to decline receiving;) he first signifies that they had authority to receive, and then that no one might say, "Peter had authority to receive, but thou hadst not," he possesses the hearer beforehand with these high statements concerning himself. And perceiving that he must praise himself, (for that was the way to correct the Corinthians,) yet disliking to say any great thing of himself, see how he hath tempered both feelings as the occasion required: limiting his own panegyric, not by what he knew of himself, but by what the subject matter of necessity required. For he might have said, "I most of all had a right to receive, even more than they, because *I laboured more abundantly than they.*" But this he omits, being a point wherein he surpassed them; and those points wherein they were great, and which were just grounds for their receiving, those only he sets down: as follows:

*Am I not an Apostle? am I not free?* i. e. "have I not authority over myself? am I under any, to overrule me, and forbid my receiving?"

"But they have an advantage over you, in having been with Christ."

"Nay, neither is this denied me." With a view to which he saith,

**1c. 15. 8.** *Have I not seen Jesus Christ our Lord? For last of all<sup>1</sup>, (saith he,) as unto one born out of due time, He appeared unto me also.* Now this likewise was no small dignity:

**2S. Mat. 13. 17.** *since many Prophets<sup>2</sup>, saith He, and righteous men have desired to see the things which ye see, and have not seen them: and, Days will come when ye shall desire to see one of*

**3S. Luke 17. 22.** *these days<sup>3</sup>.*

"What then, though thou be *an Apostle*, and *free*, and hast *seen Christ*, if thou hast not exhibited any work of an Apostle; how then can it be right for thee to receive?" Wherefore after this he adds,

*Are ye not my work in the Lord?* For this is the great thing; and those others avail nothing, apart from this. Even Judas himself was *an Apostle*, and *free*, and *saw Christ*; but because he had not *the work of an Apostle*, all those things profited him not. You see then why he adds this also, and calls themselves to be witnesses of it.

Moreover, because it was a great thing which he had uttered, see how he chastens it, adding, *In the Lord: i. e.* <sup>2. 3.</sup> *the work is God's, not mine.*"

Ver. 2. *If I be not an Apostle unto others, yet doubtless I am unto you.*

Do you see how far he is from enlarging here without necessity? And yet he had the whole world to speak of, and barbarous nations, and sea, and land. However, he mentions none of these things, but carries his point at the first onset, and even granting more than he need. As if he had said, "Why need I dwell on things over and above, since these even alone are enough for my present purpose? I speak not, you will observe, of my achievements in other quarters, but of those which have you for witnesses. Upon which it follows, that if from no other quarter, yet from you I have a right to receive. Nevertheless, from whom I had most right to receive, even you whose teacher I was, from those I received not."

*If I be not an Apostle to others, yet doubtless I am to you.* Again, he states his point as one coming to close quarters. For the whole world had him for its Apostle. "However," saith he, "I say not that, I am not contending nor disputing, but what concerns you so much, I lay down. *For the seal of mine Apostleship are ye:*" i. e. its proof. "Should any one, moreover, desire to learn whence I am an Apostle, you are the persons whom I bring forward: for all the signs of an Apostle have I exhibited among you, and not one have I failed in." As also he speaks in the Second Epistle, saying, *'Though I be nothing, yet the signs of an Apostle were wrought among you in all patience, in signs and wonders and mighty deeds. For what is it wherein ye were inferior to the other Churches? Wherefore he saith, The seal of mine Apostleship are ye.* "For I both exhibited miracles, and taught by word, and underwent dangers, and shewed forth a blameless life." And these topics you may see fully set forth by these two Epistles, how he lays before them the demonstration of each with all exactness.

[3.] Ver. 3. *Mine answer to them that do examine me is this. What is, Mine answer to them that do examine me is this?* "To those who seek to know whereby I am proved to be an



**HOMIL. XXII.** Apostle, or who accuse me as receiving money, or inquire the cause of my not receiving, or would fain shew that I am not an Apostle: to all such, my instruction given to you, and these things which I am about to say, may stand for a full explanation and apology." What then are these?

Ver. 4, 5. *Have we not power to eat and to drink? Have we not power to lead about a sister, a wife?* Why, how are these sayings an apology? "Because, when it appears that I abstain even from things which are allowed, it cannot be just to look suspiciously on me, as on a deceiver, or one acting for gain."

Wherefore, from what was before alleged, and from my having instructed you, and from this which I have now said, I have matter sufficient to make my apology to you: and all who examine me I meet upon this ground, alleging both what has gone before, and this which follows: *Have we not power to eat and to drink? have we not power to lead about a sister, a wife?* "Yet for all this, having it, I abstain?"

What then? did he not use to eat or to drink? It were most true to say, that in many places he really did not eat  
<sup>1c.9.11.</sup> nor drink: for *'in famine, saith he, and in thirst, and in nakedness we were abiding.*" Here, however, this is not his meaning; but what? "We eat not, nor drink, receiving of those whom we instruct, though we have a right so to receive."

*Have we not power to lead about a sister, a wife, even as the other Apostles, and as the brethren of the Lord, and Cephas?* Observe his skilfulness. The leader of the choir stands last in his arrangement: since that is the time for laying down the strongest of all one's topics. Nor was it so wonderful for one to be able to point out examples of this conduct in the rest, as in the foremost champion, and in him who was entrusted with the keys of heaven. But neither does he mention Peter alone, but all of them: as if he had said, Whether you seek the inferior sort, or the more eminent, in all you find patterns of this sort drawn out for you.

For the brethren too of the Lord, being freed from their first unbelief<sup>a</sup>, had come to be among those who were approved, although they attained not to the Apostles. And

<sup>a</sup> vid. 8.  
John 7.  
5.

accordingly the middle place is that which he hath assigned <sup>1Con.9.</sup> to them, setting down those who were in the extremes before <sub>6, 7.</sub> and after.

Ver. 6. *Or I only and Barnabas, have not we power to forbear working?*

(See his humility of mind, and his soul purified from all envy, how he takes care not to conceal him whom he knew to be a partaker with himself in this perfection.) For if the other things be common, how is not this common? Both they and we are apostles, and we are free, and have exhibited the works of the Apostles, and have seen Christ. Therefore we likewise have power both to live without working, and to be supported by our disciples.

[4.] Ver. 7. *Who goeth a warfare at any time at his own charges?* For since, which was the strongest point, he had proved from the Apostles that it is lawful to do so, he next comes to examples and to the common practice, as he uses to do: *Who goeth a warfare at his own charges?* saith he. But do thou consider, I pray, how very suitable are the examples which he brings, to his proposed subject, and how he mentions first that which is accompanied with danger; viz. soldiership, and arms, and wars. For such a kind of thing was the Apostolate, nay rather much more hazardous than these. For not with men alone was their warfare, but with devils also, and against the prince of those beings was their battle array. What he saith therefore is this: "Not even do heathen governors, cruel and unjust as they are, require their soldiers to endure service and peril, and live on their own means. How then could Christ ever have required this?"

Nor is he satisfied with one example. For to him who is rather simple and dull, this also is wont to come as a great refreshment, viz. their seeing the common custom also going along with the laws of God. Wherefore he proceeds to (3.) another topic also, and says, *Who planteth a vineyard, and eateth not of the fruit thereof?* For as by the former he indicated his dangers, so by this his labour, and abundant travail and care.

He adds likewise a third example, saying, *Who feedeth a flock, and eateth not of the milk thereof?* He is exhibiting

**HOMIL.** the great care which it becomes a teacher to take of those  
**XXI.** who are under his rule. For, in fact, the Apostles were both soldiers and husbandmen and shepherds, not of the earth, nor of irrational animals, nor in such wars as are perceptible by sense; but of reasonable souls, and in battle array with the devils.

It also must be remarked, how every where he preserves moderation, seeking the useful only, not the extraordinary. For he said not, "Who goeth a warfare, and is not enriched?" but, *Who goeth a warfare any time at his own charges?* Neither did he say, "Who planteth a vineyard, and gathereth not gold, or spareth to collect the whole fruit?" but, *Who eateth not of the fruit thereof?* Neither did he say, "Who feedeth a flock, and maketh not merchandize of the lambs?" But what? *And eateth not of the milk thereof?* Not of the lambs, but of the milk; signifying, that a little relief should be enough for the teacher, even his necessary food alone. (So much for those who would devour all, and gather the whole of the fruit.) *So likewise the Lord ordained, saying,*

<sup>1</sup> 8. Mat. *The labourer is worthy of his hire*<sup>1</sup>.  
 10. 10.

And not this only doth he establish by his illustrations, but he implies also what kind of man a priest ought to be. For he ought to possess both the courage of a soldier, and the diligence of a husbandman, and the carefulness of a shepherd, and after all these, to seek nothing more than necessities.

[5.] Having shewn, as you see, both from the Apostles, that it is not forbidden the teacher to receive, and from illustrations found in common life, he proceeds also to a third head, thus saying,

Ver. 8. *Say I these things as a man? or saith not the law the same also?*

For since he had hitherto alleged nothing out of the Scriptures, but put forward the common custom; "think not," saith he, "that I am confident in these alone, nor that I go to the opinions of men for the ground of these enactments. For I can shew that these things are also well-pleasing to God, and I read an ancient law enjoining these things." Wherefore also he carries on his discourse in the form of a question, which is apt to be done in things fully acknowledged; thus saying,

Say I these things as a man? i. e. "do I strengthen myself only by human examples?" or saith not the law the same also? 1 COR. 9. 9.

Ver. 9. *For it is written in the law of Moses, Thou shalt not muzzle the ox which treadeth out the corn.*

And on what account hath he mentioned this, having the example of the priests? Wishing to establish it far beyond what the case required. Further, lest any should say, "And what have we to do with the saying about the oxen?" he works it out more exactly, saying, *Doth God take care for oxen?* Doth God then, tell me, take no care for oxen? Well, He doth take care of them, but not so as to make a law concerning such a thing as this. So that had he not been hinting at something important, exercising the Jews in mercy in the case of the brutes, and through these, discoursing with them of the teachers also; he would not have taken so much interest in it, as even to make a law to permit the muzzling of oxen.

Wherein he points out another thing likewise, that the labour of teachers both is great, and ought so to be.

And again another thing. What then is this? That whatever is said by the Old Testament, inculcating care for brutes, in its principal meaning bears on the instruction of human beings: as in fact do all the rest: the precepts, for example, concerning various garments; and those concerning vineyards, and seeds, and not making the ground bear divers crops; and the precepts concerning leprosy; and, in a word, ἡ δὲ ὅλη ἡ γὰρ. all the rest: for they being of a duller sort, He was discours- see Deut. 22. 9. ing with them from these topics, advancing them by little and LXX. little.

And see how, in what follows, he doth not even confirm it, as being clear and self-evident. For having said, *Doth God take care for oxen?* he added, *or saith he it altogether for ourselves?* Not adding even the *altogether* at random, but that he might not leave the hearer any thing whatever to reply.

And he dwells upon the metaphor, saying and declaring, *For our sakes, no doubt, it is written, that he who ploweth ought to plow in hope; i. e. the teacher ought to enjoy the returns of his labours; and he that thresheth ought to partake*

**HOMIL.** *of his hope in hope.* And observe his wisdom, in that from **XXI.** the seed he transferred the matter to the threshing floor ; herein also again manifesting the many toils of the teachers, that they in their own persons both plough and tread the floor. And of the ploughing, because there was nothing to reap, but labour only ; he used the word, *hope*, but of treading the floor he presently allows the fruit, saying, *He that thresheth, is a partaker of his hope.*

Further, lest any should say, "Is this then the return for so many toils," he adds, *in hope*, i. e. "which is to come." No other thing therefore doth the mouth of this animal being unmuzzled declare, than this ; that the teachers who labour ought also to enjoy some return.

[6.] V. 11. *If we have sown unto you our spiritual things, is it a great matter, if we shall reap your carnal things ?*

Lo, he adds also a fourth argument for the duty of yielding support. For since he had said, *Who goeth a warfare at any time at his own charges ?* and, *who planteth a vineyard ?* and, *who feedeth a flock ?* and had introduced the ox that treadeth the corn ; he points out likewise another most reasonable cause, on account of which they might justly receive ; viz. as having bestowed much greater gifts, not now as having laboured only. What is it then ? *if we have sown unto you spiritual things, is it a great matter, if we shall reap your carnal things ?* Seest thou a most just allegation, and fuller of reason, than all the former ? for, "in those instances," says he, "carnal is the seed, carnal also is the fruit ; but here not so, but the seed is spiritual, the return, carnal." Thus to prevent high thoughts in those who contribute to their teachers, he signified that they receive more than they give. As if he had said, "Husbandmen, whatsoever they sow, this also do they receive ; but we, sowing in your souls spiritual things, do reap carnal." For such is the kind of support given by them. Further, and still more to put them to the blush,

V. 12. *If others be partakers of this power over you, are not we rather ?*

See also again another argument, and this too from examples, though not of the same kind. For it is not Peter whom he mentions here, nor the Apostles, but certain other spurious ones, with whom he afterwards enters into combat, and con-



cerning whom he says, *'If a man devour you, if a man take of you, if a man exalt himself, if a man smite you on the face,* and already he is sounding the prelude<sup>12.</sup> to the fight<sup>12. 20.</sup> with them. Wherefore neither did he say, *If others take of you,* but pointing out their insolence, and tyranny, and trafficking, he says, *if others be partakers of this power over you,* i. e. "rule you, exercise authority, use you as servants, not taking only, but quite as a matter of business and with much authority." Wherefore he added, *are not we much rather?* which he would not have said, if the discourse were concerning the Apostles. But it is evident that he hints at certain pestilent men, and deceivers of them. "So that besides the law of Moses, even ye yourselves have made a law in behalf of the duty of contribution."

And having said, *are not we much rather?* he does not prove, why *much rather*, but leaves it to their consciences to convince them of that, wishing at once both to alarm and to abash them more thoroughly.

[7.] *Nevertheless, we have not used this power;* i. e. "have not received." Do you see, when he had by so many reasons before proved, that receiving is not unlawful, how he next says, "we receive not," that he might not seem to abstain as from a thing forbidden? "For not because it is unlawful," saith he, "do I not receive; for it is lawful, and this we have many ways shewn: from the Apostles; from the affairs of life; the soldier, the husbandman, and the shepherd; from the law of Moses; from the very nature of the case, in that we have sown unto you spiritual things; from what yourselves have done to those others." But as he had laid down these things, lest he should seem to put to shame the Apostles who were in the habit of receiving; abashing them, and signifying, that not as from a forbidden thing doth he abstain from it: so again, lest by his large store of proof, and many examples, by which he had pointed out the propriety of receiving, he should seem to be anxious to receive himself, and therefore to say these things; he now corrects it. And afterwards he laid it down more clearly, where he says, *But I have not written these things, that it should so be done unto me;* but here his words are, *we have not used this power.*

And what is a still greater thing, neither could any have

**HOMIL.** this to say, that being in abundance we declined using it;  
**XXI.** rather, when necessity pressed upon us, we would not yield to the necessity. Which also in the second Epistle he says; *I robbed other Churches, taking wages of them, to do you service; and when I was present with you, and wanted, I was*

<sup>22</sup> 2 Cor. *chargeable to no man*<sup>1</sup>. And in this Epistle again, *We both*  
<sup>11. 8, 9.</sup> *hunger, and thirst, and are naked, and are buffeted*<sup>2</sup>. And  
<sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. here again he hints the same thing, saying, *But we suffer all*  
<sup>4. 11.</sup> *things*. For by saying, *we suffer all things*, he intimates both hunger and great straits, and all the other things. "But not even thus have we been compelled," saith he, to break the law, which we laid down for ourselves. Wherefore? *lest we should give some hindrance to the Gospel of Christ*. For since the Corinthians were rather weak-minded, "lest we should wound you," saith he, "by receiving, we chose to do even more than was commanded, rather than hinder the Gospel, i. e. your instruction. Now if we, in a matter left free to us, and when we were both enduring much hardship, and having Apostles for our pattern, used abstinence, lest we should give hindrance, (and he did not say, "subversion," but *hindrance*; nor simply *hindrance*, but *any hindrance*;) that we might not, so to speak, cause so much as the slightest suspense and delay to the course of the word: If now," saith he, "we used so great care, how much more ought you to abstain, who both come far short of the Apostles, and have no law to mention, giving you permission: but contrariwise are both putting your hand to things forbidden, and things which tend to the great injury of the Gospel, not to its hindrance only<sup>3</sup>; and not even having any pressing necessity in view." For all this discussion he had moved on account of these Corinthians who were offending their weaker brethren by eating of things sacrificed to idols.

- (5.) [8.] These things also let us listen to, beloved; that we may not despise those who are offended, nor *cause any hindrance to the Gospel of Christ*; that we may not betray our own salvation. And say not thou to me, when thy brother is offended, "this, or that, whereby he is offended, hath not been forbidden; it is permitted." For I have something

<sup>1</sup> The reading seems imperfect, and were, οὐκ ἐστὶ ἐν ὑμῶν ποῖον δούλου unintelligible: it is rendered as if it

Greater to say to thee: "although Christ Himself have permitted it, yet if thou seest any injured, stop, and do not use <sup>12.</sup> the permission." For this also did Paul; when he might have received, Christ having granted permission, he received not. Thus hath our Lord in His mercy mingled much gentleness with His precepts, that it might not be all merely of commandment, but that we might do much also of our own mind. Since it was in His power, had He not been so minded, to extend the commandments further, and to say, "he who fasts not continually, let him be chastised; he who keeps not his virginity, let him be punished; he that doth not strip himself of all that he hath, let him suffer the severest penalty." But he did not so, giving thee occasion, if thou wilt, to be forward in doing more. Wherefore both when He was discoursing about virginity, He said, *He that is able to receive it, let him receive it*; and in the case of the rich man, some things He commanded, but some He left to the determination of his mind. For he said not, *Sell what thou hast*, but, *If thou wilt be perfect, sell*.

But we are not only not forward to do more, and to go beyond the precepts, but we fall very short even of the measure of things commanded. And whereas Paul suffered hunger, that he might not hinder the Gospel; we have not the heart even to touch what is in our own stores, though we see innumerable souls overthrown. "Yea," saith one, "let the moth eat, and let not the poor eat; let the worm devour, and let not the naked be clothed; let all be wasted away with time, and let not Christ be fed; and this when He hungereth." "Why, who said this?" it will be asked. Nay, this is the very grievance, that not in words but in deeds these things are said: for it were less grievous uttered in words, than done in deeds. For is not this the cry, day by day, of the inhuman and cruel tyrant, Covetousness, to those who are led captive by her? "Let your goods be set before informers, and robbers, and traitors for luxury, and not before the hungry and needy for their sustenance." Is it not ye then who make robbers? Is it not ye who minister fuel to the fire of the envious? Is it not ye who make vagabonds and traitors, putting your wealth before them for a bait? What madness is this? (for a madness it is, and plain distraction,) to fill your chests with apparel, and

**HOMIL.** overlook him that is made after God's image and similitude,  
**XXI.** naked and trembling with cold, and with difficulty keeping himself upright.

"But he pretends," saith one, "this tremor and weakness." And dost thou not fear, lest a thunderbolt from heaven, kindled by this word, should fall upon thee? (For I am bursting with wrath: bear with me.) Thou, I say, pampering and fattening thyself, and extending thy potations to the dead of night, and comforting thyself in soft coverlets, dost not deem thyself meet for judgment, so lawlessly using the gifts of God: (for wine was not made that we should be drunken; nor food, that we should pamper our appetites; nor meats, that we should distend the belly.) But from the poor, the wretched, from him that is as good as dead, from him demandest thou strict accounts, and dost thou not fear Christ's tribunal, so full of all awfulness and terror? Why, if he do play the hypocrite, he doth it of necessity and want, because of thy cruelty and inhumanity, requiring the use of such masks, and refusing all inclination to mercy. For who is so wretched and miserable, as without urgent necessity, for one loaf of bread, to submit to such disgrace, and to bewail himself, and endure so severe a punishment? So that this hypocrisy of his goeth about, the herald of thine inhumanity. For since by supplicating, and beseeching, and uttering piteous expressions, and lamenting, and weeping, and going about all day, he doth not obtain even necessary food, he devised perhaps even this contrivance also, the disgrace and blame whereof falls not so much on himself, as on thee: for he indeed is meet to be pitied, because he hath fallen into so great necessity; but we are worthy of innumerable punishments, because we compel the poor to suffer such things. For if we would easily give way, never would he have chosen to endure such things.

And why speak I of nakedness, and trembling? For I will tell a thing yet more to be shuddered at, that some have been compelled even to deprive their children of sight at an early age, in order that they might touch our insensibility. For since when they could see and went about naked, neither by their age nor by their misfortunes could they win favour of the un pitying, they added to so great evils, another yet sterner tragedy, that they might remove their hunger; thinking it to



be a lighter thing to be deprived of this common light and <sup>1</sup>Con.9. that sunshine which is given to all, than to struggle with <sup>12.</sup> continual famine, and endure the most miserable of deaths. Thus, since you have not learned to pity poverty, but delight yourselves in misfortunes, they satisfy your insatiable desire, and both for themselves and for you kindle a fiercer flame in hell.

[9.] And to convince you that this is the reason why these and such like things are done, I will tell you of an acknowledged and certain proof, which no man can gainsay. There are other poor men, of light and unsteady minds, and not knowing how to bear hunger, but rather enduring every thing than it. These having often tried to deal with you by piteous gestures and words, and finding that they availed nothing, have left off those supplications, and thenceforward your very wonder-workers are surpassed by them, some chewing the skins of worn out shoes, and some fixing sharp nails into their heads, others lying about in frozen pools with naked stomachs, and others enduring different things yet more horrid than these, that they may draw around them the ungodly spectators. And thou, while these things are going on, standest laughing, and wondering the while, and making a fine show of other men's miseries, our common nature disgracing itself. And what could a fierce demon do more? Next, you give him money in abundance, that he may do these things more promptly. And to him that prays, and calls on God, and approaches with modesty, you neither vouchsafe an answer, nor a look: rather you utter to him, continually teasing you, those disgusting expressions, "Ought this fellow to live? or at all to breathe, and see this sun?" whereas to the other sort you are both cheerful and liberal, as though you were appointed to dispense the prize of that ridiculous and Satanic unseemliness. Wherefore with more propriety to those who appoint these sports, and bestow nothing till they see others punishing themselves, might these words be addressed, "Ought these men to live? to breathe at all, and see this sun, who transgress against our common nature, who insult God?" For whereas God saith, *Give alms, and I give thee the kingdom of heaven*, thou hearest not: but when the Devil shews thee a head pierced with nails, on a sudden thou hast become liberal. And the

(6.)



HOMIL.  
XXI. contrivance of the evil spirit, pregnant with so much mischief, hath wrought upon thee more than the promise of God bringing innumerable blessings. If gold were to be laid down to prevent the doing of these things, or the looking upon them when done, there is nothing which thou oughtest not to practise and endure, to get rid of so excessive madness; but ye contrive every thing to have them done, and look on the doing of them. As yet askest thou then, tell me, to what end is hell-fire? Nay, ask not that any more, but how is there one hell only? For of how many punishments are not they worthy, who get up this cruel and merciless spectacle, and laugh at what both they and yourselves ought to weep over; yea, rather of the two, ye, who compel them to such unseemly doings.

"But I do not compel them," say you. What else but compelling is it, I should like to know? Those who are more modest, and shed tears, and invoke God, thou art impatient even of listening to; but for these thou both findest silver in abundance, and bringest around thee many to admire them.

"Well, let us depart," say you, "pitying them." And dost thou too enjoin this? Nay, it is not pity, O man, to demand so severe a punishment for a few pence, to order men to maim themselves for necessary food, and cut into many pieces the skin of their head so mercilessly and pitifully. "Gently," say you, "for it is not we who pierce those heads." Would it were thou, and the horror would not be so horrible. For he that slays a man, does a much more grievous<sup>a</sup> thing than he who bids him slay himself, which indeed happens in the case of these persons. For they endure more bitter pains, when they are bidden to be themselves the executors of these wicked commands.

And all this in Antioch, where men were first called Christians, wherein are bred the most civilized of mankind, where in old time the fruit of charity flourished so abundantly. For not only to those at hand, but also to those very far off, they used to send, and this when famine was expected.

[10.] What then ought we to do? say you. To cease from this savage practice: and to convince all that are in need,

<sup>a</sup> χαλαρώτερον: the sense seems to require "less grievous:" perhaps the negative has slipped out of the text.

that by doing these things they will gain nothing, but if they modestly approach, they shall find your liberality great. Let them be once aware of this, even though they be of all men most miserable, they will never choose to punish themselves so severely, I pledge myself; nay, they will even give you thanks, for delivering them both from the mockery and the pain of that way of life. But as it is, for charioteers you would sell even your own children, and for dancers you would throw away your very souls, while for Christ an hungred, you spare not the smallest portion of your substance. But if you give a little silver, you think as much of it as if you had laid out all you have, not knowing that not the giving, but the giving liberally, this is true almsgiving. Wherefore also it is not those simply who give, whom the prophet proclaims and calls happy, but those who bestow liberally. For he doth not say simply, He hath given, but what? *he hath dispersed abroad, he hath given to the poor.* For what profit is it, when out of it thou givest as it were a glass of water out of the sea, and even a widow woman's magnanimity is beyond thy emulation? And how wilt thou say, *Have mercy on me, O Lord, according to thy great mercy, and according to the multitude of thy mercies blot out my transgression,* thyself not shewing mercy according to any great mercy, nay, haply not according to any little. For I am greatly ashamed, I own, when I see many of the rich riding upon their golden-bitted chargers, with a train of domestics clad in gold, and having couches of silver, and other and more pomp, and yet when there is need to give to a poor man, becoming more beggarly than the very poorest.

[11.] But what is their constant talk? "He hath," they say, "the common church-allowance." And what is that to thee? For thou wilt not be saved, because I give; nor if the Church bestow, hast thou blotted out thine own sins. For this cause givest thou not, because the Church ought to give to the needy? Because the priests pray, wilt thou never pray thyself? And because others fast, wilt thou be continually drunken? Knowest thou not, that God enacted not almsgiving so much for the sake of the poor, as for the sake of the persons themselves who bestow?

But dost thou suspect the priest? Why this thing itself, to

HOMIL. begin with, is a grievous sin. However, I will not examine  
XXI. the matter too nicely. Do thou it all in thine own person,

and so shalt thou reap a double reward. Since in fact, what we say in behalf of almsgiving, we say not, that thou shouldest offer to us, but that thou shouldest thyself minister by thine own hands. For if thou bringest thine alms to me, perhaps thou mayest even be led captive by vain-glory, and oftentimes likewise thou shalt go away offended through suspicion of something evil: but if ye do all things by yourselves, ye shall both be rid of offences, and of unreasonable suspicion, and

- (7.) greater is your reward. Not therefore to compel you to bring your money hither, do I say these things; nor from indignation on account of the priests being ill-reported of. For if one must be indignant and grieve, for you should be our grief, who say this ill. Since to them who are spoken ill of falsely and vainly, the reward is greater, but to the speakers the condemnation and punishment is heavier. I say not these things therefore in their behalf, but in solicitude and care for you. For what marvel is it if some in our generation are suspected, when in the case of those holy men who imitated the angels, who possessed nothing of their own, I mean the Apostles, there was

<sup>1</sup> Acts 6. a murmuring in the ministration to the widows<sup>1</sup>, that the poor  
1. were overlooked? when *not one said that aught of the things*

<sup>2</sup> Acts 4. *he possessed was his own, but they had all things common*<sup>2</sup>?  
32.

Let us not then put forward these pretexts, nor account it an excuse, that the Church is wealthy. But when you see the greatness of her substance, bear in mind also the crowds of poor who are on her list, the multitudes of her sick, her occasions of endless expenses. Investigate, scrutinize, there is none to forbid, nay, they are even ready to give you an account. But it is something beyond, which I want you to do. Namely, when we have given in our accounts, and proved that our expenditure is no less than our income, nay, sometimes more, I would gladly ask you this further question: When we depart hence, and shall hear Christ saying, *Ye saw me hungry, and gave me no meat; naked, and ye clothed me not; what shall we say? what apology shall we make? Shall we bring forward such and such a person who disobeyed these commands? or some of the priests who were suspected? "Nay, what is this to thee?*



for I accuse thee," saith He, "of those things wherein thou<sup>1Cor.9.</sup> hast thyself sinned. And the apology for these would be, to <sup>12.</sup> have washed away thine own offences, not to point to others whose errors have been the same as thine."

In fact, the Church, through your meanness, is compelled to have such property as it has now. Since, if men did all things according to the apostolical laws, its revenue should have been your good will, which were both a secure chest, and an inexhaustible treasury. But now when ye lay up for yourselves treasures upon the earth, and shut up all things in your own stores, while the Church is compelled to be at charges with bands of widows, choirs of virgins, sojournings of strangers, distresses of foreigners, the misfortunes of prisoners, the necessities of the sick and maimed, and other such like causes, what must be done? Turn away from all these, and block up so many ports? Who then could endure the shipwrecks that would ensue; the weepings, the lamentations, the wailings which would reach us from every quarter?

Let us not then speak at random what comes into our mind. For now, as I have just said, we are really prepared to render up our accounts to you. But even if it were the reverse, and ye had corrupt teachers, plundering and grasping at every thing, not even so were their wickedness an apology for you. For the Lover of mankind and All-wise, the Only-Begotten Son of God, seeing all things, and knowing the chance, that in so great length of time, and in so vast a world, there would be many corrupt priests; lest the carelessness of those under their rule, should increase through their neglect, removing every excuse for indifference; *In Moses' seat*, saith He, *sit the Scribes and the Pharisees; all things, therefore, whatsoever they bid you do, do ye, but do not ye after their works*: implying that even if thou hast a bad teacher, this will have no power to profit thee, except thou attend to the things which are spoken. For not from what thy teacher hath done, but from what thou hast heard and disobeyed, from that, I say, doth God pass his sentence upon thee. So that if thou doest the things commanded, thou shalt then stand with much boldness: but if thou disobey the things spoken, even though thou shouldest shew ten thousand corrupt priests,

**HOMIL.** this will not plead for thee at all. Since Judas also was an **XXI.** apostle, but nevertheless this shall never be any apology for the sacrilegious and covetous. Nor will any be able when accused to say, "Why the Apostle was a thief and sacrilegious, and a traitor;" yea, this very thing shall most of all be our punishment and condemnation, that not even by the evils of others were we corrected. For for this cause also these things were written, that we might shun all emulation of such things.

Wherefore leaving this person and that, let us take heed to ourselves. For *each of us shall give account of himself to God*. In order therefore that we may render up this account with a good defence, let us well order our own lives, and stretch out a liberal hand to the needy, knowing that this only is our defence, the shewing ourselves to have rightly done the things commanded; there is no other whatever. And if we be able to produce this, we shall escape those intolerable pains of hell, and obtain the good things to come; unto which may we all attain, by the grace and mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ, with Whom, to the Father and the Holy Ghost, be glory, power, and honour, now and ever, and world without end. Amen.



## HOMILY XXII.

---

I COR. ix. 13, 14.

*Do ye not know that they which minister about holy things live of the temple? And they which wait at the altar are partakers with the altar? Even so hath the Lord ordained that they which preach the Gospel should live of the Gospel.*

HE takes great care to shew that the receiving was not forbidden. Whereupon having said so much before, he was not content, but proceeds also to the Law, furnishing an example closer to the point than the former. For it was not the same thing to bring forward the oxen, and to bring forward the law expressly given concerning priests.

But consider, I pray, in this also the wisdom of Paul, how he mentions the matter in a way to give it dignity. For he did not say, "*They which minister about holy things receive of those who offer them.*" But what? *They eat of the temple:* so that neither they who receive may be blamed, nor they who give may be lifted up. Wherefore also what follows he hath set down in the same way.

For neither did he say, "*They which wait at the altar receive of them which sacrifice,*" but, *are partakers with the altar.* For the things offered now no longer belonged to those who offered them, but to the temple and the altar. And he said not, "*They receive the holy things,*" but, *they eat of the temple,* indicating again their moderation, and that it behoves them not to make money, nor to be rich. And though he say, that they *are partakers with the altar,* he doth not speak of equal distribution, but of relief given them as their due. And yet the case of the Apostles was much

HOMIL. stronger. For in the former instance the priesthood was an  
XXII. honour, but in the latter it was dangers, and slaughters, and violent deaths. Wherefore all the other examples together did not come up to the saying, *If we have sown unto you spiritual things*: since in saying, *we have sown*, he points out the storms, and the dangers, and the snares, and the unspeakable evils, which they endured in preaching. Nevertheless, though the superiority was so great, he was unwilling either to abase the things of the old law, or to exalt the things which belonged to himself: nay he even contracts his own, reckoning the superiority not from the dangers, but from the greatness of the gift. For he said not, "if we have jeopardied ourselves," or "exposed ourselves to snares," but, *if we have sown unto you spiritual things*.

And the part of the priests, as far as possible, he exalts, saying, *They which minister about holy things*, and *they that wait at the altar*, thereby intending to point out their continual servitude and patience. Again, as he had spoken of the priests among the Jews, and both of the Levites and the Chief Priests, so he hath expressed each of the orders, both the inferior and the superior; the one by saying, *they which minister in holy things*, and the other by saying, *they which wait at the altar*. For not to all was one work commanded; but some were entrusted with the coarser, others with the more exalted offices. Comprehending therefore all these, lest any should say, "why talk to us of the old law? knowest thou not that ours is the time of more perfect commandments?" after all those topics he placed that which is strongest of all, saying,

Ver. 14. *Even so hath the Lord ordained, that they who preach the Gospel, should live of the Gospel.*

Nor doth he even here say that they are supported by men, but as in the case of the priests, *of the temple* and *of the altar*, so likewise here, *of the Gospel*; and as there he saith, *eat*, so here, *live*, not make merchandize, nor lay up treasures. *For the labourer, saith He, is worthy of his hire.*

[2.] Ver. 15. *But I have used none of these things:*

What then, if thou hast not used them now, saith one, but intendest to use them at a future time, and on this account

sayest these things. Far from it; for he speedily corrected <sup>1Cor.9.</sup> the notion, thus saying; <sub>16-18.</sub>

*Neither have I written these things, that it should be so done unto me.*

And see with what vehemence he disavows and repels the thing:

*For it were better for me to die, than that any man should make my glorying void.*

And not once, nor twice, but many times he uses this expression. For above he said, *We have not used this power*: and after this again, *that I abuse not my power*; and here, *but I have used none of these things. These things*; what things? The many examples. That is to say, many things giving me licence; the soldier, the husbandman, the shepherd, the Apostles, the law, the things done by us unto you, the things done by you unto the others, the priests, the ordinance of Christ; by none of these have I been induced to abolish my own law, and to receive. And speak not to me of the past: (although I could say, that I have endured much even in past times on this account,) nevertheless I am not confident on the ground of it alone, but likewise concerning the future I pledge myself, that I would choose rather to die of hunger, than be deprived of these crowns.

*For it were better for me to die, saith he, than that any man should make my glorying void.*

He said not, "that any man should abolish my law," but, *my glorying*. For lest any should say, "he doth it indeed, but not cheerfully, but with lamentation and grief," willing to shew the excess of his joy, and the abundance of his zeal, he even calls the matter *glorying*. So far was he from vexing himself, that he even glories, and chooses rather to die, than to fall from this *glorying*. So much dearer to him even than life itself was that proceeding of his.

[3.] Next, he exalts it from another consideration also, (2.) and signifies that it was a great thing, not that he might shew himself famous: (for far was he from that disposition;) but to signify that he rejoices, and with a view more abundantly to take away all suspicion. For on this account, as I before said, he also called it a glorying; and what saith he?

Ver. 16, 17, 18. *For though I preach the Gospel, I have*



HOMIL. nothing to glory of; for necessity is laid upon me; yea, woe  
 XXII. is me, if I preach not the Gospel! For if I do this thing willingly, I have a reward: but if against my will, a dispensation is committed unto me. What is my reward then? That when I preach the Gospel, I may make the Gospel of Christ without charge, that I abuse not my power in the Gospel.

What sayest thou? tell me. "If thou preach the Gospel, it is nothing for thee to glory of, but it is, if thou make the Gospel of Christ without charge?" Is this therefore greater than that? By no means; but in another point of view it hath some advantage, inasmuch as the one is a command, but the other is a good deed of my own free-will: for what things are done beyond the commandment, have a great reward in this respect: but such as are in the nature of a commandment, not so great: and so in this respect he says, the one is more than the other; not in the very nature of the thing. For what is equal to preaching? since it maketh men vie even with the angels themselves. Nevertheless, the one being a commandment, and a debt, the other a forwardness of free-will, in this respect this is more than that. Wherefore he saith, explaining the same, what I just now mentioned:

*For if I do this thing willingly, I have a reward, but if against my will, a dispensation is committed unto me;* taking the words *willing* and *against my will*, of its being committed, or not committed to him. And thus we must understand the expression, *for necessity is laid upon me*; not as though he did aught of these things against his will, God forbid, but as though he were bound by the things commanded, and for contradistinction to the liberty in receiving, before

<sup>1</sup>S. Luke mentioned. Wherefore also Christ said to the disciples<sup>1</sup>,  
 17. 10. *When ye have done all, say, We are unprofitable servants; for we have done that which was our duty to do.*

*What then is my reward? That, when I preach the Gospel, I may make the Gospel without charge.* What then, tell me, hath Peter no reward? Nay, who can ever have so great an one as he? And what shall we say of the other Apostles? How then said he, *If I do this thing willingly I have a reward, but if against my will, a dispensation is committed unto me?* Seest thou here also his wisdom? For he said not,

"But *if against my will*, I have no reward," but, a dispensation is committed unto me: implying, that even thus he hath a reward, but such as he obtains who hath performed what was commanded, not such as belongs to him, who hath of his own resources been generous, and exceeded the commandment. *What then is the reward? That, when I preach the Gospel*, saith he, *I may make the Gospel without charge, that I abuse not my power in the Gospel.* See how throughout he uses the term *power*, intimating this, as I have often observed; that neither are they who receive worthy of blame. But he added, *in the Gospel*, partly in order to specify the work of preaching, partly also to forbid our carrying the matter out into every case. For the teacher ought to receive, but not the mere drone also.

[4.] V. 19. *For though I be free from all men, yet have I made myself slave unto all, that I might gain the more.*

Here again he introduces another high step in advance. For a great thing it is even not to receive, but this which he is about to mention is much more than that. What then is that which he says? "Not only have I not received," saith he; "not only have I not used this power, but I have even made myself a slave, and in a slavery manifold and universal. For not in money alone, but, which was much more than money, in employments many and various have I made good this same rule: and I have made myself a slave, when I was subject to none, having no necessity, in any respect; (for this is the meaning of, *though I be free from all men*,) and not even to any single person have I been a slave, but to the whole world."

Wherefore also he subjoined, *I have made myself servant unto all.* That is, "To preach the Gospel I was commanded, and to proclaim the things committed to my trust; but the contriving and devising numberless things beside, all that was of my own zeal. For I was only under obligation to invest the money, whereas I did every thing in order to get a return for it, attempting more than was commanded." Thus, doing as he did all things of free choice, and zeal, and love to Christ, he had an insatiable desire for the salvation of mankind. Wherefore also he used to overpass by a very great deal the lines marked out, in every way springing higher than the very heaven.



HOMIL. [5.] Next, having mentioned his servitude, he describes in  
XXII. what follows the various modes of it. And what are these?

V. 20. *And I became*, says he, *to the Jews, as a Jew, that I might gain the Jews.* And how did this take place? Because he circumcised, that he might abolish circumcision. Wherefore he said not, *a Jew*, but, *as a Jew*, which was an economy. What sayest thou? The herald of the world, and he who touched the very heavens, and shone so bright in grace, doth he all at once descend so low? Yea. For this is to ascend. For you are not to look to the fact only, of his descending, but also to his raising up him that was bowed down, and bringing him up to himself.

- (3.) *To them that are under the law, as under the law, that I might gain them that are under the law.* Either it is the explanation of what went before, or he hints at some other thing beside the former: calling those Jews, who were such originally and from the first: but *under the law*, the proselytes, or those who became believers, and yet adhered to the law. For they were no longer as Jews, yet 'under the law.' And when was he under the law? When he shaved his head; when he offered sacrifice. Now these things were done, not because his mind changed, (since such conduct would have been wickedness,) but because his love condescended. For that he might bring over to this faith those who were really Jews, he became such himself not really, shewing himself such only, but not such in fact, nor doing these things from a mind so disposed. Indeed, how could he, zealous as he was to convert others also, and doing these things for no other cause, but that he might free others who did them from that degradation?

V. 21. *To them that are without law, as without law.* These were neither Jews, nor Christians, nor Greeks; but 'outside of the Law,' as was Cornelius, and if there were any others like him. For among these also making his appearance, he used to assume many of their ways. But some say, that he hints at his discourse with the Athenians from the inscription on the altar, and that so he saith, *to them that are without law, as without law.*

Then, lest any should think that the matter was a change of mind, he added, *being not without law to God, but under the*

and to weak brethren. *Extent of his Hope of doing good.* 301

law to Christ; i. e. "so far from being without law, I am not <sup>1COR.9.</sup> simply under the Law, but I have that law which is much more <sup>22, 23.</sup> exalted than the older one, viz. that of the Spirit and of grace." Wherefore also he adds, *to Christ*. Then again, having made them confident of his judgment, he states also the gain of such condescension, saying, *that I might gain them that are without law*. And every where he brings forward the cause of his condescension, and stops not even here, but says,

V. 22. *To the weak also became I as weak, that I might gain the weak*: in this part coming to their case, with a view to which also all these things have been spoken. However, those were much greater things, but this more to the purpose; whence also he hath placed it after them. Indeed he did the same thing likewise in his Epistle to the Romans, when he was finding fault about meats; and so in many other places.

Next, not to waste time by naming all severally, he saith, *I am made all things to all men, that I might by all means save some*.

Seest thou how far it is carried? *I am made all things to all men*, not expecting, however, to save all, but that I may save though it be but a few. And so great care and service have I undergone, as one naturally would who was about saving all, far however from hoping to gain all: which was truly magnanimous<sup>1</sup>, and a proof of burning zeal. Since likewise the sower sowed every where, and saved not all the seed, <sup>μὴ γὰρ</sup> notwithstanding he did his part. And having mentioned the fewness of those who are saved, again, adding, *by all means*, he consoled those to whom this was a grief. For though it be not possible that all the seed should be saved, nevertheless it cannot be that all should perish. Wherefore he said, *by all means*, because one so ardently zealous must certainly have some success.

V. 23. *And I do all things<sup>2</sup> for the Gospel's sake, that I<sup>3</sup> <sup>ταῦτα,</sup> may be fellow-partaker thereof.* <sup>rec.text</sup>

That is, that I may seem also myself to have added some contribution of mine own, and may partake of the crowns laid up for the faithful. For as he spake of *living of the Gospel*; i. e. of the believers; so also here, *that I might be fellow-partaker in the Gospel*, "that I might be able to partake with them that have believed in the Gospel." Do you

HOMIL. perceive his humility, how in the recompense of rewards he  
XXII. places himself as one of the many, though he had exceeded all in his labours? whence it is evident, that he would in his reward also. Nevertheless, he claims not to enjoy the first prize, but is content, if so be he may partake with the others in the crowns laid up for them. But these things he said, not because he did this for any reward, but that hereby at least he might draw them on, and by these hopes might induce them to do all things for their brethren's sake. Seest thou his wisdom? Seest thou the excellency of his perfection? how he wrought beyond the things commanded, not receiving, when it was lawful to receive. Seest thou the exceeding greatness of his condescension? how he that was *under the law to Christ*, and kept that highest law, *to them that were without law*, was *as one without law*, to the Jews, as a Jew, in either kind shewing himself preeminent, and surpassing all.

[6.] This also do thou, and think not, being eminent, that thou lowerest thyself, when, for thy brother's sake, thou submittest to some abasement. For this is not to fall, but to descend. For he who falls, lies prostrate, hardly to be raised up again; but he who descends, shall also rise again with much advantage. As also Paul descended indeed alone, but ascended with the whole world: not acting a part, for he would not have sought the gain of them that are saved, had he been acting. Since the hypocrite seeks men's perdition, and feigns, that he may receive, not that he may give. But the apostle not so: as a physician rather, as a teacher, as a father, the one to the sick, the other to the disciple, the other to the son, condescends for his correction, not for his hurt; so likewise did he.

- (4.) To shew that the things which have been stated were not pretence; in a case where he is not compelled to do or say any such thing, but means to express his affection and his confidence; hear him saying<sup>1</sup>, *neither life, nor death, nor angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come, nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature, shall be able to separate us from the love<sup>2</sup> which is in Christ Jesus our Lord*. Seest thou a love more ardent than fire? So let us also love Christ. For indeed it is easy, if we will. For neither

<sup>1</sup> Rom.  
8. 39.

<sup>2</sup> ἡ ἀγάπη  
ἐν Χριστῷ Ἰησοῦ.



was the Apostle such by nature. On this account, you see, his <sup>1<sup>st</sup> 1 Tim. 9.</sup> former life was recorded, so contrary to this, that we may <sup>23.</sup> learn that the work is of free will, and that to the willing all things are easy.

Let us not then despair, but even though thou be a reviler, or covetous, or whatsoever thou art, consider that Paul was <sup>1<sup>st</sup> 1 Tim. 1. 13, 16.</sup> a blasphemer, and persecutor, and injurious, and the chief of sinners, and suddenly rose to the very summit of virtue, and his former life proved no hindrance to him. And yet none with so great frenzy clings to vice, as he did to the war against the Church. For at that time he put his very life into it; and because he had not ten thousand hands, that he might stone Stephen with all of them, he was vexed. Notwithstanding, even thus he found how he might stone him with more hands, to wit, those of the false witnesses, whose clothes he kept. And again, when he entered into houses, like a wild beast and no otherwise did he rush in, haling, tearing men and women, filling all things with tumult and confusion, and innumerable conflicts. For instance, so terrible was he, that the Apostles<sup>s</sup>, even after his most glorious change, did not <sup>2<sup>nd</sup> Acts 9. 26.</sup> yet venture to join themselves to him. Nevertheless, after all those things he became such as he was: for I need not say more.

[7.] Where now are they who build up the necessity of fate against the freedom of the will? Let them hear these things, and let their mouths be stopped. For there is nothing to hinder him that willeth to become good, even though before he should be one of the vilest. And in fact we are more aptly disposed that way, inasmuch as virtue is agreeable to our nature, and vice contrary to it, even as sickness and health. For God hath given us eyes, not that we may look wantonly, but that, admiring his handy-work, we may worship the Creator. And that this is the use of our eyes, is evident from the things which are seen. For the lustre of the sun and of the sky we see from an immeasurable distance, but a woman's beauty one cannot discern so far off. Seest thou that for this end our eye was chiefly given? Again, he made the ear, that we should entertain not blasphemous words, but saving doctrines. Wherefore you see, when it receives any thing dissonant, both our soul shudders, and our very body

HOMIL. also. *For, saith one<sup>1</sup>, the talk of him that sweareth much,*  
 XXII. *maketh the hair stand upright.* And if we hear any thing  
<sup>1</sup> Eccles. 27. 5. cruel, or merciless, again our flesh creeps; but if any thing  
 decorous and kind, we even exult and rejoice. Again, if our  
 mouth utter base words, it causes us to be ashamed and hide  
 ourselves, but if grave words, it utters them with ease and all  
 freedom. Now for those things which are according to nature  
 no one would blush, but for those which are against nature.  
 And the hands, when they steal, hide themselves, and seek  
 excuses; but if they give alms, they even glory. So that if we  
 will, we have from every side a great inclination towards  
 virtue. But if thou talk to me of the pleasure which arises  
 from vice, consider that this also is a thing which we reap  
 more of from virtue. For to have a good conscience, and to  
 be looked up to by all, and to entertain good hopes, is of all  
 things most pleasant to him that hath seen into the nature of  
 pleasure, even as the reverse is of all things the most grievous  
 to him that knows the nature of pain; such as to be reproached  
 by all, to be accused by our own conscience, to tremble and  
 fear both at the future and the present.

And that what I say may become more evident, let us  
 suppose for argument's sake one man having a wife, yet  
 defiling the marriage-bed of his neighbour, and taking  
 pleasure in this wicked robbery, enjoying his paramour.  
 Then let us again oppose to him another who loves his own  
 spouse. And that the victory may be greater, and more evi-  
 dent, let the man who enjoys his own wife only, have a fancy  
 also for the other, the adulteress, but restrain his passion,  
 and do nothing evil: (although neither is this pure chastity.)  
 However, granting more than is necessary, that you may  
 convince yourself how great is the pleasure of virtue, for this  
 cause have we so framed our story.

- (5.) Now then, having brought them together, let us ask them  
 accordingly, whose is the pleasanter life: and you will hear  
 the one glorying, and exulting in the conquest over his lust:  
 but the other—or rather, there is no need to wait to be  
 informed of any thing by him. For thou shalt see him, though  
 he deny it times without number, more wretched than men  
 in a prison. For he fears and suspects all, both his own  
 wife, and the husband of the adulteress, and the adulteress



himself, and domestics, and friends, and kinsmen, and walls, <sup>1Cor.9.</sup> and shadows, and himself, and what is worst of all, he hath 23. his conscience crying out against him, barking aloud every day. But if he should also bring to mind the judgment-seat of God, he will not be able even to stand. And the pleasure is short: but the pain from it unceasing. For both at even, and in the night, in the desert, and the city, and every where, the accuser haunts him, pointing to a sharpened sword, and the intolerable punishments, and with that terror consuming and wasting him. But the other, the chaste person, is free from all these things, and is at liberty, and with comfort looks upon his wife, his children, his friends, and meets all with unembarrassed eyes. Now if he that is enamoured, but is master of himself, enjoy so great pleasure, he that indulges no such passion, but is truly chaste, what harbour, what calm will be so sweet and serene as the mind which he will attain? And on this account you may see few adulterers, but many chaste persons. But if the former were the pleasanter, it would be preferred by the greater number. And tell me not of the terror of the laws. For this is not that which restrains them, but the excessive unreasonableness, and the fact that the pains of it are more than the pleasures, and the sentence of conscience.

[8.] Such then is the adulterer. Now, if you please, let us bring before you the covetous, laying bare again another lawless passion. For him too we shall see afraid of the same things, and unable to enjoy real pleasure: in that, calling to mind both those whom he hath wronged, and those who sympathize with them, and the public sentence of all concerning himself, he hath ten thousand agitations.

And this is not his only vexation, but not even his beloved object can he enjoy. For such is the way of the covetous; not that they may enjoy, do they possess, but that they may not enjoy. But if this seem to thee a riddle, hear next what is yet worse than this, and more perplexing; that not in this way only are they deprived of the pleasure of their goods, by their not venturing to use them as they would, but also by their never being filled with them, but living in a continual thirst: than which what can be more grievous? But the just man is not so, but is delivered both from trembling, and

HOMIL.  
XXII. hatred, and fear, and this incurable thirst: and as all men curse the one, even so do all men conspire to bless the other: and as the one hath no friend, so hath the other no enemy.

What now, these things being so acknowledged, can be more unpleasing than vice, or more pleasant than virtue? Nay, rather, though we should speak for ever, no one shall be able to represent in discourse either the pain of this, or the pleasure of the other, until we shall experience it. For then shall we find vice more bitter than gall, when we shall have fully tasted the honey of virtue. Not but vice is even now unpleasant, and disgusting and burdensome, and this not even her very votaries gainsay; but when we withdraw from her, then do we more clearly discern the bitterness of her commands. But if the multitude run to her, it is no marvel; since children also oftentimes, choosing things less pleasant, despise those which are more delightful; and the sick for a momentary gratification lose the perpetual and more certain joy. But this comes of the weakness and folly of those who are possessed with any fondness, not of the nature of the things. For it is the virtuous man who lives in pleasure; he who is rich indeed, and free indeed.

But if any one would grant the rest to virtue,—liberty, security, freedom from cares, the fearing no man, the suspecting no man,—but would not grant it pleasure; to laugh, and that heartily, occurs to me, I confess, as the only cause to be taken. For what else is pleasure, but freedom from care, and fear, and despondency, and the not being under the power of any? And whether is in pleasure, tell me, the man in frenzy and convulsions, who is goaded by divers lusts, and is not even himself; or he who is freed from all these waves, and is settled in the love of wisdom, as it were in a harbour? Is it not evident, the latter? But this would seem to be a thing peculiar to virtue. So that vice hath merely the name of pleasure, but of the substance it is destitute. And before the enjoyment, it is madness, not pleasure: but after the enjoyment, straightway this also is extinguished. Now then if neither at the beginning nor afterwards can one discern the pleasure of it, when will it appear, and where?

And that thou mayest more clearly understand what I say, let us try the force of the argument in an example. Now consider.

One is enamoured of a fair and lovely woman: this man as long <sup>1COR.9.</sup> as he cannot obtain his desire, is like unto men beside them- <sup>23.</sup> selves and frantic; but after that he hath obtained it, he hath quenched his appetite. If therefore neither at the beginning doth he feel pleasure, (for the affair is madness,) nor in the end, (for by the indulgence of his lust he cools down his wild fancy,) where after all are we to find it? But our doings are not such, but both at the beginning they are freed from all disturbance, and to the end the pleasure remains in its bloom: nay rather there is no end of our pleasure, nor have our good things a limit, nor is this pleasure ever done away.

Upon all these considerations, then, if we love pleasure, let us lay hold on virtue, that we may win good things both now and hereafter: unto which may we all attain, through the grace and mercy, &c.

## HOMILY XXIII.

---

1 COR. ix. 24.

*Know ye not, that they which run in a race run all, but one receiveth the prize?*

HAVING pointed out the manifold usefulness of condescension, and that this is the highest perfectness, and that he himself having risen higher than all towards perfection, or rather having gone beyond it by declining to receive, descended lower than all again; and having made known to us the times for each of these, both for the perfectness and for the condescension; he touches them more sharply in what follows, covertly intimating that this which was done by them, and which was counted a mark of perfectness, is a kind of superfluous and useless labour. And he saith it not thus out clearly, lest they should become insolent; but the methods of proof employed by him makes this evident.

And having said that they sin against Christ, and destroy the brethren, and are nothing profited by this perfect knowledge, except charity be added; he again proceeds to a common example, and saith,

*Know ye not, that they which run in a race run all, but one receiveth the prize?* Now this he saith, not as though here also one only out of many would be saved; far from it; but to set forth the exceeding diligence which it is our duty to use. For as there, though many descend into the course, not many are crowned, but this befalls one only; and it is not enough to descend into the contest, nor to have anointed one's self and wrestled: so likewise here it is not sufficient to have believed, and to have contended in any way; but unless we have so run, as unto the end to shew ourselves unblameable, and to come near the prize, it will profit us

nothing. For even though thou consider thyself to be perfect 1COR.9.25, 26. according to knowledge, thou shalt not yet attain the whole; which hinting at, he said, *so run, that ye may obtain.* They had not then yet, as it seems, attained. And having said thus, he teaches them also the manner.

Ver. 25. *And every man that striveth for the mastery is temperate in all things.*

What is, *all things*? He doth not abstain from one, and err in another, but he masters entirely gluttony, and lasciviousness, and drunkenness, and all his passions. "For this," saith he, "takes place even in the heathen games. For neither is excess of wine permitted to those who contend at the time of the contest, nor wantonness, lest they should weaken their vigour, nor yet so much as to be busied about any thing else, but separating themselves altogether from all things, they apply themselves to their exercise only." Now if there these things be so, where the crown falls to one, much more here, where the incitement to emulation is more abundant. For here neither is one to be crowned alone, and the rewards also far surpass the labours. Wherefore also he puts it so as to shame them, saying, *Now they do it to obtain a corruptible crown, but we an incorruptible.*

[2.] Ver. 26. *I therefore so run, not as uncertainly.*

Thus having shamed them from those that are without, he next brings forward himself also, which kind of thing is a most excellent method of teaching: and accordingly we find him every where doing so.

But what is, *not as uncertainly*? "Looking to some mark," saith he, "not at random and in vain, as ye do. For what profit have ye of entering into idol-temples, and exhibiting forsooth that perfectness? None. But not such am I, but all things, whatsoever I do, I do for the salvation of my neighbour. Whether I shew forth perfectness, it is for their sake; or condescension, for their sake again: whether I surpass Peter in declining to receive, it is that they may not be offended; or descend lower than all, being circumcised and shaving my head, it is that they may not be subverted. This is, *not uncertainly.* But thou, why dost thou eat in idol-temples, tell me? Nay, thou canst not assign any reasonable cause. For meat commendeth thee not to God; neither if



HOMIL. *thou eat art thou the better, nor if thou eat not art thou the*  
 XXIII. *worse*<sup>1</sup>. Plainly then thou runnest inconsiderately, and at  
 11 Cor. random: for this is, *uncertainly*.  
 8. 8.

*So fight I, not as one that beateth the air.* This he saith, again intimating that he acted not at random, nor in vain. "For I have one at whom I may strike, i. e. the devil. But thou dost not strike him, but rashly throwest away thy strength."

Now so far then, altogether bearing with them, he thus speaks. For since he had dealt somewhat vehemently with them in the preceding part, he now on the contrary keeps back his rebuke, reserving for the end of the discourse the deep wound of all. Since here he only says, that they act at random and in vain; but afterwards signifies, that it is at the risk of no less than utter ruin to their own soul, and that even apart from all injury to their brethren, neither are they themselves guiltless, in daring so to act.

Ver. 27. *But I keep under my body, and bring it into subjection: lest by any means, after that I have preached to others, I myself should be a cast-away.*

Here he implies that they are subject to the very lust of the belly, and give up the reins to it, and under a pretence of perfection fulfil their own greediness; a thought which before also he was travailing to express, when he said, *meats*  
 21 Cor. *for the belly, and the belly for meats*<sup>2</sup>. For since both forni-  
 6. 13. cation is caused by luxury, and it also brought forth idolatry, he naturally oftentimes inveighs against this disease; and pointing out how great things he suffered for the Gospel, he sets this also down among them. "As I went," saith he, "beyond the commands, and this when it was no light matter for me;" (*for we even endure all things*, it is said,) "so also here I submit to much labour, in order to live soberly. Stubborn as appetite is, and the tyranny of the belly, nevertheless I bridle it, and give not myself up to the passion, but endure all labour not to be drawn aside by it."

(2.) For do not, I pray you, suppose, that by taking things easily I arrive at this desirable result. For it is a race, and a manifold struggle<sup>3</sup>, and a tyrannical nature continually rising up against me, and seeking to free itself. But I bear not with it, but keep it down, and bring it into subjection with many

<sup>3</sup> *any-  
negation.*

struggles." Now this he saith, that none may despairingly withdraw from the conflicts in behalf of virtue, because the undertaking is laborious. Wherefore he saith, *I keep under and bring into subjection*. He said not, "I kill:" for the flesh is not to be hated, but, *I keep under and bring into subjection*; which is the part of a master not of an enemy, of a teacher not of a foe, of a schoolmaster not of an adversary.

*Lest by any means, having preached to others, I myself should be a cast-a-way.*

Now if Paul feared this, who had taught so many, and feared it after his preaching and becoming an angel, and undertaking the patronage of the whole world; what can we say?

For "think not," saith he, "because ye have believed, that this is sufficient for your salvation: since if to me neither preaching nor teaching, nor bringing over innumerable persons, is enough for salvation, unless I exhibit my own conduct also unblameable, much less to you."

[8.] Then he comes to other illustrations again. And as above he alleged the examples of the Apostles, and those of common custom, and those of the priests, and his own, so also here those of the Olympic games. And having set down his own conduct, he again proceeds to the histories of the Old Testament. And because what he has to say will be somewhat unpleasing, he makes his exhortation general, and discourses not only concerning the subject before him, but also generally concerning all the evils among the Corinthians. And in the case of the heathen games, *Know ye not?* saith he: but here,

Chap. x. Ver. 1. *Moreover, brethren, I would not that ye should be ignorant.*

Now this he said, implying that they were not very well instructed in these things. And what is this, which thou wouldest not have us ignorant of?

Ver. 1—5. *That all our fathers*, saith he, *were under the cloud, and all passed through the sea, and were all baptized unto Moses in the cloud and in the sea; and did all eat the same spiritual meat, and drink<sup>1</sup> the same spiritual<sup>1</sup> drink; for they drank of a spiritual Rock that followed<sup>om.</sup> them: and that Rock was Christ. But with the more part<sup>2</sup> of them God was not well pleased.*

<sup>1</sup> Cor.  
10, 1.

<sup>2</sup> τοῖς  
πλείστον.

HOMIL.  
XXIII. And wherefore saith he these things? To point out that as they were nothing profited by the enjoyment of so great a gift, so neither these by obtaining Baptism, and partaking of spiritual Mysteries, except they go on and shew forth a life worthy of this grace. Wherefore also he introduces the types, both of Baptism and of the Mysteries.

But what is, *They were baptized into Moses?* Like as we, on our belief in Christ and His resurrection, are baptized, as being destined in our own persons to partake in the same mysteries; for *we are baptized*, saith he, *for the dead*, i. e. for our own bodies; even so they putting confidence in Moses, i. e. having seen him cross first, ventured also themselves into the waters. But because he wishes to bring the Type near the Truth; he speaks it not thus, but uses the terms of the Truth even in the Type.

Further: as this was a symbol of the Font, so that which follows, of the Holy Table. For as thou eatest the Lord's Body, so they the manna: and as thou drinkest the Blood, so they water from a rock. For though they were things of sense which were produced, yet were they spiritually exhibited, not according to the order of nature, but according to the gracious intention of the gift, and together with the body nourished also the soul, leading it unto faith. On this account, you see, touching the food he made no remark, for it was extraordinary, not in mode only, but in nature also; (for it was manna;) but respecting the drink, since the manner only of the supply was extraordinary, and required proof, therefore having said that *they drank the same spiritual drink*, he added, *for they drank of a spiritual Rock that followed them*, and he subjoined, *and that Rock was Christ*. For it was not the nature of the rock which sent forth the water, (such is his meaning,) else would it as well have gushed out before this time: but another sort of Rock, a spiritual One, performed the whole, even Christ, who was every where with them, and wrought all the wonders. For on this account he said, *that followed them*.

Perceivest thou the wisdom of Paul, how in both cases he points out Him as the Giver, and thereby brings the Type nigh to the Truth? "For He who set those things before them," saith he, "the same also hath prepared this our Table:

and the same Person both brought them through the sea, and <sup>1</sup> *Cor.* thee through Baptism; and before them set manna, but before 10, 8. thee His Body and Blood."

[4.] As touching His gift then, such is the case: now let us observe also what follows, and consider, whether when they shewed themselves unworthy of the gift, He spared them. Nay, this thou canst not say. Wherefore also he added, *But with most of them God was not well-pleased*; although He had honoured them with so great honour. Yea, it profited them nothing, but most of them perished. The truth is, they all perished, but that he might not seem to prophesy total destruction to these also, therefore he said, *the more part*. And yet they were innumerable; but their number profited them nothing: and these were all so many tokens of love; but not even did this profit them, inasmuch as they did not themselves shew forth the fruits of love.

Thus, since most men disbelieve the things said of hell, as not being in presence nor in sight; he alleges the things heretofore done as an indication, that God doth punish all who sin, even though He have bestowed innumerable benefits upon them: "for if ye disbelieve the things to come," so he speaks, "yet surely the things that are past ye will not disbelieve." Consider, for example, how great benefits He (3.) bestowed on them: from Egypt and the slavery there He set them free, the sea He made their path, from heaven He brought down manna, from beneath He sent forth strange and marvellous fountains of waters; He was with them every where, doing wonders, and fencing them in on every side: nevertheless, since they shewed forth nothing worthy of this gift, He spared them not, but destroyed them all.

Ver. 5. *For they were overthrown*, saith he, *in the wilderness*. Declaring by this word both the sweeping destruction, and the punishments, and the vengeance inflicted by God, and that they did not so much as attain to the rewards set immediately before them. Neither were they in the land of promise when He did these things unto them, but without and afar somewhere, and wide of that country; He thus visiting them with a double vengeance, both by not permitting them to see the land, and this too though promised unto them, and also by actual severe punishment.



**HOMIL.** And what are these things to us? say you. To thee surely  
**XXIII.** they belong. Wherefore also he adds,

Ver. 6. *Now these things were figures of us*¹.

For as the gifts are figures, even so are the punishments figures: and as Baptism and the Table were sketched out prophetically, so also by what ensued, the certainty of punishment coming on those who are unworthy of this gift was proclaimed beforehand for our sake, that we by these examples might learn soberness. Wherefore also he adds,

*To the intent we should not lust after evil things, as they also lusted.* For as in the benefits the types went before, and the substance followed, such shall be the order also in the punishments. Seest thou how he signifies, not only the fact, that these shall be punished, but also the degree, more severely than those ancients? For if the one be type, and the other substance, it must needs be, that the punishments should as far exceed as the gifts.

And see against whom he inveighs first: against those who eat in the idol-temples. For having said, *that we should not lust after evil things*, which was general, he subjoins that which is particular, implying that each of their sins arose from evil lusting. And first he said this,

Ver. 7. Neither be ye idolaters, as were some of them; as it is written, 'the people sat down to eat and to drink, and rose up to play.'

Do you hear how at length he even calls them *idolaters*? here indeed making the declaration, but afterwards bringing the proof. And he assigned the cause too, wherefore they ran to those tables; and this was gluttony. Wherefore having said, *to the intent that we should not lust after evil things*, and having added, *nor be idolaters*, he names the cause of such transgression; and this was gluttony. *For the people sat down*, saith he, *to eat and to drink*, and he adds the end thereof, *they rose up to play*. “For even as they,” saith he, “from sensuality passed into idolatry; so there is a fear lest ye also may fall from the one into the other.” Do you see how he signifies that these, perfect men forsooth, were more imperfect than the others? And he was striking at them, not in this respect only, their not bearing with their brethren throughout, but also in that the one sin from ignorance, but the



others from gluttony. And the ruin of the former he <sup>1 Cor.</sup> imputes to these, for punishment, but allows not these to <sup>10. 9.</sup> lay upon another the cause of their own sin, but pronounces them responsible both for their injury, and for their own.

*Neither let us commit fornication, as some of them committed.* Wherefore doth he here make mention of fornication again, having so largely discoursed concerning it before? It is ever Paul's custom, when he brings a charge of many sins, both to set them forth in order, and separately to proceed with his proposed topics, and again in his discourses concerning other things to make mention also of the former: which thing God also used to do in the Old Testament, in reference to each several transgression, reminding the Jews of the calf, and bringing that sin before them. This then, you see, Paul also does here, at the same time both reminding them of that sin, and teaching that the parent of this evil also was luxury and gluttony. Wherefore also he adds, *Neither let us commit fornication, as some of them committed, and fell in one day three and twenty thousand.*

And wherefore names he not likewise the punishment for their idolatry? Is it because it was clear and more notorious? or because the plague was not so great at that time, as in the matter of Balaam, when they joined themselves to Baalpeor, the Midianitish women appearing in the camp, and alluring them to wantonness according to the counsel of Balaam? For that this evil counsel was Balaam's, Moses sheweth after this, in the following statement at the end of the Book of Numbers. "Balaam also the son of Beor <sup>1 Numb. 31. 8, 11,</sup> they slew in the war of Midian with the women, and brought <sup>15, 16,</sup> the spoils. . . . And Moses was wroth, and said, Wherefore <sup>in our translation.</sup> have ye saved all the women alive? For these were to the children of Israel for a stumbling-block, according to the word of Balaam, to cause them to depart from and despise the word of the Lord for Peor's sake."

Ver. 9. *Neither let us tempt Christ, as some of them also tempted, and were destroyed of serpents.*

By this he again hints at another charge, which he likewise <sup>(4.)</sup> states at the end, blaming them because they contended about signs, and murmured on account of temptations, saying,

HOMIL. "when will the good things come? when the rewards?"  
 XXIII. Wherefore also he adds, on this account correcting and alarming them,

Ver. 10. *Neither murmur ye, as some of them also murmured, and were destroyed of the destroyer.*

For what is required is, not only to suffer for Christ, but also nobly to bear the things that come on us, and with all gladness: since this is the nature of every crown. Yea, and unless this be so, punishment rather will attend men, taking calamity with a bad grace. Wherefore, both the Apostles when they were beaten rejoiced, and Paul gloried in his sufferings.

[5.] Ver. 11. *Now all these things happened unto them for ensamples<sup>1</sup>; and they were written for our admonition, upon whom the ends of the world are come.*

Again he terrifies them, speaking of the *ends*, and prepares them to expect things greater than had already taken place. "For that we shall suffer punishment, is manifest," saith he, "from what hath been said, even to those who disbelieve the statements concerning hell-fire; but that the punishment also will be more severe, is evident, from the more numerous blessings which we have enjoyed, and from the things of which those were but figures. Since, if in the gifts one go beyond the other, it is most evident that so it will be in the punishment likewise." For this cause he both called them types, and said that they were *written for us*, and made mention of an *end*, that he might remind them of the consummation of all things. For not such will be the penalties then, as to admit of a termination, and be done away, but the chastisement will be eternal; for even as the punishments in this world are ended with the present life, so those in the next continually remain. But when he said, *the ends of the world*, he means nothing else, but that the fearful judgment is henceforth nigh at hand.

Ver. 12. *Wherefore let him that thinketh he standeth take heed lest he fall.*

Again, he casts down their pride who thought highly of their knowledge. For if they who had so great privileges suffered such things; and some for murmuring alone were visited with such punishment, and others for tempting, and

<sup>1</sup> *examples*, by way of type.  
 ed. text.

neither their multitude moved God to repent<sup>1</sup>, nor their having attained to such things; much more shall it be so in our case, except we be sober. And well said he, *he that thinketh he standeth*: for this is not even standing as one ought to stand, to rely on yourself: for quickly will such an one fall: since they too, had they not been high-minded and self-confident, but of a subdued frame of mind, would not have suffered these things. Whence it is evident, that boasting first of all, and carelessness afterwards, and gluttony, are the sources of these evils. Wherefore even though thou stand, yet take heed lest thou fall. For our standing here is not secure standing, no not until we be delivered out of the waves of this present life, and have sailed into that tranquil haven. Be not therefore high-minded at thy standing, but guard against thy falling; for if Paul feared, who was firmer than all, much more ought we to fear.

[6.] Now the Apostle's word, as we have seen, was, *Wherefore let him that thinketh he standeth take heed lest he fall*; but we cannot say even this; all of us, so to speak, having fallen, and lying prostrate on the ground. For to whom am I to say this? To him that committeth extortion every day? Nay, he lies prostrate with a mighty fall. To the fornicator? He too is cast down to the ground. To the drunkard? He also is fallen, and knoweth not even that he is fallen. So that it is not the season for this word, but for that saying of the prophet, which he spake to the Jews also, <sup>2</sup>*He that falleth,* <sup>3</sup>*Jer. 8.* *doth he not rise again?* For all are fallen, and to rise again<sup>4</sup> they have no mind. So that our exhortation is not concerning the not falling, but concerning the ability of them that are fallen to arise. Let us rise again then, late though it be, beloved, let us rise again, and let us stand nobly. How long do we lie prostrate? How long are we drunken, besotted with the excessive desire of the things of this life? It is a meet opportunity now to say, <sup>5</sup>*To whom shall I speak* <sup>6</sup>*Jer. 6.* *and give warning?* So deaf are all men become even to the very instruction of wisdom, and thence filled with abundance of evils. And were it possible to discern their souls naked; as in armies when the battle is ended, one may behold some dead, and some wounded, so also in the Church we might see. Wherefore I beseech and implore you, let us stretch



HOMIL. out a hand to each other, and throughly raise ourselves up.  
XXIII. For I myself am one of them that are smitten, and require one to apply some remedies.

Do not however despair on this account. For what if the wounds be severe? yet are they not incurable; such is our physician: only let us feel our wounds. Although we be arrived at the very extreme of wickedness, many are the ways of safety which He strikes out for us. Thus, if thou forbear to be angry with thy neighbour, thine own sins shall be forgiven. *For if ye forgive men*, saith He, <sup>1</sup>Mat. 6. *your heavenly Father will also forgive you*<sup>1</sup>. And if thou <sup>14.</sup> give alms, He will remit thee thy sins; for *break off thy* <sup>2</sup>Dan. 4. *sins*, saith He, *by alms*<sup>2</sup>. And if thou pray earnestly, thou <sup>24.</sup> shalt enjoy forgiveness: and this the widow signifieth, who prevailed upon that cruel judge by the importunity of her prayer. And if thou accuse thine own sins, thou hast relief: for *declare thou thine iniquities first, that thou* <sup>3</sup>Is. 49. *mayest be justified*<sup>3</sup>; and if thou art sorrowful on account of <sup>26.</sup> these things, this too will be to thee a powerful remedy: *for I have seen*, saith He, *that he was grieved, and went* <sup>4</sup>Is. 57. *sorrowful, and I have healed his ways*<sup>4</sup>. And if, when thou <sup>17.</sup> sufferest any evil, thou bear it nobly, thou hast put away the whole. For this also did Abraham say to the rich man, that *Lazarus received his evil things, and here he is comforted*. And if thou hast pity on the widow, thy sins are washed away. For, *Judge*, saith He, *the orphan, and plead for the widow, and come, and let us reason together*, saith the Lord. *And if your sins be as scarlet, I will make them white as snow; and if they be as crimson, I will make them white as* <sup>5</sup>Is. 1. *wool*<sup>5</sup>. For not even a single scar of the wounds doth He suffer <sup>17.</sup> to appear. <sup>(5.)</sup> Yea, and though we be come to that depth of misery into which he fell, who devoured his father's substance, and fed upon husks, and should repent, we are undoubtedly saved. And though we owe ten thousand talents, if we fall down before God and bear no malice, all things are forgiven us. Although we have wandered away to that place whither the sheep strayed from his keeper, even thence He recovers us again: only let us be willing, beloved. For God is merciful. Wherefore both in the case of him that owed ten thousand talents, He was content with His falling down before Him

and in the case of him who had devoured his father's goods, <sup>1 Cor.</sup> with his return only, and in the case of the sheep, with its <sup>10. 12.</sup> willingness to be borne.

[7.] Considering therefore the greatness of His mercy, let us here make Him propitious unto us, and let us come before His face by a public confession, that we may not depart hence without excuse, and have to endure that extreme punishment. For if in the present life we exhibit even an ordinary diligence, we shall gain the greatest rewards: but if we depart having become nothing better here, even though we repent ever so earnestly there, it will do us no good. For it was our duty to have striven while yet remaining within the lists, not after the assembly was broken up idly to lament and weep: as that rich man did, bewailing and deploring himself, but to no purpose now and in vain, since he overlooked the time in which he ought to have done these things. And not he alone, but many others there are like him now among the rich; not willing to despise wealth, but despising their own souls for wealth's sake: at whom I cannot but wonder, when I see men continually interceding with God for mercy, whilst they are implacably set against their own good, and unsparing of their very soul, as if it were an enemy. Let us not then trifle, beloved, let us not trifle, nor delude ourselves, beseeching God to have mercy upon us, whilst we ourselves prefer both money and luxury, and, in fact, all things to this mercy. For neither, if any one brought before thee a case, and said in accusation of such an one, that being to suffer ten thousand deaths, and having it in his power to rid himself of the sentence by a little money, he chose rather to die, than to give up any of his property, would you say that he was worthy of any mercy or compassion. Now in this same way do thou also reason touching thyself. For we too act in this way, and making light of our own salvation, we are sparing of our money. How then dost thou beseech God to spare thee, when thou thyself art so unsparing of thyself, and honourest money above thy soul?

Wherefore also I am greatly astonished to see, how great witchery lies hid in wealth, or rather not in wealth, but

\* Or "doing themselves incurable harm," qu. *incurabiles*.



HOMIL. in the souls of those that are beguiled. For there are, there  
 XXIII. are those that utterly deride this sorcery<sup>1</sup>. For which among  
 the things therein is really capable of bewitching us? Is it  
 not inanimate matter? is it not transitory? is not the  
 possession thereof unworthy of trust? is it not full of fears  
 and dangers? nay, of murders and conspiracy? of enmity  
 and hatred? of carelessness and much vice? is it not dust  
 and ashes? what madness have we here? what disease?

"But," say you, "we ought not merely to bring such  
 accusations against those that are so diseased, but also to  
 destroy the passion." And in what other way shall we  
 destroy it, except by pointing out its baseness, and how full  
 it is of innumerable evils?

But of this it is not easy to persuade a lover concerning the  
 objects of his love. Well then, we must set full in his view  
 another sort of beauty. But incorporeal beauty he sees not,  
 being yet in his disease. Well then, let us shew him some  
 beauty of a corporeal kind, and say to him, Consider the  
 meadows and the flowers therein, which are more sparkling  
 than any gold, and more elegant and transparent than all  
 kinds of precious stones. Consider the limpid streams from  
 their fountains, the streams which like oil flow noiselessly out  
 of the earth. Ascend to heaven, and behold the lustre of the  
 sun, the beauty of the moon, the stars that cluster like  
 flowers<sup>2</sup>. "Why, what is this," say you, "since we do not,  
 I suppose, make use of them as of wealth?" Nay, we use  
 them more than wealth, inasmuch as the use thereof is more  
 needful, the enjoyment more secure. For thou hast no fear,  
 lest, like money, any one should take them and go off with  
 them: but you may be ever confident of having them, and  
 that without anxiety or care. But if thou grieve, because  
 thou enjoyest them in common with others, and dost not  
 possess them alone like money; it is not money, but mere  
 covetousness, which thou seemest to me to be in love with:  
 nor would even the money be an object of thy desire, if it  
 had been placed within reach of all in common.

[8.] Therefore, since we have found the beloved object, I  
 mean Covetousness, come let me shew thee how she hates  
 and abhors thee, how many swords she sharpens against thee,  
 how many pits she digs, how many nooses she ties, how

<sup>2</sup> τῶν  
 ἀστέρων  
 τὰ ἀντὶ.

many precipices she prepares; that thus at any rate thou mayest do away with the charm. Whence then are we to obtain this knowledge? From the highways, from the wars, from the sea, from the courts of justice. For she hath both filled the sea with blood, and the swords of the judges she often dyes with blood contrary to law, and arms those who on the highways lie in wait day and night, and persuades men to forget nature, and makes parricides, and murderers of mothers, and introduces all sorts of evils into man's life. Which is the reason why Paul entitles her *the root of evil*<sup>1</sup>. (6.) She suffers not her lovers to be in any better condition than those who work in the mines. For as they, perpetually shut up in darkness, and in chains, labour unprofitably; so also these buried in the caves of avarice, no one using any force with them, voluntarily draw their punishment on themselves, binding on them fetters that cannot be broken. And those condemned to the mines, at least when even comes on, are released from their toils; but these both by day and night are digging in these wretched mines. And to those there is a definite limit of that hard labour, but these know no limit, but the more they dig, so much the greater hardship do they desire. And what if those do it unwillingly, but these with their will? in that thou tellest me of the grievous part of the disease, that it is even impossible for them to be rid of it, since they do not so much as hate their wretchedness. But as a swine in mud, so also do these delight to wallow in the noisome mire of avarice, suffering worse things than those condemned ones. As to the fact, that they are in a worse condition, hear the circumstances of the one, and then thou wilt know the state of the other.

Now it is said, that that soil which is impregnated with gold has certain dens and recesses in those gloomy caverns. The malefactor then condemned to labour in that place, taking for that purpose a lamp and a spade, so, we are told, enters within, and carries with him a cruise, to drop oil from thence into the lamp, because there is darkness even by day, without a ray of light, as I said before. Then when the time of day calls him to his wretched meal, himself, they say, is ignorant of the time, but his jailor from above striking violently on the cave, by that clattering sound

<sup>1</sup> Cor.  
10. 12.

<sup>1</sup> 1 Tim.  
6. 10.

HOMIL. declares to those who are at work below the end of the XXIII. day.

Do ye not shudder when ye hear all this? Let us see now, whether there be not things more grievous than these in the case of the covetous. For these too, in the first place, have a severer jailor, viz. avarice, and so much severer, as that together with their body he chains also their soul. And this darkness also is more awful than that. For it is not subject to sense, but producing it within, whithersoever they go, they carry it all about with themselves. For the eye of their soul is put out: which is the reason why more than all Christ calls them wretched, saying, *But if the light that is in thee be darkness, how great is that darkness*<sup>1</sup>. And they for their part have at least a lamp shining, but these are deprived even of this beam of light; and therefore every day they fall into countless pitfalls. And the condemned, when night overtakes them, have a respite, sailing into that calm port which is common to all the unfortunate, I mean the night: but against the covetous even this harbour is blocked up by their own avarice: such grievous thoughts have they even at night, since then, without disturbance from any one, at full leisure they cut themselves to pieces.

<sup>1</sup> S. MAT.  
6. 23.

Such are their circumstances in this world; but those in the next, what discourse shall exhibit? the intolerable furnaces, the rivers burning with fire, the gnashing of teeth, the chains never to be loosed, the envenomed worm, the rayless gloom, the never-ending miseries. Let us fear them, beloved, let us fear the fountain of so great punishments, the insatiate madness, the destroyer of our salvation. For it is impossible at the same time both to love money, and your soul. Let us be convinced that wealth is dust and ashes, that it leaves us when we depart hence, or rather that even before our departure it oftentimes darts away from us, and injures us both in regard of the future, and in respect of the present life. For before hell fire, and before that punishment, even here it surrounds us with innumerable wars, and stirs up strifes and contests. For nothing is so apt to cause war, as avarice: nothing so apt to produce beggary, whether it shew itself in wealth, or in poverty. For in the souls of poor men also this grievous disease ariseth, and wears their poverty still barer.

And if there be found a poor covetous man, such an one <sup>1 Cor.</sup> suffers not punishment in money, but in hunger. For he <sup>10. 12.</sup> allows not himself to enjoy his moderate means with comfort, but both racks his belly with hunger, and punishes his whole body with nakedness and cold, and every where appears more squalid and dirty than any prisoners; and is always wailing and lamenting, as though he were more wretched than all, though there be ten thousand poorer than he. This man, whether he go into the market-place, goes away with many a stripe; or into the bath, or into the theatre, he will still be receiving more wounds, not only from the spectators, but also from those upon the stage, where he beholds not a few of the unchaste women glittering in gold. This man again, whether he sail upon the sea, regarding the merchants, and their richly-freighted ships, and their enormous profits, will not even count himself to live: or whether he travel by land, reckoning up the fields, the suburban farms, the inns, the baths, the revenues arising out of them, his own life will thenceforth seem to him not to be endured as life; or whether thou shut him up at home, he will but rub and fret the wounds received in the market, and so by himself do greater despite to his own soul: and he knows only one consolation for the evils which oppress him; death and deliverance from this life.

And these things not the poor man only, but the rich also, will suffer, who falls into this disease, and so much more than the poor, inasmuch as the tyranny presses more vehemently on him, and the intoxication is greater. Wherefore also he will account himself poorer than all; or rather, he is poorer. For riches and poverty are determined not by the measure of the substance, but by the disposition of the mind: and he rather is the poorest of all, who is always hankering after more, and is never able to stay this wicked lust.

On all these accounts then let us flee covetousness, the maker of beggars, the destroyer of souls, the friend of hell, the enemy of the kingdom of heaven, the mother of all evils together; and let us despise wealth that we may enjoy wealth, and with wealth may enjoy also the good things promised to us; unto which may we all attain, &c.



## HOMILY XXIV.

---

1 COR. x. 13.

*There hath no temptation taken you, but such as is common to man: but God is faithful, Who will not suffer you to be tempted above that ye are able; but will with the temptation also make a way to escape, that ye may be able to bear it.*

Thus, because he hath terrified them greatly, relating the ancient examples, and thrown them into an agony, saying, *Let him that thinketh he standeth, take heed lest he fall*; though they had borne many temptations, and had exercised themselves many times therein; for *I was with you*, saith he, <sup>1 1 Cor. 2. 3.</sup> *in weakness, and in fear, and in much trembling*<sup>1</sup>: lest they should say, "Why terrify and alarm us? we are not unexercised in these troubles, for we have been both chased, and persecuted, and many and continual dangers have we endured:" repressing again their pride, he says, *there hath no temptation taken you but such as is common to man*, i. e. small, brief, moderate. For he uses the expression *common to man*<sup>2</sup>, in respect of what is small; as when he says, *I speak after the manner of men, because of the infirmity of your flesh*<sup>3</sup>. "Think not then great things," saith he, "as though ye had overcome the storm. For never have ye seen a danger threatening death, nor a temptation intending slaughter:" which also he said to the Hebrews, *ye have not yet resisted unto blood, striving against sin*<sup>4</sup>.

Then, because he hath terrified them, see how again he raises them up, at the same time recommending moderation; in the words, *God is faithful, Who will not suffer you to be*



tempted above that ye are able. There are therefore temptations, which we are not able to bear. And what are these? 1 Cor. 10. 16.

All, so to speak. For the ability lies in God turning the scale; a power which we draw down by our own will. Wherefore that thou mayest know and see, that not only those which exceed our power, but not even these which are common to man, is it possible without assistance from God easily to bear, he added,

*But will with the temptation also make a way to escape, that ye may be able to bear it.*

For, saith he, not even those moderate temptations, as I was remarking, may we bear by our own power; but even in them we require aid from Him in our warfare, that we may pass through them, and until we have passed, bear them. For He gives patience, and brings on a speedy release; so that in this way also, the temptation becomes bearable. This he covertly intimates, saying, *will also make a way to escape, that ye may be able to bear it*: and all things he refers to Him.

[2.] Ver. 14. *Wherefore, my brethren<sup>1</sup>, flee from idolatry.* 1 Adm. <sup>pal, rec.</sup> text <sup>ἀγνοῦν- vol.</sup>

Again he courts them by the name of kindred, and urges them to be rid of this sin with all speed. For he did not say, simply, depart, but *flee*; and he calls the matter *idolatry*, and no longer bids them quit it merely on account of the injury to their neighbour, but signifies that the very thing of itself is sufficient to bring a great destruction.

Ver. 15. *I speak as unto wise men: judge ye what I say.*

Because he hath cried out aloud, and heightened the accusation, calling it idolatry; that he might not seem to exasperate them, and to make his speech disgusting, in what follows he refers the decision to them, and sets his judges down on their tribunal with an encomium. *For I speak as unto wise men*, saith he: which is the mark of one very confident of his own rights, that he should make the accused himself the judge of his allegations.

Thus also he more elevates the hearer, when he discourses not as commanding, nor as laying down the law, but as advising with them, and as actually pleading before them. For with the Jews, as more foolishly and childishly disposed, God did not so discourse, nor did He in every

HOMIL.  
XXIV. instance acquaint them with the reasons of the commands, but merely enjoined them; but here, because we have the privilege of great liberty, we are even admitted to be counsellors. And he discourses as with friends, and says, "I need no other judges, do ye yourselves pass this sentence upon me, I take you for arbiters."

[3.] Ver. 16. *The cup of blessing which we bless, is it not the communion of the Blood of Christ?*

What sayest thou, O blessed Paul? When thou wouldest appeal to the hearer's reverence, when thou art making mention of awful mysteries, dost thou give the title of *cup of blessing* to that fearful and most tremendous cup? "Yea," saith he; "and no mean title is that which was spoken. For when I call it *blessing*, I unfold all the treasure of God's goodness, and call to mind those mighty gifts." Since we too, recounting over the cup the unspeakable mercies of God, and all that we have been made partakers of, so proceed to offer it, and to communicate; giving Him thanks, that He hath delivered from error the whole race of mankind; that being afar off, He made them nigh; that when they had no hope, and were without God in the world, He appointed them His own brethren and fellow-heirs. For these, and for all such things, giving thanks, thus we approach. "How then are not your doings inconsistent," saith he, "O ye Corinthians; blessing God, for delivering you from idols, yet running again to their tables?"

*The cup of blessing which we bless, is it not the communion of the Blood of Christ?* Very persuasively spake he, and awfully. For what he says is this: "This which is in the cup, is that which flowed from His side, and of that do we partake." But he called it the cup of blessing, because holding it in our hands, we so proceed to exalt Him in our hymn, wondering, astonished at His unspeakable gift, blessing Him, among other things, for the pouring out of this self-same draught, that we might not abide in error: and not only for the

"When we had fallen away, Thou didst raise us again, and didst not cease doing all things, until Thou hadst brought us up to Heaven, and given unto us freely Thy future Kingdom." Liturgy of St. Chrysostom. Ed. Savile. ii. 896. "When we had fallen from

our eternal life, and were exiled from the Paradise of delight, Thou didst not cast us off to the end, but didst visit us continually," &c. Lit. of St. Basil, t. ii. 677: and so in all the old Liturgies: vid. Brett's Collection.

pouring it out, but also for the imparting thereof to us all. <sup>1 Cor. 10. 17.</sup>  
“Wherefore if thou desire blood,” saith He, “redde[n] not the altar of idols with the slaughter of brute beasts, but My altar with My blood.” Tell me, what can be more tremendous than this? What more tenderly kind? This also lovers do. When they see those whom they love desiring what belongs to strangers, and despising their own, they give what belongs to themselves, and so persuade them to withdraw themselves from the gifts of those others. Lovers, however, display this liberality in goods, and money, and garments, but in blood none ever did so. Whereas Christ even herein exhibited His care and fervent love for us. And in the old covenant, because they were in an imperfect state, the blood, which they used to offer to idols, He Himself submitted to receive, that He might separate them from those idols; which very thing again was a proof of His unspeakable affection: but here He hath transferred the sacred office to that which is far more awful and glorious, changing the very sacrifice itself, and instead of the slaughter of irrational creatures, commanding to offer up Himself.

[4.] *The bread which we break, is it not the communion of the Body of Christ?* Wherefore said he not, the participation? Because he intended to express something more, and to point out how close was the union: in that we communicate not only by participating and partaking, but also by being united. For as that body is united to Christ, so also are we united to Him by this bread.

But why adds he also, *which we break*? For although in the Eucharist one may see this done, yet on the cross not so, but the very contrary. For, *A bone of Him*, saith one, *shall not be broken*. But that which He suffered not on the cross, this He suffers in the oblation for thy sake, and submits to be broken, that He may fill all men.

Further, because he said, *the communion of the Body*, and that which communicates is another thing from that whereof it communicates; even this, which seemeth to be but a small difference, he took away. For having said, *the communion of the Body*, he sought again to express something nearer. Wherefore also he added,

Ver. 17. *For we being many are one bread, one body.*  
“For why speak I of communion?” saith he, “we are that



HOMIL. self-same body." For what is the bread? The Body of  
 XXIV. Christ. And what do they become who partake of it? The  
 Body of Christ: not many bodies, but one body. For as the  
 bread consisting of many grains is made one, so that the grains  
 no where appear; they exist indeed, but their difference is not  
 seen, by reason of their conjunction; so are we conjoined both  
 with each other and with Christ: there not being one body  
 for thee, and another for thy neighbour to be nourished by,  
 but the very same for all. Where also he adds,

*For we are all partakers of that one bread.* Now if we are  
 all nourished of the same, and all become the same, why do  
 we not also shew forth the same love, and become also in  
 this respect one? For this was the old way too in the time  
 of our forefathers: *for the multitude of them that believed,*  
 1 Acts 4. saith the text, *were of one heart and of one soul*<sup>1</sup>. Not so,  
 32. however, now, but altogether the reverse. Many and various  
 are the contests betwixt all, and worse than wild beasts are  
 we affected towards each other's members. And Christ  
 indeed made thee, so far remote, one with Himself: but  
 thou dost not deign to be united even to thy brother with  
 due exactness, but separatest thyself, having had the privilege  
 of so great love and life from the Lord. For he gave not  
 simply even His own body; but because the former nature  
 of the flesh, which was framed out of earth, had first become  
 deadened by sin, and destitute of life; He brought in, as one  
 may say, another sort of dough and leaven, His own flesh, by  
 nature indeed the same, but free from sin, and full of life;  
 and gave to all to partake thereof, that being nourished by  
 this, and laying aside the old dead material, we might be  
 blended together unto the eternal life, by means of this  
 table.

[5.] Ver. 18. *Behold Israel after the flesh: are not they  
 which eat of the sacrifices partakers of the altar?*

Again, from the old covenant, he leads them unto this point  
 also. For because they were far beneath the greatness of the  
 things which had been spoken, he persuades them both from  
 former things, and from those to which they were accustomed.  
 And he says well, *according to the flesh*, as though they them-  
 selves were according to the Spirit. And what he says is of  
 this nature: "even from persons of the grosser sort ye may be

instructed, that *they who eat of the sacrifices, are partakers of the altar.*" Dost thou see how he intimates, that they 1 Cor. 10. 20. who seemed to be perfect have not perfect knowledge, if they know not even this, that the result of these sacrifices to many oftentimes is a certain communion and friendship with devils, the practice drawing them on by degrees? For if among men the fellowship of salt<sup>b</sup> and the table becomes an occasion and token of friendship, it is possible that this may happen also in the case of devils.

But do thou, I pray, consider, how with regard to the Jews he said not, "they are partakers with God," but *they are partakers of the altar*; for what was placed thereon was burnt: but in respect to the Body of Christ not so. But how? It is *the Communion of the Lord's Body*. For not of the altar, but of Christ Himself, are we made partakers.

But having said, that they are *partakers of the altar*, afterwards fearing lest he should seem to discourse, as if the idols had any power, and could do any injury, see again how he overthrows them, saying,

Ver. 19. *What say I then? That the idol is any thing? or that which is offered in sacrifice to idols is any thing?*

As if he had said, "Now these things I affirm, and try to (3.) withdraw you from the idols, not as though they could do any injury, or had any power; for an idol is nothing; but I wish you to despise them." "And if thou wilt have us despise them," saith one, "wherefore dost thou carefully withdraw us from them?" Because they are not offered to thy Lord.

Ver. 20. <sup>1</sup> *For that which the Gentiles sacrifice, saith he, ἡ γὰρ θύα they sacrifice to devils, and not to God.*

Do not then run to the contrary things. For neither if <sup>rec. text, ἡ δὲ θύα</sup> thou wert a king's son, and having the privilege of thy father's table, shouldest leave it after all, and choose to partake of the table of the condemned and the prisoners in the dungeon, would thy father permit it, but with great vehemence he would withdraw thee; not as though the table would harm thee, but because it disgraces thy nobility, and the royal table.

<sup>b</sup> Cf. Lev. 2. 13; Numbers 18. 19; 2 Chron. 13. 5. Theodoret on the latter place says, "By a covenant of salt for ever, he expresses the stability of the Kingdom; since even Barbarians oftentimes upon eating with their enemies keep the peace entire, remembering the salt thereof."



HOMIL. For verily these too are servants who have offended; dishonoured, condemned, prisoners reserved for intolerable punishment, accountable for ten thousand crimes. How then art thou not ashamed to imitate the gluttonous and vulgar crew, in that, when these condemned persons set out a table, thou runnest thither, and partakest of the viands? Here is the cause why I seek to withdraw thee. For the intention of the sacrificers, and the person of the receivers maketh the things set before thee unclean.

*And I would not that ye should have fellowship with devils.* Perceivest thou the kindness of a careful father? Perceivest thou also the very word, what force it hath to express his feeling? "For it is my wish," saith he, "that you have nothing common with them."

[6.] Next, because he brought in the saying by way of exhortation, lest any of the grosser sort should make light of it, as having licence, because he said, *I would not*, and, *judge ye*; he positively affirms in what follows, and lays down the law, saying,

Ver. 21. *Ye cannot drink the cup of the Lord, and the cup of devils: ye cannot be partakers of the Lord's table, and of the table of devils.*

And he contents himself with the mere terms, for the purpose of keeping them away.

Then, speaking also to their sense of shame,

Ver. 22. *Do we provoke the Lord to jealousy<sup>1</sup>? are we stronger than He?* i. e. "Are we tempting Him, whether He is able to punish us, and irritating Him, by going over to the adversaries, and taking our stand with His enemies?" And this he said, reminding them of an ancient history, and of their fathers' transgression. Wherefore also he makes use of this saying, which Moses likewise of old used against the Jews, accusing them of idolatry in the person of God. *For*

*they, saith He, have moved Me to jealousy<sup>2</sup> with that which is not God; they have provoked Me to anger with their*

*idols<sup>3</sup>.*

<sup>1</sup> Deut.

32. 21.

*Are we stronger than He?* Dost thou see how terribly, how awfully he rebukes them, thoroughly shaking their very nerves, and by his way of reducing them to an absurdity touching them to the quick, and bringing down their pride?

<sup>1</sup> ὁ θεὸς.  
ζήλον.  
μαρ.

<sup>2</sup> ὁ θεὸς.  
ζήλον.

“ Well, but why,” some one will say, “ did he not set down <sup>1 Cor.</sup> these things at first, which would be most effectual to with- <sup>10. 34.</sup> draw them?” Because it is his custom to prove his point by many particulars, and to place the strongest last, and to prevail by proving more than was necessary. On this account then, he began from the lesser topics, and so made his way to that which is the sum of all evils: since so that last point also became more easily admitted, their mind having been smoothed down by the things said before.

Ver. 23, 24. *All things are lawful for me, but all things are not expedient: all things are lawful for me, but all things edify not. Let no man seek his own, but every man another's wealth.*

Seest thou his exact wisdom? Because it was likely that they might say, “ I am perfect, and master of myself, and it does me no harm to partake of what is set before me;” “ Even so,” saith he, “ perfect thou art, and master of thyself; do not however look to this, but whether the result involve not injury, nay subversion.” For both these he mentioned, saying, *All things are not expedient, all things edify not*; and using the former with reference to one's self, the latter, to one's brother: since the clause, *are not expedient*, is a covert intimation of the ruin of the person to whom he speaks; but the clause, *edify not*, of the offence of the brother.

Wherefore also he adds, *Let no man seek his own*; which he every where and in every Epistle insists upon; both in that to the Romans, when he says, *For even Christ pleased not Himself*<sup>1</sup>. And again, *Even as I please all men in all* <sup>1 Rom. 15. 3.</sup> *things, not seeking mine own profit*<sup>2</sup>. And again in this <sup>1 Cor. 10. 33.</sup> place; he does not, however, fully work it out here. That is, since in what had gone before, he had established it at length, and shewn that he no where *seeks his own*, but both *to the Jews became as a Jew, and to them that are without law as without law*, and used not his own *liberty and power* at random, but to the profit of all, serving all; he here broke off, content with a few words, by these few guiding them to the remembrance of all which had been said.

[7.] These things therefore knowing, let us also, beloved, consult for the good of the brethren, and preserve unity with them.

HOMIL. For to this that fearful and tremendous sacrifice leads us,  
XXIV. warning us above all things to approach it with one mind and fervent love, and thereby becoming eagles, so to mount up to the very heaven. *For wheresoever the carcase is, saith*

<sup>1</sup>S. Mat. He, *there also will be the eagles*<sup>1</sup>, calling His body a carcase by  
24. 28. reason of His death. For unless He had fallen, we should not have risen again. But He calls us eagles, implying that he who draws nigh to this Body must be on high, and have nothing common with the earth, nor wind himself downwards and creep along; but must ever be soaring heavenwards, and look on the Sun of Righteousness, and have the eye of his mind quick-sighted. For eagles, not daws, have a right to this table. Those also shall then meet Him descending from heaven, who now worthily have this privilege, even as they who do so unworthily, shall suffer the extremest torments.

For if one would not inconsiderately receive a king—(why say I a king? nay were it but a royal robe, one would not inconsiderately touch it with unclean hands;)—though he should be in solitude, though alone, though no man were at hand: and yet the robe is nought but certain threads spun by worms: and if thou admirest the dye, this too is the blood of a dead fish; nevertheless, one would not choose to venture on

\* "This Table is not, saith Chrysostom, for chattering jays, but for eagles, who fly thither where the dead body lieth." Hom. of the worthy receiving of the Sacrament, &c. This interpretation seems to be generally recognised by the Fathers. See S. Iren. iv. 14; Orig. on S. Matt. 9. 47; S. Ambr. on S. Luke 17. 7. "The souls of the righteous are compared unto eagles, because they seek what is on high, leave the low places, are accounted to lead a long life. Wherefore also David saith to his own soul, *Thy youth shall be renewed as of an eagle* [Ps. 103. 5.] If then we have come to know what the *eagles* are, we can no longer doubt about the *Body*; especially if we recollect that Body which Joseph once received from Pilate. Seem they not unto thee as eagles around a Body, I mean Mary the wife of Cleophas, and Mary Magdalene, and Mary the Mother of the Lord, and the gathering of the Apostles around the Lord's entombing? Doth it not seem to thee as eagles

around a body, when the Son of Man shall come with the mystical clouds, and every eye shall see Him, and they also which pierced Him?"

"There is also the Body concerning which it was said, *My Flesh is meat indeed, and My Blood is drink indeed*. Around this Body are certain eagles, which hover over It with spiritual wings. They are also eagles round the Body, which believe that Jesus is come in the Flesh: since every spirit which confesseth that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh, is of God. Wheresoever then saith is, there is the Sacrament, there the resting-place of holiness. Again, this Body is the Church, wherein by the grace of Baptism we are renovated in spirit, and whatever tends to decay through old age is refreshed, for ages of new life."

Comp. also Theodoret on Providence, Orat. 5. t. iv. 550. Ed. Schultze; S. Jerome, Ep. 46. 11; S. Aug. Quest. Evangel. i. 42.

if with polluted hands: I say now, if even a man's garment be what one would not venture inconsiderately to touch, what shall we say of the Body of Him who is God over all, spotless, pure, associate with that Divine Nature, the Body whereby we are, and live; whereby the gates of hell were broken down, and the sanctuaries<sup>d</sup> of heaven opened? how shall we receive this with so great insolence? Let us not, I pray you, let us not slay ourselves by our irreverence, but with all awfulness and purity, let us draw nigh to It; and when thou seest It set before thee, say thou to thyself, "Because of this Body am I no longer earth and ashes, no longer a prisoner, but free, because of this I hope for heaven, and to receive the good things therein, immortal life, the portion of angels, converse with Christ; this Body, nailed and scourged, was more than death could stand against; this Body the very sun saw crucified, and turned aside his beams; for this both the veil was rent in that moment, and rocks were burst asunder, and all the earth was shaken. This is even that Body, the blood-stained, the smitten, and that out of which gushed the saving fountains, the one of blood, the other of water, for all the world."

Wouldest thou from another source also learn its power? Ask of her, diseased with an issue of blood, who laid hold not of Itself, but of the garment with which It was clad; nay not of the whole of this, but of the hem: ask of the sea, which bare It on its back: ask even of the Devil himself, and say, "Whence hast thou that incurable stroke? whence hast thou no longer any power? Whence art thou captive? By whom hast thou been seized in thy flight?" And he will give no other answer than this, "The Body that was crucified." By this were his stings broken in pieces; by this was his head crushed; by this were the powers and the principalities made a show of. *For, saith he, having spoiled principalities and powers, He made a show of them openly, triumphing over them in it*<sup>1</sup>.

Ask also Death, and say, "whence is it that thy sting hath been taken away? thy victory abolished? thy sinews cut out? and thou become the laughing-stock of girls and children, who

<sup>1</sup> Cor.  
10. 24.

<sup>1</sup> Col.  
11. 13.

<sup>d</sup> *Αψιδες*, originally "arches," afterwards "the vaults of the sanctuary or choir in a church."



HOMIL. wast before a terror even to kings, and to all righteous men?"

XXIV

And he will ascribe it to this Body. For when this was crucified, then were the dead raised up, then was that prison burst, and the gates of brass were broken, and the dead were loosed<sup>1</sup>, and the keepers of hell gate all quaked for fear. And yet, had He been one of the many, death on the contrary should have become more mighty; but it was not so. For He was not one of the many. Therefore was death dissolved. And as they who take food, which they are unable to retain, on account of that vomit up also what was before lodged in them; so also it happened unto death. That Body, which he could not work upon, he received: and therefore had to cast forth those also which he had within him. Yea, he travailed, whilst he held Him, and was straitened, until He vomited Him up. Wherefore saith the Apostle, *Having loosed the pains of death*<sup>2</sup>. For never woman labouring of child was so full of anguish, as he was torn and racked in sunder, while he held the Body of the Lord. And that which happened to the Babylonian dragon, when, having taken the food, it burst asunder in the midst<sup>3</sup>, this also happened unto him. For Christ came not forth again by the mouth of death, but having burst asunder, and ripped up in the very midst, the belly of the dragon, thus from His secret chambers 'right gloriously He issued forth, and flung abroad His beams not to this heaven alone, but to the very throne most high. For even thither did He carry it up.

<sup>1</sup> *Apollin.*  
*cas, MS.*  
*Reg.*  
*Bened.*  
*divers-*  
*cas.*

<sup>2</sup> Acts  
11. 24.

<sup>3</sup> Bel  
and the  
Dragon,  
v. 27.

<sup>4</sup> Psalm  
19. 5.

<sup>5</sup> Job  
31. 31.

This Body hath He given to us both to hold and to eat; a thing appropriate to intense love. For those whom we kiss vehemently, we oftentimes even bite with our teeth. Wherefore also Job, indicating the love of his servants towards him, said, that they oftentimes out of their great affection towards him, said, *Oh! that we were filled with his flesh*<sup>5</sup>! Even so Christ hath given to us to be filled with His flesh, drawing us on to greater love.

[8.] Let us draw nigh to Him then with fervency and with inflamed love, and let us not have to endure punishment. For in proportion to the greatness of the benefits bestowed on us, so much the more exceedingly are we chastised, when we shew ourselves unworthy of the bountifulness. This Body, even lying in a manger, the Magi revered. And men profane



and barbarous, leaving their country and their home, both set out on a long journey, and when they came, with fear and great trembling worshipped Him. Behold now, let us at least imitate those Barbarians, we who are citizens of heaven. For they indeed when they saw Him but in a manger, and in a shed, and no such thing was in sight, as thou beholdest now, drew nigh with great awe; but thou beholdest Him not in the manger but on the altar, not a woman holding Him in her arms, but the priest standing by, and the Spirit with exceeding bounty hovering over the gifts set before us. Thou dost not see merely this Body itself, as they did, but thou knowest also Its power, and the whole economy, and art ignorant of none of the holy things which are brought to pass by It, having been exactly initiated into all.

Let us therefore wake ourselves up, and be filled with horror, and let us shew forth a reverence far beyond that of those Barbarians; that we may not, by random and careless approaches, heap fire upon our own heads. But these things I say, not to keep us from approaching, but to keep us from approaching without consideration. For as the approaching at random is dangerous, so the not communicating in those mystical suppers is famine and death. For this Table is the sinews of our soul, the bond of our mind, the foundation of our confidence, our hope, our salvation, our light, our life. When with this sacrifice, we depart into the other world, with much confidence we shall tread the sacred threshold, fenced round on every side as with a kind of golden armour. And why speak I of the world to come? Since here this mystery makes earth become to thee a heaven. Open only for once the gates of heaven, and look in; nay, rather not of heaven, but of the heaven of heavens; and then thou wilt behold what I have been speaking of. For what is there most precious of all, this will I shew thee lying upon the earth. For as in royal palaces, what is most glorious of all, is not walls, nor golden roofs, but the person of the king sitting on the throne; so likewise in heaven the Body of the King. But this, thou art now permitted to see upon earth. For it is not angels, nor archangels, nor heavens, and heavens of heavens, that I shew thee, but the very Lord and Owner of these. Perceivest thou how that which is more precious than

1 Cor.  
10. 24.

HOMIL. all things is seen by thee on earth; and not seen only, but  
 XXIV. also touched; and not only touched, but likewise eaten; and  
 after receiving It thou goest home?

Make thy soul clean then, prepare thy mind for the reception of these mysteries. For if thou wert entrusted to carry a king's child with the robes, the purple, and the diadem, thou wouldest cast away all things which are upon the earth. But now that it is no child of man, how royal soever, but the Only-begotten Son of God Himself, Whom thou receivedst; dost thou not thrill with awe, tell me, and cast away all the love of all worldly things, and have no bravery but that wherewith to adorn thyself? or dost thou still look towards earth, and love money, and flutter after gold? What pardon then canst thou have? what excuse? Knowest thou not that all this worldly luxury is loathsome to thy Lord? Was it not for this, that on His birth he was laid in a manger, and took to Himself a mother of low estate? Did He not for this say to him that was looking after gain, *But the Son of Man hath*

<sup>1</sup> S. Mat. *not where to lay His head*<sup>1</sup>?

8. 20.

And what did the disciples? Did they not observe the same law, going to the houses of the poor, and lodged, one with a tanner, another with a tent-maker, and with the seller of purple? For they inquired not after the splendour of the house, but for the virtues of men's souls.

These therefore let us also emulate, hastening by the beauty of pillars and of marbles, and seeking the mansions which are above; and let us tread under foot all the pride here below, with all love of money, and acquire a lofty mind. For if we be sober-minded, not even this whole world is worthy of us, much less porticoes and arcades. Wherefore, I beseech you, let us adorn our souls, let us fit up this house, which we are also to have with us when we depart; that we may attain even to the eternal blessings, through the grace and mercy, &c.

## HOMILY XXV.

---

I COR. x. 25.

*Whatsoever is sold in the shambles, eat, asking no question for conscience sake.*

HAVING said that *they could not drink the cup of the Lord,* (1.) *and the cup of devils,* and having once for all led them away from those tables, by Jewish examples, by human reasonings, by the tremendous Mysteries, by the rites solemnized among the idols<sup>a</sup>; and having filled them with great fear; that he might not by this fear drive them again to another extreme, and they be forced, exercising a greater scrupulosity than was necessary, to feel alarm, lest possibly even without their knowledge there might come in some such thing, either from the market, or from some other quarter; to release them from this strait, he saith, *Whatsoever is sold in the shambles, that eat, asking no question.* "For," saith he, "if thou eat in ignorance, and not knowingly, thou art not subject to the punishment: it being thenceforth a matter, not of greediness, but of ignorance."

Nor doth he free the man only from this anxiety, but also from another, establishing them in thorough security and liberty. For he doth not even suffer them to *question*; i. e. to search and enquire, whether it be an idol-sacrifice, or no such thing: but simply to eat every thing which comes from the market, not even acquainting one's self with so much as this, what it is that is set before us. So that even he that eateth, if in ignorance, may be rid of anxiety. For such is the nature of those things which are not in their essence evil,

<sup>a</sup> Savile conj. *εἰδωλίων*, "in the idol Temples:" but *εἰδώλων* is the actual reading.

338 *Double caution of St. Paul about Idol-sacrifices.*

**HOMIL.**  
**XXV.** but through the man's intention make him unclean. Wherefore he saith, *asking no question.*

Ver. 26. *For to the Lord belongeth the earth, and the fulness thereof.* Not to the devils. Now if the earth, and the fruits, and the beasts be all His, nothing is unclean: but it becomes unclean otherwise, from our intention and our disobedience. Wherefore he not only gave permission, but also,

Ver. 27. *If any of them that believe not bid you, saith he, to a feast, and ye be disposed to go; whatsoever is set before you, eat, asking no question for conscience sake.*

See again his moderation. For he did not command, and make a law, that they should withdraw themselves, yet neither did he forbid it. And again, should they depart, he frees them from all suspicion. Now what may be the account of this? That so great curiousness might not seem to arise from any fear and cowardice. For he who makes scrupulous enquiry, doth so as being in dread: but he who, on hearing the fact, abstains, abstains as out of contempt, and hatred, and aversion. Wherefore Paul, purposing to establish both points, saith, *Whatsoever is set before you, eat.*

Ver. 28. *But if any man say unto you, This is offered in sacrifice unto idols; eat not, for his sake that shewed it.*

Thus it is not at all for any power that they have, but as accursed, that he bids abstain from them. Neither then, as though they could injure you, fly from them, (for they have no strength;) nor yet, because they have no strength, indifferently partake: for it is the table of beings hostile and degraded. Wherefore he said, *eat not for his sake that shewed it, and for conscience sake. For the earth is the Lord's, and the fulness thereof.*

Seest thou how both when he bids them eat, and when they must abstain, he brings forward the same testimony? "For I do not forbid," saith he, "for this cause, as though they belonged to others: (*for the earth is the Lord's:*) but for the reason I mentioned, for conscience sake; i. e. that it may not be injured." Ought one therefore to inquire scrupulously? "Nay," saith he: "for I said not thy conscience, but his. For I have already said, *for his sake that shewed it.*" And again, v. 29. *Conscience, I say, not thine own, but of the others.*

[2.] But perhaps some one may say, "The brethren indeed, <sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. as is natural, thou sparest, and dost not suffer us to taste for <sup>10. 29.</sup> their sakes, lest their conscience being weak, might be drawn in<sup>b</sup> to eat the idol sacrifices. But if it be some heathen, what is this man to thee? Was it not thine own word, *What have I to do to judge them also that are without?*<sup>c</sup> Where-<sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. fore then dost thou on the contrary care for them?" "Not for <sup>5. 12.</sup> him is my care," he replies, "but in this case also for thee." To which effect also he adds,

*For why is my liberty judged of another man's conscience?* meaning by *liberty*, that which is left without caution or prohibition. For this is liberty, freed from Jewish bondage. And what he means is this: "God hath made me free, and above all reach of injury, but the Gentile knoweth not how to judge of this high morality of mine, nor to see into the liberality of my Master, but will condemn and say to himself, 'Christianity is a fable; they abstain from the idols, they shun dæmons, and yet cleave to the things offered to them: great is their gluttony.'" "And what then?" it may be said. "What harm is it to us, should he judge us unfairly?" But how much better to give him no room to judge at all! For if thou abstain, he will not even say this. "How," say you, "will he not say it? For when he seeth me not making these enquiries, neither in the shambles, nor in the banquet; what should hinder him from using this language, and condemning me, as one who partakes without discrimination?" It is not so at all. For thou partakest, not as of idol-sacrifices, but as of things clean. And if thou makest no nice enquiry, it is that thou mayest signify, that thou fearest not the things set before thee: this being the reason why, whether thou enterest a house of Gentiles, or goest into the market, I suffer thee not to ask questions; viz. lest thou become a startler at sounds<sup>1</sup> <sup>ψοφ.</sup> and entangled<sup>2</sup>, and shouldest occasion thyself needless<sup>3</sup> <sup>διηρ.</sup> <sup>λυσ.</sup> <sup>σλῆξ.</sup> trouble.

Ver. 30. *If I by grace be a partaker, why am I yet evil spoken of for that for which I give thanks?* "Of what art thou by grace a partaker? tell me." Of the gifts of God.

<sup>b</sup> οἰκοδομηθῇ. qu. οἰκοδομηθῶν, "might boldened." cf. o. viii. 10. be edified," or "instructed," or "em-



HOMIL.  
XXV. For His grace is so great, as to render my soul unstained, and above all pollution. For as the sun sending down his beams upon many spots of pollution, withdraws them again pure; so likewise we, and much more than so, having our conversation in the midst of the world, remain pure, if we will, by how much the power we have is even greater than his.

- (2.) "Why then abstain?" say you. Not as though I should become unclean, far from it; but for my brother's sake, and that I may not become a partaker with devils, and that I may not be judged by the unbeliever. For in this case it is no longer now the nature of the thing, but the disobedience, and the friendship with devils, which maketh me unclean, and the purpose of heart worketh the pollution.

But what is, *why am I yet evil spoken of for that for which I give thanks?* "I, for my part," saith he, "give thanks to God, that He hath thus set me on high, and above the low estate of the Jews, so that from no quarter am I injured. But the Gentiles, not knowing my high rule of life, will suspect the contrary, and will say, 'Here are Christians indulging a taste for our customs; they are a kind of hypocrites, abusing the dæmons, and loathing them, yet running to their tables; than which what can be more senseless? We conclude, that not for truth's sake, but through ambition and love of power they have betaken themselves to this doctrine.' What folly then would it be, that in respect of those things whereby I have been so benefited, as even to give solemn thanks, in respect of these I should become the cause of evil-speaking?" "But these things, even as it is," say you, "will the Gentile allege, when he seeth me not making enquiry." In no wise. For all things are not full of idol-sacrifices, so that he should suspect this: nor dost thou thyself taste of them as idol-sacrifices. Be not then scrupulous overmuch, nor again, on the other hand, when any remark on its being an idol-sacrifice, do thou partake. For Christ gave thee grace, and set thee on high, and above all injury from that quarter, not that thou mightest be evil spoken of, nor that the circumstance, which hath been such a gain to thee as to be matter of special thanksgiving, should be a mean of thy so injuring others, that they should even blaspheme. "Nay, why," saith he, "do I not say to the Gentile, 'I eat, I am no wise injured, and I do not this as

one in friendship with the dæmons?' Because thou canst <sup>1 Cor. 10. 32.</sup> not persuade him, even though thou shouldst say it ten thousand times: weak as he is, and hostile. For if thy brother hath not yet been persuaded by thee, much less the enemy and the Gentile. If he is possessed by his consciousness of the idol-sacrifice, much more the unbeliever. And besides, what occasion have we for so great trouble?

"What then? whereas we have known Christ, and give thanks, while they blaspheme, shall we therefore abandon this custom also?" Far from it. For the thing is not the same. For in the one case, great is our gain from bearing the reproach; but in the other, there will be no advantage. Wherefore also he said before, *for neither if we eat, are we the better; nor if we eat not, are we the worse*<sup>1</sup>. And besides <sup>1 c. 8. 8.</sup> this too, he shewed that the thing was to be avoided, so that even on another ground ought they to be abstained from, not on this account only, but also for the other reasons which he hath assigned.

[3.] Ver. 31. *Whether therefore ye eat, or drink, or whatsoever ye do, do all to the glory of God.*

Perceivest thou how from the subject before him, he carried out the exhortation to what was general, giving us one, the most excellent of all rules, that God in all things should be glorified?

Ver. 32. *Give none offence, neither to the Jews, nor to the Gentiles, nor to the Church of God:* i. e. give no handle to any one: since in the case supposed, both thy brother is offended, and the Jew will the more hate and condemn thee, and the Gentile in like manner deride thee even as a gluttonous man and a hypocrite.

Not only, however, should the brethren receive no hurt from us, but to the utmost of our power, not even those that are without. For if we are *light*, and *leaven*, and *luminaries*, and *salt*, we ought to enlighten, not to darken; to bind, not to loosen; to draw to ourselves the unbelievers, not to drive them away. Why then puttest thou to flight those whom thou oughtest to draw to thee? Since even some Gentiles are hurt, when they see us shaping our course back to such things; for they know not our mind, nor that our soul hath

HOMIL. come to be above all pollution of sense. And the Jews too,  
 XXV. and the weaker brethren, will have the same feelings.

Seest thou how many reasons he hath assigned, for which we ought to abstain from the idol-sacrifices? Because of their unprofitableness, because of their needlessness, because of the injury to our brother, because of the evil-speaking of the Jew, because of the reviling of the Gentile, because we ought not to be partakers with devils, because the thing is a kind of idolatry.

Further, because he had said, *give none offence*, and he made them responsible for the injury done, both to the Gentiles and to the Jews; and the saying was grievous; see how he renders it acceptable and light, putting himself forward, and saying,

Ver. 33. *Even as I also please all men in all things, not seeking mine own profit, but the profit of many, that they may be saved.*

Chap. xi. Ver. 1. *Be ye followers of me, even as I also am of Christ.*

This is a rule of the most perfect Christianity, this is a landmark exactly laid down, this the point which stands highest of all; viz. the seeking those things which are for the common profit: which also Paul himself declared, by adding, *even as I also am of Christ*. For nothing can so make a man a follower of Christ, as caring for his neighbours. Nay, though thou shouldest fast, though thou shouldest lie upon the ground, and even strangle thyself, but take no thought for thy neighbour; thou hast wrought nothing great; yet far from this Image is thy station, while thou art so doing.

However, in the case before us, even the very thing itself is naturally useful, viz. the abstaining from idol-sacrifices. But "I," saith he, "have done many things among those which were unprofitable also: e. g. when I used circumcision, when I offered sacrifice; for these, were any one to examine them in themselves, rather destroy those that follow after them, and cause them to fall from salvation: nevertheless I submitted even to these, on account of the advantage therefrom: but here is no such thing. For in that case, except there accrue a certain benefit, and except they be done for others'

*Disinterestedness, a Condition of high Moral Goodness.* 343

sake, then the thing becomes injurious: but in this, though <sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. there be none offended, even so ought one to abstain from <sup>11. 1.</sup> the things forbidden.

But not only to things hurtful have I submitted, but also to things toilsome. For "*I robbed other Churches, saith he, taking wages of them*<sup>1</sup>, and when it was lawful to eat, and <sup>2</sup> 2 Cor. not to work, I sought not this, but chose to perish of hunger,<sup>11. 8.</sup> rather than offend another." This is why he says, *I please all men in all things*. "Though it be against the law, though it be laborious and hazardous, which is to be done, I endure all for the profit of others. I may say then, that being above all in perfection, I have become<sup>2</sup> beneath all in <sup>Sav. reads</sup> condescension."<sup>11. 1.</sup>

[4.] For no virtuous action can be very exalted, when it <sup>reads</sup> doth not distribute its benefit to others also: as is shewn by <sup>11. 1.</sup> him who brought the one talent safe, and was cut in sunder, because he had not made more of it. And thou then, brother, though thou shouldest remain without food, though thou shouldest sleep upon the ground, though thou shouldest eat ashes, and be ever wailing, and do good to no other; thou wilt do no great work. For so also those great and noble persons who were in the beginning made this their chiefest care: examine accurately their life, and thou wilt see clearly, that none of them ever looked to his own things, but each one to the things of his neighbour, whence also they shone the brighter. For so Moses (to mention him first) wrought many and great wonders and signs; but nothing made him so great, as that blessed voice which he uttered unto God, saying, *If Thou wilt forgive their sin, forgive; but if not, blot me also out*<sup>3</sup>. Such too was David: wherefore also he <sup>3</sup> Exod. said, *I the shepherd have sinned, and I have done wickedly,* <sup>32. 32.</sup> *but these, the flock, what have they done? Let Thine hand be upon me, and upon my father's house*<sup>4</sup>. So likewise <sup>2</sup> 2 Sam. Abraham sought not his own profit, but the profit of many.<sup>24. 17.</sup> Wherefore he both exposed himself to dangers, and besought God for those who in no wise belonged to him.

Well: these indeed so became glorious. But as for those who sought their own, consider what harm too they received. The nephew, for instance, of the last mentioned, because he listened to the saying, *If thou wilt go to the right, I will go*



HOMIL. to the left<sup>1</sup>; and accepting the choice, sought his own profit.  
 XXV. did not even find his own: but this country was burned up,  
 1 Gen. while that remained untouched. Jonas again, not seeking  
 13. 9. the profit of many, but his own, was in danger even of  
 perishing: and while the city stood fast, he himself was  
 tossed about and overwhelmed in the sea. But when he  
 sought the profit of many, then he also found his own. So  
 likewise Jacob among the flocks, not seeking his own gain,  
 had that exceeding riches for his portion. And Joseph also,  
 seeking the profit of his brethren, found his own. At least,  
 2 Gen. being sent by his father<sup>2</sup>, he said not, "What is this? Hast  
 37. 14. thou not heard that for a vision and certain dreams they even  
 attempted to tear me in pieces, and I was held guilty of my  
 dreams, and suffer punishment for being beloved of thee?  
 What then will they not do when they get me in the midst  
 of them?" He said none of these things, he thought not of  
 them, but prefers the care of his brethren above all. Therefore  
 he enjoyed also all the good things which followed, which  
 both made him very brilliant, and declared him glorious.  
 Thus also Moses,—for nothing hinders that we should again  
 a second time make mention of him, and behold how he over-  
 looked his own things, and sought the things of others:—I  
 say this Moses, being conversant in a king's court, because  
 2 Heb. he counted the reproach<sup>3</sup> greater riches than the treasures  
 11. 26. in Egypt; and having cast them even all out of his hands,  
 28. 29. became a partaker of the afflictions of the Hebrews;—so far  
 29. 30. from being himself enslaved, he liberated them also from  
 bondage.

(4.) Well: these surely are great things, and worthy of an  
 angelical life. But the conduct of Paul far exceeds this.  
 For all the rest, leaving their own blessings, chose to be  
 partakers in the afflictions of others: but Paul did a thing  
 much greater. For it was not that he consented to be a  
 partaker in others' misfortunes, but he chose himself to be at  
 all extremities, that other men might enjoy blessing. Now  
 it is not the same for one who lives in luxury, to cast away  
 his luxury and suffer adversity, as for one himself alone  
 suffering adversity, to cause others to be in security and  
 honour. For in the former case, though it be a great thing  
 to exchange prosperity for affliction for your neighbour's



sake, nevertheless it brings some consolation to have partakers <sup>1 Cor.</sup> in the misfortune. But consenting to be himself alone in <sup>11. 1.</sup> the distress, that others may enjoy their good things,—this belongs to a much more energetic soul, and to Paul's own spirit.

And not by this only, but by another and greater excellency, doth he surpass all those before mentioned. That is, Abraham and all the rest exposed themselves to dangers in the present life, and all these were but asking for this kind of death, once for all; but Paul prayed<sup>1</sup> that he might fall from the glory of<sup>1</sup> Rom. the world to come for the sake of others' salvation. <sup>9. 3.</sup>

I may mention also a third point of superiority. And what is this? That some of those, though they interceded for persons who conspired against them, nevertheless it was for those with whose guidance they had been entrusted: and the same thing happened, as if one should stand up for a wild and lawless son, but still a son: whereas Paul wished to be accursed in the stead of those with whose guardianship he was not entrusted. For to the Gentiles was he sent. Dost thou perceive the greatness of his soul, and the loftiness of his spirit, transcending the very heaven? This man do thou emulate: but if thou canst not, at least follow those who shone in the old covenant. For thus only shalt thou find thine own profit, if thou seekest that of thy neighbour. Wherefore, when thou feelest backward to care for thy brother, considering that no otherwise canst thou be saved, at least for thine own sake stand thou up for him and his interests.

[5.] And although what hath been said is sufficient to convince thee, that no otherwise is it possible to secure our own benefit: yet if thou wouldest also assure thyself of it by the examples of common life, conceive a fire happening any where to be kindled in a house, and then some of the neighbours, with a view to their own interest, refusing to expose themselves to the risk, but shutting themselves up and remaining at home, in fear lest some one come and find his way in, and purloin some part of the household goods; how great punishment will they endure? Since the fire will come on, and burn down likewise all that is theirs; and because they looked not to the profit of their neighbour, they

HOMIL. lose even their own besides. For so God, willing to bind us  
XXV. all to each other, hath imposed upon things such a necessity, that in the profit of one neighbour that of the other is bound up; and the whole world is thus constituted. And therefore in a vessel too, if a storm had come on, and the steersman, leaving the profit of the many, should seek his own only, he will quickly sink both himself and them. And of each several art too we may say, that should it look to its own profit only, life could never stand, nor even the art itself which so seeketh its own. Therefore the husbandman sows not so much corn only, as is sufficient for himself; since he would long ago have famished both himself and others; but seeks the profit of the many: and the soldier takes the field against dangers, not that he may save himself, but that he may also place his cities in security: and the merchant brings not home so much as may be sufficient for himself alone, but for many others also.

Now if any say, "each man doeth this, not looking to my interest, but his own, for he engages in all these things to obtain for himself money, and glory, and security, so that in seeking my profit, he seeks his own:" this also do I say, and long since wished to hear from you, and for this have I framed all my discourse; viz. to signify, that thy neighbour then seeks his own profit, when he looks to thine. For since men would no otherwise make up their mind to seek the things of their neighbour, except they were reduced to this necessity; therefore God hath thus joined things together, and suffers them not to arrive at their own profit, except they first travel through the profit of others.

Well then, this is natural to man, thus to follow after his neighbour's advantage; but one ought to be persuaded not from this reason, but from what pleases God. For it is not possible to be saved, wanting this; but though thou shouldest practise the highest philosophy, and neglect others who are perishing, thou wilt gain no confidence towards God. Whence is this evident? From what the blessed Paul declared. *For if I sell my goods to feed the poor, and give my body to be burned, and have not charity, it profiteth me nothing*<sup>1</sup>, saith he. Seest thou how much Paul requireth of us? And yet he that sold his goods to feed the poor, sought not his own good,

<sup>1</sup> 1 Cor.  
13. 3.

but that of his neighbour. But this alone is not enough, he saith. For he would have it done with sincerity and much sympathy. For therefore also God made it a law, that he might bring us into the bond of love. When therefore He demands so large a measure, and we do not render even that which is less, of what indulgence shall we be worthy? 1 Cor. 11. 1.

"And how," saith one, "did God say to Lot by the Angels, *Escape for thy life!*?" Say, when, and why. When the punishment was bearing down on them, not when there was an opportunity of correction, but when they were condemned and incurably diseased, and old and young had rushed into the same passions, and henceforth they must needs be burned up, and in that day when the thunderbolts were about to descend. And besides, this was not spoken of vice and virtue, but of the chastisement inflicted by God. For what was he to do, tell me? Sit still and await the punishment, and without at all profiting them, be burned up? Nay, this were the extremest folly. 1 Gen. 19. 17.

For I do not affirm this, that one ought to bring chastisement on one's self without discrimination, and at random, apart from the will of God. But when a man tarries long in sin, then I bid thee push thyself forward, and correct him: if thou wilt, for thy neighbour's sake; but if not, at least for thine own profit. It is true, the first is the better course: but if thou reachest not yet unto that height, do it even for this. And let no man seek his own, that he may find his own; and bearing in mind, that neither parting with all, nor martyrdom, nor any other thing, will have power to stand up for us, unless we have the height of love; let us preserve this beyond all the rest, that through it we may also obtain all other, both present and promised blessings; at which may we all arrive, through the grace and mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ; with Whom to the Father, with the Holy Ghost, be glory, power, and honour, now and for ever, and world without end. Amen.

## HOMILY XXVI.

---

1 COR. xi. 2.

*Now I praise you, brethren, that ye remember me in all things,  
and keep the ordinances<sup>1</sup>, as I delivered them to you.*

<sup>1</sup> *regula-  
disce,  
tradi-  
tions.*

(1.)

HAVING completed the discourse concerning the idol-sacrifices as became him, and having rendered it most perfect in all respects, he proceeds to another thing, which also itself was a crime, but not so great a one. For that which I said before, this do I also now say, that he doth not set down all the heavy accusations continuously, but after disposing them in due order, he inserts among them the lighter matters, mitigating what the readers would else feel offensive in his discourse, on account of his continually reproving.

Wherefore also he sets the most vehement of all last, that relating to the resurrection. But for the present he goes to another, a lighter thing, saying, *Now I praise you, that ye remember me in all things.* Thus, when the offence is admitted, he both accuses vehemently, and threatens: but when it is questioned, he first proves it, and then rebukes. And what was admitted, he aggravates: but what was likely to be disputed, he shews to be admitted. Their fornication, for instance, was a thing admitted. Wherefore there was no need to shew that there was an offence; but in that case he proved the magnitude of the transgression, and conducted his discourse by way of comparison. Again, their going to law before aliens was an offence, but not so great a one. Wherefore he threw it in likewise by the way, and proved it. The matter of the idol-sacrifices again was questioned. It was, however, a most serious evil. Wherefore he both shews it to be an offence, and aggravates it by his discourse. But when



he doeth this, he not only withdraws them from the several crimes, but invites them also to their contraries. Thus he said not only, that one must not commit fornication, but likewise that one ought to exhibit great holiness. Wherefore he added, *Therefore<sup>1</sup> glorify God in your body, and in your spirit<sup>2</sup>*. And having said again, that one ought not to be wise with the wisdom that is without, he is not content with this, but bids me also to *become a fool<sup>3</sup>*. And where he advises them not to go to law before them that are without, and to avoid doing wrong; he goeth further, and takes away even the very going to law, and counsels them not only to do no wrong, but even to suffer wrong<sup>4</sup>.

And discoursing concerning the idol-sacrifices, he said not, that one ought to abstain from things forbidden only, but also from things permitted, when offence is given: and not only not to hurt the brethren, but not even Greeks, nor Jews. Thus, *give none offence*, saith he, *neither to the Jews, nor to the Gentiles, nor to the Church of God<sup>5</sup>*.

[2.] Having finished therefore all the discourse concerning all these things, after this he next proceeds also to another accusation. And what was this? Their women used both to pray and prophesy unveiled, and with their head bare, (for then women also used to prophesy;) but the men went so far as to wear long hair, as having spent their time in philosophy<sup>6</sup>, and covered their heads when praying and prophesying, each of which was a Grecian custom. Since then he had already admonished them concerning these things when present, and some perhaps listened to him, and others disobeyed; therefore in his letter also again, he foment the place, like a wise physician, by his mode of addressing them, and so corrects the offence. For that he had heretofore admonished them in person, is evident from what he begins with. Why else, having said nothing of this matter any where in the Epistle before, but passing on from other accusations, doth he straightway say, *Now I praise you, in that ye remember me in all things, and keep the ordinances, as I delivered them to you?*

<sup>1</sup> To let the hair and beard grow token of devotion to any study; etry, Hor. A. P. 297; Philosophy, as it is told of Julian the Apostate, that it was part of his affectation to let his hair and beard grow.

<sup>1</sup> Cor. 11. 2.

<sup>2</sup> 1 Th. 5. 23.

<sup>3</sup> 1 Cor. 13. 18.

<sup>4</sup> 1 Cor. 6. 7, 8.

<sup>5</sup> 1 Cor. 10. 32.



HOMIL.  
XXVI.

Thou seest that some obeyed, whom he praises; and others disobeyed, whom he corrects by what comes afterwards, saying, *Now if any man seem to be contentious, we have no such custom*<sup>1</sup>. For if after some had done well, but others disobeyed, he had included all in his accusation, he would both have made the one sort bolder, and have caused the others to become more remiss; whereas now by praising and commending the one, and rebuking the other, he both freshens up the one more effectually, and causes the other to shrink before him: the accusation, even by itself, being such a thing as might well wound them; but now that it takes place by contrast with others, who have done well, and are praised, it comes with a sharper sting. However, for the present he begins not with accusation, but with encomiums, and great encomiums, saying, *Now I praise you that ye remember me in all things*. For such is the character of Paul; though it be but for small matters, he weaves a web of high praise; nor is it for flattery that he doth so: far from it; how could he so act, to whom neither money was desirable, nor glory, nor any other such thing? but for their salvation he orders all his proceedings. And this is why he amplifies his praise of them, saying, *Now I praise you that ye remember me in all things*.

All what things? For hitherto his discourse was only concerning their not wearing long hair, and not covering their heads; but, as I said, he is very bountiful in his praises of them, rendering them more forward. Wherefore he saith,

*That ye remember me in all things, and keep the ordinances, as I delivered them to you.* It appears then, that he used at that time to deliver many things also not in writing, which he shews too in many other places. But at that time he only delivered them, whereas now he adds an explanation of their reason: thus both rendering the one sort, the obedient, more stedfast, and pulling down the others' pride, who oppose themselves. Further, he doth not say, "ye have obeyed, whilst others disobeyed," but in a way of which they would not be jealous, intimates it by his mode of teaching in what follows, where he saith,

Ver. 3. *But I would have you know that the head of every man is Christ; and the head of the woman is the man; and the head of Christ is God.*

This is his account of the reason of the thing, and he states it to make the weaker more attentive. He indeed that is faithful, as he ought, and stedfast, doth not even require any reason or cause of those things which are commanded him, but is content with the ordinance<sup>1</sup> alone. But he that is weaker, when he also learns the cause, then both retains what is said with more care, and obeys with much readiness.

Wherefore neither did he state the cause, until he saw the commandment transgressed. What then is the cause? *The head of every man is Christ.* Is He then Head of the Gentile also? In no wise. For if *we are the Body of Christ, and members in particular*<sup>2</sup>, and in this way He is our head, He cannot be the head of them who are not in the Body, who rank not among the members. So that when he says, *of every man*, one must understand it of the believer. Perceivest thou how every where he appeals to the hearer's shame by arguing from on high? Thus both when he was discoursing on love, and when on humility, and when on alms-giving, it was from thence that he drew his examples.

[3.] *But the head of the woman is the man; and the head of Christ is God.* Here the heretics dart in upon us, with a certain declaration of inferiority, which out of these words they contrive against the Son. But they stumble against themselves. For if *the man be the head of the woman*, and the head be of the same substance with the body, and *the head of Christ is God*, the Son is of the same substance with the Father. "Nay," say they, "it is not His being of another substance, which we intend to shew from hence, but that He is under subjection." What then are we to say to this? In the first place, when any thing lowly is said, conjoined as He is with the Flesh, there is no disparagement of the Godhead in what is said, the Economy admitting the expression. However, tell me how thou intendest to prove this from the passage? "Why, as the man governs the wife," saith he, "so also the Father, Christ." Therefore also as Christ governs the man, so likewise the Father, the Son. *For the head of every man, we read, is Christ.* And who could ever admit this? For if the superiority of the Son compared

HOMIL. with us, be the measure of the Father's, compared with the  
XXVI. Son, consider to what meanness thou wilt bring Him.

<sup>1</sup> Here-  
cries. So that we must not try<sup>1</sup> all things by like measure in respect of ourselves and of God, though the language used concerning them be similar; but we must assign to God a certain appropriate excellency, and so great as belongs to God. For should they not grant this, many absurdities will follow. As thus; *the head of Christ is God: and Christ is the head of the man, and he of the woman.* Therefore if we choose to take the term, *head*, in the like sense in all the clauses, the Son will be as far removed from the Father, as we are from Him. Nay, and the woman will be as far removed from us, as we are from the Word of God. And what the Son is to the Father, this both we are to the Son, and the woman again to the man. And who will endure this?

But dost thou understand the term *head* differently, in the case of the man and the woman, from what thou dost in the case of Christ? Therefore in the case of the Father and the Son, must we understand it differently also. "How understand it differently?" saith the objector. According to the occasion<sup>2</sup>. For had Paul meant to speak of rule and subjection, as thou sayest, he would not have brought forward the instance of a wife, but rather of a slave and a master. For what if the wife be under subjection to us? it is as a wife, as free, as equal in honour. And the Son also, though He did become obedient to the Father, it was as the Son of God, it was as God. For as the obedience of the Son to the Father is greater than we find in men towards the authors of their being, so also His liberty is greater. Since it will not of course be said, that the circumstances of the Son's relation to the Father are greater and more genuine than among men, and of the Father's to the Son, less. For if we admire the Son, that He was obedient, so as to come even unto death, and the death of the cross, and reckon this the great wonder concerning Him; we ought to admire the Father also, that He begat such a Son, not as a slave under command, but as free, yielding obedience, and giving counsel. For the counsellor is no slave.

But again, when thou hearest of a counsellor, do not understand it as though the Father were in need, but that the Son hath the same honour with Him that begat Him.

Do not therefore strain the example of the man and the woman to all particulars. 1 Cor. 11. 3.

For with us indeed the woman is reasonably subjected to the man: since equality of honour causeth contention. And not for this cause only, but by reason also of the deceit which happened in the beginning. Wherefore you see, she was not subjected as soon as she was made; nor, when He brought her to the man, did either she herself hear any such thing of God, nor did the man say any such word to her: he said indeed that she was *bone of his bone, and flesh of his flesh*<sup>1</sup>: but of rule or subjection he no where made mention unto her. But when she made an ill use of her privilege, and she who had been made a helper was found to be an ensnarer, and ruined all, then she is justly told for the future, *thy turning shall be to thy husband*<sup>2</sup>. 1 Tim. 2. 14.  
3 Gen. 2. 23.  
3 Gen. 3. 16.

To account for which; it was likely that this sin would have thrown our race into a state of warfare; (for her having been made out of him, would not have contributed any thing to peace, when this had happened, nay, rather this very thing would have made the man even the harsher, that she, made as she was out of him, should not have spared, no, not him who was member of herself:) wherefore God, considering the malice of the Devil, raised up a bulwark, viz. this word; and what enmity was likely to arise from his evil device, He took away by means of this sentence; and by the desire implanted in us: thus pulling down the partition-wall, (if it may be so called); i. e. the resentment caused by that sin of hers. But in God, and in that undefiled Essence, one must not suppose any such thing.

Do not therefore apply the examples to all, since elsewhere also from this source many grievous errors will occur. For so in the beginning of this very Epistle, he said, *All are yours, and ye are Christ's, and Christ is God's*. What then? Are all in like manner ours, as *we are Christ's, and Christ is God's*? In no wise, but even to the very simple the difference is evident, although the same expression is used of God, and Christ, and us. And elsewhere also having called the husband *head of the wife*, he added, *Even as Christ is Head and Saviour and Defender of the Church, so also ought the man to be of his own wife*. 1 Cor. 3. 22, 23.  
(3.)  
Eph. 5. 23.



HOMIL.  
XXVI. Are we then to understand in like manner the saying in the text, as we do this, and all that after this is written to the Ephesians concerning this subject? Far from it. It is impossible. For although the same words are spoken of God and of men, yet in one way those must be understood, and in another these. Not however on the other hand all things diversely: since contrariwise they will seem to have been introduced at random and in vain, we reaping no benefit from them. But as we must not receive all things alike, so neither must we absolutely reject all.

Now that what I say may become clearer, I will endeavour to make it manifest in an example. Christ is called *the Head of the Church*. If I am to take nothing from what is human in the idea, why, I would know, is the expression used at all? On the other hand, if I understand all in that way, extreme absurdity will result. For the head is of like passions with the body, and liable to the same things. What then ought we to let go, and what to accept? We should let go these particulars which I have mentioned, but accept the notion of a perfect union, and the first principle: and not even these ideas absolutely, but here also we must form a notion, as we may by ourselves, of that which is too high for us, and suitable to the Godhead: as that both the union is surer, and the beginning more honourable.

Again, thou hearest the word *Son*; do not thou in this case either admit all particulars; yet neither oughtest thou to reject all: but admitting whatever is meet for God, e. g. that He is of the same substance, that He is of God; the things which are incongruous, and belong to human weakness, leave thou upon the earth.

Again, God is called *Light*. Shall we then admit all circumstances, which belong to this light? In no wise. For to that region this light is circumscribed by darkness and by space, and is moved by another power, and is overshadowed; none of which it is lawful even to imagine of That Essence. We will not however reject all things on this account, but will reap something useful from the example. The illumination which cometh to us from God, the deliverance from darkness; this will be what we gather from it.

[4.] Thus much in answer to the heretica: but we must also



orderly go over the whole passage. For perhaps some <sup>1 Cor.</sup> one might here have doubt also, questioning with himself, <sup>11. 3, 4.</sup> what sort of crime it was, that the woman should be uncovered, or that the men should be covered? What sort of crime then it is, learn now from hence.

Symbols many and diverse have been given both to man and woman; to him of rule, to her of subjection: and among them this also, that she should be covered, while he hath his head bare. If now these be symbols, you see that both err, when they disturb the order and the disposition of God, and transgress their proper limits, both the man falling into the woman's inferiority, and the woman rising up against the man, by her outward habiliments.

For if exchange of garments be not lawful, so that neither she should be clad with a cloak, nor he with a mantle or a veil: (*for the woman, saith He, shall not wear that which pertaineth to a man, neither shall a man put on a woman's garment*<sup>1</sup> :) much more is it unseemly for these <sup>1 Deut. 22. 5.</sup> things to be interchanged. For the former indeed were ordained by men, even although God afterwards ratified them: but this by nature, I mean the being covered, or uncovered. But when I say nature, I mean God. For he it is who created Nature. When therefore thou overturnest these boundaries, see how great injuries ensue.

And tell me not this, that the error is but small. For first, it is great, even of itself: being as it is disobedience. Next, though it were small, it became great, because of the greatness of the things whereof it is a sign. However, that it is a great matter, is evident from its ministering so effectually to good order among mankind, the governor and the governed being regularly kept in their several places by it.

So that he who transgresseth, disturbs all things, and betrays the gifts of God, and casts to the ground the honour bestowed on him from above; not however the man only, but also the woman. For to her also that is the greatest of honours, to preserve her own rank; as indeed of disgraces, the behaviour of a rebel. Wherefore he laid it down concerning both, thus saying,

*Ver. 4. Every man praying or prophesying having his*

356 *Rules for Men and Women about covering the Head.*

HOMIL.  
XXVI. *head covered, dishonoureth his head. But every woman that prayeth or prophesieth with her head uncovered, dishonoureth her head.*

For there were, as I said, both men who prophesied, and women who had this gift at that time, as the daughters of Philip<sup>1</sup>, as others before them and after them: concerning whom also the prophet spake of old: *your sons shall prophesy, and your daughters shall see visions*<sup>2</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> Acts 21. 9.  
<sup>2</sup> Joel 2. 28. Acts 9. 17. Well then: the man he compelleth not to be always uncovered, but when he prays only. *For every man, saith he, praying or prophesying, having his head covered, dishonoureth his head.* But the woman he commands to be at all times covered. Wherefore also having said, *Every woman that prayeth or prophesieth with her head uncovered, dishonoureth her head*, he stayed not at this point only, but also proceeded to say, *For that is even all one as if she were shaven.* But if to be shaven is always dishonourable, it is plain too that being uncovered is always a reproach. And not even with this only was he content, but added again, saying, *The woman ought to have power on her head because of the angels.* He signifies that not at the time of prayer only, but also continually, she ought to be covered. But with regard to the man, it is no longer about covering, but about wearing long hair, that he so forms his discourse. To be covered he then only forbids, when a man is praying; but the wearing long hair he discourages at all times. Wherefore, as touching the woman, he said, *But if she be not covered, let her also be shorn*; so likewise touching the man, *If he have long hair, it is a shame unto him.* He said not, "if he be covered," but, *if he have long hair.* Wherefore also he said at the beginning, *Every man praying or prophesying, having any thing on his head, dishonoureth his head.* He said not, "covered," but *having any thing on his head*; signifying that, even though he pray with the head bare, yet if he have long hair, he is like to one covered. *For the hair, saith he, is given for a covering.*

Ver. 6. *But if the woman be not covered, let her also be shorn: but if it be a shame for a woman to be shorn or shaven, let her be covered.*

Thus, in the beginning he simply requires that the head be not bare: but as he proceeds, he intimates both the con-

*The Woman dishonoured by taking the Man's Honour.* 357

tinuance of the rule, saying, *for that is all one as if she were shaven*, and the keeping of it with all care and diligence. 1 Cor. 11. 6.

For he said not merely covered, but *covered over*<sup>1</sup>, meaning <sup>ὅτι καλύπτεται</sup> that she be with all care sheltered from view on every side. And by reducing it to an absurdity, he appeals to their shame, saying by way of severe reprimand, *but if she be not covered, let her also be shorn*. <sup>ἀλλὰ κατανύσσου</sup> As if he had said, "If thou cast away the covering appointed by the law of God, cast away likewise that appointed by nature."

But if any say, "Nay, how can this be a shame to the woman, if she mount up to the glory of the man?" we might make this answer; "She doth not mount up, but rather falls from her own proper honour." Since not to abide within our own limits, and the laws ordained of God, but to go beyond, is not an addition, but a diminution. For as he that desireth other men's goods, and seizeth what is not his own, hath not gained any thing more, but is diminished, having lost even that which he had, (which kind of thing also happened in paradise :) so likewise the woman acquireth not the man's dignity, but loseth even the woman's comeliness which she had. And not from hence only is her shame and reproach, but also on account of her covetousness.

Having taken then what was confessedly shameful, and having said, *but if it be a shame for a woman to be shorn or shaven*, he states in what follows his own conclusion, saying, *let her be covered*. And he said not, "let her have long hair," but, *let her be covered*, ordaining both these to be one, and establishing them both ways, from what was customary, and from their contraries: in that he both affirms the covering, and the hair, to be one, and also that she again who is shaven is the same with her whose head is bare. *For that is even all one*, saith he, *as if she were shaven*. But if any say, "And how is it one, if this woman have the covering of nature, but the other, who is shaven, have not even this?" we answer, that as far as her will goes, she threw that off likewise, by having the head bare. And if it be not bare of tresses, that is nature's doing, not her own. So then, as she who is shaven hath her head bare, so this woman in like manner. For this cause He left it to nature to provide her with a covering, that even of it she might learn this lesson, and veil herself.

HOMIL. Then he states also a cause, as one discoursing with those  
 XXVI. who are free: a thing which in many places I have remarked.  
 What then is the cause?

Ver. 7. *For the man indeed ought not to cover his head, forasmuch as he is the image and glory of God.*

This is again another cause. "Not only," so he speaks, "because he hath Christ to be His Head, ought he not to cover the head, but because also he rules over the woman." For the ruler, when he comes before the king, ought to have the symbol of his rule. As therefore no Ruler, without military girdle and cloak, would venture to appear before him that hath the diadem: so neither do thou without the symbols of thy rule, (one of which is, the not being covered,) pray before God, lest thou insult both thyself, and Him that hath honoured thee.

And the same thing likewise one may say regarding the woman. For to her also is it a reproach, the not having the symbols of her subjection. *But the woman is the glory of the man.* Therefore the rule of the man is natural.

[5.] Then, having affirmed his point, he states again other reasons and causes also, leading thee to the first creation, and saying thus;

Ver. 8. *For the man is not of the woman, but the woman of the man.*

But if to be of any one, is a glory to him, of whom one is, much more the being like him<sup>1</sup>.

Ver. 9. *For neither was the man created for the woman, but the woman for the man.*

This is again a second superiority, nay, rather also a third, and a fourth, the first being, that Christ is the head of us, and we of the woman; a second, that we are the glory of God, but the woman of us; a third, that we are not of the woman, but she of us; a fourth, that we are not for her, but she for us.

Ver. 10. *For this cause ought the woman to have power on her head.*

*For this cause:* what cause, tell me? "For all these which have been mentioned," saith he; or rather not for these only, but also *because of the angels.* "For although thou despise thine husband," saith he, "yet reverence the angels."

<sup>1</sup> Reg.  
 et dicitur  
 simi,  
 "the  
 being an  
 image of  
 him."



It follows, that being covered is a mark of subjection and of power. For it induces her to look down, and be ashamed, and preserve entire her proper virtue. For the virtue and honour of the governed is to abide in his obedience. 1 Cor. 11.  
11—13.  
(5.)

Again: the man is not compelled to do this; for he is the image of his Lord: but the woman is; and that reasonably. Consider then the excess of the transgression, when being honoured with so high a prerogative, thou puttest thyself to shame, seizing the woman's dress. And thou doest the same, as if having received a diadem, thou shouldest cast the diadem from thy head, and instead of it take a slave's garment.

Ver. 11. *Nevertheless, neither is the man without the woman, neither the woman without the man, in the Lord.*

Thus, because he had given great superiority to the man, having said that the woman is of him, and for him, and under him; that he might neither lift up the men more than was due, nor depress the women, see how he brings in the correction, saying, *Nevertheless neither is the man without the woman, neither the woman without the man, in the Lord.* "Examine not, I pray," saith he, "the first things only, and that creation. Since, if thou enquire into what comes after, each one of the two is the cause of the other; or rather not even thus each of the other, but God of all." Wherefore he saith, *neither the man without the woman, neither the woman without the man, in the Lord.*

Ver. 12. *For as the woman is of the man, so also is the man by the woman.*

He said not, *of the woman*, but he repeats the expression<sup>1</sup>, <sup>1</sup> from *of the man*. For still this particular prerogative remains entire with the man. Yet are not these excellencies the property of the man, but of God. Wherefore also he adds, *but all things of God*. If therefore all things belong to God, and he commands these things, do thou obey, and gainsay not.

Ver. 13. *Judge in yourselves: is it comely that a woman pray unto God uncovered?* Again he places them as judges of the things said, which also he did respecting the idol-sacrifices. For as there he saith, *judge ye what I say*<sup>2</sup>: so <sup>2</sup> c. 10. here, *judge in yourselves*: and he hints something more <sup>15.</sup> awful here. For he says, that the affront here passes on unto God: although thus indeed he doth not express himself,



HOMIL. but in something of a milder and more enigmatical form of  
XXVI. speech: *is it comely that a woman pray unto God uncovered?*

Ver. 14. *Doth not even nature itself teach you, that if a man have long hair, it is a shame unto him?*

Ver. 15. *But if a woman have long hair, it is a glory to her; for her hair is given her for a covering.*

His constant practice of stating commonly received reasons, he adopts also in this place, betaking himself to the common custom, and greatly abashing those who waited to be taught these things from him, which even from men's ordinary practice they might have learned. For such things are not unknown even to Barbarians: and see how he every where deals in piercing expressions: *every man praying having his head covered dishonoureth his head*; and again, *but if it be a shame for a woman to be shorn or shaven, let her be covered*: and here again, *if a man have long hair, it is a shame unto him; but if a woman have long hair, it is a glory to her, for her hair is given her for a covering.*

"And if it be given her for a covering," say you, "wherefore need she add another covering?" That not nature only, but also her own will may have part in her acknowledgment of subjection. For that thou oughtest to be covered, nature herself by anticipation enacted a law. Add now, I pray, thine own part also, that thou mayest not seem to subvert the very laws of nature: a proof of most insolent rashness<sup>1</sup>, to buffet not only with us, but with nature also.

<sup>1</sup> ἁρπάζουσιν.

<sup>2</sup> Ezek. 16. 21, 22.

<sup>3</sup> βλάβη γυναικ. rec. text, αἰσχύνη.

<sup>4</sup> Rom. 1. 26.

This is why God accusing the Jews said,<sup>2</sup> *Thou hast slain thy sons and thy daughters: this is beyond all thy abominations*<sup>3</sup>. And again, Paul rebuking the unclean among the Romans, thus aggravates the accusation, saying, that their usage was not only against the law of God, but even against nature. *For they changed the natural use into that which is against nature*<sup>4</sup>. For this cause then here also he works on this argument, partly to signify this which hath been said, and partly that he is not enacting any strange law, and that among Gentiles, their inventions would all be reckoned as a kind of novelty against nature\*. So also Christ, implying the

\* τὰ τῆς καὶ φύσεως ἄνευ τῆς φύσεως. Perhaps the text is mutilated.

same, said; *whatsoever ye would that men should do to you,* <sup>1 Cor. 11. 16.</sup>  
*do ye also so to them*<sup>1</sup>: shewing that He is not introducing <sup>18. Mat.</sup>  
any thing new. <sup>7. 12.</sup>

Ver. 16. *But if any man seem to be contentious, we have no such custom, neither the Churches of God.*

It is then contentiousness to oppose these things, and not any exercise of reason. Notwithstanding, even thus it is a measured sort of rebuke which he adopts, to fill them the more with self-reproach; which in truth rendered his saying the more severe. *For we, saith he, have no such custom,* so as to contend, and to strive, and to oppose ourselves. And he stopped not even here, but also added, *neither the Churches of God*; signifying that they resist and oppose themselves to the whole world, by not yielding. However, even if the Corinthians were then contentious, yet now the whole world hath both received and kept this law. So great is the power of the Crucified.

[6.] But I fear lest having assumed the dress, yet in their (6.) deeds some of our women should be found immodest, and in other ways uncovered. For therefore also writing to Timothy Paul was not content with these things, but added others, saying, *that they adorn themselves in modest apparel, with shamefacedness and sobriety; not with broidered hair, or gold*<sup>2</sup>. For if one ought not to have the head bare, but every <sup>1 Tim. 2. 9.</sup> where to carry about the token of subjection, much more is it becoming to exhibit the same in our deeds. Thus at any rate the former women also used both to call their husbands lords, and to yield the precedence to them. "Because they for their part, you say, used to love their own wives." I know that as well as you: I am not ignorant of it. But when we are exhorting thee concerning thine own duties, let not theirs take all thine attention. For so, when we exhort children to be obedient to parents, saying, that it is written, *honour thy father and thy mother*, they reply to us, "mention also what follows, *and ye fathers, provoke not your children to wrath*<sup>3</sup>." And servants when we tell them, that it <sup>3 Eph. 6. 1-4.</sup> is written, that they should *obey their masters, and not serve with eye-service*, they also again demand of us what follows, bidding us also give the same advice to masters. For Paul

HOMIL. bade them also, they saw, *to forbear threatening*. But let us  
XXVI. not do thus, nor enquire into the things enjoined on others, when we are charged with regard to our own: for neither will thy obtaining a partner in the charges free thee from the blame: but look to one thing only, how thou mayest rid thyself of those charges which lie against thyself. Since Adam also laid the blame on the woman, and she again on the serpent, but this did in no wise deliver them. Do not thou, therefore, for thy part, say this to me now, but be careful with all cheerfulness to render what thou owest to thy husband: since also when I am discoursing with thy husband, advising him to love and cherish thee, I suffer him not to bring forward the law that is appointed for the woman, but I require of him that which is written for his own use. And do thou therefore busy thyself with those things only which belong to thee, and shew thyself tractable to thy consort. And accordingly, if it be really for God's sake that thou obeyest thy husband, tell me not of the things which ought to be done by him, but for what things thou hast been made responsible by the lawgiver, those do thou perform with exactness. For this is especially to obey God, not to transgress the law even when suffering things contrary to it. And by the same rule, he that being beloved, loves, is not reckoned to do any great thing. But he that waits upon a person who hateth him, this above all is the man to receive a crown. In the same manner then do thou also reckon, that if thy husband give thee disgust, and thou endure it, thou shalt receive a glorious crown: but if he be gentle and mild, what will there be for God to reward in thee? And these things I say, not bidding the husbands be harsh; but persuading the wives to bear even with harshness in their husbands. Since, when each is careful to fulfil his own duty, his neighbours' part also will quickly follow: as when the wife is prepared to bear even with rough behaviour in the husband, and the husband refrains from abusing her in her angry mood; then all is a calm, and a harbour free from waves.

[7.] So also was it with those of old time. Each was employed in fulfilling his own duty, not in exacting that of his

neighbour. Thus, if you mark it, Abraham took his brother's <sup>1 Cor.</sup> son: his wife found no fault with him. He commanded her <sup>11. 10.</sup> to travel a long journey; she spake not even against this, but followed. Again, after those many miseries, and labours, and toils, having become lord of all, he yielded the precedency to Lot. And so far from Sarah being offended at this, she did not even open her mouth, nor uttered any such thing, as many of the women of these days utter, when they see their own husbands coming off inferior in such appointments, and especially in dealing with inferiors; reproaching them, and calling them fools, and senseless, and unmanly, and traitors, and stupid. But no such thing did she say, or think, but was pleased with all things that were done by him.

And another thing, and that a greater: after that Lot had the choice put in his power, and had thrown the inferior part upon his uncle, a great danger fell upon him. Whereof the patriarch hearing, armed all his people, and set himself against the whole army of the Persians with his own domestics only, and not even then did she detain him, nor say, as was likely, "O man, whither goest thou, thrusting thyself down precipices, and exposing thyself to so great hazards? for one who wronged thee, and seized on all that was thine, shedding thy blood? Yea, and even if thou make light of thyself, yet have pity on me, which have left house, and country, and friends, and kindred, and have followed thee in so long a pilgrimage; and expose me not to widowhood, and to the miseries of widowhood." None of these things she said: she thought not of them, but bore all in silence.

After this, her womb continuing barren, she herself suffers not the grief of women, nor laments: but he complains, though not to his wife, but to God. And see how each preserves his own appropriate part: for he neither despised Sarah as childless, nor reproached her with any such thing: and she again was anxious to devise some consolation to him for her childlessness by means of the handmaid. For these things had not yet been forbidden then as now. For now neither is it lawful for women to indulge their husbands in such things, nor for the men, with or without the wife's knowledge, to form such connexions, even though the grief of their

HOMIL. childlessness should infinitely harass them: since they also  
XXVI. shall hear the sentence, *their worm shall not die, neither shall their fire be quenched.* For now it is not permitted, but then it had not been forbidden. Wherefore both his wife commanded this, and he obeyed, yet not even thus for pleasure's sake. But "behold," it will be said, "how he cast Hagar out again at her bidding." Well, this is what I want to point  
 (7). out, that both he obeyed her in all things, and she him. But do not thou give heed to these things only, but examine, thou who urgest this plea, into what had gone before also, Hagar's insulting her, her boasting herself against her mistress; than which what can be more vexatious to a free and honourable woman?

[8.] Let not then the wife tarry for the virtue of the husband, and then shew her own, for this is nothing great: nor, on the other hand, the husband, for the obedience of the wife, and then exercise self-command; for neither would this any more be his own well-doing; but let each, as I said, furnish his own share first. For if to the Gentiles, smiting us on the right, we must turn the other cheek; much more ought one to bear with harsh behaviour in a husband.

And I say not this for the wife to be beaten; far from it; for this is the extremest affront, not to her that is beaten, but to him who beateth. But even if by some circumstance thou have such a yoke-fellow allotted thee, take it not ill, O woman, considering the reward which is laid up for such things, and their praise too in this present life. And to you husbands also this I say; make it a rule, that there can be no such offence, as to bring you under the necessity of striking a wife. And why say I a wife? since not even upon his handmaiden could a free man endure to inflict blows, and lay violent hands. But if the shame be great for a man to beat a maidservant, much more to stretch forth the right hand against her that is free. And this one might see even from heathen legislators, who no longer compel her that hath been so treated to live with him that beat her, as being unworthy of her fellowship. For surely it comes of extreme lawlessness, when thy partner of life, she who in the most intimate relations, and that on the highest autho-



rity, is united with thee; when she, like a base slave, is dishonoured by thee. Wherefore also such a man, if indeed one must call him a man, and not rather a wild beast, I should say, was like a parricide and a murderer of his mother. For if for a wife's sake, we were commanded to leave even father and mother, not wronging them, but fulfilling a divine law; and a law so grateful to our parents themselves, that even they, the very persons whom we are leaving, are thankful, and bring it about with great eagerness; what but extreme frenzy can it be to insult her, for whose sake God bade us leave even our parents?

1 Cor.  
 11. 16.

But we may well ask, Is it only madness? There is the shame too: I would fain know who can endure it. And what description can set it before us; when shrieks and wailings are borne along the alleys, and there is a running to the house of him that is so disgracing himself, both of the neighbours and the passers by, as though some wild beast were ravaging within? Better were it that the earth should gape asunder for one so frantic, than that he should be seen at all in the forum after it.

"But the woman is insolent," saith he. Consider nevertheless that she is a woman, the weaker vessel, whereas thou art a man. For therefore wert thou ordained<sup>1</sup> to be ruler; and wert assigned to her in place of a head, that thou mightest bear with the weakness of her that is set under thee. Make then thy rule glorious. And glorious it will be, when the subject of it meets with no dishonour from thee. And as the monarch will appear so much the more dignified, as he manifests more dignity in the officer under him: but if he dishonour and depreciate the greatness of that rank, he is indirectly cutting off no small portion of his own glory likewise: so also thou, if thou dishonour her who governs next to thyself, wilt in no common degree mar the honour of thy governance.

1 Exugo-  
 vidus.

Considering therefore all these things, command thyself: and withal think also of that evening, on which the father having called thee, delivered thee his daughter as a kind of deposit, and having separated her from all, from her mother, from himself, from the family, intrusted her entire

HOMIL. guardianship to thy right hand. Consider that (under God)  
 XXVI. through her thou hast children, and hast become a father,  
 and be thou also on that account gentle towards her.

- (8.) Seest thou not the husbandmen, how the earth which hath once received the seed, they tend with all various methods of culture, though it have ten thousand disadvantages; e.g. though it be an unkindly soil, or bear ill weeds, or though it be vexed with excessive rain through the nature of its situation? This also do thou. For thus shalt thou be first to enjoy both the fruit and the calm. Since thy wife is to thee both a harbour, and a potent healing charm, to rejoice thy heart. Well then: if thou shalt free thy harbour from winds and waves, thou shalt enjoy much tranquillity on thy return from the market-place: but if thou fill it with clamour and tumult, thou dost but prepare for thyself a more grievous shipwreck. In order then to prevent this, let what I advise be done: When any thing uncomfortable happens in the household, if she be in the wrong, console her, and do not aggravate the discomfort. For even if thou shouldst lose all, nothing is more grievous than to have a wife without good-will sharing thine abode. And whatever offence thou canst mention, thou wilt tell me of nothing so very painful, as being at strife with her. So that if it were only for such reasons as these, let her love be more precious than all things. For if one another's burdens are to be borne, much more our own wife's.

Though she be poor, do not upbraid her: though she be foolish, do not trample on her, but correct her rather: because she is a member of thee, and ye are become one flesh. "But she is trifling, and drunken, and passionate." Thou oughtest then to grieve over these things, not to be angry; and to beseech God, and exhort her, and give her advice, and do every thing to cut away the evil. But if thou strike her, and keep on fretting her, the disease is not healed: for fierceness is removed by moderation, not by rival fierceness. With these things bear in mind also the reward from God: that when it is permitted thee to cut her off, and thou doest not so for the fear of God, but bearest with so great defects, fearing the law appointed in such matters, which forbids to put away a wife

whatsoever disease she may have: thou shalt receive an unspeakable reward. Yea, and before the reward thou shalt be a very great gainer, both rendering her more obedient, and becoming thyself more gentle thereby. It is said, for instance, that one of the heathen philosophers<sup>1</sup>, who had a bad wife, a trifler and a drunkard, when some asked, "Why, having such an one, he endured her;" he made reply, "That he might have in his house a school and training-place of philosophy. For I shall be to all the rest meeker," saith he, "being here disciplined every day." Did you utter a great shout? Why, I at this moment am greatly mourning, when heathens prove better lovers of wisdom than we; we who are commanded to imitate angels, nay rather who are commanded to follow God Himself in respect of gentleness.

But to proceed: it is said, that for this reason the philosopher having a bad wife, cast her not out; and some say, that this very thing was the reason of his marrying her. But I, because many men have dispositions not exactly reasonable, advise that at first they do all they can, and be careful that they take a suitable partner, and one full of all virtue. Should it happen, however, that they miss their end, and she whom they have brought into the house prove no good or tolerable bride, then I would have them at any rate try to be like this philosopher, and be always putting her in tune, and add not wilfully any of these things. Since neither will a merchant, until he have made a compact with his partner capable of procuring peace, launch the vessel into the deep, nor apply himself to the rest of the transaction. And let us then use every effort, that she who is partner with us in the business of life, and in this our vessel, may be kept in all peace within. For thus shall our other affairs too be all in calm, and with tranquillity shall we run our course through the ocean of the present life. Compared with this, let house, and slaves, and money, and lands, and the business itself of the state, be less in our account. And let it be more valuable than all in our eyes, that she who with us sits ruling over the house, should not be in mutiny and disunion with us. For so shall our other matters proceed with a favouring tide, and in spiritual things also we shall find ourselves much the freer from hindrance, drawing this yoke with one accord; and having

<sup>1</sup> Cor.  
11. 16.

<sup>1</sup> So-  
crates.

368      *Conjugal Peace may be an earnest of Eternal.*

**HOMIL.** done all things well, we shall obtain the blessings laid up  
**XXVI.** in store; unto which may we all attain, through the grace  
and mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ, with Whom to the  
Father, with the Holy Ghost, be glory, power, and honour,  
now and ever, and world without end. Amen.

## HOMILY XXVII.

---

1 COR. xi. 17.

*Now in this that I declare unto you, I praise you not, that ye come together not for the better, but for the worse.*

It is necessary in considering the present charge, to state also first the occasion of it. For thus again will our discourse be more intelligible. What then is this occasion?

As in the case of the three thousand who believed in the beginning, all had eaten their meals in common, and had all things common; such also was the practice at the time when the Apostle wrote this: not such indeed exactly; but as it were a certain outflowing of that communion abiding among them, descended also to them that came after. And because of course some were poor, but others rich, they laid not down all their goods in the midst, but made the tables open on stated days, as it should seem; and when the solemn service<sup>1</sup> was completed, after the communion of the mysteries, they all<sup>2</sup> went to a common entertainment, the rich bringing their provisions with them, and the poor and destitute being invited by them, and all feasting in common. But afterward this custom also became corrupt. And the reason was, their being divided, and addicting themselves, some to this party, and others to that, and saying, "I am of such a one," and "I of such a one;" which thing also to correct he said, in the beginning of the Epistle, *For it hath been declared to me of you, my brethren, by them which are of the house of Chloe, that there are contentions among you. Now this I say, that every one of you saith, I am of Paul; and I of Apollos; and I of Cephas.* Not that Paul was the person to whom they



**HOMIL.** were attaching themselves: for he would not have borne it:  
**XXVII.** but wishing, by doing more than was required, to tear up this custom from the root, he introduced himself, indicating that if any one had inscribed upon himself even his name, when breaking off from the common body, even so the thing done was profane, and extreme wickedness. And if in his case it were wickedness, much more in the case of those others, inferior to him.

[2.] Since therefore this custom was broken through, a custom most excellent, and most useful; (for it was a foundation of love, and a comfort to poverty, and a corrective of riches, and an occasion of the highest philosophy, and an instruction of humility:) since however he saw so great advantages in a way to be destroyed, he naturally addresses them with severity, thus saying: *Now in this that I declare unto you, I praise you not.* For in the former charge, as there were many who kept (the ordinances), he began otherwise, saying thus: *Now I praise you, that ye remember me in all things:* but here contrariwise, *Now in this that I declare unto you, I praise you not.* And here is the reason why he placed it not after the rebuke of them that eat the idol-sacrifices. But because that was unusually harsh, he inserts by the way the discourse about wearing of long hair, that he might not have to pass from one set of vehement reproofs to others again of an invidious kind, and so appear too harsh: and then he returns to the more vehement tone, and says, *Now in this that I declare unto you, I praise you not.* What is this? That which I am about to tell you of. What is, *declaring unto you, I praise you not?* "I do not approve you," saith he, "because ye have reduced me to the necessity of giving advice: I do not praise you, because ye have required instruction in regard to this, because ye have need of an admonition from me." Dost thou perceive how from his beginning he signifieth that what was done was very profane? For when he that errs ought not to require so much as a hint to prevent his erring, the error would seem to be unpardonable.

And why dost thou not praise? Because *ye come together*, saith he, *not for the better, but for the worse;* i. e. because ye do not go forward unto virtue. For it were meet that

your liberality<sup>1</sup> should increase and become manifold, but ye have taken rather from the custom which already prevailed, and have so taken from it, as even to need warning from me, in order that ye may return to the former order.

Further, that he might not seem to say these things on account of the poor only, he doth not at once strike in to the discourse concerning the tables, lest he render his rebuke such as they might easily come to think slightly of, but he searches for an expression most confounding, and very fearful. For what saith he?

Ver. 18. *For first of all, when ye come together in the Church, I hear that there be schisms<sup>2</sup> among you.*

And he saith not, "For I hear that you do not sup together in common;" "for I hear that you feast in private, and not with the poor:" but what was most calculated thoroughly to shake their minds, that he set down, the name of *schism*, which was the cause of this mischief also: and so he reminded them again of that which was said in the beginning of the Epistle, and was declared by them of the house of Chloe<sup>3</sup>.

*And I partly believe it.*

Thus, lest they should say, "But what if the accusers speak falsely?" he neither saith, "I believe it," lest he should rather make them reckless; nor again, on the other hand, "I disbelieve it," lest he should seem to reprove without cause, but, *I partly believe it*, saith he, i. e. "I believe it in a small part;" making them anxious, and inviting them to return to correction.

[3.] Ver. 19. *For there must be also heresies among you, that they which are approved may be made manifest among you.*

By *heresies*, here, he means those which concern not the great doctrines, but these present divisions. But even if he had spoken of the doctrinal heresies, not even thus did he give them any handle. For Christ Himself said, *it must needs be that offences come<sup>4</sup>*, not destroying the liberty of the will, nor appointing any necessity and compulsion over man's life, but foretelling what would certainly ensue from the evil mind of men; which would take place, not because of his prediction, but because the incurably disposed are so minded. For not because he foretold them did these things happen:

<sup>1</sup> 1 Cor.  
11. 19.  
<sup>2</sup> φιλονεικίας.  
<sup>3</sup> οἰκίας.

<sup>2</sup> σχίσμα.  
rec. vers.  
"divisions."

<sup>3</sup> c. 1. 11.

<sup>4</sup> Mat.  
18. 7.

**HOMIL.**  
**XXVII.** but because they were certainly about to happen, therefore he foretold them. Since, if the offences were of necessity, and not of the mind of them that bring them in, it was superfluous His saying, *Woe to that man by whom the offence cometh.* But these things we discussed more at length when we were upon the passage itself<sup>1</sup>; now we must proceed to what is before us.

<sup>1</sup> vid. S.  
Chrys.  
on S.  
Matth.  
Hom.  
59.

Now that he said these things of these heresies relating to the tables, and that contention and division, he made manifest also from what follows. For having said, *I hear that there are schisms among you*, he stopped not here, but signifying what schisms he means, he goes on to say, *every one taketh before other his own supper*, and again, *What? have ye not houses to eat and to drink in? or despise ye the Church of God?* However, that of these he was speaking, is evident. And if he call them *schisms*, marvel not. For, as I said, he wishes to touch them by the expression: whereas, had they been schisms of doctrine, he would not have discoursed with them thus mildly. Hear him, for instance, when he speaks of any such thing, how vehement he is, both in assertion, and in reproof: in assertion, as when he says, *If even an angel preach any other gospel unto you than that ye have received,*

<sup>2</sup> Gal. 1. *let him be accursed*<sup>2</sup>; but in reproof, as when he says,  
<sup>8.</sup> *Whosoever of you are justified by the law, ye are fallen from*

<sup>3</sup> Gal. 5. *grace*<sup>3</sup>. And at one time he calls the corrupters *dogs*, saying,

<sup>4.</sup> *Beware of dogs*<sup>4</sup>: at another, *having their consciences seared with a hot iron*<sup>5</sup>. And again, *angels of Satan*<sup>6</sup>: but here he

<sup>7</sup> 1 Tim. <sup>4. 2.</sup> said no such thing, but spake in a gentle and subdued tone.

<sup>8</sup> 2 Cor. <sup>11. 14,</sup> <sup>15.</sup> But what is, *that they which are approved may be made manifest among you?* That they may shine the more. And

what he intends to say is this, that those who are unchangeable and firm are so far from being at all injured hereby, but even shews them the more, and declares them more glorious.

<sup>7</sup> *For the word, that*<sup>7</sup>, is not every where indicative of the cause, but frequently also of the event, of things. Thus Christ Himself uses it, when He saith, *For judgment I am come into this world; that they which see not might see, and that they which see might be made blind*<sup>8</sup>. So likewise Paul in

another place, when discoursing of the law, he writes,

<sup>9</sup> *Moreover, the Law entered, that the offence might abound*<sup>9</sup>.  
<sup>5. 20.</sup>

<sup>8</sup> John  
9. 39.

<sup>9</sup> Rom.  
5. 20.

But neither was the law given to this end, that the offences of the Jews might be increased: (though this did ensue:) nor did Christ come for this end, that they which see might be made blind, but for the contrary; but the result was such. Thus then also here must one understand the expression, *that they which are approved may be made manifest*. For not at all with this view came heresies into being, that *they which are approved may be made manifest*, but on these heresies taking place such was the result. Now these things he said to console the poor, those of them who nobly bore that sort of contempt. Wherefore he said not, "that they may become approved," but, *that they which are approved may be made manifest*; shewing, that before this also they were such, but they were mixed up with the multitude, and while enjoying such relief as was afforded them by the rich, they were not very conspicuous: but now this strife and contentiousness hath made them manifest, even as the storm shews the pilot. And he said not, "that ye may appear approved," but, "that *they which are approved may be made manifest*, those among you who are such." For neither when he is accusing doth he lay them open, that he may not render them more reckless; nor when praising, that he may not make them more boastful; but he leaves both this expression and that in suspense<sup>1</sup>, allowing each man's own

<sup>1</sup> Com.  
11. 20.

couscience to make the application of what he saith. Nor doth he here seem to me to be comforting the poor only, but those also who were not violating the custom. For it was likely that there were among them also those that observed it.

<sup>1</sup> *et me-  
ritum  
dignum,  
"sends  
it out  
into the  
air."*

And this is why he said, *I partly believe it*. Justly then doth he call these *approved*, who not only with the rest observed the custom, but even without them kept this good law undisturbed. And he doth this, studying by such praises to render both others and these persons themselves more forward.

[4.] Then at last he adds the very form of the offence. And what is it?

Ver. 20. *When ye come together into one place, saith he, this is not to eat the Lord's Supper.*

Seest thou how effectually appealing to their shame, even



HOMIL.  
XXVII.

already, by way of narrative, he contrives to give them his counsel? "For the appearance of your assembly," saith he, "is different. It is one of love, and brotherly affection. At least one place receives you all, and ye are together in one flock. But the Banquet, when you come to that, bears no resemblance to the Assembly of worshippers." And he said not, "When ye come together, this is not to eat in common," "this is not to feast with one another;" but otherwise again and much more fearfully he reprimands them, saying, *this is not to eat the Lord's Supper*, sending them away now from this point to that evening, on which Christ delivered the awful mysteries. Therefore also he called the early meal *a supper*. For that supper too had them all reclining at meat together: yet surely not so great was the distance between the rich and the poor, as between the Teacher and the disciples. For that is infinite. And why say I the Teacher and the disciples? Think of the interval between the Teacher and the traitor: nevertheless the Lord Himself both sat at meat with them, and did not even cast him out, but both gave him his portion of salt, and made him partaker of the mysteries.

(3.)  
1 in ὁ  
φάγῃ.

Next he explains how *this is not to eat the Lord's Supper*.

Ver. 21. *For in your eating<sup>1</sup>, every one taketh before other his own supper, saith he, and one is hungry, and another is drunken.*

Perceivest thou how he intimates that they were disgracing themselves rather? For that which is the Lord's, they make a private matter: so that themselves are the first to suffer indignity, depriving their own talk of its greatest prerogative. How, and in what manner? Because the Lord's Supper, i. e. the Master's, ought to be common. For the property of the master belongs not to this servant without belonging to that, but in common to all. So that by *the Lord's Supper* he expresses this, the *community* of the feast. As if he had said, "If it be thy master's, as assuredly it is, thou oughtest not to withdraw it as private, but as belonging to thy Lord and Master, to set it in common before all. For this is the meaning of, *the Lord's*. But now thou dost not suffer it to be the Lord's, not suffering it to be common, but feasting by thyself." Wherefore also he goes on to say,



*For each one taketh before other his own supper.* And he said not, "cutteth off," but *taketh before*, tacitly censuring them both for greediness and for precipitancy. This at least the sequel also shews. For having said this, he added again, *and one is hungry, and another is drunken*, each of which shewed a want of moderation, both the craving, and the excess. See also a second fault again, whereby those same persons are injured: the first that they dishonour their supper: the second, that they are greedy and drunken; and what is yet worse, even when the poor are hungry. For what was intended to be set before all in common, that these men fed on alone, and proceeded both to surfeiting and to drunkenness. Wherefore neither did he say, "*one is hungry, and another is filled:*" but, *is drunken*. Now each of these, even by itself, is worthy of censure: for it is a fault to be drunken, even without despising the poor, and to despise the poor, without being drunken, is an accusation. When both then are joined together at the same time, consider how exceeding great is the transgression.

Next, having pointed out their profaneness, he adds his reprimand in what follows, with much anger, saying,

Ver. 22. *What? have ye not houses to eat and to drink in? Or despise ye the Church of God, and shame them that have not?*

Seest thou how he transferred the charge from the indignity offered to the poor, to the Church, that his words might make a deeper impression of disgust? Here now you see is yet a fourth accusation, when not the poor only, but the Church likewise is insulted. For even as thou makest the Lord's Supper a private meal, so also the place again, using the Church as a house. For it was made a Church, not that we who come together might be divided, but that they who are divided might be joined: and this the act of assembling shews.

*And shame them that have not.* He said not, "and kill with hunger them that have not," but so as much more to put them to the blush, *shame them*; to point out that it is not food which he cares for so much, as the wrong done unto them. Behold again a fifth accusation, not only to overlook the poor, but even to shame them. Now this he said, partly

1 Cor.  
11. 22.

HOMIL. as treating with reverence the concerns of the poor, and  
XXVII. intimating that they grieve not so for the belly, as for the shame; and partly also drawing the hearer to compassion.

Having therefore pointed out so great impieties, indignity to the Supper, indignity to the Church, the contempt practised towards the poor; he relaxes again the tone of his reproof, saying, all of a sudden<sup>1</sup>, *Shall I praise you? In this I praise you not.* Wherein one might especially marvel at him, that when there was need to strike and chide more vehemently after the proof of so great offences, he doeth the contrary rather, gives way, and permits them to recover breath. What then may the cause be? He had touched more painfully than usual, in aggravating the charge, and being a most excellent physician, he carries the incision as far as may answer to the wounds, neither cutting superficially those parts which require a deep stroke; (for thou hast heard him, how he cut off among those very persons, him that had committed fornication;) nor delivering over to the knife those things which require the milder sort of remedies. For this cause then, here also he conducts his address more mildly, and in another point of view likewise, he sought especially to render them gentle to the poor: and this is why he discourses with them rather in a subdued tone.

<sup>1</sup> χαλῶ  
τὸν τόνον,  
ἀθροῦν  
λίγων.

[5.] Next, wishing also from another topic to shame them yet more, he takes again the points which were most essential, and of them weaves his discourse.

Ver. 23. *For I have received of the Lord, saith he, that which also I delivered unto you: that the Lord Jesus, the same night in which He was betrayed, took bread:*

Ver. 24. *And when He had given thanks, He brake it, and said, Take, eat: this is My Body, which is broken for you: this do in remembrance of Me.*

Wherefore doth he here make mention of the Mysteries? Because that argument was very necessary to his present purpose. As thus: "Thy Master," saith he, "counted all worthy of the same table, though it be very and most exceedingly awful, and far exceeding the dignity of all: but thou considerest them to be unworthy even of thine own, small and mean as we see it is; and while they have no advantage over thee in spiritual things, thou robbest

them in the temporal things. For neither are these thine own." 1 Cor.  
11. 24.

However, he doth not express himself thus, to prevent his discourse becoming harsh: but he frames it in a gentler form, saying, that *the Lord Jesus, in the same night in which He was betrayed, took bread.*

And wherefore doth he remind us of the time, and of that evening, and of the betrayal? Not indifferently, nor without some reason, but that he might exceedingly fill them with compunction, were it but from consideration of the time. For even if one be a very stone, yet when he considers that night, how He was with His disciples, *very heavy*, how he was betrayed, how He was bound, how He was led away, how He was judged, how He suffered all the rest in order; he becometh softer than wax, and is withdrawn from earth, and all the pomp of this world. Therefore he leads us to the remembrance of all those things, by His time, and His table, and His betrayal, putting us to shame, and saying, "Thy Master gave up even Himself for thee: and thou dost not (4.) even share a little meat with thy brother for thine own sake."

But how saith he, that *he received it from the Lord?* since certainly he was not present then, but was one of the persecutors. That thou mayest know that the first table had no advantage above that which cometh after it. For even to-day also it is He who doeth all, and delivereth it even as then.

And not on this account only doth he remind us of that night, but that he may also in another way bring us to compunction. For as we particularly remember those words, which we hear last from those who are departing; and to their heirs, if they should venture to transgress their commands, when we would put them to shame we say, "Consider that this was the last word your father uttered to you, and until the evening when he was just about to breathe his last, he kept repeating these injunctions!" just so Paul, purposing hence also to make his argument full of awefulness; "Remember," saith he, "that this was the last mysterious rite<sup>1</sup> He gave<sup>1</sup> *μυστη-  
ριας* unto you, and in that night, on which He was about to be slain for us, He commanded these things, and having delivered to us that supper, after that He added nothing further."

Next also he proceeds to recount the very things that were



HOMIL. done, saying, *He took bread, and, when He had given thanks,*  
 XXVII. *He brake it, and said, Take, eat: this is My Body, which is*  
*broken for you.* If therefore thou comest for a sacrifice of  
 thanksgiving<sup>1</sup>, do thou on thy part nothing unworthy of that  
 sacrifice: by no means either dishonour thy brother, or  
 neglect him in his hunger; be not drunken, insult not the  
 Church. As thou comest, giving thanks for what thou hast  
 enjoyed: so do thou thyself accordingly make return, and  
 not cut thyself off from thy neighbour. Since Christ for  
 His part gave Himself equally to all, saying, *Take, eat.* He  
 gave His body equally, but thou dost not give so much as  
 the common bread equally. Yea, it was indeed broken for  
 all alike, and became the Body equally for all.

<sup>1</sup> *εὐχαρισ-  
 τία.*

Ver. 25. *After the same manner also the cup, when He had  
 supped, saying, This cup is the New Testament in My Blood:  
 this do as oft as ye drink it in remembrance of Me.*

What sayest thou? Art thou making a remembrance of  
 Christ, and despisest thou the poor, and tremblest not?  
 Why, if a son or brother had died, and thou wert making  
 a remembrance of him, thou wouldest have been smitten by  
 thy conscience, hadst thou not fulfilled the custom, and  
 invited the poor: and when thou art making remembrance  
 of thy Master, dost thou not so much as simply give a portion  
 of the table?

But what is it which He saith, *This cup is the New  
 Testament?* Because there was also a cup of the Old  
 Testament; the libations and the blood of the brute creatures.  
 For so, after sacrificing, they used to receive the blood in a  
 chalice and bowl, and so pour it out. Since then instead of  
 the blood of beasts, He brought in His own blood; lest any  
 should be troubled on hearing this, He reminds them of that  
 ancient sacrifice.

[6.] Next, having spoken concerning that supper, he con-  
 nects the things present with the things of that time, that  
 even as on that very evening, and reclining on that very  
 couch, and receiving from Christ Himself this sacrifice, so  
 also now might men be affected; and he saith,

Ver. 26. *For as often as ye eat this bread, and drink this  
 cup, ye do shew the Lord's death till He come.*

For as Christ, in regard to the bread and the cup, said, *Do*

*this in remembrance of Me*, revealing to us the cause of the giving of the mystery, and besides what else He said, declaring this to be a sufficient cause to ground our religious fear upon:—(for when thou considerest what thy Master hath suffered for thee, thou wilt the better deny thyself:)—so also Paul saith here: *as often as ye eat ye do shew His death.* And this is that supper. Then intimating, that it abides unto the end, he saith, *till He come.*

Ver. 27. *Wherefore whosoever shall eat this bread and drink this cup of the Lord unworthily, shall be guilty of the body and blood of the Lord.*

Why so? Because he poured it out, and makes the thing appear a slaughter, and no longer a sacrifice. Much therefore as they who then pierced him, pierced Him not that they might drink, but that they might shed His blood: so likewise doth he that cometh for it unworthily, and reaps no profit thereby. Seest thou how fearful he makes his discourse, and inveighs against them very exceedingly, signifying that if they are thus to drink, they partake unworthily of the elements<sup>1</sup>? For how can it be other than unworthily, when it is he who neglects the hungry? who besides overlooking him, puts him to shame? Since if not giving to the poor casteth one out of the kingdom, even though one should be a virgin; or rather, not giving liberally: (for even those virgins too had oil, only they had it not abundantly:) consider how great the evil will prove, to have wrought so many impieties?

“What impieties?” say you. Why sayest thou, what impieties? Thou hast partaken of such a Table, and when thou oughtest to be more gentle than any, and like the angels, none so cruel as thou art become. Thou hast tasted the blood of the Lord, and not even thereupon dost thou acknowledge thy brother. Of what indulgence then art thou worthy? Whereas if even before this thou hadst not known him, thou oughtest to have come to the knowledge of him from the Table; but now thou dishonourest the Table itself; he having been deemed worthy to partake of it, and thou not judging him worthy of thy meat. Hast thou not heard how much he suffered who demanded the hundred pence? how he made void the gift vouchsafed to him<sup>2</sup>. Doth it not come into thy mind what thou wert, and what thou hast become?

<sup>1</sup> Cor.  
11. 27.

<sup>1</sup> τὸν  
σχομισ-  
τον.

(5.)

<sup>2</sup> ἡμε-  
τερον,  
perhaps  
“officially de-  
clared.”



HOMIL.  
XXVII.

Dost thou not put thyself in remembrance, that if this man be poor in possessions, thou wast much more beggarly in good works, being full of ten thousand sins? Notwithstanding, God delivered thee from all those, and counted thee worthy of such a Table: but thou art not even thus become more merciful: therefore of course nothing else remaineth, but that thou shouldest be *delivered to the tormentors.*

[7.] These words let us also listen to, all of us, as many as in this place approach with the poor to this holy Table, but when we go out, do not seem even to have seen them, but are both drunken, and pass heedlessly by the hungry; the very things whereof the Corinthians were then accused. And when is this done? say you. At all times indeed, but especially at the festivals, where above all times it ought not so to be. Is it not so, that at such times, immediately after the Communion, drunkenness succeeds, and contempt of the poor? And having partaken of the Blood, when it were a time for thee to fast and watch, thou givest thyself up to wine and revelling. And yet if thou hast by chance made thy morning meal on any thing good, thou keepest thyself, lest by any other unsavoury viand thou spoil the taste of the former: and now that thou hast been feasting on the Spirit, thou bringest in a satanical luxury. Consider, when the Apostles partook of that holy Supper, what they did: did they not betake themselves to prayers and singing of hymns? to sacred vigils? to that long work of teaching, so full of all self-denial? For then He related and delivered to them those great and wonderful things, when Judas had gone out to call them who were about to crucify him. Hast thou not heard how the three thousand also who partook of the Communion continued ever in prayer and teaching, not in drunken feasts and revellings? But thou, before thou hast partaken fastest, that in a certain way thou mayest appear worthy of the Communion: but when thou hast partaken, and thou oughtest to increase thy temperance, thou undoest all. And yet surely it is not the same to fast before this and after it. Since although it is our duty to be temperate at both times, yet most particularly after we have received the Bridegroom. Before, that thou mayest become worthy of receiving: after, that thou mayest not be found unworthy of what thou hast received.

"What then? ought we to fast after receiving?" I say not <sup>1 Cor. 11. 27.</sup> this, neither do I use any compulsion. This indeed were well: however, I do not enforce this, but I exhort you not to feast to excess. For if one never ought to live luxuriously, and Paul shewed this when he said, *she that liveth in pleasure is dead while she liveth*<sup>1</sup>; much more will she then <sup>1 Tim. 5. 6.</sup> be dead. And if luxury be death to a woman, much more to a man: and if this done at another time is fatal, much more after the communion of the Mysteries. And dost thou, having taken the bread of life, do an action of death, and not shudder. Knowest thou not how great evils are brought in by luxury? Unseasonable laughter, disorderly expressions, buffoonery fraught with perdition, unprofitable trifling, all the other things, which it is not seemly even to name. And these things thou doest when thou hast enjoyed the table of Christ, on that day, on which thou hast been counted worthy to touch His flesh with thy tongue. Whosoever thou art then, that those things be not so, do thou purify thy right hand, thy tongue, thy lips, which have become a threshold for Christ to tread upon. And when thou settest out a material table, raise thy mind to that Table, to the Supper of the Lord, to the vigil of the disciples, in that night, that holy night. Nay, rather should one accurately examine, this very present state is night. Let us watch then with the Lord, let us be pricked in our hearts with the disciples. It is the season of prayers, not of drunkenness; ever indeed, but especially during a festival. For a festival is therefore appointed, not that we may behave ourselves unseemly, not that we may accumulate sins, but that we may blot out rather those which exist.

Well: I know that I say these things in vain, yet will I not cease to say them. For if ye do not all obey, yet surely ye will not all disobey; or rather, even though ye should all be disobedient, my reward will be greater, though yours will be more condemnation. However, that it may not be more, to this end I will not cease to speak. For perchance, perchance, by my perseverance I shall be able to reach you.

Wherefore I beseech you, that we do not this to condemnation, let us nourish Christ, let us give Him to drink, let us clothe Him. These things are worthy of that table. Hast

HOMIL.  
XXVII. thou heard holy hymns? Hast thou seen a spiritual marriage? Hast thou enjoyed a royal Table? Hast thou been filled with the Holy Ghost? Hast thou joined in the quire of the Seraphim? Hast thou become partaker of the powers above? Cast not away so great a joy, waste not the treasure, bring not in drunkenness, the mother of dejection, the joy of the devil, the parent of ten thousand evils. For hence is sleep like unto death, and heaviness of head, and diseases, and obliviousness, and an image of dead men's condition. Further, if thou wouldest not choose to meet with a friend when intoxicated, when thou hast Christ within, durst thou, tell me, to thrust in upon Him so great excess?

But thou lovest enjoyment. Well then, on this very account I bid thee cease being drunken. For I too would have thee enjoy thyself, but with the real enjoyment, that which never fadeth. What then is the real enjoyment, ever blooming?

<sup>1</sup> 1<sup>st</sup> 2<sup>nd</sup>.  
συν: cf.  
Rev. 2.  
20. Invite Christ to sup<sup>1</sup> with thee: give Him to partake of thine, or rather of His own. This bringeth pleasure without limit, and in its prime everlastingly. But the things of sense are not such; rather as soon as they appear they vanish away; and he that hath enjoyed them will be in no better condition than he who hath not, or rather in a worse. For the one is settled as it were in a harbour, but the other exposes himself to a kind of torrent, a besieging army of distempers, and hath not even any power to endure the first swell of the sea<sup>2</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> τὸ  
ζῆλον  
ταύτης. That these things therefore be not so, let us follow after all moderation. For thus we shall both be in a good state of body, and we shall possess our souls in security, and shall be delivered from evils both present and future: from which may we all be delivered, and attain unto the kingdom, through the grace and mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ, with Whom to the Father, together with the Holy Spirit, be glory, power, and honour, now and ever, and world without end. Amen.



## HOMILY XXVIII.

---

I COR. xi. 28.

*But let a man examine himself, and so let him eat of that bread, and drink of that cup.*

WHAT mean these words, when another object is proposed to us? This is Paul's custom, as also I said before, not only to treat of those things which he had proposed to himself, but also if an argument, incidental to his purpose, occur, to proceed upon this also with great diligence, and especially when it relate to very necessary and urgent matters. Thus, when he was discoursing with married persons, and the question about the servants fell in his way, he handled it very strenuously and at great length. Again, when he was speaking of the duty of not going to law before those courts, then also having fallen upon the admonition respecting covetousness, he discoursed at length concerning this subject likewise. Now the same thing he hath also done here: in that, having once found occasion to remind them of the Mysteries, he judged it necessary to proceed with that subject. For indeed it was no ordinary one. Wherefore also he discoursed very awfully concerning it, providing for that which is the sum of all good things, viz. their approaching those Mysteries with a pure conscience. Whence neither was he content with the things said before alone, but adds these also, saying,

*But let a man examine himself:* which also he saith in the second Epistle: *prove yourselves, examine yourselves*<sup>1</sup>; <sup>1</sup> 2 Cor. 13. 5. not as we do now, approaching because of the season rather than from any earnestness of mind. For we do not consider

HOMIL.  
XXVIII.

how we may approach prepared, with the ills that were within us purged out, and full of compunction, but how we may come at festivals, and whenever all do so. But not thus did Paul bid us come: he knoweth only one season of access and communion, the purity of a man's conscience. Since if even that kind of banquet which the senses take cognizance of cannot be partaken of by us, when feverish and full of bad humours, without risk of perishing: much more is it unlawful for us to touch this Table with profane lusts, which are more grievous than fevers. Now when I say profane lusts, I mean both the desires of the body, and of money, and of anger, and of malice, and, in a word, all that are profane. And it becomes him that approacheth, first to empty himself of all these things, and so to touch that pure sacrifice. And neither, if indolently disposed and reluctantly, ought he to be compelled to approach by reason of the festival; nor, on the other hand, if penitent and prepared, should any one prevent him, because it is not a festival. For a festival is the shewing forth of good works, and reverence of soul, and exactness of conversation. And if thou hast these things, thou mayest at all times keep festival, and at all times approach. Wherefore he saith, *But let each man examine himself, and then let him approach.* And he bids not one examine another, but a man himself, making the tribunal not a public one, and the conviction without a witness.

[2.] Ver. 29. *For he that eateth and drinketh unworthily, eateth and drinketh damnation to himself.*

What sayest thou, tell me? Is this Table, which is the cause of so many blessings, and teeming with life, become condemnation? Not from its own nature, saith he, but from the will of him that approaches. For as His presence, which conveyed to us those great and unutterable blessings, condemned the more them that received it not: so also the Mysteries become provisions<sup>1</sup> of greater punishment to such as partake unworthily.

<sup>1</sup> *epidæ.*  
*vinctio.*

But why doth he eat condemnation to himself? *Not discerning the Lord's body:* i. e. not searching, not bearing in mind, as he ought, the greatness of the things set before him; not estimating the weight of the gift. For if thou shouldest



come to know accurately Who it is that lies before thee, <sup>1 Cor.</sup> and Who He is that gives Himself, and to whom, thou <sup>11. 31.</sup> wilt need no other argument, but this is enough for thee to use all vigilance; unless thou shouldest be altogether fallen.

Ver. 30. *For this cause many are weak and sickly among you, and many sleep.*

Here he now no longer brings his examples from others, as he did in the case of the idol-sacrifices, relating the ancient histories, and the chastisements in the wilderness, but from the Corinthians themselves; which also made the discourse apt to strike them more keenly. For whereas he was saying, *he eateth condemnation to himself, and he is guilty*; that he might not seem to speak mere words, he points to deeds also, and calls themselves to witness; a kind of thing which comes home to men more than threatening, by the intimation it gives us of the threat having issued in some real fact. He was not however content with these things alone, but from these he also introduced and confirmed the argument concerning hell-fire, terrifying them in both ways; and solving an inquiry which goes the round of all places. I mean, since many question one with another, "whence arise the untimely deaths, whence the long diseases of men;" he tells them that these unexpected events are many of them conditional upon certain sins. "What then? They who are in continual health," say you, "and come to a green old age, do they not sin?" Nay, who durst say this? "How then," say you, "do they not suffer punishment?" Because there they shall suffer a severer one. But we, if we would, neither here, nor there, need suffer it. (2.)

Ver. 31. *For if we would judge ourselves, saith he, we should not be judged.*

And he said not, "if we punished ourselves, if we were revenged on ourselves," but only if we were willing to acknowledge our offences, to pass sentence on ourselves, to condemn the things done amiss, we should be rid of the punishment both in this world and the next. For he that condemns himself, propitiates God in two ways, both by acknowledging his sins, and by being more on his guard for the future. But since we are not willing to do even this light thing, as we

HOMIL.  
XXVIII.

ought to do it, not even thus doth He endure to punish us with the world, but even after that spareth us, exacting punishment in this world, where the penalty is for a season, and the consolation great; for the result is both deliverance from sins, and a good hope of things to come, alleviating the present evils. And these things he saith, at the same time comforting the sick, and rendering the rest more serious. Wherefore he saith,

Ver. 32. *But now, when we are judged, we are chastened of the Lord.*

He said not, we are punished, he said not, we have vengeance taken on us, but, *we are chastened*. For what is done belongs rather to admonition than condemnation, to healing than vengeance, to correction than punishment. And not so only, but also by the threat of a greater evil he makes the present light, saying, *that we may not be condemned with the world*. Seest thou how he brings in hell also, and that tremendous judgment-seat, and signifies that that trial and punishment is necessary, and by all means must be? For if the faithful, and such as God especially cares for, escape not without punishment in whatsoever things they offend, (and this is evident from things present,) much more the unbelieving, and they who commit the unpardonable and incurable sins.

[8.] Ver. 33. *Therefore when ye come together to eat, tarry one for another.*

Thus, while their fear was yet at its height, and the terror of hell remained, he chooses again to bring in also the exhortation in behalf of the poor, on account of which he said all these things; implying that if they do not this, they must partake unworthily. But if the not imparting of our goods excludes from that table, much more the violently taking away. And he said not, "wherefore, when ye come together, impart to them that need," but, which has a more reverential sound, *tarry one for another*. For this also prepared the way for and intimated that, and with becoming decency introduced the exhortation. Then further to shame them,

Ver. 34. *And if any man hunger, let him eat at home.*

By permitting, he hinders it, and more strongly than by an absolute prohibition. For he brings him out of the church,

and sends him to his house, hereby severely reprimanding <sup>1 Cor.</sup> and ridiculing them, as slaves to the belly, and unable to <sup>11. 34.</sup> contain themselves. For he said not, "if any despise the poor," but *if any hunger*, discoursing as with impatient children; as with brute beasts, which are slaves to appetite. Since it would be indeed very ridiculous, if, because they were hungry, they were to eat at home.

Yet he was not content with this, but added also another more fearful thing, saying, *that ye come not together unto condemnation*: that ye come not unto chastisement, unto punishment, insulting the Church, dishonouring your brother. "For for this cause ye come together," saith he, "that ye may love one another, that ye may profit, and be profited. But if the contrary happen, it were better for you to feed yourselves at home."

This, however, he said, that he might attract them to him the more. Yea, this was the very purpose both of his pointing out the injury that would arise from hence, and of his saying that condemnation was no trifling one, and terrifying them in every way, by the mysteries, by the sick, by those that had died, by the other things before mentioned.

Then also he alarms them again in another way, saying, *and the rest will I set in order when I come*: with reference either to some other things, or to this very matter. For since it was likely that they would yet have some reasons to allege, and it was not possible to set all to rights by letters, "the things which I have charged you, let them be observed for the present," saith he; "but if ye have any thing else to mention, let it be kept for my coming;" speaking either of this matter, as I said, or of some other things not very urgent. And this he doth, that hence too he may render them more serious. For being anxious about his coming, they would correct the error. For the sojourning of Paul in any place was no ordinary thing: and to signify this he said, *some are puffed up, as though I would not come to you*<sup>1</sup>; and else-<sup>1 1 Cor.</sup> where again, *not as in my presence only, but now much more*<sup>2. 11.</sup> *in my absence, work out your own salvation with fear and trembling*<sup>3</sup>. And therefore neither did he merely promise, <sup>Phil.</sup> that he would come, lest they should disbelieve him, and <sup>2. 12.</sup> become more negligent; but he also states a necessary cause



HOMIL.  
XXVIII. for his sojourning with them, saying, *the rest I will set in order when I come*; which implies, that the correction of the things that remained, even had he not in any case been desirous, would have drawn him thither.

- (3.) [4.] Hearing therefore all these things, let us both take great care of the poor, and restrain our appetite, and rid ourselves of drunkenness, and be careful worthily to partake of the Mysteries; and whatsoever we suffer, let us not take it bitterly, neither for ourselves, nor for others; as when untimely deaths happen, or long diseases. For this is deliverance from punishment, this is correction, this is most excellent admonition. Who saith this? He that hath Christ speaking in him.

But nevertheless even after this many of our women are so foolishly disposed, as even to go beyond the unbelievers in the excess of their grief\*. And some do this blinded by their passion, but others for ostentation, and to avoid the censures of them that are without: who most of all are deprived of all excuse, to my mind. For "lest such a one accuse me," saith she, "let God be my accuser: lest men more senseless than the brute beasts condemn me, but the law of the King of all be trampled under foot." Why, how many thunderbolts do not these sayings deserve?

1. πικρὸν.  
¶ 100. Again; If any one invite you to a funeral supper<sup>1</sup> after your affliction, shall there be no one to say any thing against it, because there is a law of men which enjoins such things: but when God by His law forbids your mourning, do ye all thus contradict it? Doth not Job come into my mind, O woman? Rememberest thou not his words at the misfortune of his children, which adorned that holy head more than ten thousand crowns, and made proclamation louder than many trumpets? Dost thou make no account of the greatness of his misfortunes, of that unprecedented shipwreck, and that strange and portentous tragedy? For thou possibly hast lost one, or a second, or third: but he so many sons and daughters: and he that had many children suddenly became childless. And not even by degrees were his bowels wasted away: but at one sweep all the fruit of his body was

\* For the sentiments of Christian see S. Cyprian, *De Mortalitate*, c. 15, antiquity about mourning at funerals, 16.

snatched from him. Nor was it by the common law of nature, <sup>1 Cor.</sup> when they had come to old age, but by a death both untimely <sup>11. 34.</sup> and violent: and all together, and when he was not present, nor sitting by them, that at least by hearing their last words he might have some consolation for so bitter an end of theirs: but contrary to all expectation, and without his knowing any thing of what took place, they were all at once overwhelmed, and their house became their grave and their snare.

And not only their untimely death, but many things too besides there were to grieve him; such as their being all in the flower of their age, all virtuous, and loving, all together, that not one of either sex was left, that it befel them not by the common law of nature, that it came after so great a loss, that when he was unconscious of any sin on his own part or on theirs, he suffered these things. For each of these circumstances is enough even by itself to disturb the mind: but when we find them even concurring together, imagine the height of those waves, how great the excess of that storm. And what in particular is greater and worse than his bereavement, he did not even know wherefore all these things happened. On this account then, having no cause to assign for the misfortune, he ascends to the good pleasure of God, and saith, *The Lord gave, the Lord hath taken away*: as it pleased the Lord, even so it happened; *blessed be the name of the Lord for ever*<sup>1</sup>. And these things he said, when he<sup>1 Job</sup> saw himself who had followed after all virtue in the last<sup>11. 21.</sup> extremity; but evil men and seducers, prospering, luxurious, pampered on all sides. And he uttered no such word, as it is likely that some of the weaker sort would have uttered, "Was it for this that I brought up my children, and trained them with all exactness? For this did I open my house to all who passed by, that after those many courses run in behalf of the needy, the naked, the orphans, I might receive this recompense?" But instead of these, he offered up those words better than all sacrifice, saying, *Naked came I out of my mother's womb, and naked shall I return thither*. If however he rent his clothes, and shaved his head, marvel not. For he was a father, and a loving father: and it was meet that both the compassion of his nature should be shewn, and also the self-command of his spirit. Whereas, had he not done



**HOMIL.**  
**XXVIII.** this, perhaps one would have thought this self-command to be of mere insensibility. Therefore he indicates both his natural affection and the exactness of his piety, and in his grief he was not overthrown.

[5.] Yea, and when his trial proceeded further, he is again adorned with other crowns on account of his reply to his wife, saying, *If we have received good at the hand of the Lord, shall we not endure evil?*<sup>1</sup> For in fact his wife was by this time the only one left, all his having been clean destroyed, both his children, and his possessions, and his very body, and she reserved to tempt and to ensnare him. And this indeed was the cause, why the devil did not destroy her with the children, nor asked her death, because he expected that she would contribute much towards the ensnaring that holy man. Therefore he left her as a kind of implement, and a formidable one, for himself. "For if even out of paradise," saith he, "I cast mankind by her means, much more shall I be able to trip him up on the dunghill."

<sup>1</sup> Job  
11. 10.

- (4.) And observe his craft. He did not apply this stratagem when the oxen or the asses, or the camels, nor even when the house fell, and the children were buried under it, but so long looking on the combatant, he suffers her to be silent and quiet. But when the fountain of worms gushed forth, when the skin began to putrify and drop off, and the flesh wasting away to omit an ulcerous and most offensive discharge, and the hand of the devil was wearing him out with sharper pain than gridirons, and furnaces, and any flame, consuming on every side, and eating away his body more grievously than any wild beast, and when a long time had been spent in this misery<sup>2</sup>; then he brings her to him, by this time seasoned<sup>3</sup> and worn down. Whereas if she had approached him at the beginning of his misfortune, neither would she have found him so unnerved, nor would she have had it in her power so to swell out and exaggerate the misfortune by her words. But now when she saw him, through the length of time, thirsting for release, and desiring the termination of what pressed on him, vehemently then doth she come upon him. For to shew that he was quite worn down, and by this time had become unable even to draw

<sup>2</sup> *εὐραχ-*  
*χτυαίνω.*  
Conf.  
*ἄσπετος.*  
Choeph.  
284.

<sup>3</sup> The LXX begin Job ii. 9. with "After a long time had passed."

breath, yea, and desired even to die, hear what he saith; <sup>1 Cor.</sup>  
 "For I would I could lay hands on myself, or could request <sup>11. 34.</sup>  
 another to do it: I would even do this." And observe, I  
 pray, the wickedness of his wife, from what topic she at once  
 begins; namely, from the length of time, saying, *How long*  
*wilt thou hold out*<sup>d</sup>?

Now, if often, even when there were no realities, words  
 alone have prevailed to unman a person, consider what it  
 was likely he then should feel, when, besides these words,  
 the things themselves also were galling him; and what, as it  
 should seem, was worst of all, it was a wife also who spake  
 thus, and a wife who had sunk down utterly, and was giving  
 herself up, and on this account was seeking to cast him also  
 into desperation. However, that we may see more clearly  
 the enquiry which was brought against that adamant wall,  
 let us listen to the very words. What then are these? *How*  
*long wilt thou hold out?* saying, *Lo! I wait a short time*  
*longer, expecting the hope of my salvation.* "Nay," saith  
 she, "the time hath exposed the folly of thy words, while it  
 is protracted, yet shews no mode of escape." And these  
 things she said, not only thrusting him into desperation, but  
 also reproaching and jesting upon him.

For he, ever consoling her as she pressed upon him, and  
 putting her off, would speak as follows: "Wait a little  
 longer, and there will soon be an end of these things." Re-  
 proaching him therefore, she speaks: "Wilt thou now again  
 say the same thing? For a long time hath now run by, and  
 no end of these things hath appeared." And observe her  
 malice, that she makes no mention of the oxen, the sheep,  
 or the camels, as knowing that he was not very much  
 vexed about these; but she goes at once to nature, and  
 reminds him of his children. For on their death she saw  
 him both rending his clothes, and shaving off his hair.

<sup>d</sup> Job ii. 9. where, according to the  
 LXX, the speech of Job's wife stands  
 as follows: "How long wilt thou be  
 patient, saying, Lo, let me endure yet  
 a little while, awaiting the hope of my  
 salvation? For behold, thy memorial  
 is vanished from the earth, even sons  
 and daughters, the throes and labours  
 of my womb, for whom I have wearied

myself in vain with toils: and thou  
 thyself in corruption of worms sittest all  
 night, in the open air, while I am a  
 wanderer and a servant, from place to  
 place, and from house to house, expect-  
 ing the sun when it will set, that I may  
 rest from my labours and the pains  
 which now straiten me: but say some  
 word against the Lord, and die."

HOMIL.  
XXV III. And she said not, "thy children are dead," but very pathetically, *thy memorial is perished from the earth, "the thing for which thy children were desirable."* For if, even now, after that the resurrection hath been made known, children are therefore longed for because they preserve the memory of the departed; much more then. Wherefore also her curse becomes from that consideration more bitter. For in that case, he that cursed, said not, "Let his children be utterly rooted out," but "his memorial from the earth." *Thy sons, and thy daughters.* Thus whereas she said, *the memorial*, she again accurately makes mention of either sex. "But if thou," saith she, "carest not for these, at least consider what is mine." *The pains of my womb, and labours, which I have endured in vain with sorrow.* Now what she means is this: "I, who endured the more, am wronged for thy sake, and having undergone the toils, I am deprived of the fruits."

And see how she neither makes express mention of his loss of property, nor is silent about it, and hurries it by; but in that point of view in which it also might be most pathetically narrated, in that she covertly refers to it. For when she says, *I too am a vagabond and a slave, going about from place to place, from house to house*, she both hints at the loss, and indicates her great distress: these expressions being such as even to enhance that misfortune. "For I come to the doors of others," saith she; "nor do I beg only, but am a wanderer also, and serve a strange and unusual servitude, going round every where, and carrying about the tokens of my calamity, and teaching all men of my woes;" which is most piteous of all, to change house after house. And she stayed not even at these lamentations, but proceeded to say, *Waiting for the sun when it will set, and I shall rest from my miseries, and the pains that encompass me, by which I am now straitened.* "Thus, that which is sweet to others," saith she, "to behold the light, this to me is grievous: but the night and the darkness is a desirable thing. For this only gives me rest from my toils, this becometh a comfort to my miseries. *But speak somewhat against the* (5.) *Lord, and die.*" Perceivest thou here too her crafty wickedness? how she did not even in the act of advising at once

introduce the deadly counsel, but having first pitifully related her misfortunes, and having drawn out the tragedy at length, she couches in few words what she would recommend, and doth not even declare it plainly, but throwing a shade over that, she holds out to him the deliverance which he greatly longed for, and promises death, the thing which he then most of all desired.

1 Cor.  
11. 34.

And mark from this also the malice of the devil: that because he knew the desire of Job towards God, he suffers not his wife to accuse God, lest he should at once turn away from her as an enemy. For this cause she no where mentions Him, but the actual calamities she is continually harping on.

And do thou, besides what hath been said, add the circumstances, that it was a woman who gave this counsel, a wonderful orator to beguile the heedless. Many at least even without external accidents, have been cast down by the counsel of women alone.

[6.] What then did this blessed saint, and firmer than adamant? Looking bitterly upon her, by his aspect even before he spake, he repelled her devices: since she no doubt expected that she should excite fountains of tears; but he became fiercer than a lion, full of wrath and indignation, not on account of his sufferings, but on account of her diabolical suggestions; and having signified his anger by his looks, in a subdued tone he gives his rebuke; for even in misfortunes he kept his self-command. And what saith he? *Why speakest thou as one of the foolish women?* "I have not so taught thee," saith he, "I did not so nurture thee; and this is why I do not now recognise even mine own consort. For these words are the counsel of a *foolish woman*, and of one beside herself." Seest thou not here an instance of wounding in moderation, and inflicting a blow just sufficient to cure the disease?

Then, after the infliction, he brings in advice sufficient on the other hand to console her, and very rational, thus speaking; *if we have received our good things at the hand of the Lord, shall we not endure our evils?* "For remember," saith he, "those former things, and make account of the Author of them, and thou wilt bear even these nobly." Seest thou the chastened spirit of the man? that he doth not at all impute his



**HOMIL.** patience to his own courage, but saith it was part of the  
**XXVIII.** natural result of what happened. "For in return for what did God give us these former things? What recompense did he repay? None, but from mere goodness. For they were a gift, not a recompense; a grace, not a reward. Well then, let us bear these also nobly."

This discourse let us, both men and women, have written on our hearts, and let us engrave the words in our minds, both these and those before them: and by sketching upon our minds as in picture the history of his sufferings<sup>1</sup>, I mean the loss of his wealth, the bereavement of his children, the disease of his body, the reproaches, the mockings, the devices of his wife, the snare of the devil, in a word, all the calamities of that righteous man, and that with exactness, let us provide ourselves with a most ample port of refuge: that, enduring all things nobly and thankfully, we may both in the present life cast off all despondency, and receive the rewards, that belong to this good way of taking things<sup>2</sup>; by the grace and mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ, with Whom, to the Father, with the Holy Ghost, be glory, power, and honour, now and for ever, world without end. Amen.

<sup>1</sup> *ἡρώδης*  
*ἡρώδης*,  
Savile;  
*ἡρώδης*,  
Bened.

<sup>2</sup> *εὐχὰς*  
*εὐχὰς*  
*εὐχὰς*,  
"this  
way of  
using  
well-  
omened  
words."



## HOMILY XXIX.

---

1 COR. xii. 1, 2.

*Now concerning spiritual gifts, brethren, I would not have you ignorant. Ye know that ye were Gentiles, carried away unto these dumb idols, even as ye were led.*

THIS whole place is very obscure: but the obscurity is produced by our ignorance of the facts referred to, and by their cessation, being such as then used to occur, but now no longer take place. And why do they not happen now? Why look now, the cause too of the obscurity hath produced us again another question: namely, why did they then happen, and now do so no more?

This however let us defer to another time, but for the present let us state what things were occurring then. Well: what did happen then? Whoever was baptized, he straightway spake with tongues, and not with tongues only, but many also prophesied, and some also performed many other wonderful works. For since on their coming over from idols, without any clear knowledge, or training in the ancient Scriptures, they at once on their baptism received the Spirit, yet the Spirit they saw not, for It is invisible; therefore God's grace bestowed some sensible proof of that energy. And one straightway spake in the Persian, another in the Roman, another in the Indian, another in some other such tongue: and this made manifest to them that were without that it is the Spirit in the very person speaking. Wherefore also he so calls it, saying, *'But the Manifestation of the Spirit is given to every man to profit withal; calling the gifts a manifestation of the Spirit.* For as the Apostles themselves had received this sign first, so also the faithful went on receiving it, I mean the gift of tongues; yet not this only, but also many others: inasmuch as many used even to raise the dead, and to cast out devils, and to perform many

HOMIL.  
XXIX. other such wonders: and they had gifts too, some less, and some more. But more abundant than all was the gift of tongues among them: and this became to them a cause of division; not from its own nature, but from the perverseness of them that had received it: in that on the one hand the possessors of the greater gifts were lifted up against them that had the lesser: and these again were grieved, and envied the owners of the greater. And Paul himself as he proceeds intimates this.

Since then herefrom they were receiving a fatal blow, in the dissolution of their charity, he takes great care to correct it. For this happened indeed in Rome also, but not in the same way. And this is why in the Epistle to the Romans also he moots it indeed, but obscurely and briefly, saying thus: *For as we have many members in one body, and all members have not the same office; so we, being many, are one body in Christ, and every one members one of another. Having then gifts differing according to the grace that is given to us, whether prophecy, let us prophesy according to the proportion of faith; or ministry, let us wait on our ministering; or he that teacheth, on teaching*<sup>1</sup>. And that the Romans also were falling into wilfulness hereby, this he intimates in the beginning of that discourse, thus saying: *For I say through the grace given unto me, to every man that is among you, not to think of himself more highly than he ought to think; but to think soberly, according as God hath dealt to every man the measure of faith*<sup>2</sup>. With these, however, (for the disease of division and pride had not proceeded to any length,) he thus discoursed: but here with great anxiety; for the distemper had greatly spread.

And this was not the only thing to disturb them, but there were also in the place many soothsayers, inasmuch as the city was more than usually addicted to Grecian customs, and this with the rest was tending to offence and disturbance among them. This is the reason why he begins by first stating the difference between soothsaying and prophecy. For this cause also they received discerning of spirits, so as to discern and know, which is he that speaketh by a pure spirit, and which by an impure.

For because it was not possible to supply the evidence of

<sup>1</sup> Rom.  
12, 4-8.

<sup>2</sup> Rom.  
12, 3.

the things uttered from within themselves at the moment; (for <sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. 13. 2. prophecy supplies the proof of its own truth not at the time when it is spoken, but at the time of the event;) and it was not easy to distinguish it, and to discern the true prophesier from the pretender; (for the devil himself, accursed as he is, had entered into them that prophesied<sup>1</sup>, bringing in false prophets, as if forsooth they also could foretel things to come;) <sup>1</sup> See 1 Kings 22. 23. and further, found it moreover easy to deceive them, because the things spoken could not for the present be brought to trial, ere yet the events had come to pass concerning which the prophecy was; (for it was the end that proved the false prophet and the true:)—in order that the hearers might not be deceived, no, not before the end, he gives them a sign, which even before the event served to indicate the one and the other. And hence taking his order and beginning, he thus goes on also to the discourse concerning the gifts, and corrects the contentiousness that arose from hence likewise. For the present however he begins the discourse concerning the soothsayers, thus saying,

[2.] *Now concerning the spiritual gifts, brethren, I would not have you ignorant*; calling the signs *spiritual*, because they are the works of the Spirit alone, human care contributing nothing to the working such wonders. And intending to discourse concerning them, first, as I said, he lays down the difference between soothsaying and prophecy, thus saying,

*Ye know that ye were Gentiles, carried away unto these dumb idols, even as ye were dragged away<sup>2</sup>*. Now what he <sup>2</sup> *dragged away* means is this: "In the idol-temples," saith he, "if any were at any time possessed by an unclean spirit and began to divine, even as one dragged away, so was he drawn by that spirit in chains; knowing nothing of the things which he utters. For this is peculiar to the soothsayer, to be beside himself, to be under compulsion, to be pushed, dragged, haled as a madman. But the prophet not so, but with sober mind, and composed temper, and knowing what he is saying, he uttereth all things. Therefore even before the event do thou first from this distinguish the soothsayer and the prophet. And consider how he frees his discourse of all suspicion; calling themselves to witness who had made trial of the matter. As if he had said, "that I lie not, nor rashly traduce the religion of the



HOMIL. Gentiles, feigning like an enemy, do ye yourselves bear me  
XXIX. witness: knowing as ye do, when ye were Gentiles, how ye  
were pulled and dragged away then."

But if any should say, that these too are suspected, as believers, come, even from them that are without will I make this manifest to you. Hear, for example, Plato saying thus<sup>1</sup>: "Ere as they who deliver oracles, and the soothsayers, say many and excellent things, but know nothing of what they utter." Hear again another, a poet, giving the same intimation. For whereas by certain mystical rites and witchcrafts a certain person had imprisoned a demon in a man, and the man divined, and in his divination was thrown down, and torn, and was unable to endure the violence of the demon, but was on the point of perishing in that convulsion; he saith to the persons who were practising such mystical arts<sup>2</sup>,

Loose me, I pray you;  
The mighty God no longer mortal flesh  
Can hold.

And again,

Unbind my wreaths, and bathe my feet in drops  
From the pure stream; erase these mystic lines<sup>3</sup>,  
And let me go.

For these and such like things, (for one might mention many more,) point out to us both of these facts which follow; the compulsion which holds down the demons and makes them slaves; and the violence to which they submit, who have once given themselves up to them, so as to swerve even from their natural reason. And the Pythoness too<sup>4</sup>: (for I am compelled now to bring forward and expose another disgraceful custom of theirs, which it were well to pass by, because it is unseemly for us to mention such things; but that you may more clearly know their shame, it is necessary to mention it, that hence at least ye may come to know the madness and exceeding mockery of those that make use of the soothsayers:) this

<sup>1</sup> These verses are taken from an old Oracle, quoted among others by Porphyry in a Treatise of the *Philosophy of Oracles*, and from him again by Theodoret on the *Remedies for Gentile Errors*, Disp. x. t. iv. p. 957.

<sup>2</sup> Porphyry's note on this verse, as quoted by Hales from Eusebius (Evang. Prep. v.) in Savile's Chrysostom, viii.

pt. ii. p. 278, is as follows: "You see, he bids them erase the lines, that he may depart: as though these detained him, and not only these, but the other things too about their apparel: because they wore certain portraiture of the deities who were invoked."

<sup>3</sup> See Strabo, ix. 5.

same Pythoness then is said, being a female, to sit at times <sup>1 Cor.</sup> upon the tripod of Apollo astride, and thus the evil spirit <sup>12. 1, 2.</sup> ascending from beneath, and entering the lower part of her body, fills the woman with madness, and she with dishevelled hair begins to play the bacchanal, and to foam at the mouth, and thus being in a frenzy, to utter the words of her madness. I know that you are ashamed and blush when you hear these things: but they glory in both; in the disgrace and in the madness which I have described. These then and all such (2.) things Paul was exagitating when he said, *Ye know that ye were Gentiles, carried away unto these dumb idols, even as ye were led.*

And because he was discoursing with those who knew well, he states not all things with exact care, not wishing to be troublesome to them, but having reminded them only, and brought all into their recollection, he soon quits the point, hastening to the subject before him.

But what is, *unto these dumb idols*? These soothsayers used to be led and dragged unto them.

But if they be themselves dumb, how did they make use of the diviners? And wherefore did the demon lead them to the images? As men taken in war, and in chains, and rendering at the same time his deceit plausible. Thus, to keep men from the notion that it was just a dumb stone, they were earnest to rivet the people to the idols, that their own style and title might be inscribed upon them. But our rites are not such. He did not however state ours, I mean the prophesyings. For it was all well known to them, and prophecy was exercised among them, as was meet for their condition, with understanding and with entire freedom. Wherefore, you see, they had power either to speak or to refrain from speaking. For they were not bound by necessity, but were honoured with a privilege. For this cause Jonah fled<sup>1</sup>; for this cause Ezekiel<sup>1</sup> delayed<sup>2</sup>; for this cause Jeremiah excused himself<sup>3</sup>. And <sup>1. 3.</sup> God thrusts them not on by compulsion, but advising, <sup>2. Ezek.</sup> exhorting, threatening; not darkening their mind; for to <sup>3. 15.</sup> <sup>Jer. 1.</sup> cause distraction and madness and great darkness, is the proper work of a demon: but it is God's work, to illuminate, and with consideration to teach things needful.



HOMIL. [3.] This then is the first difference between a soothsayer,  
XXIX. and a prophet; but a second and a different one is that which he next states, saying,

Ver. 3. *Wherefore I give you to understand, that no man speaking by the Spirit of God calleth Jesus accursed: and then another: and that no man can say that Jesus is the Lord, but by the Holy Ghost.*

"When thou seest," saith he, "any one not uttering His Name, or anathematizing Him, he is a soothsayer. Again, when thou seest another speaking all things with His Name, understand that he is spiritual." "What then," say you, "must we say concerning the Catechumens? For if *no man can say that Jesus is the Lord, but by the Holy Ghost*, what must we say of them, who name indeed His Name, but are destitute of His Spirit?" But his discourse at this time was not concerning these, for there were not at that time Catechumens, but concerning believers and unbelievers.

What then, doth no demon call upon God's Name? Did not the demoniacs say, *We know Thee who Thou art, the Holy One of God*<sup>1</sup>? Did not they say to Paul, *these men are the servants of the Most High God*<sup>2</sup>? They did, but upon scourging, upon compulsion; never of their own will, and without being scourged.

But here it is proper to enquire, both why the demon uttered these things, and why Paul rebuked him. In imitation of his Teacher; for so Christ did also rebuke: since it was not his will to have testimony from them. And wherefore did the devil also practise this? Intending to confound the order of things, and to seize upon the dignity of the Apostles, and to persuade many to pay attention to them<sup>3</sup>: which had it happened, they would easily have made themselves appear from hence worthy of credit, and have brought in their own designs. That these things then might not be, and the deceit might not have a beginning, he stops their mouths even when speaking the truth, so that in their falsehoods none should at all give heed unto them, but

<sup>3</sup> Sav.  
in marg.  
reads  
*avrois.*  
Bened.  
*avrois.*

<sup>1</sup> So St. Austin, Tract 11. on St. John: "Inasmuch as the Catechumens have the sign of the Cross in their forehead, they now belong to the Great

House: but let them from servants become sons;" alluding to Gal. 4. 6, 7; ap. Bingham, i. 3. 3.

should stop their ears altogether against the things said by them. 1 Cor.  
12. 4, 5.

[4.] Having therefore made manifest the soothsayers and the prophets both by the first sign, and also by the second, he next discourses of the wonders; not passing without reason to this topic, but so as to remove the dissension which had arisen from hence, and to persuade both those that had the less portion not to grieve, and those who had the greater not to be elated. Wherefore also he thus began.

Ver. 4. *Now there are diversities of gifts, but the same Spirit.*

And first he attends on him that had the lesser gift, and was grieved on this account. "For wherefore," saith he, "art thou dejected? because thou hast not received as much as another? Still, consider that it is a free gift, and not a debt, and thou wilt be able to soothe thy pain." For this cause he spake thus in the very beginning: *but there are diversities of gifts.* And he said not "of signs," nor "of wonders," but *of gifts*, by the name of free gifts prevailing on them not only not to grieve, but even to be thankful. "And withal consider this also," saith he, "that even if thou art made inferior in the measure of what is given; in that it hath been vouchsafed thee to receive from the same source, as the other who hath received more, thou hast equal honour. For certainly thou canst not say, that the Spirit bestowed the gift on him, but an angel on thee: since the Spirit bestowed it both on thee and him. Wherefore he added, *but the same Spirit.* So that even if there be a difference in the gift, yet is there no difference in the Giver. For from the same Fountain ye are drawing, both thou and he. (3.)

Ver. 5. *And there are differences of administrations, but the same Lord.*

Thus, enriching the consolation, he adds mention of the Son also, and of the Father. And again, he calls these gifts by another name, designing by this also an increase of consolation. Wherefore also he thus said: *there are differences of administrations, but the same Lord.* For he that hears of a gift, and hath received a less share, perhaps might grieve; but when we speak of an administration, the case is different.

# 402 *Meaning of the Term, Manifestation of the Spirit:*

HOMIL. For the thing implies labour, and sweat. "Why grieve-  
XXIX. thou then," saith he, "if he hath bidden another labour  
more, sparing thee?"

Ver. 6. *And there are diversities of operations, but it is the  
same God which worketh all in all.*

Ver. 7. *But the manifestation of the Spirit is given to every  
man to profit withal.*

"And what," saith one, "is an operation? and what, a  
gift? and what, an administration?" They are mere differ-  
ences of names, since the things are the same. For what  
a gift is, that is an administration, that he calls an operation  
also. Thus, *make full proof*, saith he, *of thine administra-*

<sup>1</sup> 2 Tim. tion<sup>1</sup>: and, *I magnify mine administration*<sup>2</sup>: and writing  
<sup>4</sup> 5. mi- to Timothy, he says, *Therefore I put thee in remem-*  
nisty. brance that thou stir up the gift of God, which is in thee<sup>3</sup>.

<sup>2</sup> Rom. And again, writing to the Galatians, he said, *for he that*  
11. 13. *wrought in Peter to the Apostleship, the same was mighty in*  
office. *me toward the Gentiles*<sup>4</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> 2 Tim. Seest thou, that he implies there  
1. 6. being no difference in the gifts of the Father, and the Son,  
<sup>4</sup> Gal. and the Holy Ghost? Not confounding<sup>5</sup> the Persons, God  
2. 8. forbid! but declaring the equal honour of the Essence. For  
<sup>5</sup> 2ds that which the Spirit bestows, this he saith that God also  
works; this, that the Son likewise ordains and grants.

<sup>6</sup> 2ds Yet surely if the one were inferior to the other, or the other  
to it, he would not have thus set it down, nor would this  
have been his way of consoling the person who was vexed.

[5.] Now after this, he comforts him also in another kind  
of way; by the consideration that the measure vouchsafed is  
profitable to him, even though it be not so large. For having  
said, that it is *the same Spirit*, and *the same Lord*, and *the*  
*same God*, and having thereby recovered him, he brings in  
again another consolation, thus saying, *but the manifestation*  
*of the Spirit is given to every man to profit withal.* For lest  
one should say, "what if there be the same Lord, the same  
Spirit, the same God? yet I have received less:" he saith,  
that thus it was profitable.

But by *the manifestation of the Spirit*, he denotes the  
miracles; with evident reason. For to me who am a be-  
liever, he that hath the Spirit is manifest from his having  
been baptized: but to the unbeliever this will in no

But by *the manifestation of the Spirit*, he denotes the  
miracles; with evident reason. For to me who am a be-  
liever, he that hath the Spirit is manifest from his having  
been baptized: but to the unbeliever this will in no



wise be manifest, except from the miracles: so that hence also again there is no small consolation. For though there be a difference of gifts, yet the evidence is one: since whether thou hast much, or little, thou art equally manifest. So that if thou desirest to shew this, that thou hast the Spirit, thou hast a sufficient demonstration. 1 Cor. 12. 11.

Wherefore, now that both the Giver is one, and the thing given a pure favour, and the manifestation takes place thereby, and this is more profitable for thee; grieve not as if despised. For not to dishonour thee hath God done it, nor to declare thee inferior to another, but to spare thee, and with a view to thy welfare. To receive more than one has ability to bear, this rather is unprofitable, and injurious, and a fit cause of dejection.

Ver. 8. *For to one is given by the Spirit the word of wisdom; to another the word of knowledge by the same Spirit;*

Ver. 9. *To another faith by the same Spirit: to another the gifts of healing by the same Spirit.*

Seest thou how he every where makes this addition, saying, *by the same Spirit, and according to the same Spirit?* For he knew that the comfort from thence was great.

Ver. 10. *To another the working of miracles; to another prophecies; to another discerning of spirits; to another divers kinds of tongues; to another the interpretation of tongues.*

Thus, since they boasted themselves in this, therefore he placed it last, and added,

Ver. 11. *But all these worketh that one and the self-same Spirit.*

The universal medicine in which his consolation consists is, that out of the same root, out of the same treasures, out of the same streams, they all receive. And accordingly, from time to time fomenting<sup>1</sup> by this expression the apparent inequality, he places them on a level and consoles them. ισαρι-  
ελαυν. And above indeed he points out both the Spirit, and the Son, and the Father, as supplying the gifts, but here he was content to name the Spirit, that even hence again thou mayest understand their dignity to be the same.

But what is *the word of wisdom*? That which Paul had, which John had, the son of thunder.

HOMIL. And what is *the word of knowledge*? That which most of  
XXIX. the faithful had, possessing indeed knowledge, but not there-  
upon able to teach, nor easily to convey to another what they  
knew.

And to another, *faith*: not meaning by this faith the faith  
of doctrines, but the faith of miracles; concerning which  
Christ saith, *If ye have faith as a grain of mustard-seed, ye*

<sup>1</sup> S Mat. shall say to this mountain, Remove, and it shall remove<sup>1</sup>.  
17. 20.

And the Apostles too concerning this besought Him, saying,  
<sup>2</sup> S. Luke. Increase our faith<sup>2</sup>: for this is the mother of the miracles.  
17. 6.

But to possess the power of working miracles, and gifts of  
healing, is not the same thing: for he that had a gift of  
healing, used only to do cures: but he that possessed powers  
for working miracles, used to punish also. For a miracle is  
not the healing only, but the punishing also: even as Paul  
inflicted blindness: as Peter slew.

To another *prophecies*; to another *discerning of spirits*.

What is, *discerning of spirits*? the knowing who is spiritual,

<sup>3</sup> 1 Thes. and who is not: who is a prophet, and who a deceiver: as  
5. 20. 21. he said to the Thessalonians, *despise not prophesyings*<sup>3</sup>: but  
<sup>4</sup> 2 Tim. proving<sup>4</sup> all things, hold fast that which is good. For great  
5. 21. rec. text was at that time the corruption<sup>5</sup> of the false prophets, the  
2 Tim. devil striving underhand to substitute falsehood for the truth.  
5. 21. reads

To another *divers kinds of tongues*; to another *interpreta-  
tion of tongues*. For one person knew what he spake himself,

but was unable to interpret to another; while another had  
acquired both these, or the other of the two. Now this  
(4.)

seemed to be a great gift, because both the Apostles received  
it first, and the most among the Corinthians had obtained it.  
But the word of doctrine not so. Wherefore that he places  
first, but this last: for this was on account of that, and so  
indeed were all the rest; both prophecies, and working of  
miracles, and divers kinds of tongues, and interpretation of  
tongues. For none is equal to this. Wherefore also he  
said, *Let the elders that rule well, be counted worthy of  
double honour, especially they who labour in the word and*

<sup>6</sup> 1 Tim. doctrine<sup>6</sup>. And to Timothy he wrote, saying, *Give attendance  
5. 17. to reading, to exhortation, to doctrine; neglect not the gift*

<sup>7</sup> 1 Tim. that is in thee<sup>7</sup>. Seest thou how he calls it also a gift?

<sup>4. 13, 14.</sup> [6.] Next, the comfort which he before gave, when he said,



the same Spirit, this also he here sets before us, saying, *But all these worketh that one and the self-same Spirit, dividing to every man severally as he will.* And he not only gives consolation, but also stops the mouth of the gainsayer, saying here, *dividing to every man severally as he will.* For it was necessary to bind<sup>1</sup> up also, not to heal only, as he doth also<sup>1</sup> in the Epistle to the Romans, when he saith, *But who art thou that repliest against God?*<sup>2</sup> So likewise here, *dividing to every man severally as he will.* <sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. 12. 11. <sup>2</sup> Rom. 9. 20.

And that which was of the Father, this he signifieth to be of the Spirit also. For as concerning the Father, he saith, *but it is the same God which worketh all in all;* so also concerning the Spirit, *but all these things worketh one and the self-same Spirit.* But<sup>\*</sup> it will be said, "He doth it, actuated by God." Nay, he no where said this, but thou feignest it. For when he saith, *who actuath<sup>3</sup> all in all,* he saith this concerning men: thou wilt hardly say, that among those men he numbers also the Spirit, though thou shouldest be ever so manifold in thy doting and madness. Yea, because he had said, *by the Spirit,* that thou mightest not suppose this word, *by,* to denote inferiority, or the being actuated, he adds, that *the Spirit worketh,* not "is worked<sup>4</sup>," and worketh *as he will,* not as he is bidden. For as concerning the Father, the Son saith, that *He raiseth up the dead, and quickeneth;* in like manner also, concerning Himself, that *He quickeneth whom He will:* thus also of the Spirit, in another place, that He doeth all things with authority, and that there is nothing that hinders Him; (for the expression, *bloweth where it listeth*<sup>5</sup>, though it be spoken of the wind, is yet apt to establish this;) but here, that *He worketh all things as He will.* And from another place too learn that He is not one of the things actuated, but of those that actuate. For *who knoweth,* says he, *the things of a man, but the spirit of the man?* even so *the things of God knoweth no man, but the Spirit of God.*<sup>6</sup> Now that *the spirit of a man,* i. e. the soul, requires not to be actuated, that it may know the things of itself, is, I suppose, evident to every one. Therefore neither doth the Holy Ghost,

\* In this and other places of this Homily, S. Chrysostom seems to have had in view the controversy, then recent, with the Macedonians, who denied the Divinity of the Holy Spirit.

HOMIL.  
XXIX. that he may *know the things of God*. For his meaning is like this, "*the secret things of God* are known to the Holy Spirit, as to the soul of man the secret things of herself." But if this be not actuated for that end, much less would That which knoweth the depths of God, and needs no actuation for that knowledge, require any actuating Power in order to the giving gifts to the Apostles.

But besides these things, that also, which I before spake of, I will mention again now. What then is this? That if the Spirit were inferior, and of another substance, there would have been no avail in his consolation, nor in our hearing the words, *of the same Spirit*. For he who hath received from the king, I grant, may find it a very soothing circumstance, that he himself gave to him; but if it be from the slave, he is then rather vexed, when one offers the favour to him. So that even hence is it evident, that the Holy Spirit is not of the substance of the servant, but of the King.

[7.] Wherefore as he comforted them, when he said, that *there are differences of administrations, but the same Lord; and diversities of operations, but the same God;* so also when he said above, *there are diversities of gifts, but the same Spirit;* and after this again when he said, *But all these worketh that one and the self-same Spirit, dividing to every man severally as he will.*

"Let us not, I pray you, bewilder ourselves," saith he; "neither let us grieve, saying, 'Why have I received this, and not received that?'" neither let us demand an account of the Holy Spirit. For if thou knowest that he vouchsafed it from providential care, consider that from the same care he hath given also the measure of it, and be content, and rejoice in what thou hast received: but murmur not at what thou hast not received; yea rather, confess God's favour, that thou hast not received things beyond thy power.

- (5.) And if in spiritual things one ought not to be over-curious, much more in temporal things; but to be quiet, and not nicely enquire why one is rich and another poor. For, first of all, not every single rich man is rich from God, but many even of unrighteousness, and rapine, and avarice. For he that forbade to be rich, how can he have granted that which he forbade to receive?

But that I may, far above what the case requires, stop the mouths of those who concerning these things gainsay us, come, let us carry our discourse higher up, to the time when riches used to be given by God; and answer me. Wherefore was Abraham rich, whereas Jacob wanted even bread? Were not both the one and the other righteous? Doth he not say concerning the three alike, *I am the God of Abraham, and of Isaac, and of Jacob*<sup>1</sup>? Wherefore then was the one a rich man, and the other a hired servant? Or rather why was Esau rich, who was unrighteous, and a murderer of his brother, while Jacob was in bondage for so long a time? Wherefore again did Isaac live in ease all his time, but Jacob in toils and miseries? For which cause also he said, *Few and evil are my days*<sup>2</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> Gen. 28. 13.

<sup>2</sup> Exod. 3. 6.

<sup>3</sup> Gen. 47. 9.

Wherefore did David, who was both a prophet and a king, himself also live all his time in toils; whereas Solomon his son spent forty years in security above all men, in the enjoyment of profound peace, glory, and honour, and going through every kind of deliciousness? What again could be the reason that among the prophets also one was afflicted more, and another less? Because so it was expedient for each. Wherefore upon each our remark must be, *Thy judgments are a great deep*<sup>3</sup>. For if those great and wonderful men were not alike exercised by God, but one by poverty, and another by riches; one by ease, and another by trouble; much more ought we now to bear these things in mind.

<sup>3</sup> Ps. 36. 6.

[8.] But besides this, it becomes one to consider also, that many of the things which happen, do not take place according to His mind, but arise from our wickedness. Say not then, "Why is one man rich who is wicked, and another poor who is righteous?" For first of all, one may give an account of these things also, and say, that neither doth the righteous receive any harm from his poverty, nay, even a greater addition of honour; and that the bad man in his riches possesseth but a store of punishment on his future road, unless he be changed: and, even before punishment, oftentimes his riches become to him the cause of many evils, and lead him into ten thousand pitfalls. But God permits it, at



HOMIL. the same time to signify the free choice of the will, and also  
XXIX. to teach all others not to be mad nor rave after money.

"How is it then, when a man being wicked is rich, and suffers nothing dreadful?" say you. "Since if being good he hath wealth, he hath it justly: but if bad, what shall we say?" That even therein he is to be pitied. For wealth added to wickedness aggravates the mischief. But is he a good man, and poor? Yet is he nothing injured. Is he then a bad man, and poor? Then is he so justly and by desert, or rather even with advantage to himself. "But such an one," say you, received his riches from his ancestors, and lavishes it upon harlots and parasites, and suffers no evil." What sayest thou? Doth he commit whoredom, and sayest thou, "he suffers no evil?" Is he drunken, and thinkest thou that he is in luxury? Doth he spend for no good, and judgest thou that he is to be envied? Nay what can be worse than this wealth which destroys the very soul? But thou, if the body were distorted and maimed, wouldest say that his was a case for great lamentation; and seest thou his whole soul mutilated, yet countest him even happy? "But he doth not perceive it," say you. Well then, for this very reason again is he to be pitied, as all frantic persons are. For he that knows he is sick, will of course both seek the physician, and submit to remedies; but he that is ignorant of it will have no chance at all of deliverance. Dost thou call such an one happy, tell me?

But it is no marvel: for the more part are ignorant of the true love of wisdom. Therefore do we suffer the extremest penalty, being chastised, and not even withdrawing ourselves from the punishment. For this cause are angers, dejections, and continual tumults; because when God hath shewn us a life without sorrow, the life of virtue, we leave this, and mark out another way, the way of riches and money, full of infinite evils. And we do the same, as if one, not knowing how to discern the beauty of men's bodies, but attributing the whole to the clothes and the ornaments worn, when he saw a handsome woman, and possessed of natural beauty, should pass quickly by her, but when he beheld one ugly, illshaped, and deformed, but clothed in beautiful garments, should take her



for his wife. Now also in some such way are the multitude affected about virtue and vice. They admit the one that is deformed by nature on account of her external ornaments, but turn away from her that is fair and lovely, on account of her unadorned beauty, for which cause they ought especially to choose her.

[9.] Therefore am I ashamed, that among the foolish heathen there are those that practise this philosophy, if not in deeds, yet so far at least as judgment goes; and who know the perishable nature of things present: whereas amongst us some do not even understand these things, but have their very judgment corrupted: and this while the Scripture is ever and anon sounding in our ears, and saying, *In his sight the vile person is condemned, but he honoureth them that fear the Lord<sup>1</sup>: the fear of the Lord excelleth every thing<sup>2</sup>; fear God, and keep His commandments; for this is the whole of man<sup>3</sup>: be not thou envious of evil men<sup>4</sup>; all flesh is grass, and all the glory of man as the flower of grass<sup>5</sup>.* For these and such-like things though we hear every day, we are yet nailed to earth. And as ignorant children, who learn their letters one after another, if they be examined after they are disarranged concerning their order, naming one instead of another, make much laughter: so also ye, when here we recount them in order, follow us in a manner; but when we ask you out of doors, and in no set order, what we ought to place first and what next among things, and which after which; not knowing how to answer, ye become ridiculous. Is it not a matter of great laughter, tell me, that they who expect immortality, and the good things which eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man, should strive about things which linger here, and count them enviable? For if thou hast need yet to learn these things, that riches are no great thing, that things present are a shadow and a dream, that like smoke they are dissolved and fly away: stand for the present without the sanctuary: abide in the vestibule: since thou art not yet worthy of the entrance to the palace-courts on high. For if thou knowest not to discern their nature, which is unstable and continually passing away, when wilt thou be able to despise them?

But if thou say, thou knowest, cease curiously to inquire and

<sup>1</sup> Con.  
12. 11.

<sup>1</sup> Ps. 15.

<sup>2</sup> Or,

<sup>3</sup> Love of

<sup>4</sup> the Lord.

Sirach

25. 14.

<sup>5</sup> Eccles.

12. 13.

<sup>4</sup> Ps. 49.

16.

<sup>5</sup> Isa. 40.

7.

**HOMIL.** busy thyself, what can be the reason why such an one is rich,  
**XXIX.** and such an one poor: for thou doest the same, when thou  
 askest these questions, as if thou didst go round and enquire,  
 why one is fair and another black, or one hook-nosed and  
 another flat-nosed. For as these things make no difference to  
 us, whether it be thus, or thus; so neither poverty and riches,  
 and much less than they. But the whole ensues from the  
 way in which we use them. Whether thou art poor, thou  
 mayest live cheerfully denying thyself; or rich, thou art most  
 miserable of all men if thou fliest from virtue. For these are  
 what really concern us, the things of virtue. And if these  
 things be not added, the rest are useless. For this cause  
 also are those continual questions, because the most think  
 that indifferent things are of importance to them, but of the  
 important things they make no account: since that which is  
 of importance to us, is virtue and love of wisdom.

Because then ye stand I know not where, at some far  
 distance from her, therefore is there confusion of thoughts,  
 therefore the many waves, therefore the tempest. For when  
 men have fallen from heavenly glory and the love of heaven,  
 they desire present glory, and become slaves and captives.  
 "And how is it that we desire this," say you? From the not  
 greatly desiring that. And this very thing, whence happens  
 it? From negligence. And whence the negligence? From  
 contempt. And whence the contempt? From folly, and  
 cleaving to things present, and unwillingness to investigate  
 accurately the nature of things. And whence again doth this  
 latter arise? From the neither giving heed to the reading of  
 the Scriptures, nor conversing with holy men, and from  
 following the assemblies of the wicked.

That this therefore may not always be so, and lest wave  
 after wave receiving us should carry us out into the deep of  
 miseries, and altogether drown and destroy us; while there  
 is time, let us bear up, and standing upon the rock, I mean  
 of the divine doctrines and words, let us look down upon the  
 surge of this present life. For thus shall we both ourselves  
 escape the same, and having drawn up others who are  
 making shipwreck, we shall obtain the blessings which are  
 to come, through the grace and mercy, &c.

## HOMILY XXX.

---

1 COR. xii. 12.

*For as the body is one, and hath many members, and all the members of that one body, being many, are one body; so also is Christ.*

AFTER soothing them from the considerations, that the thing given was of free favour; that they received all from one and the self-same Spirit; that it was given to profit withal, that even by the lesser gifts a manifestation was made; and withal having also stopped their mouth from the duty of yielding to the authority of the Spirit: (*for all these*, saith he, *worketh that one and the self-same Spirit, dividing to each man severally as he will*; wherefore it is not right so much as to be over-curious;) he proceeds now to soothe them in like manner from another common example, and betakes himself to nature itself, as was his use to do.

For so when he was discoursing about the hair of the men and the women, after all the rest, he drew matter thence also to correct them, saying, *Doth not even nature itself teach you, that if a man have long hair, it is a shame unto him? But if a woman have long hair, it is a glory to her*<sup>1</sup>? And when<sup>1</sup> he spake concerning the idol-sacrifices, forbidding to touch<sup>11. 14, 15.</sup> them, he took up the discourse from the examples also of them that are without, both making mention of the Olympic games, where he saith, *they which run in a race run all, but one receiveth the prize*<sup>2</sup>; and confirming these views from<sup>2</sup> shepherds, and soldiers, and husbandmen: on just the same<sup>9. 24.</sup> ground he brings forward here also a common example, by which he presses on and fights hard to prove that no one was really put in a worse condition: a thing which was



HOMIL. marvellous and surprising to be able to shew, and calculated  
 XXX. to refresh the weaker sort, I mean the example of the body. For nothing so consoles the person of too tender spirit, and of inferior gifts, or so persuades him not to grieve, as the being convinced that he is not left with less than his share. Wherefore also Paul making out this point, thus expresses himself: *for as the body is one, and hath many members.*

Seest thou his exact consideration? He is pointing out the same thing to be both one and many. Wherefore also he adds, pressing more vigorously on his proposed subject, *and all the members of that one body, being many, are one body.* He said not, "being many, are of one body," but "the one body itself is many:" and those so many members, are this one thing. If therefore one is many, and many are one, where is the difference? where the superiority? where the disadvantage? For all, saith he, are one: and not simply one, but being strictly considered in respect of that even which is most principal, i. e. their being a body, they are found all to be one: but when considered as to their particular natures, then the difference comes out, and the difference is in all alike. For none of them by itself can make a body, but each is alike deficient in the making a body, and there is need of our being regularly assembled: since, when the many become one, then and not till then is there one body. Wherefore also covertly intimating this very thing, he said, *But all the members of that one body, being many, are one body.* And he said not, "the superior, and the inferior," but *being many*, which is common to all.

And how is it possible that they should be one? When, throwing out the difference of the members, thou considerest the body. For the same thing which the eye is, this also is the foot, in regard of its being a member, and constituting a body. For there is no difference in this respect. Nor canst thou say, that one of the members makes a body of itself, but another does not. For they are all equal in this, for this very reason, that they are all one body.

But having said this, and having shewn it clearly from the common judgment of all, he added, *so also is Christ.* And when he should have said, "so also is the Church," for this came next in order, this he doth not say, but instead of it he places the



name of Christ, carrying the discourse up on high, and appealing more and more to the hearer's reverence. But his meaning is this: "So also is the body of Christ, which is the Church." For as the body and the head are one man, so he said that the Church and Christ are one. Wherefore also he placed Christ instead of the Church, giving that name to His body. "As then," saith he, "our body is one thing, though it be composed of many: so also in the Church we all are one thing. For though the Church be composed of many members, yet these many form one body."

[2.] Thus having, you see, recovered and raised up by this common example him who thought himself depreciated, again he leaves the topic of common experience, and comes to another, a mysterious one, bringing greater consolation, and indicative of great equality of honour. What then is this?

Ver. 13. *For by one Spirit, saith he, are we all baptized into one body, whether we be Jews or Gentiles, whether we be bond or free.*

Now his meaning is this: that which hath established us to become one body, and hath regenerated us, is one Spirit: for not by one Spirit was one baptized, and by another another. And not only is that which hath baptized us one, but also that unto which<sup>1</sup> He baptized us, i. e. for which<sup>1</sup> He baptized us, is one. For we were baptized, not that so many several bodies might be formed, but that we might all preserve one with another the perfect nature of one body: i. e. that we might all be one body, into the same were we baptized.

So that both He who formed it is one, and that into which He formed it, is one. And he said not, "that we might all come to be of the same body;" but *that we might all be one body*. For he ever strives to use the more expressive phrases. And well said he, *we all*, adding also himself. "For not even I, the Apostle, have any more than thou in this respect," saith he. "For thou art the body, even as I, and I even as thou, and we have all the same Head, and have passed through<sup>2</sup> the same birth-pains. Wherefore we are also the same body." "And why speak I," saith he, "of the Jews? since even the Gentiles, who were so far off from us, He hath brought into the entireness of one body." Wherefore having said, *we all*, he stopped not here, but added, *whether*

1 Cor.  
12. 12.

1 Cor. 12.  
13.

1 Cor. 12.  
13.

HOMIL. *we be Jews or Gentiles, whether we be bond or free.* Now if, XXX. having before been so far off, we were united, and have become one, much more after that we have become one, we can have no right to grieve and be dejected. Yea, the difference, in fact, hath no place. For if to Greeks and Jews, to bond and free, He hath vouchsafed the same blessings, how can it be, after that so vouchsafing He divides them, now that He hath bestowed a greater perfection of unity by the supply of His gifts?

*And we have all been made to drink into one Spirit.*

Ver. 14. *For the body is not one member, but many.*

i. e. We are come to the same Mystery, we enjoy the same table. And why said he not, "we are nourished by the same body, and drink the same blood?" Because by saying *Spirit*, he declared them both, as well the flesh as the blood. For through both are we *made to drink into one Spirit*.

But to me he appears now to speak of that visitation of the Spirit which takes place in us after Baptism, and before the Mysteries. And he said, *We have been made to drink*, because this metaphorical speech suited him extremely well for his proposed subject: as if he had said respecting plants and a garden, that by the same fountain all the trees are watered, or by the same water; so also here, "*we all drank the same Spirit*, we enjoyed the same grace," saith he.

If now, as you see, both one Spirit formed us, and gathered us all together into one body; for this is the meaning of, *we were baptized into one body*: and vouchsafed us one table, and gave us all the same watering; for this is the meaning of, *we were made to drink into one Spirit*, and united persons so widely separated, and if many things then become a body, when they become one: why, I pray, art thou continually tossing to and fro their difference? But if thou sayest, "Because there are many members, and diverse," know that this very thing is the wonder, and the peculiar excellency of the body, when the things which are many and diverse make one. But if they were not many, it were not so wonderful and incredible that they should be one body; nay, rather they would not be a body at all.

[3.] This however he states last; but for the present he goes to the members themselves, saying thus:

Ver. 15. *If the foot shall say, Because I am not the hand, I am not of the body; is it therefore not of the body?* <sup>1 Cor. 12. 17.</sup>

Ver. 16. *And if the ear shall say, Because I am not the eye, I am not of the body; is it therefore not of the body?*

For if the one being made inferior, and the other superior, doth not allow their being of the body, the whole is done away. Do not say therefore, "I am not the body, because I am inferior." For the foot also hath the inferior post, yet is it of the body: for the being or not being part of the body, is not from the one lying in this place, and the other in that; (which is what constitutes difference of place:) but from the being conjoined or separated. For the being or not being a body, arises the having been made one or not. But do thou, I pray, mark his considerate way, how he applies their words to our members. For as he said above, *These things have I in a figure transferred to myself and Apollos*<sup>1</sup>, just so like-<sup>1 1 Cor. 4. 6.</sup> wise here, to make his argument free from invidiousness, and acceptable, he introduces the members speaking: that when they shall hear nature answering them, being thus convicted by experience herself, and by the general voice, they may have nothing further to oppose. "For say, if you will," saith he, "this very thing, murmur as you please, you cannot be out of the body. For as the law of nature, so much more doth the power of grace guard all things and preserve them entire." And see how he kept to the rule of having nothing superfluous; not working out his argument on all the members, but on two only, and these the extremes; having specified both the most honourable of all, the eye, and the meanest of all, the feet. And he doth not make the foot to discourse with the eye, but with the hand, which is mounted a little above it; and the ear with the eyes. For because we are wont to envy not those who are very far above us, but those who are a little higher, therefore he also conducts his comparison thus.

Ver. 17. *If the whole body were an eye, where were the hearing? If the whole were hearing, where were the smelling?*

Thus, because, having fallen upon the difference of the members, and having mentioned feet, and hands, and eyes, and ears, he had led them to the consideration of their own



HOMIL.  
XXX. inferiority and superiority: see how again he consoles them, intimating that so it was expedient: and that their being many and diverse, this especially causeth them to be a body. But if they all were some one, they would not be a body. Wherefore he saith, *If they were all one member, where were the body?* This however he mentions not till afterwards; but here he points out also something more; that besides the impossibility of any one being a body, it even takes away the being of the rest.

*For if the whole were hearing, where were the smelling,* saith he.

- (3.) [4.] Then because after all they were yet disturbed: that which he had done above, the same he doth also now. For as there he first alleged the expediency to comfort them, and afterwards stopped their mouths, vehemently saying, *But all these worketh that one and the self-same Spirit, dividing to every man severally as he will:* so also here having stated reasons, for which he shewed that it was profitable that all should so be, he refers the whole again to the counsel of God, saying,

Ver. 18. *But now God hath set the members every one of them in the body, as it hath pleased Him.*

Even as He said of the Spirit, *as He will*, so also here, *as it pleased Him*. Now do not thou seek further into the cause, why it is thus, and why not thus. For though we have ten thousand reasons to give, we shall not be so able to shew that it is well done, as when we say, that as the best artificer pleased, so it came to pass. For as it is expedient, so He wills it. Now if in this body of ours we do not curiously enquire about the members, much more in the Church. And see his thoughtfulness, in that he doth not state the difference which arises from their nature, nor that from their operation, but that from their local situation. For *now*, saith he, *God hath set the members every one of them in the body, as it hath pleased Him*. And he said well, *every one*, pointing out that the use extends to all. For thou canst not say, "This He hath Himself placed, but not that: but every one according to His will, so it is situated." So that to the foot also it is profitable that it should be so stationed, and not to the head only: and if it should invert the order, and leaving its own place, should go to another, though it might



seem to have bettered its condition, it would be the undoing <sup>1</sup> Con. and ruin of the whole. For it both falls from its own, and <sup>12. 19.</sup> reaches not the other station.

[5.] Ver. 19. *And if they were all one member, where were the body?*

Ver. 20. *But now are they many members, yet but one body.*

Thus having silenced them sufficiently by God's own arrangement, again he states reasons. And he neither doth this always, nor that, but alternates and varies his discourse. Since on the one hand, he who merely silences, confounds the hearer, and he, on the contrary, who accustoms him to demand reasons for all things, injures him in the matter of faith; for this cause then Paul is continually practising both the one and the other, that they may both believe, and may not be confounded; and after silencing them, he again gives a reason likewise. And mark his earnestness in the combat, and the completeness of his victory. For from what things they supposed themselves unequal in honour, because in them there was great diversity, even from these things he shews, that on account of this very circumstance they are equal in honour. How, I will tell you.

*If all were one member, saith he, where were the body?*

Now what he means is, If there were not among you great diversity, ye could not be a body; and not being a body, ye could not be one; and not being one, ye could not be equal in honour. Whence it follows again, that if ye were all equal in honour, ye were not a body; and not being a body, ye were not one; and not being one, how could ye be equal in honour? As it is, however, because ye are not all endowed with some one gift, therefore are ye a body; and being a body, ye all are one, and differ nothing from one another in this, that ye are a body. So that this very difference is that which chiefly causeth your equality in honour. And accordingly he adds, *But now are ye many members, yet one body.*

[6.] These things then let us also consider, and cast out all envy, and neither grudge against them that have greater gifts, nor despise them that possess the lesser. For thus had God willed: let us not then oppose ourselves. But if thou art still disturbed, consider that thy work is oftentimes such as thy brother is

HOMIL.  
XXX. unable to perform. So that even if thou art inferior, yet in this thou hast the advantage: and though he be greater, he is worse off in this respect; and so equality takes place. For so in the body also even the little members seem to contribute no little, but the great ones themselves are often injured by them, I mean by their removal. Thus, what in the body is more insignificant than the hair? Yet if thou shouldest remove this, insignificant as it is, from the eyebrows and the eyelids, thou hast destroyed all the grace of the countenance, and the eye will no longer appear equally beautiful. And yet the loss is of a trifle; but notwithstanding even thus all the comeliness is destroyed. And not the comeliness only, but much also of the use of the eyes. The reason is, that every one of our members hath both an operation of its own, and one which is common; and likewise there is in us a beauty which is peculiar, and another which is common. And these kinds of beauty appear indeed to be divided, but they are perfectly bound together, and when one is destroyed, the other perishes also along with it. To explain myself: let there be bright eyes and a smiling cheek, and a red lip, and straight nose, and open brow; nevertheless, if thou mar but the slightest of these, thou hast marred the common beauty of all; all is full of dejection; all will appear foul to look on, which before was so beautiful: thus if thou shouldest crush only the tip of the nose, thou hast brought great deformity upon all: and yet it is the maiming but of a single member. And likewise in the hand, if thou shouldest take away the nail from one finger, thou wouldest see the same result. If now thou wouldest see the same taking place in respect of their function<sup>1</sup> also, take away one finger, and thou wilt see the rest less active, and no longer performing their part equally.

<sup>1</sup> *inquiries.*

Since then the loss of a member is a common deformity to all, and its safety, beauty to all, let us not be lifted up, nor trample on our neighbours. For through that small member, the great one too is fair and beautiful, and by the eyelids, slight as they are, is the eye adorned. So that he who wars with his brother, wars with himself: for the injury done reaches not only unto him, but himself also shall undergo no small loss.

[7.] That this then may not be, let us so care for our

neighbours, as for ourselves, and let us transfer this image of the body now also to the Church, and be careful for all, <sup>1 Cor. 12. 20.</sup> as for our own members. For in the Church also there are members many and diverse: and some are more honourable, and some more deficient. For example, there are choirs of virgins, there are assemblies of widows, there are fraternities<sup>1</sup> of those who shine in holy wedlock<sup>2</sup>; in short, many are the degrees of virtue. And in almsgiving again in like manner. For one empties himself of all his goods: others care for a competency alone, and seek nothing more than necessities; others give of their superfluity: nevertheless all these adorn one another; and if the greater should set at nought the less, he would in the greatest degree injure himself. Thus, suppose a virgin to deal scornfully with a married woman, she hath cut off no small part of her reward; and he again that emptied himself of all, should he upbraid him that hath not done so, hath emptied himself of much of the fruit of his own labours. And why speak I of virgins, and widows, and men without possessions? What is meaner than those who beg? and yet even these fulfil a most important office in the Church, clinging to the doors of the sanctuary<sup>3</sup>, and supplying one of its greatest ornaments: and without these there could be no perfecting the fulness of the Church. Which thing, as it seems, the Apostles also observing, made a law from the beginning, as in regard to all other things, so also that there

<sup>1</sup> See Bingham, vii. 2. 6; and as quoted by him, St. Athanas. ad Dracont. l. i. p. 263; S. Augustin de Hæres. c. 40; in support of the opinion that "there was an order of monks which lived in a married state, and enjoyed their own property and possessions as the primitive ascetics were used to do." If the opinion is correct, (the places quoted seem hardly to prove it,) this place of St. Chrysostom may perhaps refer to that order.

<sup>2</sup> Bingham, iv. 4. 1. "At the entrance of the interior Narthex," or Choir, "the Poor of the Church placed themselves both before and after Divine service, to ask alms of such as came from the Altar." S. Chrys. on 1 Thess. Rom. 11. near the end. "In the Churches, and in the Chapels of the martyrs, the poor sit in front of the

vestibules... When we enter into earthly palaces, there is no such thing to be seen, but grave, splendid, rich, wise men are hastening about on all sides. But at our entrance into the true palaces, the Church, and the houses of prayer of the Martyrs, there are possessed persons, maimed, poor, old, blind, distorted in their limbs." "They are an admirable sort of watch-dogs, keeping guard in the Courts of the Palace. Feed them therefore, for the honour redounds to their King. . . That human things are nought, thou art excellently instructed by the very Porch of the Church: that God delights not in wealth, thou art taught by those who sit before Him." For the custom of the Church of Rome, see the account of St. Lawrence's martyrdom in Prudentius, as quoted by Hooker, E. P. v. 79. 14.

**HOMIL.**  
**XXX.** should be widows: and so great care did they use about the matter, as also to set over them seven deacons. For as bishops, and presbyters, and deacons, and virgins, and continent persons, enter into my enumeration, when I am reckoning up the members of the Church, so also do widows. Yea, and it is no mean office which they fill. For thou indeed comest here when thou wilt: but these both day and night sing psalms, and attend: not for alms only doing this; since if that were their object, they might walk in the market place, and beg in the alleys: but there is in them piety also in no small degree. At least, behold in what a furnace of poverty they are; yet never shalt thou hear a blasphemous word from them, nor a desponding one, after the manner of many rich men's wives. Yet some of them often lie down to their rest in hunger, and others continue constantly frozen by the cold; nevertheless they pass their time in thanksgiving and giving glory. Though you give but a penny, they give thanks, and implore ten thousand blessings on the giver; and if you give nothing, they do not complain, but even so they bless, and think themselves happy to enjoy their daily food.

"Yes," it is replied, "since, whether they will or no, they must bear it." Why, tell me? Wherefore hast thou uttered this bitter expression? Are there not shameful arts, which bring gain to the aged, both men and women? Had they not power to support themselves by those means in great abundance, provided they had chosen to cast off all care of good living? Seest thou not how many persons of that age, by becoming pimps and panders, and by other such ministrations, both live, and live in luxury<sup>1</sup>? Not so these, but they choose rather to perish of hunger, than to dishonour their own life, and betray their salvation; and they sit throughout the whole day, preparing a medicine of salvation for thee.

<sup>1</sup> ἐφ.  
φανερα  
καὶ ἡγε-  
μονίαν

For no physician, stretching out the hand to apply the knife, works so effectually to cut out the corruption from our wounds, as doth a poor man, stretching out his right hand and receiving alms, to take away the scars which the wounds have left. And what is truly wonderful, they perform this excellent chirurgery without pain and anguish: and we who are set



over the people, and give you so much wholesome advice, do <sup>1 Cor. 12. 20.</sup> not more truly discourse than he doth, who sits before the doors of the church, by his silence and his countenance. For we too sound these things in your ears every day, saying, "Be not high-minded, O man; human nature is a thing that soon declines, and is ready to fall away; our youth hastens on to old age, our beauty to deformity, our strength to weakness, our honour to contempt, our health falls away to sickness, our glory to meanness, our riches to poverty; our concerns are like a violent current that never will stand still, but keeps hastening down the steep."

The same advice do they also give, and more than this, by (5.) their appearance, and by their experience itself too, which is a yet plainer kind of advice. How many, for instance, of those who now sit without, were in the bloom of youth, and did great things? How many of these loathsome looking persons surpassed many, both in vigour of body, and in beauty of countenance? Nay, disbelieve it not, nor deride. For surely, life is full of ten thousand such examples. For if from mean and humble persons many have oftentimes become kings, what marvel is it, if from being great and glorious, some have been made humble and mean? Since the former is much the more extraordinary: but the latter, of perpetual occurrence. So that one ought not to be incredulous, that any of them ever flourished in arts, and arms, and abundance of wealth, but rather to pity them with great compassion, and to fear for ourselves, lest we too should sometime suffer the same things. For we too are men, and are subject to this speedy change.

[8.] But perchance some one of the thoughtless, and of those who are accustomed to scoff, will jeer at this too which hath been said, and will altogether deride us, saying, "How long wilt thou not cease continually introducing poor men and beggars in thy discourses, and prophesying to us of misfortunes, and denouncing poverty to come, and desiring to make us beggars?" Not from a desire to make beggars of you, O man, do I say these things, but hastening to open unto you the riches of heaven. Since he too, who to the healthy man makes mention of the sick, and relates their anguish, saith it not to make him diseased, but to preserve him

HOMIL.  
XXX. in health, by the fear of their calamities cutting off his remissness. Poverty seems to you to be a fearful thing, and to be dreaded, even to the mere name of it. Yea, and therefore are we poor, because we are afraid of poverty; though we have ten thousand talents. For not he who hath nothing, is poor, but he who shudders at poverty. Since in men's calamities also it is not those who suffer great evils whom we lament and account wretched, but those who know not how to bear them, even though they be small. Whereas he that knows how to bear them, is, as all know, worthy of praises and crowns. And to prove that this is so, whom do we applaud in the games? Those who are much beaten, and do not vex themselves, but hold their head on high; or those who fly after the first strokes? Are not those even crowned by us, as manly and noble; while we laugh at these, as unmanly and cowards? So then let us do in the affairs of life. Him that bears all easily let us crown, as we do that noble champion<sup>1</sup>; but weep over him that shrinks and trembles at his dangers, and who before he receives the blow is dead with fear. For so in the games; if any, before he raised his hands, at the mere sight of his adversary extending his right hand, should fly, though he receive no wound, he will be laughed to scorn, as feeble, and effeminate, and unversed in such struggles. Now this is like what happens to these who fear poverty, and cannot so much as endure the expectation of it.

<sup>1</sup> *εὐχρη-  
στίας  
ἀνδρῶν.*

Evidently then, it is not we that make you wretched, but ye yourselves. For how can it be, that the devil should not henceforth make sport of thee, seeing thee even before the stroke afraid, and trembling at the menace? Or rather, when thou dost but esteem this a threat, he will have no need so much as to strike thee any more, but leaving thee to keep thy wealth, by the expectation of its being taken away he will render thee softer than any wax. And because it is our nature, (so to speak,) not to consider the objects of our dread so fearful after suffering, as before, and while yet untried: therefore, to prevent thee from acquiring even this virtue, he detains thee in the very height of fear; by the fear of poverty, before all experience of it, melting thee down as wax in the fire. Yea, and such a man is softer than any wax, and lives a life more wretched than Cain himself. For the things which he hath

in excess, he is in fear: for those which he hath not, in grief: and again, concerning what he hath he trembles, keeping his wealth within as a wilful runaway slave, and beset by I know not what various and unaccountable passions. For unaccountable desire, and manifold fear and anxiety, and trembling on every side, agitate them. And they are like a vessel driven by contrary winds from every quarter, and enduring many heavy seas. And how much better for such a man to depart, than to be enduring a continual storm? Since for Cain also it were more tolerable to have died, than to be for ever trembling<sup>1</sup>.

Lest we then for our part suffer these things, let us laugh to scorn the device of the devil, let us burst his cords asunder, let us sever the point of his terrible spear, and fortify every approach. For if thou laugh at money, he hath not where to strike, he hath not where he may lay hold. Then hast thou rooted up the root of evils; and when the root is no more, neither will any evil fruit grow.

[9.] Well: these things we must be always saying, and never leave off saying them: but whether our sayings do any good, the day will declare, even that day, which is revealed by fire, which trieth every man's work<sup>2</sup>, which sheweth what lamps are bright, and what are not so. Then shall he who hath oil, and he who hath it not, be manifest. But may none then be found destitute of this comfort; rather may all, bringing in with them abundance of mercy, and having their lamps bright, enter in together with the bridegroom.

Since nothing is more fearful and full of anguish than that voice, which they who departed without abundant almsgiving shall then hear the Bridegroom utter, *I know you not*<sup>3</sup>. But may we never hear this voice, but rather that most pleasant and desirable one, *Come, ye blessed of My Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world*<sup>4</sup>. For thus shall we live the happy life, and enjoy all the good things which even pass man's understanding: unto which may we all attain, through the grace and mercy, &c.

<sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. 12. 20.

<sup>1</sup> Gen. 4. 12; vid. <sup>supr.</sup> Hom. vii. 9.

<sup>2</sup> 1 Cor. 3. 13.

<sup>3</sup> S. Mat. 25. 12.

<sup>4</sup> S. Mat. 25. 34.

## HOMILY XXXI.

---

1 COR. xii. 21.

*And the eye cannot say to the hand, I have no need of thee:  
nor again the hand to the feet, I have no need of you.*

HAVING checked the envy of those in lower rank, and having taken off the dejection, which it was likely that they would feel from greater gifts having been vouchsafed to others, he humbles also the pride of these latter, who had received the greater gifts. He had done the same indeed in his discourse also with the former. For the statement, that it was a gift and not an achievement, was intended to declare this. But now he doth it again even more vehemently, dwelling on the same image. For from the body, in what follows, and from the unity thence arising, he proceeds to the actual comparison of the members, a thing on which they were especially seeking to be instructed. Since there was not so much power to console them in the circumstance of their being all one body, as in the conviction that in the very things where-with they were endowed, they were not left greatly behind. And he saith, *The eye cannot say to the hand, I have no need of thee: nor again the hand to the feet, I have no need of you.*

For though the gift be less, yet is it necessary: and as when the one is absent, many functions are impeded, so also without the other there is a maim in the fulness of the Church. And he said not, *will not say*, but *cannot say*. So that even though it have a will, though it should actually say so, it is out of the question, nor is the thing consistent with nature. For this cause having taken the two extremes, he makes trial of his argument in them, first in respect of the hand and the



eye, and secondly, in respect of the head and the feet, adding <sup>1 Cor.</sup> force to the example. <sub>12. 23.</sub>

For what is meaner than the foot? Or what more honourable and more necessary than the head? For this, the head, more than any thing, is the man. Nevertheless it is not of itself sufficient, nor could it alone perform all things; since if this were so, our feet would have been a superfluous addition.

[2.] And neither did he stop here, but seeks also another amplification, a kind of thing which he is always doing, contending not only to be on equal terms, but even advancing beyond. Wherefore also he adds, saying,

Ver. 22. *Nay much more, those members of the body, which seem to be more feeble, are necessary:*

Ver. 23. *And those members of the body which we think to be less honourable, upon these we bestow more abundant honour; and our uncomely parts have more abundant comeliness.*

In every clause adding the term *body*, and thereby both consoling the one and checking the other. "For I affirm not this only<sup>a</sup>," saith he, "that the greater have need of the less, but that they have also much need. Since if there be any thing weak in us, if any thing dishonourable, this is both necessary, and enjoys greater honour." And he well said, *which seem*, and, *which we think*; pointing out that the judgment arises not from the nature of the things, but from the opinion of the many. For nothing in us is dishonourable, seeing it is God's work. Thus, what in us is esteemed less honourable than our genital members? Nevertheless they enjoy greater honour. And the very poor, even if they have the rest of the body naked, cannot endure to exhibit those members naked. Yet surely this is not the condition of things dishonourable; but it was natural for them to be despised rather than the rest. For so in a house the servant who is dishonoured, so far from enjoying greater attention, hath not even an equal share vouchsafed him. By the same rule likewise, if this member were dishonourable, instead of having greater privileges, it ought not even to enjoy the

<sup>a</sup> The Text of the Editions seems apparently should be transposed, and here slightly corrupt. The word *μὴν* the second negative omitted.

HOMIL. same : whereas now it hath more honour for its portion : and  
 XXXI. this too the wisdom of God hath effected. For to some parts by their nature He hath given not to need it : but to others, not having granted it by their nature, He hath compelled us to yield it. Yet are they not therefore dishonourable. Since the animals too by their nature have a sufficiency, and neither need clothing, nor shoes, nor a roof, the greater part of them : yet not on this account is our body less honourable than they, because it needs all these things.

Yea rather, were one to consider accurately, the parts in question are even by nature itself both honourable and necessary. Which in truth Paul himself intimated, not giving his judgment<sup>1</sup> of them from our care, and from their enjoying greater honour, but from the very nature of the things.

Wherefore when he calls them *weak* and *less honourable*, he uses the expression *which seem* : but when he calls them *necessary*, he no longer adds *which seem*, but himself gives his judgment, saying, *they are necessary* ; and very properly. For they are useful to procreation of children and the succession of our race. Wherefore also the Roman legislators punish them that mutilate these members, and make men eunuchs, as persons who do injury to our common stock, and affront nature herself.

But woe to the intemperate, who bring reproach on the handy-works of God. For as many are wont to curse wine on account of the drunken, and womankind on account of the unchaste ; so also they account these members base by reason of those that use them not as they ought. But improperly. For the sin is not allotted to the thing as a portion of its nature, but the transgression is produced by the will of him that ventures on it.

But some suppose that the expressions, *the feeble members*, and *less honourable*, and *necessary*, and *which enjoy more abundant honour*, are used by Paul of eyes and feet, and that he speaks of the eyes as *more feeble*, and *necessary*, because though deficient in strength, they have the advantage in utility : but of the feet as the *less honourable* : for these also receive from us great consideration.

[3.] Next, not to work out yet another amplification, he says, Ver. 24. *But our comely parts have no need :*

That is, lest any should say, " Why what kind of speech is

this, to despise the honourable, and minister to the less honoured?" "we do not this in contempt," saith he, "but because they *have no need*." And see how large a measure of praise he thus sets down in brief, and so hastens on: a thing most conveniently and usefully done. And neither is he content with this, but adds also the cause, saying, *But God hath tempered the body together, having given more abundant honour unto that part which lacked:*

Ver. 25. *That there should be no schism in the body;*

Now if He hath tempered it together, He hath not suffered that which is more uncomely to appear. For that which is mingled becomes one thing, and it doth not appear what it was before: since otherwise we could not say that it was tempered. And see how he continually hastens by the defects, saying, *that which lacked*. He said not, "to that which is dishonourable," "to that which is unseemly," but *to that which lacked* (*that which lacked*; how? by nature,) *having given more abundant honour*. And wherefore? *That there should be no schism in the body*. Thus because, though they enjoyed an endless store of consolation, they nevertheless indulged grief, as if they had received less than others, he signifies that they were rather honoured. For his phrase is, *Having given more abundant honour to that which lacked*.

Next he also adds the reason, shewing that with a view to their profit he both caused it to lack, and more abundantly honoured it. And what is the reason? *That there should be no schism*, saith he, *in the body*. (And he said not "in the members," but *in the body*.) For there would indeed be a great and unfair advantage, if some members were cared for both by nature and by our forethought, others not even by either one of these. Then would they be cut off from one another, from inability to endure the connexion. And when these were cut off, there would be harm done also to the rest. Seest thou how he points out, that of necessity *greater honour* is given to *that which lacketh*? "For had not this been so, the injury would have become common to all," saith he. And the reason is, that unless these received great consideration on our part, they would have been rudely treated, as not having the help of nature: and this rude treatment would have been their ruin: their

1 Cor.  
12. 25.



HOMIL. ruin would have divided the body; and the body having  
 XXXI. been divided, the other members also would have perished,  
 which are far greater than these.

Seest thou that the care of these latter is connected with making provision for those? For they have not their being so much in their own nature, as in their being one, by virtue of the body<sup>1</sup>. Wherefore if the body perish, they profit nothing by such health as they have severally. But if the eye remain, or the nose, preserving its proper function, yet when the bond of union is broken, there will be no use for them ever after; whereas, suppose this remaining, and those injured, they both support themselves through it, and speedily return to health.

But perhaps some one may say, "this indeed in the body hath reason, that *that which lacketh hath received more abundant honour*, but among men how may this be made out?" Why, among men most especially thou mayest see this taking place. For so they who came at the eleventh hour, first received their hire; and the sheep that had wandered induced the shepherd to leave behind the ninety and nine, and run after it, and when it was found, he bore, and did not drive it; and the prodigal son obtained more honour than he who was approved; and the thief was crowned and proclaimed before the Apostles. And in the case of the talents also thou mayest see this happen: in that to him that received the five talents, and to him that received two, were vouchsafed the same rewards; yea, by the very circumstance, that he received the two, he was the more favoured with great providential care. Since had he been entrusted with the five, with his want of ability he would have fallen from the whole: but having received the two, and fulfilled his own duty, he was thought worthy of the same with him that had gained the five, having so far the advantage, as with less labour to obtain the same crown. And yet he too was a man, as well as the one that traded with the five. Nevertheless his Master doth not in any wise call him to a strict account, nor compel him to do the same with his fellow-servant, nor doth he say, "Why canst thou not gain the five?" (though he might justly have said so,) but assigned him likewise his crown.

[4.] Knowing these things therefore, ye that are greater,



trample not on the less, lest, instead of them, ye injure your-  
selves. For when they are cut off, the whole body is destroyed. 1 COR.  
12. 25.

Since, what else is a body, than the existence of many members? As also Paul himself saith, that *the body is not one member, but many*. If therefore this be the essence of a body, let us take care that the many continue many. Since, unless this be entirely preserved, the stroke is in the vital parts; which is the reason also why the Apostle doth not require this only, their not being separated, but also their being closely united. For instance, having said, *that there be no schism in the body*, he was not content with this, but added, *that the members should have the same care one for another*. Adding this other cause also of the less enjoying more honour. For not only lest they should be separated one from another, hath God so contrived it, but also that there may be abundant love and concord. For if each man's being depends on his neighbour's safety, tell me not of the less and the more: in this case there is no more and less. While the body continues, you may see the difference too, but when it perishes, no longer. And perish it will, unless the lesser parts also continue.

If now even the greater members will perish, when the less (3.) are broken off, these ought to care in like manner for the less, and so as for themselves, inasmuch as in the safety of these the greater likewise remain. So then, shouldest thou say ten thousand times, "such a member is dishonoured and inferior," still if thou provide not for it in like manner, as for thyself, if thou neglect it as inferior, the injury will pass on to thyself. Wherefore he said not only, that *the members should care one for another*, but he added, *that they should have the same care one for another*, i. e. the small should enjoy the like and the same providential care with the great.

Say not then, that such an one is an ordinary person, but consider that he is a member of that body which holds together the whole: and as the eye, so also doth he cause the body to be a body. For where the body is being builded up, there none hath any thing more than his neighbour: since neither doth this make a body, there being one part greater, and another less, but their being many and diverse. For even as thou, because thou art greater, didst help to make up the

HOMIL. body, so also he, because he is less. So that his comparative  
 XXXI. deficiency, when the body is to be builded up, turns out of  
 ' Reason. equal value with thee unto this noble contribution': yea, he  
 avails as much as thyself. And it is evident from hence.  
 Let there be no member greater or less, nor more and less  
 honourable: but let all be eye, or all head: will not the body  
 perish? Every one sees it. Again, if all be inferior, the same  
 thing will happen. So that in this respect also the less are  
 proved equal. Yea, and if one must say something more, the  
 purpose of the less being less, is that the body may remain.  
 So that for thy sake he is less, in order that thou mayest  
 continue to be great. And here is the cause of his demanding  
 the same care from all. And having said, *that the members*  
*may have the same care one for another*, he explains this  
 same thing again, saying,

[5.] Ver. 26. *And whether one member suffer, all the*  
*members suffer with it; or one member be honoured, all*  
*the members rejoice with it.*

"Yea, with no other view," saith he, "did He make the  
 care He requires common, establishing unity in so great  
 diversity, but that of all events there might be complete  
 communion. Because, if our care for our neighbour be the  
 common safety, it follows also that our glory and our sadness  
 must be common." Three things therefore he here demands:  
 the not being divided, but united in perfection: the having  
 like care one for another: and the considering all that  
 happens, common. And as above he saith, *He hath given*  
*more abundant honour to that part which lacked*, because  
 it needeth it; signifying that the very inferiority was become  
 an introduction to greater honour: so here he equalizes them  
 in respect of the care also which takes place mutually among  
 them. For "therefore did he cause them to partake of  
 greater honour," saith he, "that they might not meet with  
 less care." And not from hence only, but also by all that  
 befalls them, good and painful, are the members bound to one  
 another. Thus often, when a thorn is fixed in the heel, the  
 whole body feels it, and cares for it: both the back is bent,  
 and the belly and thighs are contracted, and the hands  
 coming forth as guards and servants, draw out what was so  
 fixed, and the head stoops over it, and the eyes observe it

with much care. So that even if the foot hath inferiority from <sup>1 Cor.</sup> its inability to ascend, yet by its bringing down the head <sup>12. 26.</sup> it hath an equality, and is favoured with the same honour; and especially whenever the feet are the cause of the head's coming down, not by favour, but by their claim on it. And thus, if by being the more honourable it hath an advantage; yet in that, being so, it owes such honour and care to the lesser, and likewise equal sympathy: by this it indicates great equality. Since what is meaner than the heel? what more honourable than the head? Yet this member moves toward that, and moves them all together with itself. Again if any thing is the matter with the eyes, all complain, and all are idle: and neither do the feet walk, nor the hands work, nor doth the stomach enjoy its accustomed food; and yet the affection is of the eyes. Why dost thou cause the stomach to pine? why keep thy feet still? why bind thy hands? Because they are tied to the feet, and in an unspeakable manner the whole body suffers. For if it shared not in the suffering, it would not endure to partake of the care. Wherefore having said, *that the members may have the same care one for another*, he added, *whether one member suffer, all the members suffer with it; or one member be honoured, all the members rejoice with it.* "And how do they rejoice with it?" say you, The head is crowned, and the whole man is honoured. The mouth speaks, and the eyes laugh, and are delighted. Yet the credit given is not of the beauty of the eyes, but it belongs to the tongue. Again, if the eyes appear beautiful, the whole woman is beautified: as indeed these also, when a straight nose, and upright neck, and other members are praised, rejoice and appear cheerful: and shed tears again in great abundance over their griefs and misfortunes, though themselves continue uninjured.

[6.] Let us all then, considering these things, imitate the love of these members; let us not in any wise do the contrary, trampling on the miseries of our neighbour, and envying his good things. For this is the part of madmen, and persons beside themselves. Just as he that digs out his own eye, hath displayed a very great proof of senselessness; and he that devours his own hand, exhibits a clear evidence of downright madness.

HOMIL.  
XXXI. Now if this be the case with regard to the members, so likewise, when it happeneth among the brethren, it fastens on us the reputation of folly, and brings on no common mischief. For as long as he shines, thy comeliness also is apparent, and the whole body is beautified. For not at all doth he confine the beauty to himself alone, but permits thee also to glory. But if thou extinguish him, thou bringest a common darkness upon the whole body, and the misfortune thou causest is common to all the members: as indeed if thou preservest him in brightness, thou preservest the bloom of the entire body. For no man saith, "the eye is beautiful:" but what? "such a woman is beautiful." And if it also be praised, it comes after the common encomium. So likewise it happens in the Church. I mean, if there be any celebrated persons, the community reaps the good report of it. For the enemies are not apt to divide the praises, but connect them together. And if any be brilliant in speech, they do not praise him alone, but likewise the whole Church. For they do not say only, "such a one is a wonderful man," but what? "the Christians have a wonderful teacher:" and so they make the possession common.

[7.] And now let me ask, do heathens bind together, and dost thou divide, and war with thine own body, and withstand thine own members? Knowest thou not that this overturns all? For even a *kingdom*, saith he, *divided against itself*

<sup>1</sup> S. Mat. *shall not stand*<sup>1</sup>.  
12. 25.

But nothing so divides and separates, as envy and jealousy, that grievous disease, and exempt from all pardon, and in some respect worse than *the root of all evils*<sup>2</sup>. For the covetous is then pleased, when himself hath received: but the envious is then pleased, when another hath failed to receive, not when himself hath received. For he thinks the misfortunes of others a benefit to himself, rather than prosperity; going about a kind of common enemy of mankind, and smiting the members of Christ, than which what can be more akin to madness? The devil is envious, but of men, not of any devil: but thou being a man, enviest men, and withstandest what is of thine own tribe and family, which not even the devil doth. And what pardon shalt thou obtain, what excuse? trembling and turning pale, at sight of a

<sup>2</sup> 1 Tim. 6. 12.



brother in prosperity, when thou oughtest to crown thyself, and to rejoice and exult. 1 Cor.  
12. 30.

If indeed thou wishest to emulate him, I forbid not that: emulate, but with a view to be like him who is approved: not in order to depress him, but that thou mayest reach the same lofty point, that thou mayest display the same excellence. This is wholesome rivalry, imitation without contention: not to grieve at the good things of others, but to be vexed at our own evils: the contrary to which is the result of envy. For neglecting its own evils, it pines away at the good fortune of other men. And thus the poor is not so vexed by his own poverty, as by the plenty of his neighbour; than which what can be more grievous? Yea, in this respect the envious, as I before said, is worse even than the covetous: the one rejoicing at some acquisition of his own, while the other finds his delight in some one else failing to receive.

Wherefore I beseech you, leaving this evil way, to change to a proper emulation, (for it is a violent thing, this kind of zeal, and hotter than any fire,) and to win thereby mighty blessings. Thus also Paul used to guide those of Jewish origin unto the faith, saying, *If by any means I might provoke to emulation them which are my flesh, and might save some of them*<sup>1</sup>. For he whose emulation is like what Paul wished for, doth not pine when he sees the other in reputation, but when he sees himself left behind: the envious not so, but at the sight of another's prosperity. And he is a kind of drone, injuring other men's labours; and himself never anxious to rise, but weeping when he sees another rising, and doing every thing to throw him down. To what then might one compare this passion? It seems to me to be like as if a sluggish ass, and heavy with abundance of flesh, being yoked with a winged courser, should neither himself be willing to rise, and should attempt to drag the other down by the weight of his carcase. For so this man takes no thought nor anxiety to be himself rid of this deep slumber, but doth every thing to supplant and throw down him that is flying towards heaven, having become an exact emulator of the devil: since he too, seeing man in paradise, sought not to change his own condition, but to cast him out of paradise. And again, seeing him seated in heaven, and the

<sup>1</sup> Rom.  
11. 14.

HOMIL.  
XXXI. others hastening thither, he holds to the same plan, supplanting them who are hastening thither, and thereby heaping up the furnace more abundantly for himself. For in every instance this happens: both he that is envied, if he be vigilant, becoming more eminent; and he that is envious, accumulating to himself more evils. Thus also Joseph became eminent, thus Aaron the priest: the conspiracy of the envious caused God once and again to give His suffrage for him, and was the occasion of the rod's budding. Thus Jacob attained his abundant wealth, and all those other blessings. Thus the envious pierce themselves through with ten thousand evils. Knowing as we do all these things, let us flee such emulation. For wherefore, tell me, enviest thou? Because thy brother hath received spiritual grace? And from whom did he receive it? answer me. Was it not from God? Clearly then He is the object of the enmity to which thou art committing thyself, He the bestower of the gift. Seest thou which way the evil is tending, and with what sort of a point it is crowning the heap of thy sins; and how deep the pit of vengeance which it is digging for thee?

Let us flee it, then, beloved, and neither envy others, nor fail to pray for our enviers, and do all we can to extinguish their passion: neither let us feel as the unthinking do, who being minded to exact punishment of them, do all in their power to light up their flame. But let not us do so; rather let us weep for them and lament. For they are the injured persons, having a continual worm gnawing through their heart, and collecting a fountain of poison more bitter than any gall. Come now, let us beseech the merciful God, both to change their state of feeling, and that we may never fall into that disease: since heaven is indeed inaccessible to him that hath this wasting sore, and before heaven too, even this present life is not worth living in. For not so thoroughly are timber and wool wont to be eaten through by moth and worm abiding therein, as doth the fever of envy devour the very bones of the envious, and destroy all self-command in their soul.

In order then that we may deliver both ourselves and others from these innumerable woes, let us expel from within us this evil fever, this that is more grievous than any

gangrene : that having regained spiritual strength, we may <sup>1 Cor.</sup> both finish the present course, and obtain the future crowns ; 12. 20.  
unto which may we all attain, by the grace and mercy of our  
Lord Jesus Christ, with Whom to the Father, with the Holy  
Ghost, be glory, power, honour, now and ever, and world  
without end. Amen.

## HOMILY XXXII.

---

I COR. xii. 27.

*Now ye are the body of Christ, and members in particular.*

FOR lest any should say, "What is the example of the body to us? since the body is a slave to nature, but our good deeds are of choice;" he applies it to our own concerns; and to signify that we ought to have the same concord of design, as they have from nature, he saith, *Now ye are the body of Christ*. But if our body ought not to be divided, much less the body of Christ, and so much less, as grace is more powerful than nature.

*And members in particular.* That is, "not only," saith he, "are we a body, but members also." For of both these he had before discoursed, bringing the many together into one, and implying that all become some one thing after the image of the body, and that this one thing is made up of the many, and is in the many, and that the many by this are held together, and are capable of being many.

But what is the expression, *in particular*? "So far at least as appertaineth to you; and so far as naturally should receive edification from you." For because he had said, *the body*, whereas the whole body was not the Corinthian Church, but the Church in every part of the world, therefore he said, *in particular*: i. e. the Church amongst you is a part of the Church existing every where, and of the body which is made up of all the Churches: so that not only with yourselves alone, but also with the whole Church throughout the world, ye ought to be at peace, if at least ye be members of the whole body.



[2.] Ver. 28. *And God hath set some in the Church: first, apostles; secondarily, prophets; thirdly, teachers; after that, miracles; then gifts of healings, helps, governments, diversities of tongues.* <sup>1 Cor. 12. 28.</sup>

Thus what I spake of before, this also he now doth. Because they thought highly of themselves in respect of the tongues, he sets it last every where. For the terms, "first" and "second" are not used by him here at random, but in order to set first the more honourable, and to point out the inferior. Wherefore also he set the apostles first, who had all the gifts in themselves. And he said not, "God hath set certain in the Church, apostles" simply, "or prophets," but he employs *first, second, and third*, signifying that same thing which I told you of.

*Secondarily, prophets.* For they used to prophesy, as the daughters of Philip, as Agabus, as these very persons among the Corinthians, of whom he saith, *Let the prophets speak, two or three*<sup>1</sup>. And writing also to Timothy, he said, *Neglect not the gift that is in thee, which was given thee by prophecy*<sup>2</sup>. And they were much more numerous then, than under the old covenant: the gift not having devolved on some ten, and twenty, and fifty, and an hundred, but this grace was poured out abundantly, and every Church had many that prophesied. And if Christ saith, *The Law and the Prophets prophesied until John*<sup>3</sup>, he saith it of those prophets who before proclaimed his coming. <sup>1 c. 14. 29. 21 Tim. 4. 14. 3 S. Mat. 11. 13.</sup>

*Thirdly, teachers.* For he that prophesieth, speaks all things from the Spirit; but he that teacheth, sometimes discourses also out of his own mind. Wherefore also he said, *Let the Elders that rule well be counted worthy of double honour, especially they who labour in the word and doctrine*<sup>4</sup>; whereas he that speaks all things by the Spirit, doth not labour. This accordingly is the reason why he set him after the prophet, because the one is wholly a gift, but the other is also man's labour. For he speaks many things of his own mind, agreeing however with the sacred Scriptures also. <sup>4 1 Tim. 5. 17.</sup>

[3.] *After that, miracles; then, gifts of healings.*

Seest thou how he again divides the healings from the power, which also he did before. For the power is more

HOMIL. than the healing: since he that hath power, both punishes  
XXXII. and heals, but he that hath the gift of healings, doeth cures only. And observe how excellent the order he made use of, when he set the prophecy before the miracles and the healings. For above, when he said, *To one is given by the Spirit the word of wisdom, and to another the word of knowledge*, he spake, not setting them in order, but indifferently. Here on the other hand he sets a first, and a second rank. Wherefore then doth he set prophecy first? Because even in the old covenant the matter hath this order. For example, when Esaias was discoursing with the Jews, and exhibiting a demonstration of the power of God, and bringing forward the evidence of the worthlessness of the demons, he stated this also as the greatest evidence of his divinity, his foretelling  
1 Is. 41. things to come<sup>1</sup>. And Christ Himself, after working so many  
22, 23. signs, saith, that this was no small sign of His divinity: and continually adds, *But these things have I told you, that when*

2 S. John it is come to pass, ye may believe that I am He<sup>2</sup>.  
13. 19;  
14. 29; “ Well then; the gifts of healings are justly inferior to  
16. 4. prophecy. But why likewise to teaching?” Because it is not the same thing, to declare the word of preaching, and sow piety in the hearts of the hearers, as it is to work miracles:  
(2.) since these are done merely for the sake of that. When therefore any one teaches both by word and life, he is greater than all. For those he calls emphatically teachers, who both teach by deeds, and instruct in word. For instance: this made the Apostles themselves to become Apostles. And those gifts certain others also, of no great worth, received in the beginning, as those who said, *Lord, have we not prophesied in Thy Name, and done many wonderful works?* and after this were told,

3 S. Mat. I never knew you; depart from Me, ye that work iniquity<sup>3</sup>.  
7. 22. But this twofold word of doctrine, I mean that by deeds and by words, no bad man would ever undertake. As to his setting the prophets first, marvel not at it. For he is not speaking of prophets simply, but of those who by prophecy do also teach, and say every thing to the common benefit: which in proceeding he makes more clear to us.

*Helps, governments.* What is, *helps*? To help the weak. Is this then a gift, tell me? In the first place, this too is of  
1. 12. the Gift of God, aptness for a patron's office<sup>4</sup>; the dispensing  
21.

spiritual things; besides which he calls many even of our own good deeds, "gifts," not meaning us to be dispirited, but intimating that in every case we need God's help, and preparing them to be thankful, and thereby making them more forward, and stirring up their minds.

*Diversity of tongues.* Seest thou where he hath set this gift, and how he every where assigns it the last rank?

[4.] Further, since again by this catalogue he had pointed out a great difference, and stirred up the afore-mentioned distemper of those that had lesser gifts, he darts upon them in what follows with great vehemence, because he had already given them those many proofs of their not being left much inferior. What I mean is; because it was likely that on hearing these things they would say, "And why were we not all made Apostles?"—whereas above he had made use of a more soothing tone of discourse, proving at length the necessity of this result, both from the image of the body; for *the body*, saith he, *is not one member*; and again, *but if all were one member, where were the body?* and from the fact of their being given as was expedient; for *the manifestation of the Spirit is given*, saith he, *to every man, to profit withal*: and from all being watered from the same Spirit: and from what is bestowed being a free gift, and not a debt; for *there are*, saith he, *diversities of gifts, but the same Spirit*: and from the manifestation of the Spirit being made alike through all; for *to every man*, saith he, *is given his own manifestation through the Spirit*: and from the fact that these things were moulded according to the pleasure of the Spirit and of God; for *all these*, saith he, *worketh that one and the self-same Spirit, dividing to every man severally as he will*: and, *God hath set the members every one of them in the body, as it hath pleased Him*: and from the inferior members also being necessary; for *those which seem*, saith he, *to be more feeble, are necessary*: from their being alike necessary, in that they constitute the body equally with the greater; for *the body*, saith he, *is not one member, but many*: from the greater too needing the less; for *the head*, saith he, *cannot say to the feet, I have no need of you*: from these latter enjoying even more honour; for *to that which lacketh*, saith he, *He hath given more abundant honour*: from the care of them being common and equal; for *all the members have the same*

1 Cor.  
12. 28.



HOMIL.  
XXXII. *care one for another: and from there being one honour and one grief of them all; for whether, saith he, one member suffer, all the members suffer with it, or one member be honoured, all the members rejoice with it:—*whereas, I say, he had above exhorted them by these topics, here and henceforth he uses language so as to bear them down and rebuke them. For, as I said, it behoves us neither always to exhort people, nor always to silence them. Therefore also Paul himself, because he at length exhorted them, doth henceforth vehemently attack them, saying,

*Ver. 29. Are all apostles? are all prophets? have all the gifts of healing?*

And he doth not stop at the first and the second gift, but proceeds to the last, either meaning this, that all cannot be all things, (even as he there saith, *if all were one member, where were the body?*) or establishing some other point also along with these, which may tell in the way of consolation again. What then is this? His signifying that even the lesser gifts are objects of contention, contended for equally with the greater, from the circumstance, that not even these were given absolutely to all? For “why,” saith he, “dost thou grieve, that thou hast not gifts of healing? consider that what thou hast, even though it be less, is oftentimes not possessed by him that hath the greater.” Wherefore he saith,

*Ver. 30. Do all speak with tongues? do all interpret?*

For even as the great gifts God hath not vouchsafed all to all men, but to some this, and to others that, so also did He in respect of the less, not setting these either before all. And this he did, building up thereby great abundance of harmony and love, that each one standing in need of the other might be brought close to his brother. This economy He established also in the arts, this also in the elements, this also in the plants, and in our members, and absolutely in all things.

(3.) [5.] Then he subjoins further the most powerful consolation, and sufficient to recover them and quiet their vexed souls. And what is this?

*Ver. 31. Covet earnestly, saith he, the best gifts, and yet shew I unto you a more excellent way.*

Now by saying this, he gently hinted that they were the causes of their own receiving the lesser gifts, and had it in their



power, if they would, to have received the greater. For when <sup>1 COR.</sup> he saith, *covet earnestly*, he demands from them all diligence, <sup>12. 31-</sup> and desire for spiritual things. And he said not, the greatest gifts, but *the best*, i. e. the more useful, those which would profit. And what he says is this: "continue to desire gifts; and I point out to you a way of gifts." For neither did he say, "a gift," but *a way*, that he might the more extol that which he intends to mention. As if he said, It is not one, or two, or three gifts that I point out to you, but one way which leadeth to all these: and not merely a way, but both *a more excellent way*, and one that is open in common to all. For not as the gifts are vouchsafed, to some these, to others those, but not all to all; so also in this case: but it is an universal gift. Wherefore also he invites all to it. *Covet earnestly*, saith he, *the best gifts; and yet shew I unto you a more excellent way*; meaning charity towards our neighbour.

Then intending to proceed to the discourse concerning it, and the encomium of this virtue, he first lowereth these by comparison with it, intimating that they are nothing without it; very considerably. For if he had at once discoursed of charity, and having said, *I shew unto you a way*, had added, "but this is charity," and had not conducted his discourse by way of comparison; some might possibly have scoffed at what was said, not understanding clearly the force of the thing spoken of, but still gaping after these. Wherefore he doth not at once unfold it, but first excites the hearer by the promise, and saith, *I shew unto you a more excellent way*, and so having led him to desire it, he doth not even thus straightway proceed upon it, but augmenting still further and extending their desire, he discourses first of these very things, and signifies, that without it they are nothing; reducing them to the greatest necessity of loving one another; seeing also, that from neglect of it sprang that which caused all their evils. So that in this respect also it might justly appear great, if the gifts not only brought them not together, but divided them even after union: but this, when many were so divided, is to reunite them by a virtue of its own, and make them one body. This however he doth not say at once, but what they chiefly longed for, that he sets down; as that the thing was a gift, and a way to all the gifts with excellency. So that even

HOMIL. if thou wilt not love thy brother on the score of duty, yet for  
XXXII. the sake of obtaining a better sign, and an abundant gift,  
make charity welcome.

[6.] And see whence he first begins ; from that which was marvellous in their eyes and great, the gift of tongues. And in bringing forward that gift, he mentions it not just in the degree they had it in, but far more. For he did not say, " if I speak with tongues," but,

Chap. xiii. Ver. 1. *If I speak with the tongues of men,—*

What is, *of men*? Of all nations in every part of the world. And neither was he content with this amplification, but he likewise uses another much greater, adding the words, *and of angels,—and have not charity, I am become as sounding brass, or a tinkling cymbal.*

Dost thou see to what point he first exalted the gift, and to what afterwards he lowered and cast it down? For neither did he simply say, " I am nothing," but, *I am become sounding brass*, a thing senseless and inanimate. But how *sounding brass*? Emitting a sound indeed, but at random and in vain, and for no good end. Since besides my profiting nothing, I am counted by most men as one giving impertinent trouble, an annoying and wearisome kind of person. Seest thou how one void of charity is like to things inanimate and senseless?

Now he here speaks of the *tongue of angels*, not investing angels with a body, but what he means is this: " should I even so speak, as angels are wont to discourse unto each other, without this I am nothing, nay rather a burden and an annoyance." Thus (to mention one other example) where he saith, *To Him every knee shall bow, of things in heaven,*

<sup>1</sup> Phil. 2. *and things on earth, and things under the earth*<sup>1</sup>, he doth  
10. not say these things as if he invested angels with knees and bones, far from it, but it is their intense adoration, which he intends to shadow out by the fashion amongst us: so also here he calls it *a tongue*, not meaning an instrument of flesh, but intending to shadow out their converse with each other by the manner which is known amongst us.

[7.] Then, in order that his discourse may be acceptable, he stops not at the gift of tongues, but proceeds also to the remaining gifts; and having depreciated all in the absence of Charity, he then depicts her image. And because he pre-

ferred to conduct his argument by amplification, he begins <sup>1 Cor. 13. 2.</sup> from the less and ascends to the greater. For whereas, when he indicated their order, he placed the gift of tongues last, this he now numbers first; by degrees, as I said, ascending to the greater gifts. Thus having spoken of tongues, he proceeds immediately to prophecy; and saith,

Ver. 2. *And though I have the gift of prophecy.*

And this gift again with an excellency. For as in that case he mentioned not tongues, but the tongues of all mankind, and as he proceeded, those of angels, and then signified that the gift was nothing without charity: so also here he mentions not prophecy alone, but the very highest prophecy: in that having said, *Though I have prophecy*, he added, *and understand all mysteries, and all knowledge*; expressing this gift also with intensity.

Then after this also he proceeds to the other gifts. And (4.) again, that he might not seem to weary them, naming each one of the gifts, he sets down the mother and fountain of all, and this again with an excellency, thus saying: *And though I have all faith*. Neither was he content with this, but even that which Christ spake of as greatest, this also he added, saying, *so that I could remove mountains, and have not charity, I am nothing*. And consider how again here also he lowers the dignity of the tongues. For whereas in regard of prophecy he signifies the great advantage arising from it, *the understanding mysteries, and having all knowledge*; and in regard of faith, no trifling work, even *the removing mountains*: in respect of tongues, on the other hand, having named the gift itself only, he quits it.

But do thou, I pray, consider this also, how in brief he comprehended all gifts, when he named prophecy and faith: for miracles are either in words or deeds. And how doth Christ say, that the least part of faith is the being able to remove a mountain? For as though He were speaking of something very small, did He express Himself when He said, *If ye have faith as a grain of mustard-seed, ye shall say to this mountain, Be thou removed, and it shall remove*; <sup>1 S. Mat. 17. 20.</sup> whereas Paul saith, that this is *all faith*. What then must one say? Since this were a great thing, the removing a mountain, therefore also he mentioned it, not as though *all*

HOMER. *faith* were only able to do this, but since this seemed to be great  
 XXXII. to the grosser sort because of the bulk of the outward mass,  
 from this also he extols his subject. And what he saith is this:

*Though I have all faith, and though I can remove mountains,  
 and have not charity, I am nothing.*

[8.] Ver. 3. *And though I give all my goods to feed the poor,  
 and though I give my body to be burned, and have not charity,  
 it profiteth me nothing.*

Wonderful amplification! For even these things too he  
 states with another addition: in that he said not, "if I give  
 to the poor the half of my goods," or "two or three parts,"  
 but *though I give all my goods*. And he said not, "give,"  
 but *distribute in morsels*<sup>1</sup>, so that to the expense may be  
 added the ministering also with all care.

*And though I give my body to be burned.* He said not,  
 "if I die," but this too with an excellency. For he names  
 the most terrible of all deaths, the being burnt alive, and  
 saith that even this without charity is no great thing.  
 Accordingly he subjoins, *it profiteth me nothing*.

But not even yet have I pointed out the whole of her ex-  
 cellency, until I bring forward the testimonies of Christ which  
 were spoken concerning almsgiving and death. What then  
 are His testimonies? To the rich man He saith, *If thou wilt  
 be perfect, sell thy goods, and give to the poor, and come*  
 follow Me<sup>2</sup>. And discoursing likewise of love to one's neigh-  
 bour, he saith, *Greater love hath no man than this, that a man*  
 lay down his life for his friends<sup>3</sup>. Whence it is evident, that  
 in reference to God also this is greatest of all. But "I  
 declare," saith Paul, "that even if we should lay down life  
 for God's sake, and not merely lay it down, but so as even to  
 be burned, (for this is the meaning of, *if I give my body to be  
 burned*,) we shall have no great advantage, if we love not our  
 neighbour." Well then, the saying that the gifts are of no  
 great profit without charity, is no marvel: since our gifts are  
 a secondary consideration to our way of life. At any rate,  
 many have displayed gifts, and yet on becoming vicious have  
 been punished: as those who *prophesied in His name, and  
 cast out many devils, and wrought many wonderful works;*  
 as Judas the traitor: while others, exhibiting, as believers,  
 a pure life, have needed nothing else in order to their salva-

<sup>1</sup> S. Mat.  
19. 21.

<sup>2</sup> S. John  
15. 13.



tion. Wherefore, that the gifts should, as I said, require this, <sup>1 Cor. 13. 3.</sup> is no marvel: but that an exact life even should avail nothing without it, this is what brings the intensity of expression strongly out, and causes great perplexity: especially too when Christ appears to adjudge His great rewards to both these, I mean to the giving up our possessions, and to the perils of martyrdom. For both to the rich man He saith, as I before observed, *If thou wilt be perfect, sell thy goods, and give to the poor, and come follow Me:* and discoursing with the disciples, of martyrdom He saith, *Whosoever shall lose his life for My sake, shall find it;* and, *Whosoever shall confess Me before men, him will I also confess before My Father which is in heaven.* For great indeed is the labour of this achievement, and well nigh surpassing nature itself, and this is known to such as have had these crowns vouchsafed to them; and known full well. For no language can set it before us: so noble a soul doth the deed belong to, and so exceedingly wonderful is it.

[9.] But nevertheless this so wonderful thing Paul said was (5.) of no great profit without charity, even though it have the giving up of one's goods joined with it. Wherefore then hath he thus spoken? This will I now endeavour to explain, first having enquired of this, How is it possible that one who gives all his goods to feed the poor can be wanting in charity? I grant, indeed, he that is ready to be burned, and hath the gifts, may perhaps possibly not have charity: but he who not only gives his goods, but even distributes them in morsels: how hath not he charity? What then are we to say? Either that he supposed an unreal case as real; which kind of thing he is ever wont to do, when he intends to set before us something in excess; as when writing to the Galatians he saith, *If we or an angel from heaven preach any other gospel unto you than that ye have received, let him be accursed*<sup>1</sup>. And yet neither was himself nor an angel<sup>Gal. 1, 8.</sup> about to do so; but to signify that he meant to carry the matter as far as possible, he set down even that which could never by any means happen. And again, when he writes to the Romans, and saith, *Neither angels, nor principalities, nor powers, shall be able to separate us from the love of God;* for neither was this about to be done by any angels: but here

HOMIL.  
XXXII. too he supposes a thing which was not; as indeed also in what comes next, saying, *nor any other creature*, whereas there is no other creature, for he had comprehended the whole creation, having spoken of all things both above and below. Nevertheless here also he mentions that which was not, by way of hypothesis, so as to shew his exceeding great desire. Now the same thing he doth here also, saying, *Though a man give all, and have not charity, it profiteth him nothing.*

Either then we may say this, or that his meaning is for those who give to be also joined closely to those who receive, and not merely to give without sympathy, but in pity and condescension, bowing down, and grieving with the needy. For therefore also hath almsgiving been enacted by God: since God might have nourished the poor as well without this, but that he might bind us together unto charity, and that we might be thoroughly fervent towards each other, he commanded them to be nourished by us. Therefore one saith in another place also; *a good word is better than a*

<sup>1</sup> Ecclus. 18. 16, 17.  
<sup>2</sup> S. Mat. 9. 30;  
Hos. 6. 6. *gift*<sup>1</sup>; and, *behold, a word is beyond a good gift*<sup>1</sup>. And He Himself saith, *I will have mercy, and not sacrifice*<sup>2</sup>. For since it is usual, both for men to love those who are benefited by them, and for those who receive benefits to be more kindly affected towards their benefactors; he made this law, constituting it a bond of friendship.

[10.] But the point proposed for enquiry above is, How, after Christ had said that both these belong to perfection, Paul affirms, that these without charity are imperfect? Not contradicting Him, God forbid: but harmonizing with Him, and that exactly. For so in the case of the rich man, He said not merely, *sell thy goods, and give to the poor*, but He added, *and come, follow Me*. Now not even the following Him proves any man a disciple of Christ so completely as the loving one another. For *by this shall all men know*, saith He, *that ye are My disciples, if ye have love one to another*<sup>3</sup>. And also when He saith, *Whosoever loseth his life for My sake, shall find it*<sup>4</sup>; and *whosoever shall confess Me before men, him will I also confess before My Father which is in heaven*: he means not this, that it is for any other motive than charity, but he declares the reward which is laid up for these labours. Since that along with martyrdom he requires also this, is

<sup>3</sup> S. John 13. 35.  
<sup>4</sup> S. Mat. 10. 39, and 35.

what He elsewhere strongly intimates, thus saying, *Ye shall indeed drink of My cup, and be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with*<sup>1</sup>; i. e. ye shall be martyrs, ye shall be slain for My sake; *but to sit on My right hand, and on My left*, (not as though any sit on the right hand and the left, but meaning the highest precedency and honour,) *is not mine to give*, saith He, *but to those for whom it is prepared*. Then signifying for whom it is prepared, He calls them and saith, *whosoever among you will be chief, let him be slave to you all*<sup>2</sup>; setting forth humility and charity. And the charity which He requires is intense; wherefore He stopped not even at this, but added, *even as the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give His life a ransom for many*; pointing out that we ought so love, as even to be slain for our beloved. For this above all is to love Him. Wherefore also He saith to Peter, *If thou lovest Me, feed My sheep*<sup>3</sup>.

1 Con. 13. 3.

1 S. Mat. 20. 23.

2 S. Mat. 20. 26.

3 S. John 21. 16.

[11.] And that ye may learn how great a work of virtue it is, let us sketch it out in word, since in deeds we see it no where appearing; and let us consider, if it were every where in abundance, how great benefits would ensue: how there were no need then of laws, or tribunals, or punishments, or avenging, or any other such thing: since if all loved, and were beloved, no man would injure another. Yea, murders, and strifes, and wars, and divisions, and rapines, and frauds, and all evils would be removed, and vice be unknown even in name. Miracles, however, would not have effected this; they rather puff up such as are not on their guard, unto vain-glory and wilfulness.

Again: what is indeed the marvellous part of charity; all the other good things have their evils yoked with them: as he that gives up his possessions is oftentimes puffed up on this account: the eloquent, is affected with a wild passion for glory; the humble-minded, on this very ground, not seldom thinks highly of himself in his conscience. But charity is free from every such mischief. For none could ever be lifted up against the person whom he loves. And do not, I pray, suppose one person only loving, but all alike; and then wilt thou see its virtue. Or rather, if thou wilt, first suppose one single person beloved, and one loving; loving, however, as it is meet to love. (6.)



HOMIL. Why, he will so live on earth as if it were heaven, every where  
 XXXII. enjoying a calm, and weaving for himself innumerable crowns. For both from envy, and wrath, and jealousy, and pride, and vain-glory, and evil concupiscence, and every profane love, and every distemper, such a man will keep his own soul pure. Yea, even as no one would do himself an injury, so neither would this man, his neighbours. And being such, he shall stand with Gabriel himself, even while he walks on the earth.

Such then is he that hath charity. But he that works miracles, and hath perfect knowledge, without this, though he raise ten thousand from the dead, will not be much profited, broken off as he is from all, and not enduring to mix himself up with any of his fellow-servants. For no other cause than this did Christ say that the sign of perfect love towards Him, is the loving one's neighbour. For *if thou lovest me*, saith  
 1 S. John he, *O Peter, more than these, feed my sheep*<sup>1</sup>. Dost thou see  
 21. 15. how hence also He again covertly intimates, in what case this is greater than martyrdom? For so, if any one had a beloved child, in whose behalf he would even give up his life, and some one were to love the father, but pay no regard whatever to the son, he would greatly incense the father, nor would he feel the love for himself because of the overlooking his son. Now if this ensue in the case of father and son, much more in the case of God and men: since surely God is more loving than any parents.

Wherefore, having said, *The first and great commandment is, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God*, he added, *and the second—*(He leaves it not in silence, but sets it down also)—*is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself*. And see how with nearly the same excellency He demands also this. For as concerning God, He saith, *with all thy heart*: so concerning thy neighbour, *as thyself*, which is tantamount to, *with all thy heart*.

Yea, and if this were duly observed, there would be neither slave nor free, neither ruler nor ruled, neither rich nor poor, neither small nor great; nor would any devil then ever have been known: I say not, Satan only, but whatever other such spirit there be, nay, rather were there a hundred, or ten thousand such, they would have no power, while charity existed. For sooner would grass endure the application of fire, than



the devil the flame of charity. She is stronger than any wall, she is firmer than any adamant; or if thou canst name any material stronger than this, the firmness of love transcends them all. Her, neither wealth nor poverty overcometh: nay rather there would be no poverty, no unbounded wealth, if there were love, but the good parts only from each estate. For from the one we should reap its abundance; from the other its freedom from care: and should neither have to undergo the anxieties of riches, nor the dread of poverty.

[12.] And why do I mention the advantages arising from it? Yea, rather consider how great a blessing it is of itself, to exercise love; what cheerfulness it produces, in how great grace it establishes the soul; a thing which above all is a choice quality of it. For the other parts of virtue have each their trouble yoked with them; as fasting, temperance, watching, have envy, concupiscence, and contempt. But love along with the gain hath great pleasure too, and no trouble, and like an industrious bee, gathering the sweets from every flower, deposits them in the soul of him who loveth. Though any one be a slave, it renders slavery sweeter than liberty. For he who loveth, rejoices not so much in commanding, as in being commanded, although to command is sweet: but love changes the nature of the things, and presents herself with all blessings in her hands, gentler than any mother, wealthier than any queen, and makes difficulties light and easy, making out virtue to be facile, but vice very bitter to us. As thus: to expend seems grievous, yet love makes it pleasant: to receive other men's goods, pleasant, but love suffers it not to appear pleasant, but frames our minds to avoid it as evil. Again, to speak evil, seems to be pleasant to all; but love while she makes this out to be bitter, causeth speaking well to be pleasant: for nothing is so sweet to us, as to be praising one whom we love. Again, anger hath a kind of pleasure; but in this case no longer, rather all its sinews are taken away. Though he that is beloved should grieve him who loves him, anger no where shews itself: but tears and exhortations, and supplications; so far is love from being exasperated: and should she behold one in error, she mourns and is in pain; yet even this pain itself brings pleasure. For the very tears and the grief of love, are sweeter than any

HOMIL.  
XXXII. mirth and joy. For instance: they that laugh are not so refreshed, as they that weep for their friends. And if thou doubt it, stop their tears; and they repine at it no otherwise than as persons intolerably ill-used. "But there is," saith one, "a profane pleasure in love." Avaunt and hold thy peace, whoever thou art. For nothing is so pure from such pleasure, as genuine love.

- (7.) For tell me not of this ordinary sort, the vulgar and low-minded, and a disease rather than love, but of this which Paul seeks after, which considers the profit of them that are loved; and thou shalt see that no fathers are so affectionate as persons of this stamp. And even as they who love money cannot endure to spend money, but would with more pleasure be in straits, than see their wealth diminishing: so too, he that is kindly affected towards any one, would choose to suffer ten thousand evils, than see his beloved one injured.

[13.] "How then," saith one, "did the Egyptian woman who loved Joseph, wish to injure him?" Because she loved with this diabolical love. Joseph however not with this, but with that which Paul requires. Consider then how great a love his words were tokens of, and the action which she was speaking of. "Insult me, and make me an adulteress, and wrong my husband, and overthrow all my house, and cast thyself out from thy confidence towards God:" which were expressions of one who so far from loving him, did not even love herself. But because he truly loved, he sought to avert her from all these. And to convince you that it was in anxiety for her, learn the nature of it from his advice. For he not only thrust her away, but also introduced an exhortation capable of quenching every flame: namely, *if on my account, my master, saith he, knoweth not any thing which is in his house.* He at once reminds her of her husband, that he might put her to shame. And he said not, "thy husband," but *my master*, which was more apt to restrain her, and induce her to consider who she was, and of whom she was enamoured,—a mistress, of a slave. "For if he be lord, then art thou mistress. Be ashamed then of familiarity with a servant, and consider whose wife thou art, and with whom thou wouldest be connected, and towards whom thou art

becoming thankless and inconsiderate, and that I repay him  
greater good-will." And see how he extols his benefits. <sup>1 Cor. 12. 20.</sup>  
For since that barbarous and abandoned woman could enter-  
tain no lofty sentiment, he shames her from human consider-  
ations, saying, *He knoweth nothing through me*, i. e. "he is a  
great benefactor to me, and I cannot wound my patron in the  
tenderest part. He hath made me a second lord of his house,  
and no one <sup>1</sup> hath been kept back from me, but thee." Here <sup>LXX.</sup>  
he endeavours to raise her mind, that so at any rate he might <sup>add.</sup>  
persuade her to be ashamed, and might signify the greatness  
of her honour. Nor did he stop even here, but likewise  
added a name sufficient to restrain her, saying, "*Because thou  
art his wife; and how shall I do this wickedness?* But what  
sayest thou? That thy husband is not present, nor knoweth  
that he is wronged? But God will behold it." She however  
profited nothing by his advice, but still sought to attract him.  
For desiring to satiate her own frenzy, not through love of  
Joseph, she did these things; and this is evident from what  
she did afterwards. As that she institutes a trial, and brings  
in an accusation, and bears false witness, and exposes to a  
wild beast him that had done no wrong, and casts him into  
prison; or rather, for her part, she even slew him, in such a  
manner did she arm the judge against him. What then?  
Was then Joseph too such as she was? Nay, altogether the  
contrary, for he neither contradicted, nor accused the woman.  
"Yes," it may be said: "for he would have been dis-  
believed." And yet, he was greatly beloved; and this is  
evident, not only from the beginning, but also from the end.  
For had not his barbarian master loved him greatly, he would  
even have slain him in his silence, making no defence: being as  
he was an Egyptian, and a ruler, and wronged in his marriage-  
bed as he supposed, and by a servant, and a servant to whom  
he had been so great a benefactor. But all these things gave  
way to his regard for him, and the grace which God poured  
down upon him. And together with this grace and love he had  
also other no small proofs, had he been minded to justify  
himself; the garments themselves. For if it were she to  
whom violence was done, her own vest should have been  
torn, her face lacerated, instead of her retaining his garments.  
But *he heard*, saith she, *that I lifted up my voice, and*

HOMIL.  
XXXII. *left his garments, and went out.* And wherefore then didst thou take them from him? since unto one suffering violence what was the one thing desirable? To be rid of the intruder.

But not from hence alone, but also from the subsequent events, shall I be able to point out his good-will and his love. Yea even when he fell into a necessity of mentioning the cause of his imprisonment, and remaining there, he did not even then declare the whole course of the story. But what saith he? *I too have done nothing: but indeed I was stolen out of the land of the Hebrews;* and he no where mentioned the adulteress, nor doth he plume himself on the matter, which would have been any one's feeling, if not for vain-glory, yet so as not to appear to have been cast into that cell for an evil cause. For if men in the act of doing wrong by no means abstain even so from blaming the same things, although to do so brings reproach; of what admiration is not he worthy, because, pure as he was, he did not mention the woman's passion, nor make a show of her sin, nor when he ascended the throne, and became ruler of all Egypt, remember the wrong done by the woman, nor exact any punishment?

- (8.) Seest thou how he cared for her, but her's was not love but madness? For it was not Joseph that she loved, but she sought to fulfil her own lust. And the very words too, if one would examine them accurately, were accompanied with wrath and great blood-thirstiness. For what saith she? *Thou hast brought in a Hebrew servant to mock us:* upbraiding her husband for the kindness; and she exhibited the garments, having become herself more savage than any wild beast: but not so he. And why speak I of his good-will to her, when he was such, we know, towards his brethren who would slay him; and never said one harsh thing of them, either within doors or without?

[14.] Therefore Paul saith, that the love which we are speaking of is the mother of all good things, and prefers it to miracles and all other gifts. For as where there are vests and sandals of gold, we require also some other garment whereby to distinguish the king: but if we see the purple and the diadem, we require not to see any other sign of his royalty: just so here likewise, when the diadem of love is upon our head, it is



enough to point out the genuine disciple of Christ, not to <sup>1</sup> Cor. ourselves only, but also to the unbelievers. For *by this*, <sup>12. 20.</sup> saith He, *shall all men know that ye are my disciples, if ye have love one to another*<sup>1</sup>. So that this sign is greater <sup>1</sup> S John surely than all signs, in that the disciple is recognised by it. <sup>13. 35.</sup> For though any should work ten thousand signs, but be at strife one with another, they will be a scorn to the unbelievers. Just as if they do no sign, but love one another exactly, they will continue both revered and inviolable by all men. Since Paul himself we admire on this account, not for the dead whom he raised, nor for the lepers whom he cleansed, but because he said, *who is weak, and I am not weak? who is offended, and I burn not*<sup>2</sup>? For shouldst thou have ten <sup>2</sup> 2 Cor. thousand miracles to compare with this, thou wilt have <sup>11. 29.</sup> nothing equal to it to say. Since Paul also himself said, that a great reward was laid up for him, not because he wrought miracles, but because *to the weak he became as weak. For what is my reward?* saith he. *That, when I preach the Gospel, I may make the Gospel without charge*<sup>3</sup>. And when <sup>3</sup> 1 Cor. he puts himself before the Apostles, he saith not, "I have <sup>9. 18.</sup> wrought miracles more abundant than they," but, *I have laboured more abundantly than they*<sup>4</sup>. And even by famine <sup>4</sup> 1 Cor. was he willing to perish for the salvation of the disciples. <sup>15. 10.</sup> *For it were better for me to die*, saith he, *than that any man should make my glorying void*<sup>5</sup>: not because he was glorying, <sup>5</sup> 1 Cor. but that he might not seem to reproach them. For he no <sup>9. 15.</sup> where is wont to glory in his own achievements, when the season doth not call to it; but even if he be compelled so to do, he calleth himself *a fool*. But if he ever glory, it is *in infirmities*, in wrongs, in greatly sympathizing with those who are injured: even as here also he saith, *who is weak, and I am not weak?* These words are greater even than perils. Wherefore also he sets them last, amplifying his discourse.

Of what then must we be worthy compared with him, who neither condemn wealth for our own sake, nor give up the superfluities of our goods? But not so Paul; rather both soul and body did he use to give up, that they who stoned and beat him with rods, might obtain the kingdom. "For thus," saith he, "hath Christ taught me to love;" who left behind Him the new commandment concerning love, which also Himself

**HOMIL.** fulfilled in deed. For being Lord of all, and of that  
**XXXII.** Blessed Nature; from men, whom He created out of nothing, and on whom He had bestowed innumerable benefits, from these, insulting and spitting on Him, He turned not away, but even became man for their sakes, and conversed with harlots and publicans, and healed the demoniacs, and promised heaven. And after all these things they apprehended and beat Him with rods, bound, scourged, mocked, and at last crucified Him. And not even so did He turn away, but even when He was on high upon the cross, He saith, *Father, forgive them their sin.* But the thief who before this reviled Him, He translated into very paradise; and made the persecutor Paul, an Apostle; and gave up His own disciples, who were His intimates and wholly devoted to Him, unto death for the Jews' sake who crucified Him.

Recollecting therefore in our minds all these things, both those of God, and of men, let us emulate these high deeds, and possess ourselves of that which is above all gifts, charity, that we may obtain both the present and the future blessings: the which may we all obtain, through the grace and mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ, with Whom to the Father, with the Holy Ghost, be glory, power, honour, now, and ever, and world without end. Amen.

## HOMILY XXXIII.

---

1 Cor. xiii. 4.

*Charity suffereth long, and is kind; charity envieth not;  
charity vaunteth not itself, is not puffed up.*

THUS, whereas he had shewed, that both faith, and knowledge, and prophecy, and tongues, and gifts, and healing, and a perfect life, and martyrdom, if love be absent, are no great advantage; of necessity he next makes an outline of its matchless beauty, adorning its image with the parts of virtue, as with a sort of colours, and putting together all its members with exactness. But do not thou hastily pass by, beloved, the things spoken, but examine each one of them with much care, that thou mayest know both the treasure which is in the thing, and the art of the painter. Consider, for example, from what point he at once began, and what he set first, as the cause of all its excellencies. And what is this? Long-suffering. This is the root of all self-denial. Wherefore also a certain wise man said, *A man that is long-suffering*<sup>1</sup> *He that is slow to*  
*is abundant in understanding: but he that is hasty of spirit*<sup>2</sup> *wrath,*  
*is mightily foolish*<sup>3</sup>.  
Engl.  
Vers.

And comparing it too with a strong city, he said that it is more secure than that. For it is both an invincible weapon,<sup>31.</sup> and a sort of impregnable tower, easily beating off all annoy-<sup>exalteth</sup>ances. And as a spark falling into the deep doth it no injury,<sup>Engl.</sup> but is itself easily quenched: so upon a long-suffering soul whatever unexpected thing falls, this indeed speedily vanishes,<sup>Vers.</sup> but the soul it disturbs not: for of a truth there is nothing so impenetrable as long-suffering. You may talk of armies, money, horses, walls, arms, or any thing else whatsoever; you will name nothing like long-suffering. For he that is clad with those, oftentimes, being overcome by anger, is upset, like a worthless child, and fills all with confusion and

**HOMIL.** tempest: but this man, settled as it were in a harbour, enjoys  
**XXXIII.** a profound calm. Though thou surround him with loss, thou hast not moved the rock; though thou bring insult upon him, thou hast not shaken the tower; and though thou bruise him with stripes, thou hast not wounded the adamant.

Yea, and therefore is he called long-suffering, because he hath a kind of long and great soul. For that which is long, is also called great. But this excellence is born of love, both to them who possess and to them who enjoy it contributing no small advantage. For tell me not of those abandoned wretches, who, doing evil, and suffering none, become worse: since here, not from his long-suffering, but from those who abuse it, this result arises. Tell me not therefore of these, but of those gentler persons, who gain great benefit therefrom. For when, having done ill, they suffer none, admiring the meekness of the sufferer, they reap thereby a very great lesson of self-command.

But Paul doth not stop here, but adds also the other high achievements of charity, saying, *is kind*. For since there are some, who practise their long-suffering not to their own self-denial, but to the punishment of those who have provoked them, to make them burst asunder; he saith that neither hath charity this defect. Wherefore also he added, *is kind*. For not at all with a view to light up the fire, in those who are inflamed by anger, do they deal more  
<sup>1</sup> *And* <sup>repro.</sup> *mannerly* with them, but in order to appease and extinguish it: and not only by enduring nobly, but also by soothing and comforting, do they cure the sore, and heal the wound of passion.

*Envieth not*. For it is possible for one to be both long-suffering and envious, and thereby that excellency is spoiled. But love avoids this also.

*Vaunteth not itself*; i. e. is not rash\*. For it renders him who loves both considerate, and grave, and steady in his movements. In truth, one mark of those who love unlawfully is a defect in this point. Whereas he to whom this love is

\* *ὅτι ἀπειρημένος*. Theod. in loc. gives the word the same turn. "She inquires not into matters which concern her not, (for that is *ὅτι ἀπειρημένος*,) she feels not about for the measures

of the Divine Substance, nor asks questions in His dispensations, as some use to do. He that loveth, cannot endure to do any thing rash."



known, is of all men the most entirely freed from these evils. <sup>1 COR.</sup>  
For when there is no anger within, both rashness and insolence <sup>13. 4.</sup>  
are clean taken away. Charity, like some excellent husband-  
man, taking her seat inwardly in the soul, and not suffering  
any of these thorns to spring up.

*Is not puffed up.* For so we see many who think highly  
of themselves on the score of these very excellencies; for  
example, on not being envious, nor grudging, nor mean-  
spirited, nor rash: these evils being incidental not to wealth  
and poverty only, but even to things naturally good. But  
love perfectly purges out all. And consider: He that is long-  
suffering is not of course also kind. But if he be not kind,  
the thing becomes a vice, and he is in danger of falling into  
malice. Therefore she supplies a medicine, I mean kindness,  
and preserves the virtue pure. Again, the kind person often  
becomes over-complaisant; but this also she corrects. For  
“love, saith he, *vaunteth not itself*, *is not puffed up*: the  
kind and long-suffering is often ostentatious; but she takes  
away this vice also.”

And see how he adorns her not only from what she hath, (2.)  
but also from what she hath not. For he saith that she both  
brings in virtue, and extirpates vice, nay rather she suffers it  
not to spring up at all<sup>1</sup>. Thus he said not, “She envieth,<sup>1</sup> <sup>ἐν-  
αχθῶν,</sup>  
indeed, but overcometh envy;” nor, “is arrogant, but chas-<sup>2</sup> <sup>ἀρετῶν,  
Saville.</sup>  
tiseth that passion;” but, *envieth not, vaunteth not itself, is not* <sup>ἐν-  
αχθῶν,</sup>  
*puffed up*; which truly is most to be admired, that even with-<sup>3</sup> <sup>ἐν-  
Bened.</sup>  
out toil she accomplishes her good things, and without war  
and battle-array her trophy is set up: she not permitting him  
that possesseth her to toil, and so to attain the crown, but  
without labour conveying to him her prize. For where there  
is not passion to contend against sober reason, what labour  
can there be?

[2.] *Doth not behave herself unseemly*<sup>b</sup>. “Nay, why,” saith  
he, “do I say, she *is not puffed up*, when she is so far from  
that feeling, that in suffering the very worst for Him whom  
she loves, she doth not even count the thing an unseemliness?”  
Again, he did not say, “she suffereth unseemliness, but

<sup>b</sup> Or, *doth not think herself treated unseemly*. Theod. in loc. “There is no mean or lowly thing which for the brethren’s sake she refuses to do, under the notion that to do so would be an unseemly thing.”

king's son, even Jonathan; the other a fugitive and a wanderer, <sup>1</sup> I mean, David. But not even thus was he ashamed of his friendship. For love doth not behave itself unseemly. <sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. 13. 4. Yea, this is its wonderful quality, that not only it suffers not the injured to grieve and feel galled, but even disposes him to rejoice. Accordingly, he too, of whom we are speaking, after all these things, just as though he had a crown put on him, went away and fell on David's neck. For love knows not what sort of thing shame may be. Therefore it glories in those things, for which another hides his face. Since the shame is, not to know how to love; not, when thou lovest, to peril thyself, and endure all for thy beloved ones.

But when I say, "all," do not suppose that I mean things injurious also; for example, assisting a youth in a love affair, or whatsoever hurtful thing any one may beseech another to do for him. For such a person doth not love, and this I shewed you lately from the Egyptian woman: since in truth he only is the lover, who seeks what is profitable to the beloved: so that if any pursue not this, even what is right and good, though he make ten thousand professions of love, he is more hostile than any enemies.

So also Rebecca aforetime, because she exceedingly clung <sup>1</sup> *ἀκριβέ- λογαυμή- νου* to her son, both perpetrated a theft, and was not ashamed of detection, neither was she afraid, though the risk was no <sup>2</sup> "made some minute objection." common one; but even when her son carefully debated <sup>1</sup> the matter with her, *upon me be thy curse, my son*, she said. Dost thou see even in a woman the soul of an Apostle? (3.)

\* This view of Rebecca's conduct is generally sanctioned by the Fathers: so St. Augustine: "That which Jacob did by direction of his mother so as to appear to deceive his father, if you consider it diligently and faithfully, *non est mendacium sed mysterium*. And if we term that sort of thing a lie, by the same rule we must also account as lies all parables and figures whatsoever." *contr. Mendac. ad Consentium*, c. 24. St. Ambrose, (*de Jacob et vita beata*, ii 6.) "In the mind of that pious mother the mystery overweighed the tie of affection. She was not so much preferring Jacob to his brother, as offering him to the Lord, who, she knew, had power to preserve the gift presented unto Him." This seems to

mean, that in consecrating Jacob to be the first-born, she knowingly separated him from herself, and so made a greater sacrifice. S. Chrys. himself says, "Rebecca did this not of her own mind, but in obedience to the divine oracle." (on Gen. Hom. 53. l. 414.) And he proceeds to point out God's hand in certain minute details of the transaction. It appears from St. Jerome, (l. 169.) that Hippolytus, Irenæus' disciple, early in the third century, took the same view. St. Gregory Nazianzen seems to be the only writer who has left a contrary judgment on record: saying, "he pursued a noble object by ignoble means." The general result of the reflections of the Fathers on the subject seems to be, that as where we have God's *express*

HOMIL. XXXIII.  
 1 Rom.  
 9. 3. how, even as Paul chose, (if one may compare a small thing with a great,) to be anathema for the Jews' sake<sup>1</sup>, so also she, that her son might be blessed, chose to be no less than accursed. And the good things she gave up to him, for she was not, it seems, to be blessed with him, but the evils she was prepared to endure herself alone: nevertheless she rejoiced, and hastened, and this where so great a danger lay before her, and she was grieved at the delay of the business: having besides a fear, lest Esau might anticipate them, and render her wisdom vain. Wherefore also she cuts short the conversation, and urges on the young man, and just permitting him to answer what had been said, states a reason sufficient to persuade him. For she said not, "thou sayest these things without reason, and in vain thou fearest, thy father having grown old, and being deprived of clearness of sight:" but what? "*upon me be thy curse, my son.* Only do thou not mar the plot, nor lose the object of our chace, nor give up the treasure."

And this very Jacob, served he not for wages with his kinsman twice seven years? Was he not together with the bondage subject to mockery in respect of that trick? What then? Did he feel of the mockery? Did he count it behaving himself unseemly, that being a freeman, and free born, and well brought up, he endured slaves' treatment among his own kinsmen: a thing which is wont to be most vexing, when one receives opprobrious treatment from one's friends? In no wise. And the cause was, his love, which made the time, though long, appear short. *For they were*, saith he, *in his sight as a few days.* So far was he from being galled and blushing for this his bondage. Justly then said the blessed Paul, *Love doth not behave itself unseemly.*

[3.] Ver. 5. *Seeketh not her own, is not easily provoked.*

Thus having said, *doth not behave itself unseemly*, he sheweth also the temper of mind, on account of which she doth not behave herself unseemly. And what is that temper? That she *seeketh not her own.* For the beloved she esteems

command or approbation, we are sure of the rectitude of what would otherwise be wrong, so there may be circumstances rendering such command or approbation more or less *probable*, which ought at

least to stay us from censure: and that marked providential interference, and mysterious allusion, throughout, are to be considered as such circumstances.



to be all, and then only *behaveth herself unseemly*, when she cannot free him from such unseemliness; so that if it be possible by her own unseemliness to benefit her beloved, she doth not so much as count the thing unseemliness; for the other party thereafter is yourself, when you love<sup>1</sup>: since this is friendship, that the lover and the beloved should no longer be two persons divided, but in a manner one single person; a thing which no how takes place, except from love. Seek not therefore thine own, that thou mayest find thine own. For he that seeks his own, finds not his own. Wherefore also Paul said, *Let no man seek his own, but every man another's*<sup>2</sup>. For your own profit lies in the profit of your neighbour, and his in yours. As therefore one that had his own gold buried in the house of his neighbour, should he refuse to go and there seek and dig it up, will never see it; so likewise here, he that will not seek his own profit in the advantage of his neighbour, will not attain unto the crowns due to this: God Himself having therefore so disposed of it, in order that we should be mutually bound together: and even as one awakening a slumbering child to follow his brother, when he is of himself unwilling, places in the brother's hand that which he desires and longs for, that through desire of obtaining it he may pursue after him that holds it, and accordingly so it takes place: thus also here, each man's own profit hath he given to his neighbour, that hence we may run after one another, and not be torn asunder.

And if thou wilt, see this also in our case who address you. For my profit depends on thee, and thy advantage on me. Thus, on the one hand it profits thee to be taught the things that please God, but with this have I been entrusted, that thou mightest receive it from me, and therefore mightest be compelled to run unto me; and on the other hand it profits me, that thou shouldest be made better: for the reward which I shall receive for this will be great; but this again lieth in thee; and therefore am I compelled to follow after thee, that thou mayest be better, and that I may receive my profit from thee. Wherefore also Paul saith, *For what is my hope? are not even ye? And again, My hope, and my joy, and the crown of my rejoicing*<sup>3</sup>. So that the joy of Paul

<sup>1</sup> 1 Cor.  
13. 5.

<sup>1</sup> *ἡ ἀγάπη*  
*γὰρ αὐ-*  
*τοῦ ἐστίν*  
*ἡ ἀγάπη*

<sup>2</sup> 1 Cor.  
10. 24.

<sup>3</sup> 1 Thess.  
2. 19.



HOMIL. was the disciples, and his joy they had. Therefore he even  
XXXIII. wept, when he saw them perishing.

Again, their profit depended on Paul: wherefore he said,  
1 Acts For the hope of Israel I am bound with this chain<sup>1</sup>. And  
28. 20. again, *These things I endure for the elect's sakes, that they*  
2 2 Tim. *may obtain eternal life*<sup>2</sup>. And this one may see in worldly  
9. 10. things. *For the wife, saith he, hath not power of her own*  
*body, nor yet the husband; but the wife of the husband's,*  
3 1 Cor. *and the husband of the wife's*<sup>3</sup>. So likewise we, when we  
7. 4. wish to bind any together, do this. We leave neither of them  
in his own power, but extending a chain between them, we  
cause the one to be holden of the other, and the other of the one.

Wilt thou also see this in the case of governors? He that  
judges sits not in judgment for himself, but seeking the  
profit of his neighbour. The governed, on the other hand,  
seek the profit of the governor by their attendance, by their  
ministry, by all the other things. Soldiers take up their  
stations for us, for on our account they peril themselves.  
We for them are in straits; for from us are their supplies.

(4.) But if thou sayest, "each one doth this seeking his own,"  
this also say I, but I add, that by the good of another one's  
own is won. Thus both the soldier, unless he fight for them  
that support him, hath none that ministers to him for this  
end: and this same on the other hand, unless he nourish the  
soldier, hath none to arm himself in his behalf.

[4.] Seest thou charity, how it is every where extended, and  
manages all things? But be not weary, until thou have  
thoroughly acquainted thyself with this golden chain. For  
having said, *seeketh not her own*, he mentions again the good  
things produced by this. And what are these?

*Is not easily provoked, thinketh no evil.* See charity again  
not only subduing vice, but not even suffering her to take any  
ground at all. For he said not, "though provoked, she over-  
comes," but, *is not even provoked*. And he said not, "worketh  
no evil," but, "not even *thinketh*:" i.e. so far from contriving  
any evil, she doth not even suspect it of the beloved. How  
then could she work any, or how be provoked? who doth not  
even endure to admit an evil surmise; with whom is the  
fountain of all affection.

Ver. 6. *Rejoiceth not in iniquity*: i. e. doth not feel <sup>1 Cor. 13. 6.</sup> pleasure over those that suffer ill; and not this only, but also, what is much greater, *rejoiceth in the truth*. "She feels pleasure," saith he, "with them that are well spoken of," as Paul saith, *Rejoice with them that do rejoice, and weep with them that weep*<sup>1</sup>.

Hence, she *envieth not*, hence she *is not puffed up*: since in fact she accounts the good things<sup>d</sup> of others her own.

Seest thou how by degrees charity makes her nursing an angel? For when he is void of anger, and pure from envy, and free from every tyrannical passion, consider that even from the nature of man he is delivered from henceforth, and hath arrived in a port, at the very serenity of the angels.

Nevertheless he is not content with these, but he hath something even more than these to say: according to his plan of stating the stronger points later. Wherefore he saith, *beareth all things*. From her long-suffering, from her goodness; whether they be insults, or stripes, or death, or whatsoever else. And this again one may perceive from the case of blessed David. For what could be more intolerable than to see a son rising up against him, and aiming at usurpation, and thirsting for a father's blood? Yet this did he, that blessed one, endure, nor even so could he bear to throw out one bitter expression against the parricide; but even when he left all the rest to his captains, gave a strong injunction respecting his safety. For strong was the foundation of his love. Wherefore also it *beareth all things*.

Now its power the Apostle here intimates, but its goodness, by what follows. For, *it hopeth all things*, saith he, *believeth all things, endureth all things*. What is, *hopeth all things*? "It doth not despair," saith he, "of any good thing in the beloved, but even though he be worthless, it continues to correct, to provide, to care for him."

*Believeth all things*. "For it doth not merely hope," saith he, "but also believeth from its great affection." And even if these good things should not turn out according to its hope, but the other should prove yet more intolerable, it bears even these. For, saith he, it *endureth all things*.

[5.] Ver. 8. *Charity never faileth*.

<sup>d</sup> Fronto Ducemus reads *sand*.

HOMIL.  
XXXIII.

Seest thou when he put the crown on the arch, and what of all things is peculiar to this gift? For what is, *faileth not*? it is not severed, is not dissolved by endurance. For it puts up with every thing: since happen what will, he that loves never can hate. This then is the greatest of its excellencies.

Such a person was Paul. Wherefore also he said, *If by any means I may provoke to emulation them which are my flesh*<sup>1</sup>; and he continued hoping. And to Timothy he gave a charge, saying, *And the servant of the Lord must not strive, but be gentle unto all men, . . . in meekness instructing those that oppose themselves, if God peradventure will give them the knowledge of the truth*<sup>2</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> Rom. 11. 14.  
<sup>2</sup> 2 Tim. 2. 24, 26.  
*pará-  
taxis al-  
om.*  
“What then,” saith one, “if they be enemies and heathens, must not one hate them?” One must hate, not them, but their doctrine; not the man, but the wicked conduct, the corrupt mind. For the man is God’s work, but the deceit is the devil’s work. Do thou not therefore confound the things of God, and the things of the devil. Since the Jews were both blasphemers, and persecutors, and injurious, and spake ten thousand evil things of Christ. Did Paul then hate them, he who of all men most loved Christ? In no wise, but he both loved them, and did every thing for their sakes: and at one time he saith, *My heart’s desire and prayer to God for them is, that they may be saved*<sup>3</sup>; and at another, *I could wish that myself were accursed from Christ for their sakes*. Thus also Ezekiel seeing them slain saith, *Alas, O Lord, dost thou blot out the remnant of Israel*<sup>4</sup>? And Moses, *If thou wilt forgive their sin, forgive*<sup>5</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> Rom. 10. 1;  
9. 3.  
<sup>4</sup> Ezek. 9. 8.  
<sup>5</sup> Exod. 32. 32.  
Why then saith David, *Do not I hate them, O Lord, that hate thee, and against thy enemies did I not pine away*?  
<sup>6</sup> Ps. 139. *I hated them with perfect hatred*<sup>6</sup>?

<sup>7</sup> Psalm 120. 5;  
137. 1.  
Now, in the first place, not all things spoken in the Psalms by David, are spoken in the person of David. For it is he himself who saith, *I have dwelt in the tents of Kedar*<sup>7</sup>; and, *by the waters of Babylon, there we sat down, and wept*: yet, he neither saw Babylon, nor the tents of Kedar.

But besides this, we require now a completer self-command. Wherefore also when the disciples besought that fire might come down, even as in the case of Elias, *Ye know not*, saith Christ, *what manner of spirit ye are of*<sup>8</sup>. For at that time

<sup>8</sup> Luke 9. 55.



not the ungodliness only, but also the ungodly themselves, <sup>1 Cor. 13. 9.</sup> they were commanded to hate, in order that their friendship might not prove an occasion of transgression unto them. Therefore he severed their connexions, both by blood and marriage, and on every side he fenced them off.

But now because he hath brought us to a more entire self-<sup>(5.)</sup> command, and set us on high above that mischief, he bids us rather admit and soothe them. For we get no harm from them, but they get good by us. What then doth he say? we must not hate, but pity. Since if thou shalt hate, how wilt thou easily convert him that is in error? how wilt thou pray for the unbeliever? for that one ought to pray, hear what Paul saith: *I exhort therefore, that, first of all, supplications, prayers, intercessions, and giving of thanks be made for all men*<sup>1</sup>. But that all were not then believers, is, I suppose, <sup>1 1 Tim. 2. 1.</sup> evident unto every one. And again, *for kings, and all that are in authority*. But that these were ungodly and transgressors, this also is equally manifest. Further, mentioning also the reason for the prayer, he adds, *for this is good and acceptable in the sight of God our Saviour; who will have all men to be saved, and to come unto the knowledge of the truth*. Therefore, if he find a Gentile wife consorting with a believer, he dissolves not the marriage. Yet what is more closely joined than a man to his wife? *For they two shall be one flesh*<sup>2</sup>, and <sup>2 Gen. 2. 24.</sup> great in that instance is the charm, and ardent the desire. But if we are to hate ungodly and lawless men, we shall go on to hate also sinners; and thus in regular process thou wilt be broken off from the most even of thy brethren, or rather from all: for there is not one, no, not one, without sin. For if it be our duty to hate the enemies of God, one must not hate the ungodly only, but also sinners: and thus we shall be worse than wild beasts, estranged from all, and puffed up with pride; even as that Pharisee. But not thus did Paul command us, but how? *Warn the unruly, comfort the feeble-minded, support the weak, be patient toward all men*<sup>3</sup>. <sup>3 1 Thes. 5. 14.</sup>

[6.] What then doth he mean, when he saith, *If any obey not our word by this epistle, mark that man, and keep no company with him*<sup>4</sup>? In the first place, he saith this of brethren, <sup>4 2 Thes. 3. 14.</sup> however not even so without limitation, but this too with gentleness. For do not thou cut off what follows, but sub-



HOMIL.  
XXXIII.

join also the next clause: how, having said, *keep no company*, he added, *yet count him not as an enemy, but admonish him as a brother*. Seest thou how he bade us hate the deed that is evil, and not the man? For indeed it is the work of the devil to tear us asunder from one another, and he hath ever used great diligence to take away love, that he may cut off the way of correction, and may retain him in error, and thee in enmity, and thus block up the way of his salvation. For when both the physician hates the sick man and flies from him, and the sick man turns away from the physician, when will the distempered person be restored, seeing that neither the one will call in the other's aid, nor will the other go to him?

But wherefore, tell me, dost thou at all turn away from him and avoid him? Because he is ungodly? Truly for this cause oughtest thou to welcome and attend him, that thou mayest raise him up in his sickness. But if he be incurably sick, still thou hast been bidden to do thy part. Since Judas also was incurably diseased, yet God left not off attending upon him. Wherefore, neither do thou grow weary. For even if after much labour thou fail to deliver him from his ungodliness, yet shalt thou receive the deliverer's reward, and wilt cause him to wonder at thy gentleness, and so all this praise will pass on to God. For though thou shouldest work wonders, and raise the dead, and whatsoever work thou doest, the Heathen will never wonder at thee so much, as when they see thee displaying a meek, gentle, mild disposition. And this is no small achievement: since many will even be entirely delivered from their evil way; there being nothing that hath such power to allure men as love. For in respect of the former they will rather be jealous of thee, I mean the signs and wonders; but for this they will both admire and love thee: and if they love, they will also lay hold of the truth in due course. If however he become not all at once a believer, wonder not, nor hurry on, neither do thou require all things at once, but suffer him for the present to praise, and love, and unto this in due course he will come.

[7.] And that thou mayest clearly know how great a thing this is, hear how even Paul, going before an unbelieving judge, made his defence. *I think myself happy*, saith he, *having to answer for myself before thee*<sup>1</sup>. And these

<sup>1</sup> Acts  
26. 2.

things he said, not to flatter him, far from it; but wishing to gain him by his gentleness. And he did in part gain him, and he that was till then considered to be condemned took captive his judge, and the victory is confessed by the person himself who was made captive, with a loud voice in the presence of all, saying, *Almost thou persuadest me to be a Christian*<sup>1</sup>. What then saith Paul? He spreads his net the wider, and saith, *I would to God that not only thou, but also all present were that which I am, except these bonds*. What sayest thou, O Paul? *except these bonds?* And what confidence remains for thee, if thou art ashamed of these things, and fliest from them, and this before so great a multitude? Dost thou not every where in thy Epistles boast of this matter, and call thyself a prisoner? Dost thou not every where carry about this chain in our sight as a diadem? What then hath happened now, that thou deprecatest these bonds? "I deprecate them not," saith he, "nor am I ashamed of them, but I condescend to their weakness. For they are not yet able to receive my glorying; and I have learned from my Lord not to put a piece of a new cloth upon an old garment"<sup>2</sup>: therefore did I thus speak. For in fact, unto this time are they ill-affected to our doctrine, and abhor the cross. If therefore I should add also bonds, their hatred becometh greater; I removed these, therefore, that the other might be made acceptable. So it is, that to them it seems disgraceful to be bound, because they have not as yet tasted of the Glory which is with us. One must therefore condescend: and when they shall have learned self-denial, then will they know the beauty also of this iron, and the lustre which comes of these bonds." Furthermore, discoursing with others, he even calls the thing a free gift, saying, *It is given to us by God, not only to believe on Him, but also to suffer for His sake*<sup>3</sup>. But for the time then present, it was a great thing for the hearers not to be ashamed of the cross: for which cause he goes on gradually. Thus, neither doth any one introducing a person to a palace, before that he beholds the vestibule, compel him, yet standing without, to survey what is within: since in that way it will not even seem admirable, unless one enter in, and so acquaint one's self with all.

So then let us also deal with the heathen sort: with con-

<sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. 13. 9.

<sup>2</sup> Acts 26. 28. (6.)

<sup>3</sup> S. Mat. 9. 16.

<sup>4</sup> Phil. 1. 29.

HOMIL. descension, with love. For love is a great teacher, and able  
XXXIII. both to withdraw men from error, and to reform the character,  
and to lead them by the hand unto self-denial, and out of  
stones to make men.

[8.] And if thou wouldest learn her power, bring me a man timid and fearful of every sound, and trembling at shadows; or passionate, and harsh, and a wild beast rather than a man; or wanton and licentious; or endowed with any sort of wickedness, and deliver him into the hands of love, and introduce him to this school; and thou wilt speedily see that cowardly and timid creature, turned into a brave and magnanimous one, and venturing upon all things cheerfully. And what is wonderful, not from any change of nature do these things result, but in the coward soul itself love manifests her peculiar power; and it is much the same kind of result, as if one should cause a leaden sword, not turned into steel,

<sup>1</sup> *ἁπλῶς* but continuing in the nature of lead, to do the work of steel.  
Gen. 26. As thus: Jacob was a *plain man*<sup>1</sup>, *dwelling in a house*<sup>2</sup>, and  
27. unpractised in toils and dangers, living a kind of remiss and  
<sup>2</sup> *οἰκίῳ* easy life, and like a virgin in her chamber, so also he was  
LXX. compelled for the most part to sit within doors and keep the  
rec. vers. house; withdrawn from the forum, and all tumults of the  
"tents." forum, and from all such matters, and ever continuing in ease and quietness. What then? After that the torch of love had set him on fire, see how it made this plain and home-keeping man apt to endure and fond of toil. And of this hear not what I say, but what the patriarch himself saith: how finding fault with his kinsman, his words are, *These twenty years am I with thee*<sup>3</sup>. And how hast thou been these twenty years? (For this also he adds,) *Consumed by the heat in the day time, and with the frost by night, and sleep departed from mine eyes*. Thus speaks that *plain man*, *keeping at home*, and living that easy life.

<sup>3</sup> Gen.  
31. 36.

Again, that he was timid, is evident, in that, expecting to see Esau, he was dead with fear. But see again, how this timid man became bolder than a lion under the influence of love. For putting himself forward like some champion before the rest, he was ready to be first in receiving that savage and slaughter-breathing brother, as he supposed him to be, and with his own body to purchase the safety of his wives: and him



whom he feared and shuddered at, he desired to behold himself foremost in the array. For this fear was not so strong as his affection for his wives. Seest thou how, being timid, he became suddenly adventurous, not by changing his character, but being invigorated by love? For that after this also he was timid, is evident by his changing from place to place.

But let no man consider what has been said to be a charge against that just man: since being timid is no reproach, for this is a man's nature; but the doing any thing unseemly for timidity's sake. For it is possible for one that is timid by nature, to become courageous through piety. What did Moses? Did he not, through fear of a single Egyptian, fly, and go away into banishment? Nevertheless this fugitive, who could not endure the menace of a single man, after that he tasted of the honey of love, nobly, and without compulsion from any man, was forward to perish together with them whom he loved. *For if Thou wilt forgive their sin, saith he, forgive; and if not, blot me also out of Thy book, which Thou hast written*<sup>1</sup>. <sup>1</sup> Exod. 32. 32.

[9.] Moreover, that love makes also the fierce moderate, and the wanton chaste, we have no longer need of any examples in this: this being evident to all men. Though a man be more savage than any wild beast, no sheep so gentle as he is rendered by love. Thus, what could be more savage and frantic than Saul? But when his daughter let his enemy go, he uttered not against her even a bitter word. And he that unsparingly put to the sword all the priests for David's sake, seeing that his daughter had sent him away from the house, was not indignant with her even as far as words; and this when so great a fraud had been contrived against him: because he was restrained by the stronger bridle of love.

Now as moderation, so chastity is an ordinary effect of love. If a man love his own wife as he ought to love, even though he be never so much inclined to wantonness, he will not endure to look upon another woman, on account of his affection for her. *For love*<sup>2</sup>, saith one, *is strong as death*. So that from no other source doth wanton behaviour arise, than from want of love. <sup>2</sup> Cant. 8. 6.

Since then love is the Artificer of all virtue, let us with all exactness implant her in our own souls, that she may produce for us many blessings, and that we may have her fruit con-



**HOMIL.** continually abounding, the fruit which is ever fresh, and never  
**XXXIII.** decays. For thus shall we obtain no less than eternal blessings: which may we all obtain, through the grace and mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ, with Whom, to the Father, and also the Holy Ghost, be glory, power, and honour, now, and for ever, and world without end. Amen.

## HOMILY XXXIV.

---

1 COR. xiii. 8.

*But whether there be prophecies, they shall fail ; whether there be tongues, they shall cease ; whether there be knowledge, it shall vanish away.*

HAVING shewn the excellency of charity from its being requisite both to the gifts, and to the virtues of life ; and from rehearsal of all its good qualities, and by shewing it to be the foundation of exact self-denial ; from another, a third head, again he points out its worth. And this he doth, first from a wish to persuade those who seemed to be accounted inferior, that it is in their power to have the chief of all signs, and that they will be no worse off than the possessors of the gifts, if they have this, but rather much better : secondly, with regard on the other hand to them that had the greater gifts, and were lifted up thereby, studying to bring them down, and to signify, that they have nothing unless they have this. For thus they would both love one another, envy as well as pride being hereby taken away ; and reciprocally, loving one another, they would still further banish these passions. *For love envieth not, is not puffed up.* So that on every side he throws around them an impregnable wall, and a manifold unanimity, first removing all their disorders, and thereby again waxing stronger. Therefore also he put forward innumerable reasons which might comfort their dejection. As thus : both *the same Spirit*, saith he, is the giver ; and *He giveth to profit withal ; and divideth as he will*, and it is a gift which He divideth, not a debt. Though thou receive but a little, thou dost equally contribute to the body, and even thus thou enjoyest much honour. And he that hath the greater, needs thee who hast the less. And, " Charity is the greatest gift, and *the more excellent way.*"

HOMIL. Now all this he said, doubly to bind them to each other,  
 XXXIV. both by their not considering themselves disparaged, while they had this; and because, after pursuit and attainment of it, they henceforth feel not as might be expected from human infirmity; both as having the root of all gifts, and as no longer capable of contentiousness, even though they had nothing. For he that is once led captive by charity, is freed from contentiousness.

And this is why, pointing out to them how great advantages they shall thence reap, he sketched out its fruits; by his praises of it repressing their disorders: inasmuch as each one of the things mentioned by him was a sufficient medicine to heal their wounds. Wherefore also he said, *suffereth long*, to them that are at strife one with another; *is kind*, to them that stand mutually aloof, and bear a secret grudge; *enrieth not*, to them that look grudgingly on their superiors; *vaunteth not itself*, to them that are separated; *is not puffed up*, to them that boast themselves against others; *doth not count it unseemly*, to them that are unwilling to condescend; *seeketh not her own*, to them that overlook the rest; *is not easily provoked*, *thinketh no evil*, to them that are insolent; *rejoiceth not in iniquity*, *but rejoiceth in the truth*, to them again that are envious; *beareth all things*, to them that are treacherously dealt with; *hopeth all things*, to the despairing; *endureth all things*, *never faileth*, to them that easily separate themselves.

[2.] Now then after that in every way he had shewn her to be very exceedingly great, again he doth so from another most important head, by a fresh comparison elevating her dignity, and saying thus; *but whether there be prophecies, they shall fail; whether there be tongues, they shall cease*. For if both these were brought in in order to the faith; when that is every where sown abroad, the use of these is henceforth superfluous. But the loving one another shall not cease, rather it shall even advance further, both here, and hereafter, and then more than now. For here there are many things that weaken<sup>1</sup> our love; wealth, business, passions of the body, disorders of the soul: but there none of these.

<sup>1</sup> ὁ ἡμῶν  
 ἡμῶν.

<sup>a</sup> So Saville conj. ὁ ἡμῶν: the Editions have οὐκ ἡμῶν, "do not think it their duty."

But although it be no marvel that prophecies and tongues <sup>1 Cor.</sup> should fail, that knowledge should be done away, this is what <sup>13. 12.</sup> may cause some perplexity. For this also he added, and said, *Whether there be knowledge, it shall vanish away.* What then? are we then to live in ignorance? Far from it. Nay, then specially it is probable that our knowledge is made intense. Wherefore also he said, *Then shall I know, even as also I am known.* For this reason, if you mark it, that you might not suppose this to be done away equally with the prophecy and the tongues, having said, *Whether there be knowledge, it shall vanish away*, he was not silent, but added also the manner of its vanishing away, immediately subjoining the saying,

Ver. 9. 10. *We know in part, and we prophesy in part. But when that which is perfect is come, then that which is in part shall be done away.*

It is not therefore knowledge that is done away, but this circumstance, that our knowledge is in part. For we shall not only know as much, but even a great deal more. But that I may also make it plain by example; now we know that God is every where, but how, we know not. That He made out of things that are not the things that are, we know; but of the manner we are ignorant. That He was born of a virgin, we know, but how, we know not yet. But then shall we know somewhat more and more clearly concerning these things. Next he points out also how great is the distance of the two, and that our deficiency is no small one, saying,

Ver. 11. *When I was a child, I spake as a child, I understood as a child, I thought as a child; but when I became a man, I put away childish things.*

And by another example too he manifests the same thing again, saying,

Ver. 12. *For now we see through a glass<sup>1</sup>.*

Further, because the glass sets before us the thing seen in some way or other, he added, *darkly<sup>2</sup>*, to shew very strongly that the present knowledge is most partial.

*But then face to face.* Not as though God hath a face, but to express the notion of greater clearness and perspicuity. Seest thou how we learn all things by gradual addition?

*Now I know in part; but then shall I know even as also*

<sup>1</sup> *by*  
<sup>2</sup> *by*  
<sup>3</sup> *by*  
<sup>4</sup> *by*  
<sup>5</sup> *by*  
<sup>6</sup> *by*  
<sup>7</sup> *by*  
<sup>8</sup> *by*  
<sup>9</sup> *by*  
<sup>10</sup> *by*  
<sup>11</sup> *by*  
<sup>12</sup> *by*  
<sup>13</sup> *by*  
<sup>14</sup> *by*  
<sup>15</sup> *by*  
<sup>16</sup> *by*  
<sup>17</sup> *by*  
<sup>18</sup> *by*  
<sup>19</sup> *by*  
<sup>20</sup> *by*  
<sup>21</sup> *by*  
<sup>22</sup> *by*  
<sup>23</sup> *by*  
<sup>24</sup> *by*  
<sup>25</sup> *by*  
<sup>26</sup> *by*  
<sup>27</sup> *by*  
<sup>28</sup> *by*  
<sup>29</sup> *by*  
<sup>30</sup> *by*  
<sup>31</sup> *by*  
<sup>32</sup> *by*  
<sup>33</sup> *by*  
<sup>34</sup> *by*  
<sup>35</sup> *by*  
<sup>36</sup> *by*  
<sup>37</sup> *by*  
<sup>38</sup> *by*  
<sup>39</sup> *by*  
<sup>40</sup> *by*  
<sup>41</sup> *by*  
<sup>42</sup> *by*  
<sup>43</sup> *by*  
<sup>44</sup> *by*  
<sup>45</sup> *by*  
<sup>46</sup> *by*  
<sup>47</sup> *by*  
<sup>48</sup> *by*  
<sup>49</sup> *by*  
<sup>50</sup> *by*  
<sup>51</sup> *by*  
<sup>52</sup> *by*  
<sup>53</sup> *by*  
<sup>54</sup> *by*  
<sup>55</sup> *by*  
<sup>56</sup> *by*  
<sup>57</sup> *by*  
<sup>58</sup> *by*  
<sup>59</sup> *by*  
<sup>60</sup> *by*  
<sup>61</sup> *by*  
<sup>62</sup> *by*  
<sup>63</sup> *by*  
<sup>64</sup> *by*  
<sup>65</sup> *by*  
<sup>66</sup> *by*  
<sup>67</sup> *by*  
<sup>68</sup> *by*  
<sup>69</sup> *by*  
<sup>70</sup> *by*  
<sup>71</sup> *by*  
<sup>72</sup> *by*  
<sup>73</sup> *by*  
<sup>74</sup> *by*  
<sup>75</sup> *by*  
<sup>76</sup> *by*  
<sup>77</sup> *by*  
<sup>78</sup> *by*  
<sup>79</sup> *by*  
<sup>80</sup> *by*  
<sup>81</sup> *by*  
<sup>82</sup> *by*  
<sup>83</sup> *by*  
<sup>84</sup> *by*  
<sup>85</sup> *by*  
<sup>86</sup> *by*  
<sup>87</sup> *by*  
<sup>88</sup> *by*  
<sup>89</sup> *by*  
<sup>90</sup> *by*  
<sup>91</sup> *by*  
<sup>92</sup> *by*  
<sup>93</sup> *by*  
<sup>94</sup> *by*  
<sup>95</sup> *by*  
<sup>96</sup> *by*  
<sup>97</sup> *by*  
<sup>98</sup> *by*  
<sup>99</sup> *by*  
<sup>100</sup> *by*



HOMIL. *I am known.* Seest thou how in two ways he pulls down  
 XXXIV. their pride? Both because their knowledge is in part, and  
 because not even this have they of themselves. "For I knew  
 Him not, but He made Himself known<sup>1</sup> to me," saith he.  
 Wherefore, even as He knew me, and Himself now first  
 hastened towards me, so shall I hasten towards Him then  
 much more than now. For so he that sits in darkness, as  
 long as he sees not the sun, doth not of himself hasten to meet  
 the beauty of its beam. That beam indeed shews itself as soon  
 as it hath begun to shine: but when he perceives its bright-  
 ness, then also himself at length follows after its light. This  
 then is the meaning of the expression, *even as also I am  
 known.* Not that we shall so know Him as He us, but that  
 even as He hastened toward us now, so also shall we cleave  
 unto Him then, and shall know many of the things which are  
 now secret, and shall enjoy that most blessed society and  
 wisdom. For if Paul, who knew so much, was a child,  
 consider what those things must be. If these be a *glass*  
 and a *riddle*, do thou hence again infer, God's open Face,  
 how great a thing It is.

[3.] But that I may open out to thee some small part of this  
 difference, and may enkindle some faint ray of this thought  
 in thy soul, I would have thee recall to mind things as they  
 were in the Law, now after that grace hath shone forth. For  
 those things too, that came before grace, had a certain great  
 and marvellous appearance: nevertheless hear what Paul  
 saith of them after grace came: *That which was made  
 glorious had no glory in this respect, by reason of the glory*

<sup>1</sup> 2 Cor. *that excelleth*.

3. 10.

But that what I say may be made yet clearer, let us manage  
 the argument with a view to some one of the rites then per-  
 formed, and then thou wilt see how great is the difference.  
 And if thou wilt, let us bring forward that passover and this,  
 and then shalt thou be aware of our superiority. For the  
 Jews indeed celebrated it, but they celebrated it *so as in a  
 glass, and darkly.* But these hidden mysteries they never at  
 any time did even conceive in their mind, nor what things  
 they were, which those prefigured. They saw a lamb slain,  
 and the blood of a beast, and door-posts sprinkled with it;  
 but that the Son of God incarnate shall be slain, and shall set

free the whole world, and shall grant both to Greeks and <sup>1 Cor.</sup> Barbarians to taste of this Blood, and shall open heaven to <sup>13. 12.</sup> all, and shall offer what is there to the whole human race, and having taken His flesh steeped in blood, shall exalt it above the heaven, and the heaven of heavens, and in a word, above all the hosts on high, of the angels and archangels and all the other powers, and shall cause it to sit down upon the throne itself of the King, on the right hand of the Father shining in unspeakable glory,—these things, I say, no one either of them, or of the rest of mankind, either foreknew, or was able ever to conceive.

[4.] But what say those who shrink from nothing? That the expression, *now I know in part*, is spoken of dispensations; for that the Apostle had the perfect knowledge of God. And how calls he himself a child? How sees he *through a glass*? How *darkly*, if he hath the sum of knowledge? And why doth he refer it as something peculiar to the Spirit, and to no other power in the creation, saying, *For what man knoweth the things of a man, save the spirit of a man which is in him? Even so the things of God knoweth no man, save the Spirit of God*<sup>1</sup>. And Christ again saith that this <sup>1 1 Cor.</sup> belongs to Himself alone, thus saying; *Not that any man* <sup>2. 11.</sup> *hath seen the Father, save He which is of God, He hath seen the Father*<sup>2</sup>, giving the name, *sight*, to the most clear and <sup>2 John</sup> perfect knowledge. <sup>6. 46.</sup>

And how shall he who knoweth the Essence, be ignorant of the dispensations? since that knowledge is greater than this.

“Are we then,” saith he, “ignorant of God?” Far from it. That He is, we know, but what He is, as regards His Essence, we know not yet. And that thou mayest understand that not concerning the dispensations did he speak the words, *now I know in part*; hear what follows. He adds then, *but then shall I know, even as also I am known*. He was not surely known by the dispensations, but by God.

Let none therefore consider this to be a small or simple transgression, but twofold, and threefold, yea and manifold. For not only is there this impiety, that they boast of knowing those things which belong to the Spirit alone, and to the Only-begotten Son of God, but also that when Paul could not acquire even this knowledge *which is in part* without the

HOMIL. revelation from above, these men say that they have obtained the whole from their own reasonings. For neither are they able to point out that the Scripture hath any where discoursed to us of these things.

[5.] But however, leaving their madness, let us give heed to the words which follow concerning charity. For he was not content with these things, but adds again, saying,

*Ver. 13. And now abideth faith, hope, charity, these three; but the greatest of these is charity.*

(3.) For faith indeed and hope, when the good things beliered and hoped for are come, cease. And to shew this Paul said, *For hope that is seen, is not hope; for what a man seeth, why doth he yet hope for?* Again, *Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen*<sup>1</sup>. So that these cease when those appear; but charity is then most elevated, and becomes more vehement. Another praise again for charity. For neither is he content with those before mentioned, but he strives to discover again yet another. And observe: he hath said that it is a great gift, and a way to these in a more eminent manner. He hath said, that without it there is no great profit in our gifts; he hath shadowed out its image at length; he intends again and in another manner to exalt it, and to shew that it is great from its abiding. Wherefore also he said, *But now abideth faith, hope, charity, these three; but the greatest of these is charity.* How then is charity the greater? In that those pass away.

If now so great is the virtue of charity, with good reason doth he add and say, *Follow after charity.* For there is surely need of *following*, and of a kind of vehement running after her: in such sort doth she fly from us, and so many are the things which subvert our course in that direction. Wherefore we have ever need of great earnestness in order to overtake her. And to point out this, Paul said not, *follow charity*,  
2<sup>d</sup> time. but, *pursue*<sup>2</sup> her; stirring us up, and inflaming us to lay hold on her.

For so God from the beginning contrived ten thousand ways for implanting her in us. Thus, first, He granted one head to all, Adam. For why do we not all spring out of the earth? Why not full grown, as he was? In order that both the births and the bringing up of children,



and the being born one of another, might bind us mutually together. For this cause neither made He the woman out of the earth: and because the being of the same substance was not equally sufficient to shame us into unanimity, unless we had also the same progenitor, He provided also for this: since, if now, being separated only by place, we consider ourselves alien from one another; much more would this have happened, if our race had had two originals. For this cause therefore, as it were from some one head, he bound together the whole body of the human race. And because from the beginning they seemed to be in a manner two, see how he fastens them together again, and gathers them into one, by marriage. For, *for this cause*, saith He, *shall a man leave his father and his mother, and be joined unto his wife; and they two shall be for one flesh*<sup>1</sup>. And he said not, "the woman," but, *the man*, because the desire too is stronger in him. Yea, <sup>24.</sup> *his edgna* <sup>18. 13.</sup> *minor.* and for this cause He made it also stronger, that it might cause the superior party to bend to the absolute sway of this passion, and might subjugate it to the weaker. And since marriage also must needs be introduced, him from whom she sprang He made husband to the woman. For all things in the eye of God are second to charity. And if, when things had thus begun, the first man straightway became so frantic, and the devil sowed among them so great warfare and envy; what would he not have done, had they not sprung from one root?

Further, in order that the one might be subject, and the other rule; (for equality is wont oftentimes to bring in strife;) he suffered it not to be a democracy, but a monarchy; and as in an army, this order one may see in every family. In the rank of monarch, for instance, there is the husband; but in the rank of lieutenant and general, the wife; and the children too are allotted a third station in command. Then after these a fourth order, that of the servants. For these also bear rule over their inferiors, and some one of them is oftentimes set over the whole, keeping ever the post of the master, but still as a servant. And together with this again another command, and among the children themselves again another, according to their age, and according to their sex; since among the children the female doth not possess equal sway. And every where hath God made governments at small distances, and



HOMIL.  
XXXIV. thick together, that all might abide in concord and much good order. Therefore even before the race was increased to a multitude, when the first two only were in being, He bade him govern, and her obey. And in order again that He might not despise her as inferior, and separate from her, see how He honoured her, and made them one, even before her creation. For, *Let us make for man*, saith He, *a help-meet*, implying that she was made for his need, and thereby drawing him unto her who was made for his sake: since to all those things are we more kindly disposed, which are done for our sakes. But that she, on the other hand, might not be elated, as being granted him for help, nor might burst this bond, He makes her out of his side, signifying that she is a part of the whole body. And that neither might the man be elated therefore, He no longer permits that to belong to him alone, which before was his alone, but effected the contrary to this, by bringing in procreation of children, and herein too giving the chief honour unto the man, not however allowing the whole to be his.

- (4.) Seest thou how many bonds of love God hath wrought? And these indeed by force of nature He hath lodged in us as pledges of concord. For both our being of the same substance leads to this; (for every animal loves its like;) and the woman being of the man, and again the children of both. Whence also many kinds of affection are produced. For one we love as a father, another as a grandfather; one as a mother, another as a nurse; and one as a son, and grandson, and great-grandson again, and another as a daughter, and grand-daughter: and one as a brother, another as a nephew: and one as a sister, another as a niece. And why need one recount all the names of consanguinity?

And He devised also another foundation of affection. For having forbidden the marriages of kindred, he led us out unto strangers, and drew them again unto us. For since by this natural kindred it was not possible that they should be connected with us, he connected us anew by marriage, uniting together whole families by the single person of the bride, and mingling entire races with races.

<sup>1</sup> Levit. 18. 6. For, *marry not*, saith the Lord<sup>1</sup>, *thy sister, nor thy father's sister, nor any damsel which hath such consanguinity with*

*thee*, as utterly hinders the marriage;" naming the degrees of such relationship. It is enough for thine affection towards them that ye were the fruit of the same birth-pangs, and that the others are in such relation as they are to thee. Why dost thou narrow the breadth of love? Why dost thou idly throw away a ground of affection towards her, such as that thou mightest thereby provide thyself with a distinct source for affection to spring from; I mean, by taking a wife from another family, and through her a chain of kinsmen, both mother, and father, and brethren, and their connexions!

[7.] Seest thou by how many ways He hath bound us together? Nevertheless not even this sufficed Him, but He likewise made us to stand in need of one another, that thus also He might bring us together, because necessities above all create friendships. For no other reason neither suffered He all things to be produced in every place, that hence also He might compel us to mix with one another. But having set us in need of one another, He on the other hand made the intercourse easy. Since if this were not so, the matter would have turned out painful and difficult in another way. For if one that wanted a physician, or a carpenter, or any other workman, had need to set off on a long foreign sojourn, the whole had come to nought. Here then is why He founded cities also, and brought all into one place. And accordingly that we might easily keep up intercourse with distant countries, He spread the level of the sea between us, and gave us the swiftness of winds, thereby making our voyages easy. And at the beginning He even gathered all men together in one spot, and did not disperse them until they who first received the gift, abused their concord unto sin. However, He hath drawn us together in every way; both by nature, and by consanguinity, and by language, and by place; and as He willed not that we should fall from Paradise; (for had He willed it, He would not have placed there at all *the man whom He had formed*, but he that disobeyed was the cause;) so neither was it His will that men should have divers tongues; since otherwise He would have made it so from the beginning. But now *the whole earth was of one language, and all had one speech*<sup>1</sup>.

Here is the reason why, when it was needful that the

<sup>1</sup> Cor.  
13. 13.

<sup>1</sup> Gen.  
11. 1.

HOMIL. earth should be destroyed, not even then did He make us  
XXXIV. of other matter, nor did He translate the righteous man, but leaving him in the midst of the deluge, like a kind of spark of the world, He rekindled our race from thence, even by the blessed Noah. And from the beginning He made one sovereignty only, setting the man over the woman. But after that our race became wrecked in extreme disorder, He appointed other sovereignties also, those of Masters, and those of Governors, and this too for love's sake. That is, since vice was a thing apt to dissolve and subvert our race, He set those who administer justice in the midst of our cities as a kind of physicians, that driving away vice, as it were a plague to love, they might gather together all in one.

And that not only in cities, but also in each family there might be great unanimity, He honoured the man with rule and superiority; the woman on the other hand He armed with desire: and the gift also of procreation of children, He committed in common to both, and withal He furnished also other things apt to conciliate love: neither entrusting all to the man, nor all to the woman; but *dividing these things also severally to each*; to her entrusting the house, and to him the market; to him the work of feeding, for he tills the ground; to her that of clothing, for the loom and the distaff are the woman's. For it is God Himself who gave to woman-kind skill in woven work. Woe be to covetousness, which suffers not this difference to appear! For men's general effeminacy<sup>1</sup> hath gone so far as to introduce our men to the looms, and put shuttles into their hands, and the woof, and threads. Nevertheless even thus the forethought of the divine œconomy shines out. For we still greatly need the woman in other more necessary things, and we require the help of our inferiors in those things which keep our life together.

- [8.] And so strong is the compulsion of this need, that though one be richer than all men, not even thus is he rid of this close conjunction, and of his want of that which is inferior to himself. For it is not, we see, the poor only who need the rich, but the rich also the poor; and these require those more than the others  
(3.) them. And that thou mayest see it more clearly, let us suppose, if it seem good, two cities, the one of rich only, but the other of poor; and neither in that of the rich let there be any poor

<sup>1</sup> βλα-  
σμία.



man, nor in that of the poor any rich; but let us purge out both of the two thoroughly, and see which will be the more able to support itself. For if we find that of the poor able, it is evident that the rich will more stand in need of them. 1 Cor.  
13. 28.

Now then, in that city of the affluent there will be no manufacturer, no builder, no carpenter, no shoe-maker, no baker, no husbandman, no brazier, no rope-maker, nor any other such trade. For who among the rich would ever choose to follow these crafts, seeing that the very men who take them in hand, when they become rich, endure no longer the discomfort caused by these works? How then shall this our city stand? "The rich," it is replied, "giving money, will buy these things of the poor." Well then, they will not be sufficient for themselves, their needing the others proves that. But how will they build houses? Will they purchase this too? But the nature of things cannot admit this. Therefore they must needs invite the artificers thither, and destroy the law, which we made at first, when we were founding the city. For you remember, that we said, "let there be no poor man within it." But, lo, necessity, even against our will, hath invited and brought them in. Whence it is evident, that it is impossible without poor for a city to subsist: since if the city were to continue refusing to admit any of these, it will be no longer a city, but will perish. Plainly then it will not support itself, unless it shall collect the poor as a kind of preservers, to be within itself.

But let us look also upon the city of the poor, whether this too will be in a like needy condition, on being deprived of the rich. And first let us in our discourse thoroughly clear the nature of riches, and point them out plainly. What then may riches be? Gold, and silver, and precious stones, and garments silken, purple, and embroidered with gold. Now then that we have seen what riches are, let us drive them away from our city of the poor: and if we are to make it purely a city of poor persons, let not any gold appear there, no not in a dream, nor garments of such quality; and if you will, neither silver, nor vessels of silver. What then? Because of this will that city and its concerns live in want, tell me? Not at all. For suppose first there should be need to build; one does not want gold and silver and pearls, but skill, and



HOMIL. hands, and hands not of any kind, but such as are become  
XXXIV. callous, and fingers hardened, and great strength, and wood,  
and stones: suppose again one would weave a garment,  
neither here have we need of gold, and silver, but, as before,  
of hands, and skill, and women to work. And what if one  
require husbandry, and digging the ground? Is it rich men  
who are wanted, or poor? It is evident to every one, poor.  
And when iron too is to be wrought, or any such thing to be  
done, this is the race of men whereof we most stand in  
need.

What respect then remains wherein we may stand in need  
of the rich? except the thing required be, to pull down this  
city. For should that sort of people make an entrance, and  
these philosophers, (for I call them philosophers, who seek  
after nothing superfluous,) should fall to desiring gold and  
jewels, giving themselves up to idleness and luxury; they  
will ruin every thing from that day forward.

[9.] "But unless wealth be useful," saith one, "wherefore  
bath it been given by God?" And whence is it evident, that  
being rich is from God? "The Scripture saith, *The silver is  
Mine, and the gold is Mine*, and to whomsoever I will, I will  
Hag. 2. give it<sup>1</sup>." Here, if I were not doing an unseemly thing, I  
8. could at this moment laugh loudly, in derision of those who  
say these things: because as little children, admitted to a  
King's table, together with that food thrust into their mouth  
every thing that comes to hand; so also do these together  
with the divine Scriptures privily bring in their own notions.  
For this, *the silver is Mine, and the gold is Mine*, I know to  
have been spoken by the Prophet; but that, "to whomsoever  
I will, I will give it," is not added, but is brought in by these  
Hagg. 2. offscourings<sup>2</sup> of the people. And as to the former, why  
it was said, I will explain. The Prophet Haggai, because  
he was continually promising to the Jews after their return  
from Babylon, that he would shew the temple in its former  
appearance, and some doubted of the thing spoken, and  
considered it to be well nigh impossible, that after being  
reduced to dust and ashes the house should appear again  
such as it was;—he, to remove their unbelief, in the person  
of God saith these things; as if he said, "why are ye afraid?  
and why do ye refuse to believe? *The silver is Mine, and*

*the gold is Mine*, and I need not to borrow from others, and so to beautify the house." And to shew that this is the meaning, He adds, *and the glory of this house, the latter glory, shall be greater than the glory of the former.* Let us not then bring in spiders' webs upon the royal robe. For if any person, detected in weaving a counterfeit thread in a purple vest, is to suffer the severest punishment, much more in spiritual things; since neither is it an ordinary sin, which is hereby committed. And why say I, by adding and taking away? By a mere point, and by a mere circumstance of delivery in the reading, many impious thoughts have not seldom been brought into being.

"Whence then the rich," saith one? "for it hath been said, *Riches and poverty are from the Lord.*" Let us then ask those who object these things against us, whether all riches and all poverty are from the Lord? Nay, who would say this? For we see that both by rapine, and by wickedly breaking open of tombs, and by witchcraft, and by other such devices, great wealth is gathered by many, and the possessors not worthy to live. What then, tell me, do we say that this wealth is from God? Far from it. Whence then? From sin. For so the harlot by doing indignity to her own body grows rich, and a handsome youth ostentines selling his bloom with disgrace brings himself gold, and the tomb-spoiler by breaking open men's sepulchres gathers together unjust wealth, and the robber by digging through their partition walls. Is then all this wealth from God?

"What then," saith one, "shall we say to this expression?" Acquaint thyself first with a kind of poverty which proceeds not from God, and then we will proceed to the saying itself. I mean, that when any dissolute youth spends his wealth either on harlots, or on conjurors, or on any other such evil desires, and becomes poor, is it not very evident, that this hath not come from God, but from his own profligacy? Again, if any through idleness become poor; if any through folly be brought down to beggary, if any, by taking in hand perilous and unlawful practices; is it not quite evident, that neither hath any one of these and other such persons been brought down to this their poverty by God?

HOMIL. "Doth then the Scripture speak falsely?" God forbid!  
 XXXIV. but they do foolishly, who neglect to examine all things written with due exactness. For if this on the one hand be acknowledged, that the Scripture cannot lie; and this on the other hand proved, that not all wealth is from God; the weakness of inconsiderate readers is the cause of the difficulty.

[10.] Now it were right for us to dismiss you, having herein exculpated the Scripture, that ye may suffer this punishment at our hands for your negligence concerning the Scriptures: but because I greatly spare you, and cannot any longer bear to look on you confused and disturbed, let us also add the solution, having first mentioned the speaker, and when it was spoken, and to whom. For not alike to all doth God speak, as neither do we deal alike with children and men. When then was it spoken, and by whom, and to whom? By Solomon in the Old Testament, to the Jews, who knew no other than things of sense, and by these proved the power of God. For these are they who say, *Can he give bread also?* and, *What sign shewest thou unto us? our fathers did eat manna in the desert:—whose God is*

<sup>1</sup> Ps. 77. *their belly*<sup>1</sup>. Since then they were proving Him by these things,  
 24.  
 Mat. 12. he saith to them, "this also is possible with God, to make  
 38.  
 John 6. both rich and poor;" not that it is of course He Himself who  
 31. maketh them, but that He can, when He will. Just as when  
 Phil. 3. he saith, *Who threateneth the sea, and maketh it dry, and*  
 19.  
<sup>2</sup> Is. 44. *maketh all the rivers a desert*<sup>2</sup>, and yet this was never done.

27. How then doth the prophet say so? Not as though it were a-doing always, but as a thing that was possible for Him to do.

What kind of poverty then doth He give, and what kind of wealth? Remember the patriarch, and thou shalt know the kind of wealth that is given by God. For He made both Abraham rich, and after him Job, even as Job himself saith; *If we have received good from the Lord, shall we not*  
<sup>3</sup> Job 11. *also endure evil*<sup>3</sup>? And the wealth of Jacob thence had its  
 10. beginning. There is also a poverty which cometh from Him, that which is commended, such as He once would have introduced to the knowledge of that well-known rich man, saying, *If thou be perfect, sell thy goods, and give to the poor, and come, follow me*<sup>4</sup>. And to the disciples again, making a law and saying, *Provide neither*

<sup>4</sup> Matt.  
 19. 21.

gold, nor silver, nor two coats<sup>1</sup>. Say not then that all wealth is His gift: seeing that cases have been pointed out of its being collected both by murders, and by rapine, and by ten thousand other devices. 1 Cor.  
13. 28.  
1 Mat.  
13. 28.

But again the discourse reverts to our former question: viz. "if the rich are no way useful to us, wherefore are they made rich?" What then must we say? That these are not useful, who so make themselves rich; whereas those surely who are made so by God, are in the highest degree useful. And do thou learn this from the very things done by those whom we just now mentioned. Thus Abraham possessed wealth for all strangers, and for all in need. For he, who on the approach of three men, as he supposed, sacrificed a calf, and kneaded three measures of fine flour, and that while sitting in his door in the heat of the day; consider with what liberality and readiness he used to spend his substance on all, together with his goods giving also the service of his body, and this at such an advanced age; being a harbour to strangers, to all who had come to any kind of want, and possessing nothing as his own, not even his son: since at God's command, he actually delivered up even him; and along with his son he gave up also himself, and all his house, when he hastened to snatch his brother's son out of danger; and this he did not for lucre's sake, but of mere humanity. When, for instance, they who were saved by him would put the spoils at his disposal, he rejected all, even to a thread and a shoe-latchet<sup>2</sup>.

Such also was the blessed Job. *For my door, saith he, was open to every one who came<sup>3</sup>: I was eyes to the blind, and feet to the lame; I was a father of the helpless: the stranger lodged not without, and the helpless, whatever need they had, failed not of it, neither suffered I one helpless man to go out of my door with an empty bosom.* And much more too than these, that we may not now recount all, he continued to do, spending all his wealth on the needy. 2 Gen.  
14. 23.  
3 Job 31.  
32.

Wilt thou also look upon those who have become rich but not of God, that thou mayest learn how they employed their wealth? Behold him in the parable of Lazarus, how he imparted not so much as a share of his crumbs. Behold Ahab, how not even the vineyard is free from his extortion: behold



**HOMIL.** Gehazi: behold all such. Thus they on the one hand who  
**XXXIV.** make just acquisitions, as having received from God, spend on the commands of God: but they who in the act of acquiring offend God, in the expending also do the same: consuming it on harlots and parasites, or burying and shutting it up, but laying out nothing upon the poor.

“And wherefore,” saith one, “doth God suffer such men to be rich?” Because He is long-suffering; because He would bring us to repentance; because He hath prepared hell; because *He hath appointed a day, in which He is to judge the world*<sup>1</sup>. Whereas, did He use at once to punish them that are rich and not virtuously, Zaccheus would not have had an appointed time<sup>2</sup> for repentance, so as even to restore fourfold whatever he had unjustly taken, and to add half of his goods; nor Matthew, to be converted and become an Apostle, taken off as he would have been before the due season; nor yet many other such. Therefore doth He bear with them, calling all to repentance. But if they will not, but continue in the same, they shall hear Paul saying, that *after their hardness and impenitent heart they treasure up unto themselves wrath against the day of wrath, and revelation, and righteous judgment of God*<sup>3</sup>: which wrath that we may escape, let us become rich with the riches of heaven, and follow after the laudable sort of poverty. For thus shall we obtain also the good things to come: the which may we all obtain through the grace and mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ, with Whom to the Father, with the Holy Ghost, be glory, power, and honour, now, and for ever, and world without end. Amen.

<sup>1</sup> Acts  
17. 31.

<sup>2</sup> *repentance*  
*time.*

<sup>3</sup> Rom.  
2. 5.

## HOMILY XXXV.

---

1 COR. xiv. 1.

*Follow after charity, and desire spiritual gifts; but rather that ye may prophesy.*

THUS, inasmuch as he had with exactness rehearsed unto them all the excellence of charity, he exhorts them in what follows, with alacrity to lay hold of it. Wherefore also he said, *Follow after*: for he that is in chace, beholds that only which is chased, and towards that he strains himself, and leaves not off until he lay hold of it. He that is in chace, when by himself he cannot, by those that are before him he doth overtake the fugitive, beseeching those who are near with much eagerness to seize and keep it so seized for him, until he shall come up. This then let us also do. When of ourselves we do not reach unto charity, let us bid them that are near to her hold her, till we come up with her, and when we have apprehended, no more let her go, that she may not again escape us. For continually she springs away from us, because we use her not as we ought, but prefer all things unto her. Therefore we ought to make every effort, so as perfectly to retain her. For if this be done, we require not henceforth much labour, nay rather scarce any; but taking our ease, and keeping holiday<sup>1</sup>, we shall march on in<sup>1</sup> the narrow path of virtue. Wherefore he saith, *Follow after*<sup>1</sup> *her*.

Then that they might not suppose, that for no other end he brought in the discourse of charity, except that he might extinguish the gifts, he subjoins as follows;

HOMIL.  
XXXV. Ver. 1. *And desire spiritual gifts; but rather that ye may prophesy.*

Ver. 2. *For he that speaketh in an unknown tongue, speaketh not unto men, but unto God: for no man understandeth him; howbeit in the Spirit he speaketh mysteries.*

Ver. 3. *But he that prophesieth, speaketh unto men to edification, and exhortation, and comfort.*

At this point he proceeds to make a comparison between the gifts, and lowers that of the tongues, neither signifying it to be altogether useless, nor very profitable by itself. For in fact they were greatly puffed up on account of this, because the gift was considered to be a great one. And it was thought great, because the Apostles received it first, and with so great display; it was not however therefore to be esteemed above all the others. Wherefore then did the Apostles receive it before the rest? Because they were to go abroad every where. And as in the time of building the tower the one tongue was divided into many; so then the many tongues frequently met in one man, and the same person used to discourse both in the Persian, and Roman, and Indian, and many other tongues, the Spirit sounding within him: and the gift was called the gift of tongues, because he could all at once speak divers languages. See accordingly how he both depresses and elevates it. Thus by saying, *He that speaketh with tongues, speaketh not unto men, but unto God, for no man understandeth him*, he depressed it, implying that the profit of it was not great; but by adding, *howbeit in the Spirit he speaketh mysteries*, he again elevated it, that it might not seem to be superfluous, and useless, and given in vain.

*But he that prophesieth, speaketh unto men to edification, and exhortation, and comfort.*

Seest thou by what he signifies the choice nature of this gift? i. e. by the common benefit? and how every where he gives the higher honour to that which tends to the profit of the many? For do not the former speak unto men also? tell me. But not so much *to edification, and exhortation, and comfort*. So that the being possessed by the Spirit, is common to both, as well to him that prophesieth, as to him that speaketh with tongues; but in this, the one, (he, I mean, who prophesieth,) hath the advantage, in that he is also pro-

fitable unto the hearers. For they who spake with tongues <sup>1 Cor.</sup> were not understood by them that had not the gift. <sup>14. 6.</sup>

What then? Did they edify no man? "Yes," saith he, "themselves alone:" wherefore also he adds,

Ver. 4. *He that speaketh in an unknown tongue, edifieth himself.*

And how, if he know not what he saith? Why, for the present, he is speaking of them who understand what they say;—understand it themselves, but know not how to render it unto others.

*But he that prophesieth, edifieth the Church.* Now as great as is the difference between a single person and the Church, so great is the interval between these two. Seest thou his wisdom, how he doth not thrust out the gift and make nothing of it, but signifies it to have some advantage, small though it be, and such as to suffice the possessor only?

[2.] Next, lest they should suppose that in envy to them he depresses the tongues, (for the more part had this gift,) to correct their suspicion he saith,

Ver. 5. *I would that ye all spake with tongues, but rather that ye prophesied: for greater is he that prophesieth than he that speaketh with tongues, except he interpret, that the Church may receive edifying.*

But *rather* and *greater*, do not mark opposition, but superiority. (2.) So that hence also it is evident, that he is not disparaging the gift, but leading them to better things, displaying both his carefulness on their behalf, and his spirit free from all envy. For neither did he say, "I would that two, or three," but *that ye all spake with tongues*; and not this only, but, also, *that ye prophesied*; and this rather than that; *for greater is he that prophesieth*. For since he hath established and proved it, he next proceeds also to assert it; not however simply, but with a qualification. Accordingly he adds, *except he interpret*; since if he be able to do this, I mean the interpreting, "he hath become equal unto the prophet," so he speaks, "because then there are many who reap the advantage of it;" a thing to be especially observed, how this throughout, before all else, is his object.

Ver. 6. *But now, brethren, if I come unto you speaking with tongues, what shall I profit you, except I shall speak to*



HOMIL. *you either by revelation, or by knowledge, or by prophesying,*  
 XXXV. *or by doctrine?*

"And why speak I," saith he, "of the rest? Nay, let the person who speaketh with tongues be Paul: yea even so will no good come of it to the hearers." And these things he saith, to signify that he is seeking their profit, not bearing any grudge against them that have the gift; since not even in his own person doth he shrink from pointing out their unprofitableness. And indeed it is his constant way to work out the disagreeable topics in his own person: as in the beginning of the Epistle he said, "*Who then is Paul? and who is Apollos? and who is Cephas?*" The same then he doth also here, saying, *Not even I shall profit you, except I shall speak to you either by revelation, or by prophesying, or by knowledge, or by doctrine.* And what he means is, "if I say not somewhat that can be made intelligible to you, and that may be clear, but merely make display of my having the gift of tongues;—tongues which when ye have heard, ye will go away with no sort of profit. For how should you profit, by a voice which ye understand not?"

[3.] Ver. 7. *Yet even the things without life giving sound, whether pipe or harp, except they give a distinction in the sounds, how shall it be known what is piped or harped?*

"And why do I say," saith he, "that in our case this is unprofitable, and that only useful, which is clear and easy to be apprehended by the hearers? Since even in musical instruments without life one may see this: for whether it be pipe or harp, yet if it be struck or blown confusedly and unskilfully, without proper cadence or harmony, it will captivate none of the hearers. For even in these inarticulate sounds there is need of some distinctness: and if thou strike not or breathe into the pipe according to art, thou hast done nothing. Now if from things without life we require so much distinctness, and harmony, and appropriateness, and into those inarticulate sounds we strive and contend to infuse so much meaning, much more in men, endued with life and reason, and in spiritual gifts, ought one to make significancy an object.

Ver. 8. *For if the trumpet give an uncertain sound, who shall prepare himself to the battle?*

Thus, from things merely ornamental he carries on his argument to those which are more necessary and useful; and saith, that not in the harp alone, but in the trumpet also one may see this effect produced. For in that also there are certain measures; and they give out at one time a warlike note, and at another one that is not so; and again sometimes it leads out to line of battle: and unless one know this, there is danger to all that is most important. Which is just what he means, and the mischief of it what he is manifesting, when he saith, *who shall prepare himself to the battle?* So then, if it have not this quality, it is the ruin of all. "And what is this to us," saith one? Truly it concerns you very especially; wherefore also he adds,

Ver. 9. *So likewise ye, except ye utter by the tongue words easy to be understood, how shall it be known what is spoken? for ye shall speak into the air: i. e. calling to nobody, speaking unto no man.* Thus every where he shews its unprofitableness.

[4.] "But if it be unprofitable, why was it given?" saith one. So as to be useful to him that hath received it. But if it is to be so to others also, there must be added interpretation. Now this he saith, bringing them near to one another; that if a person himself have not the gift of interpretation, he may take unto him another that hath it, and make his own gift useful through him. Wherefore he every where points out its imperfection, that so if it might be, he may bind them together. Any how, he that accounts it to be sufficient for itself, doth not so commend it, as disparage it, not suffering it to shine brightly by the interpretation. For excellent indeed, and necessary is the gift, but it is so, when it hath one to explain what is spoken. Since the finger too is a necessary thing, but when you separate it from the other members, it will not be equally useful: and the trumpet is necessary, but when it sounds at random, it is rather an annoyance. Yea, neither shall any art come to light, without matter subject to it; nor is matter put into shape, if no form be assigned to it. Suppose then the voice to be as the subject-matter, but the distinctness as that form, which not being present, there will be no use in the material.

Ver. 10. *There are, it may be, so many kinds of voices in the world, and none of them without signification:*

1 Cor.  
14. 10.

HOMIL. i. e. so many tongues, so many voices of Scythians, Thracians,  
 XXXV. Romans, Persians, Moors, Indians, Egyptians, innumerable  
 other nations.

Ver. 11. *Therefore if I know not the meaning of the voice,*  
 (3.) *I shall be unto him that speaketh a barbarian.* "For suppose not," saith he, "that this happens only in our case; rather in all one may see this taking place: so that I do not say this to disparage the voice, but to signify, that to me it is useless, as long as it is not intelligible." Next that he may not render the accusation unpalatable, he makes his charge alike for the two, saying, *He shall be unto me a barbarian, and I to him.* Not from the nature of the voice, but from our ignorance. Seest thou how by little and little he draws men to that which is akin to the subject. Which is his use to do, to fetch his examples from afar, and to end with what more properly belongs to the matter. For having spoken of a pipe and harp, wherein is much that is wanting, and that is unprofitable, he comes to the trumpet, a thing more useful; next, from that he proceeds to the very voice itself. So also before, when he was discoursing to shew that it was not forbidden the Apostles to receive, beginning first with husbandmen, and shepherds, and soldiers, then he brought the discourse on to that which is nearer to the subject, the priests in the old covenant.

But do thou, I pray, consider, how every where he hath given diligence to free the gift from censure, and to bring round the charge to the receivers of it. For he said not, "I shall be a barbarian," but, *unto him that speaketh, a barbarian.* And again, he did not say, "he that speaketh shall be a barbarian," but, *he that speaketh shall be a barbarian unto me*<sup>1</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> ὁ λαλῶν  
 λαλῶν,  
 he that  
 speaketh  
 unto me.

[5.] "What then must be done?" saith he. Why, so far from disparaging, one ought to recommend and to teach it; as indeed himself also doth. Since after he had accused and rebuked it, and shewn its unprofitableness, he proceeds to counsel them; saying,

Ver. 12. *Even so ye, forasmuch as ye are zealous of spiritual gifts, seek that ye may excel to the edifying of the Church.*

Seest thou his aim every where, how he looks to one thing continually and in all cases, the general utility, the profiting



the Church; laying this down as a kind of rule? And he did not say, "that ye may obtain the gifts," but, *that ye may excel*, i. e. that ye may even possess them in great abundance. Thus, so far am I from wishing you not to possess them, that I even wish you to abound in them, only so that ye handle them with a view to the common advantage. And how this same purpose may be answered, he declares, and saith by way of inference,

Ver. 13. *Wherefore let him that speaketh in an unknown tongue, pray that he may interpret.*

Ver. 14. *For if I pray in an unknown tongue, my spirit prayeth, but my understanding is unfruitful.*

Ver. 15. *What is it then? I will pray with the spirit, and I will pray with the understanding also: I will sing with the spirit, and I will sing with the understanding also.*

Here he intimates that it is in their own power to obtain the gift. For *let him pray*, saith he, i. e. "let him contribute his own part," since if thou ask diligently, thou wilt surely receive. Ask accordingly not to have a gift of an unknown tongue only, but also of interpretation, that thou mayest become useful unto all, and not shut up the gift in thyself alone. *For if I pray in an unknown tongue*, saith he, *my spirit prayeth, but my understanding is unfruitful*. Seest thou how by degrees bringing his argument to a point, he signifies, that not to others only is such an one useless, but also to himself; if at least *his understanding is unfruitful*? For if a man should speak only in the Persian, or any other foreign tongue, and not understand what he saith, then of course to himself also will he be thenceforth a barbarian, not to another only, from not knowing the meaning of the sound. For there were of old many who had also a gift of prayer, together with some unknown tongue; and they prayed, and the tongue spake, either in the Persian or Latin language, uttering a prayer: but their understanding knew not what was spoken. Wherefore also he said, *If I pray in an unknown tongue, my spirit prayeth*, i. e. the gift which is given me, and which moves my tongue, *but my understanding is unfruitful*.

What then may that be which is best in itself, and doth good? And how ought one to act, or what request of God? To pray, *both with the spirit*, i. e. the gift, and *with the understanding*<sup>1</sup>. Wherefore also he said, *I will pray with* <sup>1</sup> *standing*.



HOMIL. *the spirit, and I will pray with the understanding also:*  
XXXV. *I will sing with the spirit, and I will sing with the understanding also.*

[6.] He signifieth the same thing again here also, that both the tongue may speak, and the understanding may not be ignorant of the things spoken. For except this be so, there will also be another confusion.

Ver. 16. For, *besides*, saith he, *when thou shalt bless with the spirit, how shall he that occupieth the room of the unlearned, say the Amen at thy giving of thanks? seeing he understandeth not what thou sayest?*

Ver. 17. *For thou verily givest thanks well, but the other is not edified.*

Observe how again here he brings his stone to the plumb-line<sup>1</sup>, every where seeking the edification of the Church. Now by *the unlearned*<sup>2</sup> he means the layman, and signifies that he also endures no little loss, when he is unable to say the Amen. And what he saith is this: "if thou shalt bless in a barbarian tongue, not knowing what thou sayest, nor able to interpret, the layman cannot respond the Amen. For not hearing the words, *for ever and ever*, which are at the end<sup>3</sup>, he doth not say the Amen." Then again, comforting him concerning this, that he might not seem to hold the gift too cheap; the same kind of remark as he made above, that *he speaketh mysteries, and speaketh unto God, and edifieth himself, and prayeth with the spirit*, intending no little comfort from these things, this also he utters here, saying, "*for thou indeed givest thanks well*, since thou speakest being moved by the Spirit; but the other hearing nothing, nor knowing what is said, stands there, receiving no great advantage by it."

(4.) [7.] Further, because he had attacked the possessors of this gift, as though they had no such great thing; that he might not seem to hold them cheap, as being himself destitute of it, see what he saith:

<sup>3</sup> λαλῶν. Ver. 18. *I thank God, speaking<sup>3</sup> with tongues more than ye all.*  
rec. vers. And this he doth also in another place; intending, namely,  
I speak. to take away the advantages of Judaism, and to shew that

<sup>1</sup> i. e. at the end of the Long Thanksgiving in that part of the Service for the Holy Eucharist, which is called the Anaphora. Vid. Brett's Liturgies, 1828, p. 9, 16, 37, &c.

henceforth they are nothing, he begins by intimating that <sup>1 Cor. 14. 19.</sup> himself had been endowed with them, yea, and that in very great excess; and then he calls them *loss*, thus saying, *If any man thinketh that he hath confidence in the flesh, I more: circumcised the eighth day, of the stock of Israel, of the tribe of Benjamin, an Hebrew of the Hebrews; as touching the law, a Pharisee; concerning zeal, persecuting the Church; touching the righteousness which is in the law, blameless*<sup>1</sup>. And then, having signified himself to have the <sup>1 Philip. 3. 4-7.</sup> advantage of all, he saith, *But what things were gain to me, those I counted loss for Christ*. So also he doth here, saying, *I speak with tongues more than ye all*. Do not ye therefore glory, as though ye only had the gift. For I also possess it, yea more than ye.

Ver. 19. *Yet in the Church I had rather speak five words with my understanding, that I might teach others also.*

What is that, *speak with my understanding, that I might teach others also*? "Understanding what I say," and "words which I can both interpret to others, and speak intelligently, and teach the hearers." *Than ten thousand words in an unknown tongue*. Wherefore? *That I may teach others*, saith he. For the one hath but display only; the other, great utility: this being what he every where seeks, I mean the common profit. And yet the gift of tongues was strange, but that of prophecy familiar, and ancient, and heretofore given to many; this on the contrary then first given: howbeit it was not much cared for by him. Wherefore neither did he employ it; not because he had it not, but because he always sought the more profitable things: being as he was free from all vain-glory, and considering one thing only, how he might render the hearers better.

[8.] And here is the account of the faculty he had of seeing the expedient both to himself and to all others: viz. because he was free from vain-glory. Since he assuredly that is enslaved by it, so far from discerning what is good to others, will not even know his own.

Such was Simon, who, because he looked to vain-glory, did not even see his own advantage. Such also were the Jews, who because of this<sup>2</sup>, pledged their own salvation to <sup>1</sup> *gei-* the devil. Hence also did idols spring, and by this madness <sup>100.</sup> did the heathen philosophers excite themselves, and make shipwreck in their false doctrines. And observe the per-

**HOMIL.** verseness of this passion: how because of it some of them  
**XXXV.** also made themselves poor, others were eager about wealth.

So potent is its tyranny, that it prevails even in direct contraries. Thus one man is vain of chastity, and contrariwise another of adultery; and this man of justice, and another of injustice; so of luxury and fasting, modesty and rashness, riches and poverty. I say poverty: since some of them that were without, when it was in their power to receive, for admiration's sake forbore to receive. But not so the Apostles: that they were pure from vain-glory, they shewed by their doings: in that, when some were calling them Gods, and were ready to sacrifice unto them oxen with garlands, they did not merely just forbid what was doing, but they even rent their clothes<sup>1</sup>. And after they had set the lame man upright, when all with open mouths were beholding them, they said, *Why look ye so earnestly on us, as though by our own power*

<sup>1</sup> Acts  
14. 13,  
14.

<sup>2</sup> Acts 3.  
14. *¶* *ἐκ  
αὐτῶν  
οὐκ ἔστι  
οὐκ.*

*we had made this man to walk?* And those, among men who admired poverty, chose to themselves a state of poverty: but these among persons who despised poverty, and gave praise to wealth. And these, if they received aught, ministered to the needy. Thus, not vain-glory, but benevolence, was the motive of all they did. But those quite the reverse; as enemies and pests of our common nature, and no otherwise, did they such things. Thus one sunk all his goods in<sup>3</sup> the sea for no good purpose, imitating fools and madmen: and another let all his land go to sheep common<sup>c</sup>. Thus they did every thing for vain-glory. But not so the Apostles; rather they both received what was given them, and distributed to the needy with so great liberality, that they even lived in continual hunger. But if they had been enamoured of glory, they would not have practised this, the receiving and distributing, for fear of some suspicion arising against them. For he who throws away his own for glory, will much more refuse to receive the things of others, that he may not be accounted to stand in need of others, nor incur any suspicion. But these thou seest both ministering to the poor, and themselves begging for them. So truly were they more loving than any fathers.

[9.] And observe also their laws, how moderate, and freed from

<sup>b</sup> Aristippus. See Hor. Sat. ii. 3. 100;  
Cic. de Invent. ii. 58.

<sup>c</sup> Democritus. See Hor. Ep. i. 12.  
19.



all vain-glory. Thus: *Having, saith he, food and raiment, let us be therewith content*<sup>1</sup>. Not like him of Sinope<sup>d</sup>, who, clothed in rags, and living in a cask to no good end, astonished many, but profited none: whereas Paul did none of these things; (for neither had he an eye to ostentation;) but was both clothed in ordinary apparel with all decency, and lived in a house continually, and displayed all exactness in the practice of all other virtue; which the Cynic despised, living impurely, and publicly disgracing himself, and dragged away by his mad passion for glory. For if any one ask the reason of his living in a cask, he will find no other, but vain-glory alone. But Paul also paid rent for the house wherein he abode at Rome. Although he who was able to do things far severer, could much more have had strength for this. But he looked not to glory, that savage monster, that fearful demon, that pest of the world, that poisonous viper. Since, as that animal tears through the womb of her parent with her teeth, so also this passion tears in pieces him that begets it.

[10.] By what means then may one find a remedy for this manifold distemper? By bringing forward those that have trodden it under foot, and with an eye to their image, so ordering one's own life. For so the patriarch Abraham:—nay, let none accuse me of tautology, if I often make mention of him, and on all occasions: this being that which most of all shews him wonderful, and deprives them that refuse to imitate him of all excuse. For, if we exhibit one doing well in this particular, and another in that, some one might say that virtue is hardly to be attained; for that it is scarcely possible to succeed in all those things together, whereof each one of the saints hath only performed a part. But when one and the same person is found to possess all, what excuse will they have, who after the law and grace are not able to attain unto the same measure with them that were before the law and grace? How then did this Patriarch overcome and subdue this monster, when he had a dispute with his nephew<sup>2</sup>? For so it was, that coming off worst, and losing the first share, he was not vexed. But ye know that in such matters the shame is worse than the loss to the vulgar-minded, and particularly when a person having all in his own power,

<sup>d</sup> Diogenes the Cynic.

<sup>1</sup> Cor.

<sup>14. 19.</sup>

<sup>1</sup> 1 Tim.

<sup>6. 8.</sup>

<sup>2</sup> Gen.

<sup>13. 8.</sup>



**HOMIL.** as he had then, and having been the first to give honour, was  
**XXXV.** not honoured in return. Nevertheless none of these things vexed him, but he was content to receive the second place, and when wronged by the young man, himself old, an uncle by a nephew, he was not indignant, nor took it ill, but loved him equally, and ministered to him. Again, having been victorious in that great and terrible fight, and having mightily put to flight the Barbarians<sup>1</sup>, he doth not add show to victory, nor erect a trophy. For he wished to save only, not to exhibit himself. Again, he entertained strangers, yet did he not here act vaingloriously, but himself both ran to them, and paid them worship, not as though he were giving, but receiving a benefit, and he calleth them lords, without knowing who they are who are come to him, and presents his wife in the place of a handmaiden<sup>2</sup>. And in Egypt too before this, when he had appeared so extraordinary a person, and had received back this very woman, his wife, and had enjoyed so great honour<sup>3</sup>, he sheweth it to no man. And though the inhabitants of the place called him prince, he himself even laid down the price of the sepulchre<sup>4</sup>. And when he sent to betroth a wife for his son, he gave no command to speak in high and dignified terms of him<sup>5</sup>, but merely to bring the bride.

<sup>1</sup> Gen.  
14.

<sup>2</sup> Gen.  
18.

<sup>3</sup> Gen.  
12.

<sup>4</sup> Gen.  
23. 6.

<sup>5</sup> Gen.  
24.

[11.] Wilt thou examine also the conduct of those under grace, when from every side great was the glory of the doctrine flowing round them, and wilt thou see then also this passion cast out? Consider, I pray, this same Apostle, who speaks these things, how he ever ascribes the whole to God, how of his sins he makes mention continually, but of his good deeds never, unless perchance it should be needful to correct the disciples; and even if he be compelled to do this, he calls the matter folly, and yields the first place to Peter, and is not ashamed to labour with Priscilla and Aquila, and every where he is eager to shew himself lowly, not in the market place, nor stately walking, carrying crowds with him, but setting himself down among the obscure. Wherefore also he said, *but his bodily presence is weak*<sup>6</sup>, i. e. easy to be despised, and in not being accompanied with display. And again, *I pray that ye do not evil, not that we may appear approved*. And what marvel, if he despise this glory? seeing that he despises

<sup>6</sup> 2 Cor.  
10. 10.

the glory of heaven, and the kingdom, and hell, for that which was pleasing unto Christ: for he wishes himself to be accursed from Christ, for the glory of Christ. For if he saith that he is willing to suffer this for the Jews' sake, he saith it on this account, that none of those without understanding might think to take to himself the promises, made to them. If therefore he were ready to pass by those things, what marvel is it, if he despise human things?

1 Cor.  
14. 19.

[12.] But the men of our time are overwhelmed by all things, not by desire of glory only, but also on the other hand, by insult, and fear of dishonour. Thus, should any one praise, it would puff thee up, and if he blame, it would cast thee down. And as weak bodies are by common accidents injured, so also souls which grovel on earth. For such not poverty alone, but even wealth destroys, not grief only, but likewise joy, and prosperity more than adversity. For poverty compels to be wise, but wealth leads on oftentimes into some great evil. And as men in a fever are hard to be pleased in any thing, so also they that are depraved in mind on every side receive hurt.

Knowing therefore these things, let us not shun poverty, let us not admire riches: but prepare our soul to be sufficient for all estates. For so any one building an house, doth not consider how neither rain may descend, nor sun-beam light on it, (for this were impossible,) but how it may be made capable of enduring all. And he again that builds a ship, doth not fashion and design any thing to keep waves from breaking against it, or any tempest from rising in the sea: (for this too were impossible :) but that the sides of the ship may be ready to meet all. And again, he that cares for the body doth not look to this, that there may be no inequality in the temperature, but that the body may easily endure all these things. So accordingly let us act in respect of the soul, and neither be anxious to fly poverty, nor to become rich, but to regulate each of them for our own safety.

Wherefore letting alone these things, let us render our soul meet both for wealth and poverty. For although no calamity, such as man is subject to, befall, which is for the most part impossible, even thus, better is he that seeks not wealth, but knows how to bear all things easily, than he that is always rich. And why? First, such an one hath his safety from within, but the

HOMIL.  
XXXV. other from without. And as he is a better soldier, who trusts to his bodily powers and skill in fighting, than he that hath his strength in his armour only; so he that relies on his wealth, compared with him that is fenced in by his virtue, is inferior. Secondly, because even if he do not fall into poverty, it is impossible that he should be without trouble. For wealth hath many storms and troubles; but not so virtue, but pleasure only and safety. Yea, and it puts a man out of the reach of them that lay snares for him, but wealth quite the contrary, rendering him easy to be attacked and taken. And as among animals, stags and hares are of all most easily taken through their natural timidity, but the wild boar, and the bull, and the lion, would not lightly throw themselves in the way of the liers-in-wait; just so one may see in the case of the rich, and of them that live voluntarily in poverty. The one is like the lion and the bull, the other like the stag and the hare. For whom doth not the rich man fear? Are there not robbers, potentates, enviers, informers? And why speak I of robbers and informers, in a case where a man suspects his very domestics?

[13.] And why say I, "when he is alive?" Not even when dead is he freed from the villainy of the robbers, nor hath death power to set him in safety, but the evil doers spoil him even when dead, so dangerous a thing is wealth. For we see that not only do they dig into houses, but they even burst open tombs, and coffins. What then can be more wretched than this man, since not even death can furnish him with this security, but that wretched body, even when deprived of life, is not freed from the evils of life, those that commit such wickedness hastening to war even with dust and ashes, and much more grievously than when it was alive? For then, it might be, entering his storehouse, they would remove his chests, but abstain from his person, and would not take so much as to strip the body itself; but now the accursed hands of the tomb-breakers do not even abstain from these, but move and turn it about, and with much cruelty insult it. For after it hath been committed to the ground, having stripped it both of its covering of earth and of that which its grave-clothes constitute, they leave it thus to be cast out.

What foe then so deadly as wealth, which destroys both the



very soul of the living, and insults the very body of the dead, <sup>1 Cor.</sup> and suffers it not even to lie, buried in the ground, which <sup>14. 19.</sup> is common even to the condemned, and to them that have been taken in the vilest crimes? For of them the legislators having exacted the punishment of death, inquire no further; but of these, wealth even after death exacts a most bitter punishment, exposing them naked and unburied, a dreadful and pitiable spectacle: since even those who suffer this after sentence, and by the anger of their judges, do not suffer so grievously as these. For they indeed remain unburied the first and second day, and so are committed to the ground; but these, when they have been committed to the ground, are then stripped naked and insulted. And if the robbers depart without taking the coffin too, there is still no thanks to their wealth, but in this case also to their poverty. For she it is that guards it. Whereas most assuredly, had we intrusted wealth with even so much as this, and leaving off to form it of stone, had forged it of gold, we should have lost this also.

So faithless a thing is wealth; which belongs not so much to them that have it, as to them that endeavour to seize it. So that it is but a superfluous argument which aims to shew that wealth is an irresistible sort of evil, seeing that not even on the day of their death do its possessors obtain security. And yet who is not reconciled with the departed, whether it be wild beast, or demon, or whatever else? The very sight being enough to bend even one who is altogether iron, and quite past feeling. Wherefore, you know, when one sees a corpse, though it be an enemy public or private whom he sees, yet he weeps for him as one of his dearest friends; and his wrath is extinguished with life, and pity is brought in. And it would be impossible, in time of mourning and carrying out to burial, to distinguish an enemy from him who is not such. So greatly do all men revere their common nature, and the customs which have been introduced respecting it. But wealth not even on obtaining this, remits her anger against her possessors; nay, it renders them that have been no way wronged enemies of the dead; if at least to strip the dead body, be an act of persons very bitter and hostile. And nature for her part reconciles even his enemies to him then: but wealth makes foes of them that



HOMIL.  
XXXV. have nothing to accuse him of, and cruelly intreats the body in its utter desolation. And yet in that case there are many things which might lead one to pity, the fact of its being a corpse, its inability to move, and tending to earth and corruption, the absence of any one to help : but none of these things soften those accursed wretches, because of the tyranny they are under from their base cupidity. For the passion of covetousness, like some ruthless tyrant, is at hand, injoining on them those inhuman commands, and having made wild beasts of them, so brings them to the tombs. Yea, like wild beasts, attacking the dead, they would not even abstain from their flesh, if their limbs were any way useful unto them. Such is our enjoyment of wealth ; to be insulted even after death, and deprived of sepulture, whereof even the most desperate criminals partake.

[14.] Are we still then, tell me, to be fond of so grievous an enemy ? Nay, I beseech you, nay, my brethren ! but let us fly from it without turning to look : and if it come into our hands, let us not keep it within, but bind it fast by the hands of the poor. For these are the bonds which have more power to hold it, and from those treasures it will never more escape ; and so this faithless one abides for the time to come faithful, tractable, tame, the right hand of Mercy producing this effect on it.

As I have said then, if it ever come to us, let us hand it over to her : but if it come not, let us not seek after it, nor fret ourselves, nor count its possessors happy ; for what sort of a notion of happiness is this ? Unless thou wouldest also say that those who fight with beasts are to be envied, because those high-priced animals are shut up and reserved by the proposers of such contests for themselves : not daring however themselves to approach, or to touch them, but fearing and trembling because of them. Something like this, I say, is the case of the wealthy, when they have shut up their wealth in their treasures as it were some savage beast, and day by day receive from it innumerable wounds ; in this latter unlike to the beasts : since they, when thou leadest them out, then, and not till then, hurt such as meet them : but this, when it is shut up and preserved, then destroys its possessors and hoarders.

*double Blessing on a right Management of it.* 503

But let us make this beast tame. And it will be tame, if <sup>1 Cor.</sup> we do not shut it up, but give it into the hands of all who are 14. 19. in need. So shall we reap from this quarter the greatest blessings, both living in the present life with safety and a good hope, and in the day that is to come standing with boldness: to which may we all attain, through the grace and mercy, &c. &c.

## HOMILY XXXVI.

---

1 COR. xiv. 20.

*Brethren, be not children in understanding; howbeit in malice be ye children, but in understanding be men.*

AS might be expected, after his long argument and demonstration he adopts a more vehement style, and abundance of rebuke; and mentions an example suited to the subject. For children too are wont to gape after trifles, and to be fluttered, but of things very great they have not so much admiration. Since then these also having the gift of tongues, which was the lowest of all, thought they had the whole; therefore he saith, *Be not children*, i. e. be not without understanding where ye ought to be considerate, but there be ye childlike and simple, where unrighteousness is, where vain-glory, where pride. For he that is a babe in wickedness, ought also to be wise. Since as wisdom with wickedness would not be wisdom, so also simplicity with folly would not be simplicity, it being requisite both in simplicity to avoid folly, and in wisdom wickedness. For as neither bitter nor sweet medicines in excess do good, so neither doth simplicity by itself, nor wisdom: and this is why Christ injoining us to mix both said, *Be ye wise as serpents, and harmless as doves*<sup>1</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> Matt.  
10. 16.

But what is it to be a babe in wickedness? Not even to know what wickedness is: yea, such he willed them to be.

Wherefore also he said, *Fornication is positively heard of among you*<sup>2</sup>. He said not, "is done," but is *heard of*: as if he said, "ye are not without knowledge of the thing; ye have heard of it sometime." I say, he would have them both to be men and children; the one however in wickedness, but the other in wisdom. For so even the man may become a man, if he

<sup>2</sup> 1 Cor.  
5. 1.

be also a child : but as long as he is not a child in wickedness, <sup>1 Cor. 14. 25.</sup> neither will he be a man. For the crafty, instead of perfect growth, will be but a fool.

Ver. 21. *For in the law it is written, With men of other tongues and other lips will I speak unto this people, and yet for all that will they not hear me, saith the Lord.*

Yet surely it is no where written in the Law, but as I said before, he calls always the whole of the Old Testament, the Law : both the prophets, and the historical books. And he brings forward his testimony from Esaias the prophet, again covertly detracting from the glory of the gift, for their profit ; nevertheless even thus he states it with a signification of honour. For the expression, *not for all that*, hath force to point out, that the miracle was enough to astonish them ; and if they did not believe, the fault was theirs. And wherefore did God work it, if they were not to believe ? That He might in every case appear to do His part.

[2.] Having shewn then even from the prophecy, that the sign in question is not of great use, he adds,

Ver. 22. *Wherefore tongues are for a sign, not to them that believe, but to them that believe not : but prophesying serveth not for them that believe not, but for them which believe.*

Ver. 23. *If therefore the whole Church be come together into one place, and all speak with tongues, and there come in those that are unlearned, or unbelievers, will they not say that ye are mad ?*

Ver. 24. *But if all prophesy, and there come in one that believeth not, or one unlearned, he is convinced of all, he is judged of all :*

Ver. 25. *And thus are the secrets of his heart made manifest ; and so, falling down on his face, he will worship God, and report that God is in you of a truth.*

Great in this place is the difficulty which one seems to find arising from what is said. For if tongues are for a sign to them that believe not, how saith he, if they that believe not should see you speaking with tongues, they will say that *ye are mad* ? And if prophecy be *not for them that believe not, but for them that believe*, how shall also the unbelievers gain thereby ?

*For if there come in, saith he, when ye are prophesying, one that believeth not, he is convinced of all, and judged.*



HOMIL.  
XXXVI.

And not only this, but also after this another question hence springs up: since the tongue will appear on the contrary greater than the prophecy. For if the tongues are for a sign to them that believe not, but prophecy to them that believe, that which draws in aliens, and makes them of the household, is greater than that which regulates those of the household. What then is the meaning of that expression? Nothing difficult, nor obscure, nor contrary to what went before, but rather very agreeable to it, if we give heed: viz. that prophecy is suitable to both, but the foreign tongue not so. Wherefore having said of the unknown tongue, *it is for a sign*, he adds, *not to them that believe, but to them that believe not*, and to them *for a sign*, i. e. for astonishment, not so much for instruction.

"But in the case of prophecy too," saith some one, "he did the very same thing, saying, *but prophesying serveth not for them that believe not, but for them which believe*. For the believer hath no need to see a sign, but requires only teaching and catechizing. "How then sayest thou," saith he, "that prophecy is of use to both, when Paul saith, *not to them that believe not, but to them which believe?*" If thou wilt accurately examine, thou wilt understand what is said. For he said not, "prophecy is not useful to them that believe not," but, "*is not for a sign*, as the unknown tongue," i. e. it is unprofitable: nor is the tongue any way useful to them that believe not; for its only work is, to astonish, and to confound; the word *sign* being one of those which may be taken two

<sup>1</sup> Ps. 86. ways: as when he saith, *shew me a sign*<sup>1</sup>, he adds, *for good*;

<sup>17</sup> and again, *I am become as it were a monster unto many*<sup>1</sup>,

<sup>7</sup> i. e. a sign.

(2.) And to shew thee that he introduced the term *sign* here, not as a thing which of course did some good, he added that which resulted from it. And what was this? *They will say*, saith he, *that ye are mad*. This however not from the nature of the sign, but from their folly. But when thou hearest of unbelievers, do not suppose that the same persons are in every case intended, but at one time they which are incurably diseased, and abide uncorrected, and at another they which may be changed; such as were they who in the times of the Apostles admire the mighty things of God which they hear

of; such as in the case of Cornelius. His meaning accordingly is this; that prophecy avails both among them that believe not, and among them that believe: as to the unknown tongue, when heard by the unbelieving and inconsiderate, instead of profiting by it, they rather deride the utterers, as madmen. For, in fact, it is to them but for a sign, i. e. in order to astonish them merely; whereas they who had understanding used also to profit by it: with a view to which the sign was given. Even as then there were not only certain who accused them of drunkenness, but many also admired them, as relating the wonderful works of God. It appears then that the mockers were those without understanding. Wherefore also Paul did not simply say, *they will say that ye are mad*, but added, *unlearned and unbelievers*.

But prophecy is not for a sign merely, but is also suitable and useful for faith, and for profit unto both. And this, if not directly, yet in the sequel he more clearly explained, saying, *he is convinced of all. For if all prophecy, saith he, and there come in one that believeth not, or unlearned, he is convinced of all; he is judged of all; and thus are the secrets, of his heart made manifest; and so, falling down on his face he will worship God, and report that God is in you of a truth*.

So that not in this only is prophecy greater, in its availing with each class<sup>1</sup>, but also in its attracting the more shameless<sup>1 i. e. by definition</sup> of the unbelievers. For it was not the same wonder, when Peter convicted<sup>2</sup> Sapphira, which was a work of prophecy,<sup>2 i. e. by definition</sup> and when he spake with tongues: but in the former case all shrank into themselves; whereas, when he spake with tongues, he got the credit of being even beside himself.

[3.] Having said then, that the unknown tongue profited not, and having again qualified<sup>3</sup> this statement by turning the charge upon the Jews, he proceeds to signify that it even doth injury. "And wherefore was it given?" That it might go forth with interpretation: since without this, it hath even the contrary effect among them that are without understanding. For if, saith he, *all speak with tongues, and there come in unbelievers or unlearned, they will say that ye are mad*; as indeed even the Apostles incurred the suspicion of being drunken: for *these men*, it saith, *are full of new wine*<sup>4</sup>:<sup>4 Acts 2. 13.</sup> but it is not the fault of the sign, but of their unskilfulness;

HOMIL.  
XXXVI.

therefore he added, *unlearned and unbelievers*, to shew that the notion belongs to their ignorance and want of faith; for, as I before said, his object is to rank that gift not among things that are disparaged, but among those which do not greatly profit, and this, in order to repress them, and bring them to a necessity of seeking for an interpreter. For since the greater part looked not to this, but made use of it for display and rivalry, this is what he especially withdraws them from, intimating that their credit is injured, they bringing on themselves a suspicion of madness. And this especially is what Paul continually attempts to establish, when he wants to lead men away from any thing: he shews that the person suffers loss in respect of those very things which he desires.

And do thou accordingly likewise: if thou wouldest lead men away from pleasure, shew that the thing is bitter: if thou wouldest withdraw them from vain-glory, shew that the thing is full of dishonour: thus also was Paul used to do. When he would tear away the rich from their love of money, he said not merely that wealth is a hurtful thing, but also that it casts into temptations. *For they that will be rich,* saith he, *fall into temptation*<sup>1</sup>. Thus, since it seems to deliver from temptations, he attributes to it the contrary of that which the rich supposed. Others again held fast by the wisdom that is without, as though by it establishing Christ's doctrine; he signifies that not only it gives no aid to the cross, but even makes it void. They held to going to law before strangers, thinking it unmeet to be judged by their own, as if those without were wiser: he points out that going to law before them that are without, is shameful. They clave to things offered in sacrifice to idols, as displaying perfect knowledge: he intimates that this is a mark of imperfect knowledge, not to know what economy to practise in the things which concern our neighbours. So also here, because they were wild<sup>2</sup> about this gift of tongues, through their love of glory, he signifies that this on the other hand more than any thing brings shame upon them, not only depriving them of glory, but also involving them in a suspicion of madness. But he did not at once say this, but having spoken very many things before, when he had made

<sup>1</sup> 1 Tim.  
6. 9.

<sup>2</sup> *Irre-*  
*gula-*

his discourse acceptable, then he brings in that topic so very <sup>1 Cor. 14. 25.</sup> contrary to their opinion. And this in fact is no more than the common rule; that he who intends thoroughly to shake a deep-rooted opinion, and to turn men round to its contrary, must not at once state the opposites: otherwise he will be ridiculous in the eyes of them that are preoccupied by the contrary conviction. Since that which is very much beside expectation, cannot be from the beginning, easily received, but you must first well undermine by other arguments, and then give it the contrary turn.

Thus for example he did, when discoursing of marriage: (3.) I mean, since many turned their minds to it as a thing which brings rest, and he wished to intimate that the abstaining from marriage was rest; if he had said this at once, he would not so easily have made it acceptable: whereas now, having stated it after much other matter, and timing its introduction exactly, he strongly touched the hearers. This also he did in respect of virginity. For before this having said much, and after this again, at last he saith, *I spare you*, and, *I would have you without care*<sup>1</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. 7. 28, 32.

This then he doth in respect of the tongues, shewing that they not only deprive of glory, but also bring shame upon those who have them in the eyes of the unbelievers. But prophecy, on the contrary, is both free from reproach among the unbelievers, and hath very great credit and usefulness. For none will say in regard to prophesying, *they are mad*; nor will any one deride them that prophesy; but, on the contrary, will be astonished at, and admire them. For *he is convinced of all*, i. e. the things which he hath in his heart, are brought forward, and shewn unto all: now it is not the same thing for any one to come in and see one speaking in Persian, and another in Syriac, and to come in and hear the secrets of his own mind; as whether he cometh in as a tempter, and with evil mind, or sincerely; or that such and such a thing hath been done by him, and such another designed. For this is much more awful, and more profitable than the other. For this cause therefore, whereas of the tongues he saith, *ye are mad*; not however affirming this of himself, but of their judgment: i. e. *they will say*, saith he, *that ye are mad*; here, on the contrary, he



HONIL. makes use both of the verdict of the facts\*, and that of those  
 XXXVI. who are the objects of the benefit. *For he is convinced of all, saith he, he is judged of all: and thus are the secrets of his heart made manifest, and so falling down on his face he will worship God, reporting that God is in you of a truth.* Seest thou that this is not capable of two interpretations: how in the former case what is done may be doubted of, and here and there an unbeliever might ascribe it to madness? whereas here there will be no such thing, but he will both wonder and worship, first making a confession by his deeds, and then by his words also. Thus also Nebuchadnezzar worshipped God, saying, *Of a truth, your God, He is the God that revealeth secrets, seeing thou couldest reveal this*

<sup>1</sup> Dan. 2. *secret*<sup>1</sup>. Seest thou the might of prophecy, how it changed that savage one, and brought him under instruction, and introduced him to faith?

[4.] Ver. 26. *How is it then, brethren? When ye come together, every one of you hath a psalm, hath a doctrine, hath a tongue, hath a revelation, hath an interpretation. Let all things be done unto edifying.*

Seest thou the foundation and the rule of Christianity? how, as it is the artificer's work to build, so it is the Christian's to profit his neighbours in all things.

But since he had vehemently run down the gift; lest it might seem to be superfluous, for with a view to pull down their pride and no more, he did this:—again he reckons it with the other gifts, saying, *hath a psalm, hath a doctrine, hath a tongue.* For of old they used also to make psalms by a gift, and to teach by a gift. Nevertheless, “let all these look to one thing,” saith he, “the correction of their neighbour: let nothing be done at random. For if thou comest not to edify thy brother, why dost thou come here at all? In fact, I do not make much account of the difference of the gifts. One thing concerns me, one thing is my desire, to do all things *unto edifying.*” Thus also he that hath the lesser gift, will outrun him that hath the greater, if this be not wanting. Yea, therefore are the gifts bestowed, that each

\* i. e. the actions of the man's life, and his conscience, which answers to the prophecy.

might be edified; since unless this take place, the gift will rather turn to the condemnation of the receiver. For what, <sup>1 Cor. 14. 26.</sup> tell me, is the use of prophesying? What is the use of raising the dead, when there is none who profits by it? But if this be the end of the gifts, and if it be possible to effect it in another way without gifts, boast not thyself on the score of the signs, nor do thou bewail thyself, to whom the gifts are denied.

[5.] Ver. 27. *And if any man speak in an unknown tongue, let it be by two, or at the most by three, and that by course; and let one interpret.*

Ver. 28. *But if there be no interpreter, let him keep silence in the Church; and let him speak to himself, and to God.*

What sayest thou, tell me? Having spoken so much of tongues, that the gift is a thing unprofitable, a thing superfluous, if it have no interpreter, dost thou command again to speak with tongues? I do not command, saith he, neither do I forbid; as when he saith, *if any of them that believe not bid you to a feast, and ye be disposed to go*, he saith it not laying down a law for them to go, but not hindering them: so likewise here. *And let him speak to himself and to God.* If he endure not to be silent, saith he, but is so ambitious and vain-glorious, *let him speak by himself*<sup>and</sup>. And thus, by the very fact of so permitting, he greatly <sup>laurels.</sup> checked and put them to shame. Which he doth also elsewhere, discoursing of converse with a wife, and saying, *But this I say through your incontinency.* But not so did he speak, when he was discoursing of prophecy. How then? In a tone of command and legislation: *Let the prophets speak, two, or three.* And he no where here seeks the interpreter, nor doth he stop the mouth of him that prophesies, as under the former head, saying, *If there be no interpreter, let him keep silence*: because in fact he who speaks in a tongue, hath not the command of himself. Wherefore if any hath both gifts, let him speak. But if he have not, yet wish to speak, let him do so with the interpreter's aid. For the prophet is an interpreter, but of God; whereas thou art of man. *But if there be no interpreter, let him keep silence*: for nothing ought to be done superfluously,

HOMIL.  
XXXVI. nothing for ambition. Only let him speak to himself, and to God; i. e. mentally, or quietly, and without noise: at least, if he will speak. For this is not surely the tone of one making a law, but it may be of one who shames them more even by his permission; as when he saith, *but if any hunger, let him eat at home*: and seeming to give permission, he touches them hereby the more sharply. "For ye come not together for this purpose," saith he, "that ye may shew that ye have a gift, but that ye may edify the hearers;" which also he before said, *Let all things be done unto edifying*.

[6.] Ver. 29. *Let the prophets speak, two, or three, and let the other judge.*

No where hath he added, *for the most part*, as in the case of the tongues. And what is this that he saith? intimating that neither is prophecy sufficient in itself, if at least he permitteth the judgment to others. Nay, surely it is quite sufficient: and this is why he did not stop the mouth of the prophet, as of the other, when there is no interpreter; nor, as in his case he said, *if there be no interpreter, let him keep silence*, so also in the case of the prophet, "if there be none to judge, let him not prophesy;" but he only secured the hearer; since for the satisfaction of the hearers he said this, that no diviner might throw himself in among them. For of this also at the beginning he bad them beware, when he introduced a distinction between divination and prophecy, and now he bids them discriminate and spy out the matter, so that nothing Satanic might privily enter.

Ver. 30. *If any thing be revealed to another that sitteth by, let the first hold his peace.*

Ver. 31. *For ye may all prophesy one by one, that all may learn, and all may be comforted.*

What may this be which is spoken? "If when thou prophesiest," saith he, "and art speaking, the spirit of another stir him up, be silent thenceforth." For that which he said in the case of the tongues, this also here he requires, that it should be done "by course," only in a diviner way here. For he made not use of the very expression, *by course*<sup>1</sup>, but, *if it be revealed to another*. Since what need was there further, that when the second was moved to prophesy, the first should speak? Ought they then both?

<sup>1</sup> ἀνά  
μίστος.  
v. 7.

Nay, this were profane, and would produce confusion. <sup>1 Cor. 14. 32.</sup> Ought the first? This too were out of place. For to this end when the one was speaking, the Spirit moved the other, in order that he too might say somewhat.

So then, comforting him that had been silenced, he saith, *For ye may all prophesy one by one, that all may learn, and all may be comforted.* Seest thou how again he states the reason wherefore he doeth all things? For if him that speaks with tongues he altogether forbid to speak, when he hath not an interpreter, because of the unprofitableness; reasonably also he bids restrain prophecy, if it have not this quality, but createth confusion and disturbance and unseasonable tumult.

Ver. 32. *And the spirits of the prophets are subject to the prophets.*

Seest thou how he put him to shame earnestly and fearfully? For that the man might not strive, nor be factious, he signifies that the gift itself was under subjection. For by *spirit* here, he means its actual working. But if the spirit be subject, much more thou its possessor canst not justly be contentious.

[7.] Then he signifies that this is pleasing also unto God, subjoining and saying,

Ver. 33. *For God is not the author of confusion, but of peace, as I teach in all the Churches of the saints.*

Seest thou by how many reasons he leads him to silence, and soothes him, in the act of giving way to the other? By one, and that the chief, that his part was not made null and void by such a proceeding; *for ye may all prophesy*, saith he, *one by one.* By a second, that this seems good to the Spirit Himself; *for the spirits of the prophets are subject to the prophets.* Besides these, that this is according to the mind of God; *for God*, saith he, *is not of confusion, but of peace:* and by a fourth, that in every part of the world this custom prevails, and no strange thing is enjoined upon them. For thus, saith he, *I teach in all the Churches of the saints.*

What now can be more awful than these things? For in truth the Church was a heaven then, the Spirit leading the people in all things, and moving each one of the rulers, and making him inspired. But now we retain only the symbols



HOMIL.  
XXXVI

of those gifts. For now also we speak two or three, and by course, and when one is silent, another begins. But these are only signs and memorials of those things. Wherefore when we begin to speak, the people respond, *with thy Spirit*, indicating that of old they thus used to speak, not of their own wisdom, but moved by the Spirit. But not so now: (I speak of mine own case so far.) But the present Church is like a woman who hath fallen from her former prosperous days, and in many respects retains the symbols only of that ancient prosperity; displaying indeed the repositories and caskets of her golden ornaments, but bereft of her wealth: such an one doth the present Church resemble. And I say not this in respect of gifts: for this were nothing marvellous, if it were this only: but in respect also of life and virtue. Thus the list of her widows, and the choir of her virgins, then gave great ornament to the churches: but now she is made desolate, and void, and the tokens only remain. There are indeed widows now, there are also virgins; but they retain not that adornment which women should have who prepare themselves for such wrestlings. For both the special distinction of the virgin is, the caring for the things of God alone, and the waiting on Him without distraction: and the widow's mark too should be not so much the not engaging in a second marriage, as the other things, charity to the poor, hospitality, continuing instant in prayers, all those other things, which Paul writing to Timothy requires with great exactness. One may see also the married women exhibiting among us great seemliness. But this is not the only thing required, but rather that sedulous attention to the needy, through which those women of old shone out most brightly. Not as the generality now-a-days. For then instead of gold they were clothed with the fair array of almsgiving: but now, having left off this, they are decked out on every side with cords of gold woven of the chain of their sins.

Shall I speak of another repository too, emptied of its hereditary splendour? They all met together in old time, and sang psalms in common. This we do also now. but

\* The *Anaphora*, or more solemn part of the Liturgy, begins with the *Versicle* and *Response* here alluded to, in the Clementine Liturgy, and in those of St. Mark, St. Chrysostom, St. Basil, and the Roman Missal.

then among all was there one soul and one heart: but now <sup>1 Cor.</sup>  
not in one single soul can one see that unanimity, rather great <sup>14. 33.</sup>  
is the warfare every where.

“Peace,” even now, “to all,” he that presides in the Church prays for, entering as it were into his Father’s house: but of this peace the name is frequent, but the reality no where.

[8.] Then the very houses were churches: but now the Church itself is a house, or rather worse than any house. For in a house one may see much good order: since both the mistress of the house is seated on her chair with all seemliness, and the maidens weave in silence, and each of the domestics hath his appointed task in hand. But here great is the tumult, great the confusion, and our assemblies differ in nothing from a vintner’s shop, so loud is the laughter, so great the disturbance; as in baths, as in markets, the cry and tumult is universal. And these things are here only: since elsewhere it is not permitted even to address one’s neighbour in the Church, not even if one have received back a long absent friend, but these things are done without, and very properly. For the Church is no barber’s or perfumer’s shop, nor any other merchant’s warehouse in the market-place, but a place of angels, a place of arch-angels, a palace of God, heaven itself. As therefore if one had rent the heaven and had brought thee in thither, though thou shouldest see thy father, or thy brother, thou wouldest not venture to speak, so neither here ought one to utter any other sound but those which are spiritual. For in truth the things in this place are also a heaven.

And if thou believest not, look to this table, call to mind for Whose sake it is set, and why: consider Who it is that is coming forth here; tremble with awe even before the time. For so, when one sees the throne only of a king, in heart he rises up, expecting the king’s coming forth. And do thou accordingly thrill with awe even before that thrilling moment: raise up thyself, and before thou seest the veils drawn aside, and the choir of angels marching forth, ascend thou to the very heaven.

But the uninitiated knows not these things. Well then, it is necessary with a view to him also to introduce other

<sup>b</sup> See Bingham, xiii. 8. 13; S. Chrys. 3 Hom. in Coloss. t. iv. 106. Ed. Savile.

HOMIL. XXXVI. topics. For neither towards him shall we want reasons of power to stir him up thoroughly, and cause him to soar. Thou then who knowest not these things, when thou shalt hear the prophet<sup>c</sup> saying, *Thus saith the Lord*, quit the earth, ascend thou also unto heaven, consider who it is that by him discourses with thee.

But as things are, for a buffoon who is moving laughter, or for a whorish and abandoned woman, so vast an assemblage of spectators is set, listening in entire quietness to what is spoken, and this when none commands silence<sup>d</sup>; and there is neither tumult, nor cry, nor any the least noise: but when God is speaking from heaven on subjects so awful, we behave ourselves more impudently than dogs, and even to the harlot women we pay greater respect than to God.

Doth it make your flesh creep to be told of these things? Nay then, much rather let it creep when ye do them.

[9.] That which Paul said of them that despised the poor, and feasted alone, *What, have ye not houses to eat and to drink in? or despise ye the Church of God, and shame them that have not?*<sup>e</sup>—the same allow me also to say of those who make a disturbance and hold conversations in this place. "What? have ye not houses to trifle in? or despise ye the Church of God, and corrupt those even who would be modest and quiet?" "But it is sweet and pleasant for you to converse with your friends." I do not forbid this, but let it be done in the house, in the market, in the baths. For the church is not a place of conversation, but of teaching. But now it differs not from the market; nay, if it be not too bold a word, haply not even from the stage; in such sort do the women who assemble here adorn themselves more wantonly than the unchaste who are to be found there. Accordingly we see that even hither many profligates are enticed by them; and

<sup>f</sup> 1 Cor.  
11. 22.

<sup>c</sup> Because the Catechumens and others, as it seems, were allowed to hear the Lessons read, though not to be present at what was strictly called the Communion Service. See Bingham, xiv. iii. 1.

<sup>d</sup> An allusion to the injunctions for silence used by the Deacon occasionally in the Church: see Bingham, ii. 20. 14; and the Apost. Constit. ii. 67. as quoted by him; "Let the Deacon oversee the people, that none whisper, or doze, or laugh, or nod:" and after-

wards in the time of the offering. "Let some of the Deacons observe the people, and make silence among them." Chrys. Hom. 24. on Acts, says, "Prayer is going on, and here are young persons talking and jesting with one another even while on their knees. Do thou who standest by, young or old, rebuke them, if thou seest it; reprimand them more sharply; if he take it not well, call the Deacon."

if any one is trying or intending to corrupt a woman, there is no place, I suppose, that seems to him more suitable than the church. And if any thing be to be sold or bought, the church appears more convenient than the market. For on such subjects also there is more talk here, than in the shops themselves. Or if any wish to say or to hear any scandal, you will find that this too is to be had here, more than in the forum without. And if you wish to hear any thing of political matters, or the affairs of private families, or the camp, go not to the judgment-hall, nor sit in the apothecary's shop; for here, here I say are those who report all these things more accurately; and our assemblies are any thing rather than a church.

<sup>1</sup> Cor.  
14. 33.

Can it be, that I have touched you to the quick? I for my part think not. For while ye continue in the same practices, how am I to know, that you are touched by what hath been said? Therefore I must needs handle the same topics again.

Are these things then to be endured? Are these things to be borne? We weary and distract ourselves every day, that ye may not depart without having learned something useful; and none of you goes away at all the better, but rather injured the more. Yea, and *ye come together unto condemnation*, having no longer any cloke for your sin, and ye thrust out the more modest, disturbing them with your fooleries on every side.

But what do the multitude say? "I do not hear what is read," saith one, "nor do I know what the words are which are spoken." Because thou makest a tumult and confusion, because thou comest not with a reverent soul. What sayest thou? "I know not what things are said." Well then, for this very reason oughtest thou to give heed. But if not even the obscurity stir up thy soul, much more if things were clear wouldest thou hurry them by. Yea, this is the reason why neither all things are clear, lest thou shouldest indulge indolence; nor obscure, lest thou shouldest be in despair.

<sup>1</sup> Acts 8.  
20.

And whereas that eunuch and barbarian<sup>1</sup> said none of these things, but surrounded as he was with a crowd of so important affairs, and on his journey, had a book in his hands, and was reading: dost thou, both abounding in teachers, and having others to read to thee privately<sup>2</sup>, allege to me thine excuses

<sup>2</sup> δὲ ἀνα-  
γινώσκον-  
τας, per-  
haps,  
'repeat-  
ing what  
is read in  
a lower  
tone.'



**HOMIL.** and pretexts? Knowest thou not what is said? Why then  
**XXXVI.** pray that thou mayest learn: but sure it is impossible to be ignorant of all things. For many things are of themselves evident and clear. And further, even if thou be ignorant of all, even so oughtest thou to be quiet, not to jostle out them that are attentive; that God, accepting thy quietness and thy reverence, may make the obscure things also plain. But canst thou not be silent? Well then, go out, not to become a mischief to others also.

For in truth there ought to be but one voice in the church always, even as there is but one body. Therefore both he that reads, utters his voice alone, and the Bishop himself is content to sit in silence; and he who chants, chants alone; and though all utter the response, the voice is wafted as from one mouth. And he that pronounces a homily, pronounces it alone. But when there are many, conversing on many and diverse subjects, why do we disturb you for no good? since surely unless ye thought that we are but disturbing you for no good, ye would not, in the midst of our speech on such high matters, discourse on things of no consequence.

[10.] Therefore not in your conduct only, but in your very estimation of things, there is great perversion. And ye gape after superfluities, and leaving the truth, pursue all sorts of shadows and dreams. Are not all present things a shadow and dreams, and worse than a shadow? For both before they appear, they fly away; and before they are flown, the trouble they give is much, and more than the pleasure. Let one acquire in this world and bury in the earth ever such abundance of wealth, yet when the night is past, naked he shall depart hence, and no wonder. Since they too who are rich but in a dream, on rising from their couch, have nothing of what they seemed to have while sleeping. So also are the greedy of gain: or rather not so, but in a much worse condition. For he that dreams of being rich, neither hath the money which he fancied he had, nor is any other mischief found to have accrued to him from this phantasy when he arises, but this man is both deprived of his riches, and hath also to depart, filled with the sins which arise out of them; and in his wealth having but enjoyed a phantasy, the evils resulting from his wealth he sees not in fancy any more, but

in the very truth of things : and his pleasure was in dreams,<sup>1 Cor. 14. 33.</sup> but the punishment ensuing on his pleasure turns out no more a dream, but is matter of actual experience. Yea rather, even before that punishment, even here he pays the heaviest penalty, in the very collecting of his wealth wearing into himself innumerable sadnesses, anxieties, accusations, calumnies, tumults, perturbations.

In order therefore that we may be delivered both from the dreams and from the evils that are not in dreams, instead of covetousness let us choose almsgiving, instead of rapine, mercy to mankind. For thus we shall obtain the good things both present and to come, through the grace and mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ, with Whom, to the Father, with the Holy Ghost, be glory, power, honour, now and ever, and world without end. Amen.

## HOMILY XXXVII.

---

1 COR. xiv. 34.

*Let your women keep silence in the churches: for it is not permitted unto them to speak; but to be under obedience, as also saith the law.*

HAVING abated the disturbance both from the tongues, and from the prophesyings; and having made a law to prevent confusion, that they who prophesy should be silent when another begins; he next in course proceeds to the disorder which arose from the women, rooting out their unseasonable boldness of speech: and that very opportunely. For if to them that have the gifts it is not permitted to speak inconsiderately, nor when they will, and this, though they be moved by the Spirit; much less to those women who prate idly and to no purpose. Therefore he represses their babbling, and that with much authority, and taking the law along with him, thus he sews up their mouths; not simply exhorting here, or giving counsel, but he even laying his commands on them vehemently, by the recitation of an ancient law on that subject. For having said, *Let your women keep silence in the churches*; and, *it is not permitted unto them to speak, but to be under obedience*, he added, *as also saith the law*. And where doth the law say this? *Thy desire shall be to thy husband, and he shall rule over thee*<sup>1</sup>. Seest thou the wisdom of Paul, what kind of testimony he adduced, one that not only enjoins on them silence, but silence too with fear; and with as great fear as that wherewith a maid servant ought to keep herself quiet. Wherefore also having himself said, *it is not permitted unto them to speak*, he

<sup>1</sup> Gen.  
3. 16.

added not, "but to be silent," but instead of, *to be silent*, he <sup>1 Cor.</sup> set down what is more, to wit, *to be under obedience*. And if <sup>14. 36.</sup> this be so in respect of husbands, much more in respect of teachers, and fathers, and the general assembly of the Church. "But if they are not even to speak," saith one, "nor ask a question, to what end are they to be present?" That they may hear what they ought; but the points which are questioned let them learn at home from their husbands. Wherefore also he added,

Ver. 35. *And if they will learn any thing, let them ask their husbands at home.*

Thus, "not only, as it seems, are they not allowed to speak," saith he, "at random, but not even to ask any question in the church." Now if they ought not to ask questions, much more is their speaking at pleasure contrary to law. And what may be the cause of his setting them under so great subjection? Because the woman is in some sort a weaker being, and easily carried away, and light minded. Here you see why he set over them their husbands as teachers, for the benefit of both. For so he both rendered the women orderly, and the husbands he made anxious, as having to deposit with their wives very exactly what they heard.

Further, because they supposed this to be an ornament to them, I mean their speaking in public; again he brings round the discourse to the opposite point, saying, *For it is a shame for a woman to speak in the church*. That is, first he made this out from the law of God, then from common reason, and our received custom; even as, when he was discoursing with the women about long hair, he said, *Doth not even nature herself teach you*<sup>1</sup>? And every where thou mayest find this<sup>1 c. 11.</sup> to be his manner, not only from the divine Scriptures, but<sup>14.</sup> also from the common custom, to put them to shame.

[2.] But besides these things, he also shames them by consideration of what all agreed on, and what was every where drawn out in form; which topic also here he hath set down, saying,

Ver. 36. *What? came the word of God out from you? or came it unto you only?*

Thus he brings in the other Churches also as holding this law, both abating the disturbance by consideration of the



HOMIL. novelty of the thing, and by the general voice making his saying acceptable. Wherefore also elsewhere he said, *Who shall bring you into remembrance of my ways which be in*  
xxxvii.  
<sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. *Christ, as I teach every where in all the Churches*<sup>1</sup>. And again, *God is not the author of confusion, but of peace, as in all the Churches of the saints*<sup>2</sup>. And here, *What? came the word of God out from you? or reached it unto you only?* i. e. "neither first, nor alone are ye believers, but the whole world." Which also writing to the Colossians he said, *As it bringeth forth fruit and increaseth in all the world*<sup>3</sup>, speaking of the Gospel.  
<sup>2</sup> Coloss. 1. 6.

But he turns it also in another way to the encouragement of his hearers; as when he saith, that theirs were the first fruits, and were manifest unto all. Thus, writing to the Thessalonians he said, *For from you sounded out the word of God, and in every place your faith to God-ward is spread abroad*<sup>4</sup>.  
<sup>4</sup> 1 Thes. 1. 8.  
 And again to the Romans, *Your faith is published in the whole world*<sup>5</sup>. For both are apt to shame and stir up, as well the being commended of others, as that they have others partakers in their judgment. Wherefore also here he saith; *What? came the word of God out from you? or reached it unto you only?* "For neither can ye say this," saith he; "we were made teachers to the rest, and it cannot be right for us to learn of others;" nor, "the faith remained in this place only, and no precedents from other quarters ought to be received." Seest thou by how many arguments he put them to shame? He introduced the law, he signified the shameful-ness of the thing, he brought forward the other Churches.

(2.) [3.] Next, what is strongest of all he puts last, saying, "God ordains these things even at this time by me."

Ver. 37. Thus: *if any man think himself to be a prophet, or spiritual, let him acknowledge that the things which I write unto you are the commandments of the Lord.*

Ver. 38. *But if any man be ignorant, let him be ignorant.*

And wherefore did he add this? Intimating that he is not using violence, nor contention, which is a sign of them who wish not to set up their own things, but who aim at what is profitable to others. Wherefore also in another place he saith, *But if any man seem to be contentious, we have no such custom*<sup>6</sup>. But he doth not this every where, but only  
<sup>6</sup> 1 Cor. 11. 16.

where the offences are not very great, and then chiefly as to <sup>1</sup> Cor. 14. 40. shaming them. Since when he discourses of other sins, he speaks not thus. But how? *Be not deceived: neither fornicators, nor effeminate, shall inherit the kingdom of God*<sup>1</sup>. <sup>1</sup> Cor. 6. 9, 10. And again, *Behold, I Paul say unto you, that, if ye be circumcised, Christ shall profit you nothing*<sup>2</sup>. But here, since <sup>2</sup> Gal. 5. his discourse was of silence, he doth not very keenly inveigh <sup>2</sup> against them, by this very thing attracting them the more. Then, as he is ever wont to do, unto the former subject, whence he digressed to say these things, he brings back his discourse as follows:

Ver. 39. *Wherefore, brethren, covet to prophesy, and forbid not to speak with tongues.*

For this too is his wont, not only to work out what is before him, but also starting from that, to set right whatever seems to him in any way akin to it, and again to return to the former, so as not to appear to wander from the subject. For so when he was discoursing of their concord in their banquets, he digressed to their Communion in the Mysteries, and having thence put them to shame, he returns again to the former, saying, *Wherefore, when ye come together to eat, tarry one for another*<sup>3</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> 1 Cor. 11. 33.

And here, accordingly, having discoursed of good order in their gifts, and of its being a duty neither to faint in the lesser, nor to be puffed up on account of the greater; then having made an excursion from thence to the sobriety becoming women, and having established it, he returns again to his subject, saying, *Wherefore, brethren, covet to prophesy, and forbid not to speak with tongues.* Seest thou how to the end he preserved the difference of these? And how he signifies that the one is very necessary, the other not so? Wherefore of the one he saith, *covet*<sup>4</sup>, but of the other, *forbid not*. <sup>4</sup> ζηλω-  
τι.

[4.] Then, as in brief summary, setting all things right, he adds the words,

Ver. 40. *Let all things be done decently, and in order.*

Again giving a blow to them who chose to behave themselves unseemly without cause, and to incur the imputation of madness; and who keep not their proper rank. For nothing doth so build up, as good order, as peace, as love; even as their contraries tend to pull down. And not only in

HOMIL. things spiritual, but also in all others one may observe this.  
XXXVII. Thus whether it be in a dance, or a ship, or in a chariot, or a camp, if thou shouldest confound the order, and casting the greater out of their proper place, shouldest bring in the lesser into their rank, thou destroyest all, and thus things are turned upside down. Neither let us then destroy our order, nor place the head below, and the feet above: now this is done, when we cast down right reason, and set our lusts, passion, and anger, and pleasure, over the rational part: whence violent are the billows, and great the confusion, and intolerable the tempest, all things being wrapt in darkness.

And, if thou wilt, let us first examine the unseemliness which arises herefrom, and then the loss. How then may this be clear to us, and thoroughly known? Let us bring forward a man in that frame of mind; enamoured of a harlot, and overcome by a dishonourable passion; and then we shall see the mockery which this comes to. For what can be baser than a man watching the doors before the harlots' chambers, and beaten by a whorish woman, and weeping, and lamenting, and turning his glory into shame? And if thou wilt also see the loss, call to mind, I pray, the expenditure of money, the extreme risks, the contests with the rival lovers, the wounds, the stripes received in such affrays.

Such also are they who are holden by the lust of wealth; or rather they behave themselves more unseemly. For whereas these are wholly occupied about one person; the covetous busy themselves about all men's substance alike, both poor, and rich, and long for things that are not; a thing which above all denotes the wildness of their passion. For they say not, "I would fain have the substance of such a person, or of such another," only, but they want the very mountains to be gold, and the houses and all that they see: and they go forth into another world, and this passion they feel without bounds, and at no point cease from their lusting. What discourse can set before us the tempest of these thoughts, the waves, the darkness? And where the waves and tempest are so great, what can the pleasure be? There is not any; but tumult, and anguish, and black clouds

instead of rain bringing with them great sorrow of heart: the  
kind of thing which is wont to happen in the case of those 1 Cor.  
14. 40.  
who are enamoured of beauty not their own. See then if  
they who have no passionate love at all are not in more  
pleasure than any lovers.

[5.] This however no man would gainsay. But to me  
even he who loves, but restrains his passion, seems to live  
more pleasurably than he who continually enjoys his unlaw-  
ful love. For though the proof be rather difficult, neverthe-  
less even at that disadvantage the argument must be ventured  
in: the cause of the increased difficulty, not being the nature  
of the thing, but because of the want of meet hearers for  
his high morality. Thus: whether is it pleasanter, tell me, (3.)  
to the lover, to be despised by his beloved, or to be valued,  
and to look down upon her? Evidently the latter. Whom  
then, tell me, will the harlot value more? Him that is a slave  
to her, and is already led captive at her will, or him that is  
above her nets, and soareth higher than her arrows? Every  
one must see, the latter. And about whom will she take more  
thought, the fallen, or him that is not yet so? Him that is  
not yet so, of course. And which will be more an object of  
desire, he who is subdued, or he who is not yet taken? He  
who up to this time is not yet taken. And if ye disbelieve it,  
I will produce my proof from what takes place within your-  
selves. As thus: of which woman would a man be more  
enamoured; one that easily submits herself, and gives herself  
up to him, or one that denies him, and gives him trouble?  
Evidently of this last; since hereby the longing is more  
vehemently kindled. Of course then in the woman's case  
also exactly the same thing will happen. And him will they  
honour and admire more who looks down upon them. But  
if this be a true saying, so likewise is that other, that he  
enjoys greater pleasure who is more honoured and beloved.  
Since the general too lets alone the city that hath been once  
taken, but that which stands out and maintains the struggle  
besets with all diligence: and the hunter, when the animal  
is caught, keeps it shut up in darkness, as the harlot doth her  
lover, but pursues that which flies from him.

But I shall be told, "the one enjoys his desire, the other  
not so." But freedom from disgrace, and from being a slave



**Hemil.** under her tyrannical commands, the not being led and dragged  
**XXXVII.** about by her as a drudge, beaten, spit upon, smitten on the  
 head; dost thou consider this to be a small pleasure, tell me? Nay, if one would accurately examine these things, and were able to gather into one their insults, complaints, everlasting quarrels, some arising from their tempers, some from their self-indulgence, their enmities, and all the rest, such as they only that feel them know;—he will find that there is no war but hath more truces than this wretched life of theirs. What pleasure then meanest thou, tell me? The temporary and brief enjoyment of lust? But this speedily doth strife overtake, and storms, and rage, and the same madness again.

[6.] And these things have been said by us, as one would speak discoursing with licentious youths, who do not very patiently submit to hear our discourses of the kingdom and of hell.

And now that we are bringing forward these topics also, it is not even possible to say how great is the pleasure of the continent; if one frame in one's own mind his crowns, his rewards, his converse with the angels, the proclaiming of him before the world, his boldness, those blessed and immortal hopes of his.

“But lust hath a certain pleasure:” for this they are continually repeating: “neither can the continent continually go on contending with the tyranny of nature.” Nay, but one shall find just the contrary result. For this violence and tumult is present with the unchaste rather: there being in his body a violent tempest, and no sea in a storm so grievously vexed as he; never withstanding his passion, but ever receiving blows from it; as the possessed, and they that are continually rent in the midst by evil spirits. Whereas the temperate, like a noble champion continually giving blows to it, reaps the best of pleasures, and sweeter than ten thousand of that kind; and this victory and his good conscience, and those illustrious trophies, are ornaments for him continually to deck himself withal.

As to the other, if after his lust he hath a little respite, it must be counted nothing. For again the storm comes on, and again there are waves. But he that commands himself doth not suffer this tumult to lay hold of him at all, nor the sea to arise, nor the wild beast to roar. And even if he

endure some violence in the restraint of such an impulse, yet <sup>1 Cor.</sup> so doth the other also, continually receiving blows and stabs, <sup>14. 40.</sup> and unable to endure the sting: and it is like as if there were a wild horse furious and struggling, and one should check with the bridle, and hold him in with all skill: while another giving him the rein to escape the trouble, were dragged along by him, and carried hither and thither.

If I have spoken these things more plainly than is becoming, let no man blame me. For I desire not to make a brave shew by gravity of words, but to make my hearers grave.

Therefore also the prophets spare no such words, wishing (4.) to extirpate the licentiousness of the Jews, but do even more nakedly inveigh against them, than we do now in the things we have spoken. For so a physician wishing to remove an ulcer, doth not consider how he may keep his hands clean, but how he may rid the patient of the ulcer; and he who would raise on high the lowly, first makes himself lowly; and he who seeks to slay the conspirator stains himself also with blood as well as the other, and this makes him the more brilliant. Since if one were to see a soldier returning from the war, stained with gore, and blood, and brains, he will not loathe him, nor turn from him on this account, but will even admire him the more. So then let us do, when we see any one returning, covered with blood after the slaughter of his evil desire, let us the more admire him, and become partakers of his battle and victory, and say to those who indulge this wild love, "shew us the pleasure you derive from lust; for the continent hath that which comes of his victory, but thou, none from any quarter. But if ye should mention that which is connected with the criminal act, yet the other is more manifest, and satisfactory. For thou hast from the enjoyment something brief and hardly apparent; but he from his conscience, hath both a greater, and enduring, and a sweeter joy. The company of a woman hath surely no such power as self-command, to preserve the soul undisturbed, and give it wings."

Well then: the continent man, as I said, thus evidently makes his pleasure out to us: but in thy case I see the dejection arising from defeat, but the pleasure, desiring to see, I find not. For what dost thou consider the

HOMIL. moment of pleasure? That before the criminal action!

XXXVII. Nay, it is not so, for it is a time of madness and delirium and frenzy: to grind the teeth and be beside one's self, not being any pleasure: and if it were pleasure, it would not produce the same effects on you, which they who are in pain endure. For they who strike with their fists and are stricken, grind their teeth, and women in travail distracted with pains, do the same. So that this is no pleasure, but frenzy rather, and confusion, and tumult. Shall we say then, the time after this? Nay, neither is this. For neither could we say that a woman just delivered is in pleasure, but in release from certain pains. But this is not of course pleasure, but weakness rather and falling away: and there is a great interval between these two. What then is the time of pleasure, tell me? There is none. But if there be any, it is so brief, as not even to be apparent. At least, having zealously sought in a great many ways to detect and apprehend it, we have not been able. But the time of the chaste man's pleasure is not such, rather it is wide, and evident to all. Or rather, all his life is in pleasure, his conscience crowned, the waves laid, no disturbance from any quarter arising within him.

Since then this man's life is more in pleasure, while the life spent in love of pleasure is in dejection and disquiets; let us flee from licentiousness, let us keep hold on chastity, that we may also obtain the good things to come, through the grace and mercy, &c. &c.

## HOMILY XXXVIII.

---

1 COR. XV. 1, 2.

*Moreover, brethren, I declare unto you concerning the gospel which I preached unto you, which also ye received, and wherein ye stand; by which also ye are saved<sup>1</sup>: by what*

<sup>1</sup> τὴν  
λόγον  
ἐκ τῆς γα-  
λιλαίας  
ὑμῶν.

HAVING finished the discourse of spiritual gifts, he passes to that which is of all most necessary, the argument of the resurrection. For in this too, they were greatly unsound. And as in men's bodies, when the fever lays actual hold of their solid parts, I mean the nerves and the veins and the primary elements, the mischief becomes incurable, unless it receive much attention; just so at that time also it was like to happen. Since to the very elements of godliness the mischief was proceeding. Wherefore also Paul uses great earnestness. For not of morals was his discourse henceforth, nor about one man's being a fornicator, another covetous, and another having his head covered; but about the very sum of all good things. For touching the resurrection itself they were at variance. Because, this being all our hope, against this point did the devil make a vehement stand, and at one time he was wholly subverting it, at another his word was that it was *past already*: which also Paul writing to Timothy, called a gangrene, I mean, this wicked doctrine, and those that brought it in he branded, saying, *Of whom is Hymenæus and Philetus, who concerning the faith have erred, saying, that the resurrection is past already, and overthrow the faith of some<sup>2</sup>*. At one time then they said thus, <sup>2</sup> 2 Tim. 2. 17. but at another that the body rises not again, but the purification of the soul is the resurrection.



HOMIL.  
XXVIII.

But these things that wicked demon persuaded them to say, not wishing to overturn the resurrection only, but also to shew that all the things done for our sakes are a fable. For if they were persuaded that there is no resurrection of bodies, after a little while he would have persuaded them that neither was Christ raised. And thereupon he would introduce also this in due course, that He had not come, nor had done what He did. For such is the craft of the devil. Wherefore also Paul calls it *cunning craftiness*<sup>1</sup>, because he doth not straightway signify what he intends to effect, for fear of being detected, but dressing himself up in a mask of one kind, he fabricates arts of another kind: and, like a crafty enemy attacking a city with walls, he secretly undermines it from below: so as thereby to be hardly guarded against, and to succeed in his endeavours. Therefore such snares on his part being continually detected, and these his crafty ambushes hunted out by this admirable and mighty man, he said, *For we are not ignorant of his devices*<sup>2</sup>. So also here he unfolds his whole guile, and points out all his stratagems, and whatsoever he would fain effect, Paul puts before us, with much exactness going over all. Yea, and therefore he put this head after the rest, both because it was very extremely necessary, and because it involves the whole of our condition.

<sup>1</sup> *πρόδοσις*.  
Eph. 4.  
14.

<sup>2</sup> 2 Cor.  
2. 11.

And observe his consideration: how first having secured his own, he then proceeds even beyond in his discourse, and them that are without he doth over and above reduce to silence. Now he secures his own, not by reasonings, but by things which had already happened, and which themselves had received, and believed to have taken place: a thing which was most of all apt to shame them, and capable of laying hold on them. Since if they were unwilling to believe after this, it was no longer Paul, but themselves they would disbelieve: which thing was a censure on those who had once for all received it, and changed their minds. For this cause then he begins also from hence, implying that he needs no other witnesses to prove his speaking truth, but those very persons who were deceived.

[2.] But that what I say may become clearer, we must needs in what follows attend to the very words. What then are these? *I declare unto you, brethren, saith he, the gospel*

*which I preached unto you.* Seest thou with what modesty <sup>1</sup> *Con.* he commences? Seest thou how from the beginning he points <sup>15. 1, 2.</sup> out, that he is bringing in no new nor strange thing? For he who *declareth* that which is already known, but afterwards had fallen into oblivion, *declareth* by recalling it into memory.

And when he called them *brethren*, even from hence he laid the foundation of no mean part of the proof of his assertions. For by no other cause became we *brethren*, but by the dispensation of Christ according to the flesh. And this is just the reason why he thus called them, at the same time soothing and courting them, and likewise reminding them of their innumerable blessings.

And what comes next again is demonstrative of the same. What then is this? *The gospel.* For the sum of the gospels hath its original hence, from God having become man, and having been crucified, and having risen again. This gospel also Gabriel preached to the Virgin, this also the prophets to the world, this also the apostles all of them.

*Which I preached unto you, which also ye received, and wherein ye stand.* By which also ye are saved, if ye keep in memory by what word I preached unto you; unless ye have believed in vain.

Seest thou how he calls themselves to be witnesses of the things spoken? And he saith not, "which ye have heard," but, *which ye have received*, demanding it of them as a kind of deposit, and shewing that not in word only, but also by deeds and signs and wonders, they received it, and that they should hold it safe.

Next, because he was speaking of the things long past, he (2.) sets before them also the present time, saying, *and wherein ye stand*, taking the vantage ground of them, that disavowal might be out of their power, though they wished it never so much. And this is why at the beginning he said not, "I teach you," but, "*I declare unto you* what hath already been made manifest."

And how saith he that they, who were so tossed with waves, *stand*? He feigns ignorance, to profit them; which also he doth in the case of the Galatians, but not in like manner. For inasmuch as he could not in that case affect ignorance, he frames his address in another way, saying,

HOMIL. *I have confidence in you through the Lord, that ye will be*  
 XXXVIII. *none otherwise minded*<sup>1</sup>. He said not, "that ye were none  
 1 Gal. 5.  
 10. *otherwise minded*," because their fault was acknowledged  
 and evident, but he answers for the future; and yet this too  
 was uncertain; but it was to draw them to him more effec-  
 tually. Here however he doth feign ignorance, saying, *and*  
*wherein ye stand*.

Then comes the advantage; *whereby also ye are saved, by*  
*what word I have preached it unto you*. "So then, this present  
 exposition is for clearness, and interpretation. For the doctrine  
 itself ye need not," saith he, "to learn, but to be reminded of,  
 and corrected." And these things he saith, leaving them no  
 room to plunge into recklessness once for all.

But what is, *by what word I preached it unto you*? "After  
 what manner did I say," saith he, "that the resurrection takes  
 place? For that there is a resurrection, I would not say that  
 ye doubt: but ye seek perhaps to obtain a clearer knowledge  
 of that saying. This then will I provide for you: for indeed  
 I am well assured, that ye hold the doctrine." Next, because  
 he was directly affirming, *wherein also ye stand*; that he  
 might not thereby make them more remiss, he alarms them  
 again, saying, *If ye keep in memory, unless ye have believed*  
*in vain*; intimating that the stroke is on the chief head, and  
 the contest for no common things, but in behalf of the whole  
 of the faith. And for the present he saith it with reserve,  
 but as he goes on and waxes warm, he throws off the veil,  
 and proceeds to cry out<sup>2</sup>, and say, *But if Christ be not risen,*  
<sup>2</sup> γυνή  
 λοιπὸν  
 ὅτι αἱ φθ.  
 ἀνὴ βροτ.  
*then is our preaching vain, and your faith is also vain:*  
*ye are yet in your sins*: but in the beginning not so: for  
 thus it was expedient to proceed, gently and by degrees.

Ver. 3. *For I delivered unto you first of all, that which I*  
*also received*.

Neither here doth he say, "I said unto you," nor "I  
 taught you," but uses the same expression again, saying,  
*I delivered unto you that which I also received*: nor again here  
 doth he say "I was taught," but, *I received*: establishing  
 these two things, first, that one ought to introduce nothing  
 from one's self; next, that by demonstration from his deeds they  
 were fully persuaded, not by bare words: and by degrees,  
 while he is rendering his argument credible, he refers the

whole to Christ, and signifies that nothing was of man in <sup>1 Cor.</sup> these doctrines. <sup>15. 3.</sup>

But what is this, *For I delivered unto you first of all*<sup>1</sup>? for <sup>1</sup> <sup>1. 1. 1.</sup> that is his word. "In the beginning, not now." And thus saying, he brings the time for a witness, and that it were the greatest disgrace for those who had so long time been persuaded now to change their minds: and not this only, but also that the doctrine is necessary. Wherefore also it was *delivered* among *the first*, and from the beginning straightway. And what didst thou so deliver? tell me. But this he doth not say straightway, but first, *I received*. And what didst thou receive? *That Christ died for our sins*. He said not immediately, that there is a resurrection of our bodies, yet this very thing in truth he doth establish, but afar off, and by other topics, saying that *Christ died*, and laying before a kind of strong base and irrefragable foundation of the doctrine concerning the resurrection. For neither did he simply say, that *Christ died*; although even this were sufficient to declare the resurrection, but with an addition, *Christ died for our sins*.

[3.] But first it is worth while to hear what those who are infected with the Manichæan doctrines say here, who are both enemies to the truth, and war against their own salvation. What then do these allege? By death here, they say, Paul means nothing else than our being in sin; and by resurrection, our being delivered from our sins. Seest thou how nothing is weaker than error? And how it is taken by its own wings, and needs not the warfare from without, but by itself it is pierced through? Consider, for instance, these men, how they too have pierced themselves through by their own statements. Since if this be death, and Christ did not take a body, as ye suppose, and yet died, He was in sin, according to you. For I indeed say that He took unto Himself a body, and His death, I say, was that of the flesh; but thou, denying this, wilt be compelled to affirm the other. But if He was in sin, how saith He, *Which of you convinceth Me of sin*? And, *The prince of this world cometh*, <sup>2 John 8.</sup> *and hath nothing in Me*<sup>1</sup>. And again, *Thus it becometh Us* <sup>46; 14.</sup> <sup>30.</sup> *to fulfil all righteousness*<sup>2</sup>. Nay, how did He at all die for <sup>3 Mat. 3.</sup> <sup>15.</sup>



HOMIL. XXXVIII. sinners, if Himself were in sins? For he who dies for sinners, ought himself to be without sin. Since if he himself also sin, how shall he die for other sinners? But if for others' sins He died, He died being without sin: and if being without sin He died, He died—not the death of sin: for how could He, being without sin?—but the death of the body. Wherefore also Paul did not simply say, *He died*, but added, *for our sins*: both forcing those heretics against their will to the confession of His bodily death, and signifying by this also, that before death He was without sin: for he that dies for others' sins, it followeth must himself be without sin.

Neither was he content with this, but added, *according to* (3.) *the Scriptures*: hereby both again making his argument credible, and intimating what kind of death he was speaking of: since it is the death of the body which the Scriptures every where proclaim. For, *they pierced My hands and My*

<sup>1</sup> Pa. 21. *feet*<sup>1</sup>, saith He, and *they shall look on Him Whom they*

18.

<sup>2</sup> John

19. 37.

Zech.

12. 10.

see in them stored up, setting forth His slaughter in the

flesh, and that He was slain for our sins. For, *for the*

*sins of my people*, saith one, *is He come*<sup>3</sup> *to death*: and,

*the Lord hath delivered Him up for our sins*: and, *He was*

*wounded for our transgressions*<sup>4</sup>. But if thou<sup>5</sup> dost not

endure the Old Testament, hear John crying out, and

declaring both, as well His slaughter in the body, as the

cause of it: thus, *Behold*, saith he, *the Lamb of God, Who*

*taketh away the sin of the world*<sup>6</sup>: and Paul saying, *For Him*

*Who knew no sin, He hath made sin for us, that we might be*

*made the righteousness of God in Him*<sup>7</sup>: and again, *Christ*

*hath redeemed us from the curse of the law, being made*

*a curse for us*<sup>8</sup>: and again, *having spoiled principalities and*

*powers, He made a show of them openly, triumphing over*

*them*<sup>9</sup>; and ten thousand other sayings, to shew what hap-

pened at His death in the body, and because of our sins.

Yea, and Christ Himself saith, *for your sakes I sanctify*

*Myself*<sup>10</sup>: and, *now is the prince of this world condemned*<sup>11</sup>;

shewing that having no sin, He was slain.

[4.] Ver. 4. *And that He was buried.*

And this also is confirmative of the former topics, for that

ningent.

which is buried, is doubtless a body. And here he no longer adds, *according to the Scriptures*. He had wherewithal, <sup>1 Cor. 15. 4.</sup> nevertheless he adds it not. For what cause? Is it either because the burial was evident unto all, both then and now? or that the expression, *according to the Scriptures*, is set down of both in common? Wherefore then doth he add, *according to the Scriptures*, in this place, and that *He rose on the third day according to the Scriptures*, and is not content with the former clause, so spoken in common? Because this also was to most men obscure: wherefore here again he brings in *the Scriptures* by inspiration, having so conceived this thought, so wise and divine.

How is it then that he doth the same in regard of His death? Because in that case too, although the cross was evident unto all, and in the sight of all He was stretched upon it; yet the cause was no longer equally so. The fact indeed of His death all knew, but that He suffered this for the sins of the world, this was no longer equally known to the multitude. Wherefore he brings in the testimony from the *Scriptures*.

This however hath been sufficiently proved by what we have said. But where have the *Scriptures* said that He was buried, and on the third day shall rise again? By the type of Jonah, which also Himself alleges, saying, *As Jonah was three days and three nights in the whale's belly, so shall also the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth*<sup>1</sup>. By the bush in the desert. For even <sup>1 Mat. 12. 40.</sup> as that burned, yet was not consumed<sup>2</sup>, so also that body <sup>Exod. 3. 2.</sup> died indeed, but was not holden of death continually<sup>3</sup>. And the dragon also in Daniel shadows out this. For as the

\* The Benedictines insert a negative here, which contradicts the sense, and is not in Savile.

<sup>b</sup> This sign is variously yet without contradiction interpreted by the Fathers. St. Augustine considers it a type of the glory of God, inhabiting the Jewish people, yet not consuming the thorny hardness of their heart. t. v. p. 25. St. Cyril (in Exod. t. i. p. 263.) of the Divine Nature inhabiting the Human, yet not consuming it, in the Person of our Lord. Theodoret (in loc.) says, "The power and mercy of God

are proclaimed by the circumstance, that the bush being mere brushwood was not consumed by the unquenchable fire: I think however that other intimations are conveyed by this circumstance: as that Israel, plotted against by the Egyptians, should not be consumed, but overcome his enemies; and that the Only-begotten, being made incarnate and dwelling in the Virgin's womb, shall keep that virginity inviolate." Tertull. (adv. Gnost. c. 1.) alludes to it, as representing the Church in the fire of persecution.

HONIL. dragon having taken the food which the prophet gave, burst  
XXXVIII.  
1 Bel asunder in the midst<sup>1</sup>; even so hell<sup>2</sup> having swallowed down  
 and the that Body, was rent asunder, the Body of itself cutting  
 Dragon, asunder its womb, and rising again.  
v. 27.

2 *Adv.* Now if thou desirest to hear also in words those things  
 which thou hast seen in types, listen to Isaiah, saying, *His*  
3 *Isa. 53.* *life is taken from the earth*<sup>3</sup>; and, *it pleaseth the Lord to*  
8, 10, 11. *cleave Him from His wound....to shew unto Him light*<sup>4</sup>:  
LXX. and David before him, *Thou wilt not leave My soul in hell,*  
in our *nor suffer Thy Holy One to see corruption*<sup>4</sup>.  
vers. 11

pleased Therefore Paul also sends thee on to the Scriptures, that  
the Lord thou mayest learn that not without cause nor at random were  
to bruise these things done. For how could they, when so many prop-  
Him... He shall see... and be satis-  
fiel. no where doth the Scripture mean the death of sin, when it  
4 *Ps. 16.* makes mention of our Lord's death, but that of the body, and  
10. a burial and resurrection of the same kind?

[5.] Ver. 5. *And that He was seen of Cephas: he names*  
*immediately the most credible of all. Then of the twelve.*

Ver. 6. *After that, He was seen of above five hundred*  
*brethren at once; of whom the greater part remain unto this*  
*present, but some are fallen asleep.*

Ver. 7. *After that, He was seen of James; then of all the*  
*Apostles.*

Ver. 8. *And last of all He was seen of me also, as of one*  
*born out of due time.*

Thus, since he had mentioned the proof from the Scriptures,  
 he adds also that by the events, producing as witnesses of the  
 resurrection, after the prophets, the apostles, and other faithful  
 men. Whereas if he meant that other resurrection, the de-  
 liverance from sin, it were idle for him to say, *He was seen*  
 of such and such an one; for this is the argument of one who  
 is establishing the resurrection of the body, not of one ob-  
 scurely teaching deliverance from sins. Wherefore neither  
 said he once for all, *He was seen*, although it were sufficient  
 for him to do so, setting down the expression in common:  
 but now both twice and thrice and almost in each several  
 case of them that had seen Him he employs it. For *He was*  
*seen*, saith he, *of Cephas, He was seen of above five hundred*  
*brethren, He was seen of me also.* Yet surely the Gospel

saith the contrary, that He was seen of Mary first<sup>1</sup>. But <sup>1 Cor.</sup> among men He was seen of him first, who did most of all <sup>15. 8.</sup> long to see Him. <sup>1 Mark</sup> <sup>16. 9.</sup>

But of what twelve apostles doth he here speak? For after He was received up, Matthias was taken into the number, not after the resurrection immediately. But it is likely that He appeared even after He was received up. At any rate this our apostle himself after His ascension was both called, and saw Him. Therefore neither doth he set down the time, but simply and without defining, he recounts the appearances. For indeed it is probable that many took place; wherefore also John said, *This third time He shewed Himself*<sup>2</sup>.

<sup>2 John</sup>  
<sup>21. 14.</sup>

*After that He was seen of above five hundred brethren.* Some say that *above*<sup>3</sup>, is above from heaven: that is, "not <sup>3 Luke</sup> walking upon earth, but above, and overhead, He was seen of them:" adding, that it was Paul's purpose to confirm, not the resurrection only, but also the ascension. Others say that the expression, *above five hundred*, means, *more than five hundred*.

*Of whom the greater part remain unto this present.* Thus, "though I relate events of old," saith he, "yet have I living witnesses." *But some are fallen asleep.* He said not, "are dead," but *are fallen asleep*, by this expression also again confirming the resurrection. *After that, He was seen of James.* I suppose, His brother. For the Lord is said to have Himself ordained him, and made him Bishop in Jerusalem first. *Then, of all the apostles.* For there were also other apostles, as the seventy.

*And last of all, He was seen of me also, as of one born out of due time.* This is rather an expression of modesty than any thing else. For not because he was the least, therefore was He seen of him after the rest. Since even if He did call him last, yet he appeared more illustrious than many which were before him, yea rather than all. And the five hundred brethren too were not surely better than James, because He was seen of them before him.

Why was He not seen of all at the same time? That He might first sow the seeds of faith. For he that saw Him first, and was exactly and fully assured, told it unto the residue: then their report coming first, placed the hearer in expectation



HOMIL.  
XXXVIII. of this great wonder, and made way before for the faith of sight. Therefore neither was He seen by all together, nor in the beginning by more in number, but by one alone first, and him the leader of the whole company, and the most faithful: since indeed there was great need of a most faithful soul to be first to receive this sight. For those who, after others had seen and heard, got a sight by their means, had in their testimony what contributed in no small degree to their own faith, and tended to prepare their mind beforehand; but he who was first counted worthy to see Him, had need, as I before said, of great faith, not to be confounded by a sight so contrary to expectation. Therefore he shews Himself to Peter first. For he that first confessed Him to be Christ, was justly also counted worthy first to behold His resurrection. And not on this account alone doth He appear to him first, but also because he had denied Him, more abundantly to comfort him, and to signify that he is not abandoned, before the rest He vouchsafed him even this sight, and to him first entrusted His sheep. Therefore also He appeared to the women first. Because this sex was made inferior, therefore both in His birth and in His resurrection this first tastes of His grace.

But after Peter, He is seen also of each dispersedly, and at one time of fewer, at another of more, hereby making them witnesses and teachers of each other, and rendering His apostles trustworthy in all that they said.

[6.] *And last of all He was seen of me also, as of one born out of due time.* What mean here his expressions of humility, or wherein are they seasonable? For if he wishes to shew himself worthy of credit, and to enrol himself among the witnesses of the resurrection, he is doing the contrary of what he wishes: since it were meet that he exalt himself and intimate that he was great, which in many places he doth, the occasion calling for it. Well, the very reason why he here also speaks modestly, in his being about to do this. Not straight-way, however, but with his own peculiar good sense: in that having first spoken modestly, and heaped up against himself many charges, he then magnifies the things concerning himself. What may the reason be? That, when he comes to utter that great and lofty expression concerning himself, *I laboured more abundantly than all*, his discourse may be rendered more

acceptable, both hereby, and by its being spoken as a consequence of what went before, and not as a leading topic. <sup>1 Cor. 15. 9.</sup> Therefore also writing to Timothy, and intending to say great things concerning himself, he first sets down his charges against himself. For so all persons, when speaking in high terms of others, speak out freely and with boldness: but he that is compelled to praise himself, and especially when he also calls himself to witness, is disconcerted and blushes. Therefore also this blessed man first declares his own misery, and then utters that lofty expression. This then he doth, partly to abate the offensiveness of speaking about himself, and partly that he might hereby recommend to their belief what he had to say afterwards. For he that truly states what things are discreditable to him, and conceals none of them, such as, that he persecuted the Church, that he laid waste the faith, doth hereby cause the things that are honoured in him also to be above suspicion.

And consider the exceeding greatness of his humility. For (5.) having said, *and last of all, He was seen of me also*, he was not content with this: *For many that are last shall be first*, saith He, *and the first last*<sup>1</sup>. Therefore he added, *as of one born out* <sup>1 Mat. 20. 16.</sup> *of due time*. Neither did he stop here, but adds also his own judgment, and with a reason, saying,

Ver. 9. *For I am the least of the apostles, that am not meet to be called an apostle, because I persecuted the Church of God.*

And he said not, of the twelve alone, but also of all the other apostles. And all these things he spake, both as one speaking modestly, and because he was really so disposed as I said, making arrangements also beforehand for what was intended to be spoken, and rendering it more acceptable. For had he come forward and said, "Ye ought to believe me, that Christ rose from the dead; for I saw Him, and of all I am the most worthy of credit, inasmuch as I have laboured more," the expression might have offended the hearers: but now by first dwelling on the humiliating topics, and those which involve accusation, he both took off what might be grating in such a narrative, and prepared the way for their belief in his testimony.

On this account therefore neither doth he simply, as I said,

HOMIL. declare himself to be the last, and unworthy of the appellation  
 XXXVIII. of an apostle, but also states the reason, saying, *because I persecuted the Church.* And yet all those things were forgiven, but nevertheless he himself never forgot them, desiring to signify the greatness of God's favour: wherefore also he goes on to say,

[7.] Ver. 10. *But by the grace of God I am what I am.*

<sup>1 Irigen</sup> Scest thou again another<sup>1</sup> excess of humility? in that the  
 conj. defects he imputes to himself, but of the good deeds nothing;  
 Saville. rather he refers all to God. Next, lest he might hereby render  
 Irigen his hearer supine, he saith, *And His grace which was be-*  
 Bened. *stowed upon me was not in vain.* And this again with reserve:  
 in that he said not, "I have displayed a diligence worthy of  
 His grace," but, *it was not in vain.*

*But I laboured more abundantly than they all.* He said not, "I was honoured," but, *I laboured*, and when he had perils and deaths to speak of, by the name of labour he again abates his expression.

Then again practising his wonted humility, this also he speedily passes by, and refers the whole to God, saying, *Yet not I, but the grace of God which was with me.* What can be more admirable than such a soul? who having in so many ways depressed himself, and uttered but one high sort of word, not even this doth he call his own; on every side finding ways, both from the former things, and from them that follow after, to contract this lofty expression, and that too, although it was of necessity that he came to it.

But consider how he abounds in the expressions of humility. For so, *of me last of all He was seen*, saith He. Wherefore neither doth he with himself mention any other, and saith, *as of one born out of due time*, and that himself is *the least of the apostles*, and not even worthy of this appellation. And he was not content even with these, but that he might not seem in mere words to be humble-minded, he states both reasons and proofs: of his being *one born out of due time*, his seeing Jesus last; but of his being unworthy even of the name of an apostle, *his persecuting the Church.* For he that is simply humble-minded, doeth not this: but he that also sets down the reasons, utters all from a contrite mind. Wherefore also he elsewhere makes mention of these same things,



saying, *And I thank Christ, Who hath enabled me, for that He counted me faithful, putting me into the ministry; who was before a blasphemer, and a persecutor, and injurious*<sup>1</sup>.

1 Cor.  
16. 11.

1 Tim.  
1. 12, 13.

But wherefore did he utter at all that same lofty expression, *I laboured more abundantly than they*? He saw that the occasion compelled him. For had he not said this, had he only depreciated himself, how could he with boldness call himself to witness, and number himself with the rest, and say,

Ver. 11. *Whether it were I or they, so we preach.*

For the witness ought to be trustworthy of credit, and a great man. But how he *laboured too more abundantly than they*, he indicated above, saying, *Have we not power to eat and to drink, as also the other Apostles?* And again, *to them that are without law as without law*. Thus, both where exactness was to be displayed, he overshot all: and where there was need to condescend, he displayed again the same great superiority.

But some cite his being sent to the Gentiles, and his over-running the larger part of the world. Whence it is evident that he enjoyed more grace. For if he laboured more, the grace was also more: but he enjoyed more grace, because he displayed also more diligence. Seest thou how by those particulars, whereby he contends and strives to throw into shade the things concerning himself, he is signified to be first of all?

[8.] And these things when we hear, let us also make open shew of our defects, but of our excellencies let us say nothing. Or if the opportunity force it upon us, let us speak of them with reserve, and impute the whole to God's grace: which accordingly the Apostle also doth, ever and anon putting a bad mark upon his former life, but his after-state imputing to grace, that he might signify the mercy of God from every circumstance: from His having saved him such as he was, and when saved making him again such as he is. Let none accordingly of those who are in sin despair, let none of those in virtue be confident, but let the one be exceeding fearful, and the other forward. For neither shall any slothful man be able to abide in virtue, nor one that is diligent be weak to escape from evil. And of both these the blessed David is an example, who after he slumbered a little, had a great downfall: (6.)



HOMTL. and when he was pricked in his heart, again hastened up to  
 XXIVIII. his former height. Since in fact both are alike evils, both  
 despair and slothfulness; the one quickly casting a man  
 down from the very arch of the heavens; the other, not  
 suffering the fallen to rise again. Wherefore with respect to  
 the one, Paul said, *Let him that thinketh he standeth, take*  
 heed lest he fall<sup>1</sup>: but unto the other, *To-day if ye will hear*  
<sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. *His voice, harden not your hearts<sup>2</sup>*: and again, *Lift up the*  
 10. 12. *hands that hang down, and the feeble knees<sup>3</sup>*. And him too  
<sup>2</sup> Heb. 4. *that had committed fornication, but repented, he therefore*  
 7. *quickly refreshes, that such an one might not be swallowed*  
<sup>3</sup> Heb. 12. 12.

<sup>4</sup> 2 Cor. *up of overmuch sorrow<sup>4</sup>*?

2. 7.

Why then in regard of other griefs art thou cast down,  
 O man? Since if for sins, where only grief is beneficial,  
 excess works much mischief, much more for all other things.  
 For wherefore grievest thou? That thou hast lost money?  
 Nay, think of those that are not even filled with bread,  
 and thou shalt very speedily obtain consolation. And in  
 each of the things that are grievous to thee mourn not the  
 things that have happened, but for the disasters that have  
 not happened give thanks. Hadst thou money, and didst  
 thou lose it? Weep not for the loss, but give thanks for the  
 time when thou didst enjoy it. Say like Job, *Have we*  
*received good at the hand of the Lord, and shall we not*

<sup>5</sup> Job 2. *receive evil<sup>5</sup>*? And together with this use the following  
 10. argument also; that even if thou didst lose thy money, yet  
 thy body thou hast still sound, and thou hast not with thy  
 poverty to grieve that it also is maimed. But hath thy body  
 too endured some rudeness? Yet is not this the bottom of  
 human calamities, but in the middle of the cask thou art as  
 yet carried along. For many along with poverty and maim-  
 ing, both wrestle with some devil, and wander in deserts:  
 others again endure other things more grievous than these.  
 For may it never be our lot to suffer all that it is possible for  
 one to bear.

These things then ever considering, bear in mind them  
 that suffer worse, and be vexed at none of those things:  
 but when thou sinnest, then only sigh, then weep; I for-  
 bid thee not, nay, I injoin thee rather; though even then  
 with moderation, remembering that there is returning, there  
 is reconciliation. But seest thou others in luxury, and thy-

self in poverty; and another in goodly robes, and in pre-<sup>1</sup> eminence? Look not however on these things alone, but <sup>Con.</sup> also on the miseries that arise out of these. And in thy <sup>16. 11.</sup> poverty too, consider not the beggary alone, but the pleasure also thence arising do thou take into account. For wealth hath indeed a cheerful mask, but its inward parts are full of gloom; and poverty the reverse. And shouldest thou unfold each man's conscience, in the soul of the poor thou wilt see great security and freedom: but in that of the rich, confusions, disorders, tempests. And if thou grieveest, seeing him rich, he too is vexed much more than thou, when he beholds one richer than himself. And as thou fearest him, even so doth he another, and he hath no advantage over thee in this. But thou art vexed to see him in office, because thou art in a private station, and one of the governed. Recollect however the day of his resignation too. And even before that day the tumults, the perils, the fatigues, the flatteries, the sleepless nights, and all the miseries.

[9.] And these things we say to those who have no mind for high morality: since if thou knowest this, there are other and greater things, whereby we may comfort thee: but for the present we must use the coarser topics to argue with thee. When therefore thou seest one that is rich, think of him that is richer than he, and thou wilt see him in the same condition with thyself. And after him look also on him that is poorer than thyself, consider how many have gone to bed hungry, and have lost their patrimony, and live in a dungeon, and pray for death every day. For neither doth poverty breed sadness, nor wealth pleasure, but both the one and the other our own thoughts are wont to produce in us. And consider, beginning from beneath: the scavenger grieves and is vexed, that he cannot be rid of this his business so wretched and esteemed so disgraceful: but if thou rid him of this, and cause him, with security, to have plenty of the necessities of life, he will grieve again that he hath not more than he wants: and if thou grant him more, he will wish to double them again, and will therefore vex himself no less than before: and if thou grant him twofold or threefold, he will be out of heart again, because he hath no part in the state: and if you provide him with this also, he will count himself a

HOMIL. wretched man, that he is not one of the highest officers of  
 XXXVIII. state. And when he hath obtained this honour, he will

mourn that he is not ruler; and when he shall be ruler, that it is not of a whole nation; and when of a whole nation, that it is not of many nations; and when of many nations, that it is not of all. When he becomes a deputy, he will vex himself again, that he is not a king; and if a king, that he is not so alone; and if alone, that he is not also of barbarous nations, and of the whole world even: and when of the whole world, why not likewise of another world? And so his course of thought going on without end, suffers him not ever to be really  
 (7.) delighted at any time. Seest thou, how even if from being mean and poor thou shouldest make a man a king, thou dost not remove his dejection, without first correcting his turn of thought, enamoured as it is of unfair gain?

Come, let me shew thee the contrary too, that even if from a higher station thou shouldest bring down to a lower one that hath consideration, thou wilt not cast him into dejection and grief. And if thou wilt, let us descend the same ladder, and do thou bring down the satrap from his throne, and in supposition deprive him of that dignity. I say, that he will not on this account vex himself, if he choose to bear in mind the things, of which I have spoken. For he will not reckon up the things of which he hath been deprived, but what he hath still, the glory arising from his office. But if thou take away this also, he will reckon up them who are in private stations, and have never ascended to such sway, and for consolation his riches will suffice him. And if thou also cast him out again from this, he will look to them that have a moderate estate. And if thou shouldest take away even moderate wealth, and shouldest allow him to partake only of necessary food, he may think upon them that have not even this, but wrestle with incessant hunger, and live in prison. And even if thou shouldest bring him into that prison-house, when he reflects on them that lie under incurable diseases, and irremediable pains, he will see himself to be in much better circumstances. And as the scavenger before mentioned, not even on being made a king will reap any cheerfulness, so neither will this man ever vex himself, no not if he become a prisoner. It is not then wealth that is



the foundation of pleasure, nor poverty of sadness, but our own determination, and the fact, that the eyes of our mind are not pure, nor are fixed any where and abide, but without limit they flutter abroad. And as healthy bodies, if they be nourished with bread alone, are in good and vigorous condition: but those that are sickly, even if they enjoy a plentiful and varied diet, become so much the weaker; so also it is wont to happen in regard of the soul. The mean spirited, not even in a diadem and unspeakable honours can they find pleasure: but the self-denying, even in bonds, and fetters, and poverty, will enjoy a pure pleasure.

1 Cor.  
16. 11.

[10.] These things then bearing in mind, let us ever look to them that are beneath us. There is indeed, I grant, another consolation, but of a high strain in morality, and mounting above the grossness of the multitude. What is this? That wealth is nought, poverty is nought, disgrace is nought, honour is nought, but in brief time they come to differ from each other in mere words. And along with this there is another soothing topic also, greater than it; the consideration of the things to come, both evil and good, the things which are really evil and really good, and the being comforted by them. But since many, as I said, stand aloof from these doctrines, therefore were we compelled to dwell on those topics, that in course we might lead on to them the receivers of what had been said before.

Let us then, taking all these things into account, by every means frame ourselves aright, and we shall never grieve at these unexpected things. For neither if we should see men rich in a picture, should we say they were to be envied, any more than on seeing poor men there depicted, we should call them wretched and pitiable: although those are surely more abiding than they whom we reckon wealthy. Since one abides rich in the picture longer than in the nature itself of things. For the one often lasts, appearing such, even to a hundred years, but the other sometimes, not having had so much as a year to live at his ease in his possessions, hath been suddenly stripped of all. Meditating then on all these things, let us from all quarters build up cheerfulness, as an outwork against our irrational sorrow, that we may both pass the present life with pleasure, and obtain the good



546      *Christian Cheerfulness prepares for Heaven.*

HOMIL. things to come, through the grace and mercy of our Lord  
XXXVIII. Jesus Christ, with Whom to the Father with the Holy Ghost,  
be glory, power, honour, now and for ever, and world with-  
out end. Amen.

## HOMILY XXXIX.

---

1 COR. xv. 11.

*Therefore whether it were I or they, so we preach, and so ye believed.*

HAVING exalted the Apostles, and abased himself, then again having exalted himself above them, that he might make out an equality: (and we see that equality is what he hath made out:) having intimated that he had advantages over them as well as they over him, and thereby proved himself worthy of credit; neither so doth he dismiss them, but again ranks himself with them, pointing out their concord in Christ. Nevertheless he doth it not so as that it should seem to have been cast at them<sup>1</sup> in the way of reproach, but<sup>1</sup> *αποκρι-  
μην.* as himself also to appear in the same rank. For so it was profitable for the Gospel. Wherefore also he was equally earnest, on the one hand, that he might not seem to overlook them, on the other, that he might not be, on account of the honour paid to them, held cheap by those that were under his authority. Therefore he also now makes himself equal again, saying,

*Whether therefore it were I or they, so we preach.* “From whomsoever,” saith he, “ye choose to learn, learn; there is no difference at all between us.” And he said not, “if ye will not believe me, believe them;” but while he makes himself worthy of credit, and saith that he is of himself sufficient, he affirms the same also of them by themselves. For the difference of persons took no effect, their dignities being equal. And in the Epistle to the Galatians also he doth this, taking them with him, not as standing in need of them, but saying *indeed that even himself was sufficient: For they*

HOMIL. who seemed to be somewhat added nothing to me<sup>1</sup>: nevertheless even so I follow after agreement with them. For they <sup>XIII.</sup> gave unto me, saith he, their right hands<sup>2</sup>. For if the credit of Paul were always to depend on others, and to be confirmed by testimony from others, the disciples would hence have received infinite injury. It is not therefore to exalt himself that he doeth this, but fearing for the Gospel. Wherefore also he here saith, making himself equal, *Whether it were I or they, so we preach.*

Well did he say, *we preach*, indicating his great boldness of speech. For we speak not secretly<sup>3</sup>, nor in private, but we utter a voice clearer than a trumpet. And he said not, "we preached," but "even now *so we preach.* And so ye believed. Here he said not, "ye believe," but, *ye believed.* Because they were shaken in mind, therefore he ran back to the former times, and proceeds to add the witness from themselves.

[2.] Ver. 12. *Now if Christ be preached that he rose from the dead, how say some among you that there is no resurrection of the dead?*

Seest thou how excellently he reasons, and proves the resurrection from the fact of Christ's being raised, having first established the former in many ways? "For both the prophets spake of it," saith he, "and the Lord Himself shewed it by His appearing, and we preach, and ye believed;" weaving thus his fourfold testimony; the witness of the prophets, the witness of the issue of events, the witness of the apostles, the witness of the disciples; or rather a fivefold. For this very cause too itself implies the resurrection; viz. his dying for others' sins. If therefore this be proved, it is evident that the other also follows, viz. that the other dead likewise are raised. And this is why, as concerning an admitted fact, he challenges and questions them, saying, *Now if Christ be raised, how say some among you that there is no resurrection of the dead?*

Hereby also again abating the boldness of the gainsayers:

<sup>1</sup> The *καταβόρον* was one of the inferior courts at Athens, so called because it had cognizance only of trivial and obscure matters, and because it was

situate in ἀφανὶ τόπῳ τῆς πόλεως, in an obscure part of the city. Hence the phrase. Pausan. Attic. c. 28; Demosth. cont. Timocr. p. 715. Ed. Reiske.

in that he said not, "how say ye," but, *how say some among you*. And neither doth he bring a charge against all, nor declare openly the very persons whom he accuses, in order not to make them more reckless; neither on the other hand doth he conceal it wholly, that he may correct them. For this purpose accordingly, separating them from the multitude, he strips himself for the contest with them, by this both weakening and confounding them, and holding the rest in their conflicts with these firmer to the truth, nor suffering them to desert to those that were busy to destroy them: he being in fact prepared to adopt a vehement mode of speech.

Further, lest they should say, "this indeed is clear and evident unto all, that Christ is raised, and none doubts it; this doth not however necessarily infer the other also, to wit, the resurrection of mankind:"—for the one was both before proclaimed and came to pass, and was testified of by his appearing; the fact, namely, of Christ's resurrection; but the other is yet in hope, i. e. our own part:—see what he doeth; from the other side again he makes it out: which is a proof of great power. Thus, *why do some say*, saith he, *that there is no resurrection of the dead?* Of course then the former also in its turn is subverted by this, the fact, namely, that Christ is raised. Wherefore also he adds, saying,

Ver. 13. *But if there be no resurrection of the dead, then is Christ not risen.*

Seest thou Paul's energy, and his spirit for the combat, so invincible? how not only from what is clear he demonstrates what is doubtful, but also from what is doubted of, to such as contradict hitherto, endeavours to demonstrate the former evident proposition? Not because what had already taken place required demonstration, but that he might signify this to be equally worthy of belief with that.

[3.] "And what kind of consequence is this," saith one? (2.) "For if Christ be not raised, that then neither should others be raised, doth follow: but that if others be not raised, neither should Christ be raised, what reason can there be in this?" Since then this doth not appear to be very reasonable, see how he works it out fully, scattering his seeds beforehand, from the beginning, even from the very purpose of the Gospel: as,



**HOMIL.** that *having died for our sins*, he was raised ; and that he  
**XXXIX.** *is the first-fruits of them that slept.* For the first-fruits—of what can they be the first-fruits, except of them that are raised ? And how can they be first-fruits, if they rise not of whom they are first-fruits ? How then are they not raised ?

Again, if they be not raised, wherefore was Christ raised ? Wherefore came He ? Wherefore did He take upon Him flesh, if He were not about to raise flesh again ? For He stood not in need of it Himself, but for our sakes. But these things he afterward sets down as he goes on ; for the present he saith, *If the dead be not raised, neither is Christ risen*, as though that were connected with this. For had He not intended to raise Himself, He would not have wrought that other work. Seest thou by degrees the whole economy overthrown by those words of theirs, and by their unbelief in the resurrection ? But as yet he saith nothing of the incarnation, but of the resurrection. For not His having become incarnate, but His having died, took away death ; since while He had flesh, the tyranny of death still had dominion.

Ver. 14. *And if Christ be not risen, then is our preaching vain, and your faith is also vain.*

Although what followed in due course would have been, “ but if Christ be not risen, ye fight against things evident, and against so many prophets, and the truth of facts.” But he states what is much more fearful to them : *then is our preaching vain, and your faith is also vain.* For he wishes to shake thoroughly their mind : “ we have lost all,” saith he, “ all is over, if He be not risen.” Seest thou how great is the mystery of the œconomy ? As thus : if after death He could not rise again, neither is sin loosed, nor death taken away, nor the curse removed. Yea, and not only have we preached in vain, but ye also have believed in vain.

[4.] And not hereby alone doth he shew the impiety of these evil doctrines, but he further contends earnestly against them, saying,

Ver. 15. *Yea, and we are found false witnesses of God : because we have testified of Him that He raised up Christ : whom He raised not up, if so be that the dead rise not.*

But if this be impious, (for it is a charge against God and a calumny,) and He raised Him not, as ye say, not only this, <sup>1 Cor. 15. 18.</sup> but other impieties too will follow.

And again he establishes it all, and takes it up again, saying,

Ver. 16. *For if the dead rise not, then is not Christ raised.*

For had He not intended to do this, He would not even have come into the world. And he names not this, but the end, to wit, His resurrection; through it drawing them all on.

Ver. 17. *And if Christ be not raised, your faith is vain.*

With whatever is clear and confessed, he keeps on surrounding the resurrection of Christ, by means of the stronger point making even that which seems to be weak and doubtful, strong and clear.

*Ye are yet in your sins.* For if He be not raised, neither did He die; and if He died not, neither did He take away sin: His death being the taking away of sin. *For behold, saith one, the Lamb of God, which taketh away the sins of the world*<sup>1</sup>. But how *taketh away*? By His death. Where-<sup>1 John 1. 29.</sup>fore also he called him a Lamb, as in the act of being slain. But if He rose not again, neither was He slain: and if He was not slain, neither was sin taken away: and if it was not taken away, ye are in it: and if ye are in it, we have preached in vain: and if we have preached in vain, ye have believed in vain. And besides death remains immortal, if He did not arise. For if He too was holden of death, and loosed not its pains, how released He all others, being as yet Himself holden of it? Wherefore also he adds,

Ver. 18. *Then they also which are fallen asleep in Christ are perished.*

"And why speak I of you," saith he, "when all those also are perished, who have done all, and are no longer subject to the uncertainty of the future?" But by the expression, *in Christ*, he means either "in the faith," or "they who died for His sake, who endured many perils, many miseries, who walked in the narrow way."

Where now are those foul-mouthed Manichees, who say that by the resurrection he here means, the liberation from sin<sup>h</sup>?

<sup>h</sup> The Manicheans say, "that Christ bodies but souls." St. Aug. de Hæres. came in the last times, to deliver not 9. 46. They argued against the re-

HOMIL. For these compact and continuous syllogisms, holding as they  
 XXXIX. do also conversely, indicate nothing of what they say, but what we affirm. It is true, the term "rising again" is spoken of one who is but fallen: and this is why he keeps on explaining, and saith not only, that He was raised, but adds this also, *from the dead*. And the Corinthians too doubted not of the forgiveness of sins, but of the resurrection of bodies.

But what necessity is there at all, that except mankind be not without sin, neither should Christ Himself be so? Whereas, if He were not to raise men up, it were natural to say, "wherefore came He, and took our flesh, and rose again?" But on our supposition not so. Yea, and whether men sin or do not sin, there is ever with God an impossibility of sinning, and what happens to us reaches not to Him, nor doth one case answer to the other by way of conversion, as in the case of the resurrection of the body<sup>c</sup>.

[4.] Ver. 19. *If in this life only we have hope in Christ, we are of all men most miserable.*

What sayest thou, O Paul? How *in this life only have we hope*, if our bodies be not raised, the soul abiding and being immortal? Because even if the soul abide, even if it be infinitely immortal, as indeed it is, without the flesh it shall not receive those hidden good things, as neither truly shall it be punished. For all things shall be made manifest before the judgment-seat of Christ, *that every one may receive the things done in the body, according to that he hath done, whether it be good or bad*<sup>1</sup>. Therefore he saith, *if in this life only we have hope in Christ, we are of all men most miserable*. For if the body rise not again, the soul abides uncrowned without that blessedness which is in heaven. And if this be so, we shall enjoy nothing then at all: and if nothing then, in the present life is our recompense. "What then in this respect can be more wretched than we," saith he?

<sup>1</sup> 2 Cor.  
5, 10.

resurrection of the body from such texts as 1 Cor. v. 5; xv. 50: see Epiph. Hæres. 66 §. 86, 87. They as well as the old Gnostics, of course, took this line, holding as they did the inherent corruption of matter.

<sup>c</sup> His argument may be thus briefly stated. The Apostle had in the former verses made use of the resurrection of

Christ and our resurrection as terms implying one another. If (according to the Manichees) the word resurrection means only liberation from sin, the terms no longer imply one another. For Christ by His divine nature cannot sin. It doth not therefore follow that, if we be not raised, Christ is not risen.

But these things he said, as well to confirm them in the doctrine of the resurrection of the body, as to persuade them concerning that immortal life, in order that they might not suppose that all our concerns end with the present world. For having sufficiently established what he purposed by the former arguments, and having said, *if the dead rise not, then is not Christ raised, but if Christ be not raised, we are perished, and we are yet in our sins*; again he also subjoins this, thoroughly demolishing their arrogance. For so, when he intends to introduce any of the necessary doctrines, he first shakes thoroughly their hardness of heart by fear: which accordingly he did here, having both above scattered those seeds, and made them anxious, as those who had fallen from all: and now again after another manner, and so as they should most severely feel it, doing this same thing, and saying, "*we are of all men most miserable*, if after so great conflicts and deaths, and those innumerable evils, we are to fall from so great blessings, and our happiness is limited by the present life." For in fact all depends on the resurrection. So that even hence it is evident, that his discourse was not of a resurrection from sins, but of bodies, and of the life present and to come.

[5.] Ver. 20. *But now is Christ risen from the dead, the first-fruits of them that slept.*

Having signified how great mischiefs are bred from not believing the resurrection, he takes up the discourse again, and says, *But now is Christ risen from the dead*; continually adding, *from the dead*, so as to stop<sup>1</sup> the mouths of the heretics. *The first-fruits of them that slept.* But if their first-fruits, then themselves also, must needs rise again. Whereas if he were speaking of the resurrection from sins, and none is without sin;—for even Paul saith, *I am conscious to myself of nothing, yet am I not hereby justified*<sup>2</sup>;—how shall there be any who rise again, according to you? Seest thou that his discourse was of bodies? And that he might make it worthy of credit, he continually brings Christ before them, who rose again in the flesh.

Next he also assigns a reason. For, as I said, when one asserts, but does not state the reason, his discourse is not easily received by the multitude. What then is the reason?

<sup>1</sup> Cor.  
15. 20.

<sup>1</sup> lit. see

up,

diffi-

ty

<sup>2</sup> 1 Cor.

15. 20.

1 Cor. 4.

4.



HOMIL. Ver. 21. *For since by man came death, by man came also*  
 XXXIX. *the resurrection of the dead.*

But if by a man, doubtless by one having a body. And observe his thoughtfulness, how on another ground also he makes his argument inevitable. As thus: "he that is defeated," saith he, "must in his own person also recover by conflict the nature which was cast down, must in his own person also gain the victory. For so the reproach was wiped away."

But let us see what kind of death he is speaking of.

Ver. 22. *For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive.*

What then? tell me; did all die in Adam the death of sin<sup>d</sup>? How then was Noah righteous in his generation? and how Abraham? and how Job? and how all the rest? And what, I pray? shall all be made alive in Christ? Where then are those who are led away into hell fire? Thus, if this be said of the body, the doctrine stands: but if of righteousness and sin, it doth so no longer.

Further, lest, on hearing that the revival is common to all, thou shouldest suppose that sinners also are saved, he adds,

Ver. 23. *But every man in his own order.*

For do not, because thou hearest of a resurrection, imagine that all enjoy the same benefits. Since if in the punishment all will not suffer alike, but the difference is great; much more where there are sinners and righteous men, shall the separation be yet wider.

*Christ the first-fruits, afterwards they that are Christ's;*  
 i. e. the faithful, and approved.

Ver. 24. *Then cometh the end.*

For when these shall have risen again, all things shall have an end, not as now, when after Christ's resurrection things abide yet in suspense. Wherefore he added, *at His coming*, that thou mayest learn that he is speaking of that time, *when He shall have delivered up the kingdom to God even the Father; when He shall have put down all rule and all authority and power.*

<sup>d</sup> This may seem at first sight, especially to the English reader, inconsistent with such texts as Ephes. 2. 1; Coloss. 2. 12, &c. But it will be found that the term *angel* used in those texts, is applied rather to each person's actual

sin and its effects, than to the general result of Adam's transgression; and that *hōmōin*, when applied to the latter, relates to the death of the body: as in Rom. 6. 15, which is so expounded by St. Aug. de Nupt. ii. 46.

[6.] Here, give heed to me carefully, and see that no part escape you of what I say. For our contest is with enemies<sup>c</sup>: wherefore first we must practise the *reductio ad absurdum*, which also Paul often doeth. Since in this way shall we find what they say most easy of detection. Let us ask them then first, what is the meaning of the saying, *When he shall have delivered up the kingdom to God, even the Father?* For if we take this just as it stands, and not in a sense becoming Deity, He will not after this retain it. For he that hath delivered up to another, ceases any longer to retain a thing himself. And not only will there be this absurdity, but that also the other person who receives it, will be found not to be possessor of it before he hath so received it. Therefore, according to them, neither was the Father a King before, governing our affairs; nor will it seem that the Son, after these things, will be a King. How then, first of all, concerning the Father doth the Son Himself say, *My Father worketh hitherto, and I work*<sup>1</sup>: and of Him Daniel, *That His kingdom is an everlasting kingdom, which shall not pass away*<sup>2</sup>? Seest thou how many absurdities are produced, and repugnant to the Scriptures, when one takes the thing spoken after the manner of men?

But what rule, then, doth he here say that Christ *putteth down*? That of the angels? Far from it. That of the faithful? Neither is it this. What rule then? That of the devils, concerning which he saith, *We wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world*<sup>3</sup>. For now it is not as yet *put down* perfectly, they working in many places, but then shall they cease.

Ver. 25. *For He must reign, till He hath put all enemies under His feet.*

Again from hence also another absurdity is produced, unless we take this also in a way becoming Deity. For the

<sup>c</sup> The partisans of Marcellus of An-cyra, who about the middle of the fourth century taught that the Personal Kingdom of the Son, and indeed His Personality, will cease at the last day, He being such an emanation from the Father as shall be again absorbed into the Father. See S. Cyril, Catech. xv. 27. and others

quoted by Bp. Pearson on the Creed, Art. vi. part 2. This error is supposed to have occasioned the insertion at Constantinople of the words, "Of whose kingdom there shall be no end," in the Nicene Creed. It appears that Marcellus alleged this text.

<sup>1</sup> Cor.  
15. 27.  
(4.)

<sup>5.</sup> John

<sup>2</sup> Dan. 7.

<sup>14.</sup>

<sup>3</sup> Ephes.

<sup>6.</sup> 12.

HOMIL. expression, *until*, is one of end and limitation: but in  
 XXXIX. reference to God, this does not exist.

Ver. 26. *The last enemy that shall be destroyed is death.*

How the last? After all, after the devil, after all the other things. For so in the beginning also death came in last; the counsel of the devil having come first, and our disobedience, and then death. Virtually then indeed it is even now put down: but actually, at that time.

[7.] Ver. 27. *For He hath put all things under His feet. But when He saith, All things are put under Him, it is manifest that He is excepted, which did put all things under Him.*

Ver. 28. *And when all things shall be subdued unto Him, then shall the Son also Himself be subject unto Him that put all things under Him.*

And yet before he said not that it was the Father who put things under Him, but He Himself who makes void. For when He shall have made void, saith he, all rule and authority: and again, for He must reign until He hath put all His enemies under His feet. How then doth he here say, the Father?

And not only is there this apparent perplexity, but also that he is afraid with a very unaccountable fear, and uses a correction, saying, *He is excepted, which did put all things under Him*, as though some would suspect, whether the Father might Himself not be subject unto the Son; than which what can be more irrational? nevertheless he fears this.

How then is it? for in truth there are many questions following one upon another. Well, give me then your earnest attention; since in fact it is necessary for us first to speak of the scope also of Paul and his mind, which one may find every where shining forth, and then to subjoin our solution: this being itself an ingredient in our solution.

What then is Paul's mind, and what is his custom? He speaks in one way, when he discourses of the Godhead alone, and in another, when he falls into the argument of the economy. Thus having once taken hold of our Lord's Flesh, he freely thereafter uses all the sayings that humiliate Him; without fear, as though that were able to bear all such expressions. Let us see therefore here also, whether his

discourse is of the simple Godhead, or whether along with the economy he asserts of Him those things which he saith: or rather let us first point out, where he did this of which I have spoken. Where then did he this? Writing to the Philippians he saith, *Who, being in the form of God, thought it not robbery to be equal with God, but made Himself of no reputation, and took upon Him the form of a servant, and was made in the likeness of men: and being found in fashion as a man, he humbled Himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross. Wherefore God also hath highly exalted Him*<sup>1</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> Cor.  
15 24.

Seest thou how, when he was discoursing of the Godhead alone, he uttered those great things, that He *was in the form of God*, and that He *was equal with Him* that begat Him, and to Him refers the whole? But when He shewed Him to thee made flesh, he lowered again the discourse. For except thou distinguish these things, there is great variance between the things spoken. Since, if He were *equal with God*, how did He highly exalt one equal with Himself? If He were *in the form of God*, how *gave* He Him a name? for he that giveth, giveth to one that hath not, and he that exalteth, exalteth one that is before abased. He will be found then to be imperfect, and in need, before He hath received the *exaltation* and the *Name*; and many other absurd corollaries will hence follow. But if thou shouldest add the economy, thou wilt not err in saying these things. These things then here also consider, and with this mind receive thou the expressions.

<sup>1</sup> Phil. 2.  
6, 7, 8, 9.

[8.] Now together with these we will state also other reasons. (5.) But at present it is necessary to mention this: first, that Paul's discourse was of the resurrection, a thing counted to be impossible and greatly disbelieved: next, he was writing to Corinthians, among whom the majority were the philosophers, who mocked at such things always. For although in other things wrangling one with another, in this they all, as with one mouth, conspired, dogmatically declaring that there is no resurrection. Contending therefore for such a subject, so disbelieved and ridiculed, both on account of the prejudice which had been formed, and on account of the difficulty of the thing; and wishing to demonstrate its possibility, he first effects this from the resurrection of Christ. And having



HOMIL. proved it both from the prophets, and from those who had  
 XXXIX. seen, and from those who had believed: when he had obtained  
 an admitted *reductio ad absurdum*, he proves in what follows  
 the resurrection of mankind also. *For if the dead rise not,*  
*saith he, then is not Christ raised.*

Further; having closely urged these converse arguments in  
 the former verses, he tries it again in another way, calling  
 Him the *first-fruits*, and pointing to His *putting down all*  
*rule, and all authority, and power, and death last.* "How  
 then should death be put down," saith he, "unless he first  
 loose the bodies which he held?" Since then he had spoken  
 great things of the Only-begotten, that He *gives up the king-*  
*dom*, i. e. that He Himself brings these things to pass, and  
 Himself is victor in the war, and *putteth all things under*  
*His feet*, he adds, to correct the unbelief of the multitude,  
*for He must reign, till He hath put all enemies under His*  
*feet.* Not as putting an end to the kingdom, did he use the  
 expression *until*, but to render what was said worthy of  
 credit, and induce them to be confident. For "do not," saith  
 he, "because thou hast heard that He will put down *all rule,*  
*and all authority, and power,* to wit, the devil, and the hands  
 of demons, (many as there are,) and the multitudes of unbe-  
 lievers, and the tyranny of death, and all evils; do not thou fear,  
 as though His strength were exhausted. For until He shall  
 have done all these things, *He must reign:*" not saying this,  
 that, after He hath brought it to pass, He doth not reign; but  
 establishing this other, that even if it be not now, undoubtedly  
 it will be. For His kingdom is not cut off: yea, He rules and  
 prevails and abides until He shall have set to right all things.

And this manner of speech one might find also in the Old  
 Testament; as when it is said, *But the word of the Lord*  
 Ps. 119. *abideth for ever*<sup>1</sup>; and, *Thou art the same, and Thy years*  
 89. *shall not fail*<sup>2</sup>. Now these and such like things the Prophet  
 Ps. 102. saith, when he is telling of things which a long space of time  
 27. must achieve, and which must by all means come to pass;  
 casting out the fearfulness of the duller sort of hearers.

But that the expression, *until*, spoken of God, and *unto*,  
 do not signify an end, hear what one saith: *From everlasting*  
 Ps. 90. *unto everlasting Thou art God*<sup>3</sup>; and again, *I am, and even*  
 2. *to your old age I am He*<sup>4</sup>.  
 Isa. 46.

4. For this cause indeed doth he set death last, that from the

victory over the rest this also might be easily admitted by the unbeliever. For when He destroys the devil who brought in death, much rather will He put an end to His work.

[9.] Since then he referred all to Him, the *putting down rule and authority*, the perfecting of His kingdom, I mean the salvation of the faithful, the peace of the world, the taking away of evils, (for this is to perfect His kingdom, to put an end to death;) and he said not "the Father by Him," but "Himself shall put down, and Himself shall put under His feet," and he no where mentioned Him that begat Him; he was afraid afterward, lest on this account among some of the more irrational persons, either the Son might seem to be greater than the Father, or to be a certain distinct principle, unbegotten<sup>1</sup>. And therefore, gently guarding himself, he qualifies the magnitude of his expressions, saying, *for He hath put all things under His feet*, again referring to the Father these high achievements; not as though the Son were without power. For how could He be, of whom he testified so great things before, and referred to Him all that was said? But it was for the reason which I mentioned, and that he might shew all things to be common to Father and Son which were done in our behalf. For that Himself alone was sufficient to *put all things under Him*, hear again Paul saying, <sup>Phil. 3. 21.</sup> *Who shall change our vile body, that it may be fashioned like unto His glorious body, according to the working whereby He is able even to subdue all things unto Himself.*

Then also he uses a correction, saying, *But when He saith, all things are put under Him, it is manifest that He is excepted, which did put all things under Him*, testifying even thence no small glory to the Only-begotten. For if He were less, and much inferior, this fear would never have been entertained by him. Neither is he content with this, but also adds another thing, as follows. I say, lest any should doubtfully ask, "And what if the Father hath not been *put under Him*?" this doth not at all hinder the Son from being the more mighty;" fearing this impious supposition, because that expression was not sufficient to point out this also, he added, going very much beyond it, *But when all things shall be subdued unto Him, then shall the Son also Himself be subject*; shewing His great concord with the Father, and that He is the principle of all other good things, and the first Cause, who

HOMIL. hath begotten One, so great in power and in achievements.  
 XXXIX.

(6.) [10.] But if he said more than the subject-matter demanded, marvel not. For in imitation of his Master he doeth this: since He too purposing to shew His concord with Him that begat Him, and that He hath not come without His mind, descends so far, I say not, as the proof of concord demanded, but as the weakness of the persons present required. For He prays to His Father for no other cause but this; and stating the reason He saith, *that they may believe that Thou hast sent Me*<sup>1</sup>. In imitation therefore of Him, Paul here in his

<sup>1</sup> John  
11. 42.

<sup>2</sup> πολλῶν  
πίστεων  
καὶ τῆ  
μεριμν-  
σίᾳ.

manner of speech goes beyond what was required; not that thou mightest have any suspicion of a forced servitude, far from it; but that he might the more entirely cast out those impious doctrines. For so, when he is minded to pull up any thing by the roots, he is wont to do it, and abundant<sup>2</sup> more with it<sup>3</sup>. Thus too, for example, when he spake of a believing wife and an unbelieving husband, companying with one another by the law of marriage, that the wife might not consider herself defiled by that intercourse, and the embraces of the unbeliever, he said not, "the wife is not unclean," nor, "she is no wise harmed, by the unbeliever," but, which was much more, "the unbeliever is even *sanctified* by her," not meaning to signify this, that the heathen was made holy through her, but by the very great strength of the expression anxious to remove her fear. So also here, his zeal to take away that impious doctrine, by saying over and above what he needed, was the cause of his expressing himself as he did. For as to suspect the Son of weakness, is extreme impiety: (wherefore he corrects it, saying, *He shall put all enemies under His feet*;) so on the other hand is it more impious to consider the Father inferior to Him. Wherefore he takes it also away with exceeding force. And observe how he puts it. For he said not simply, *He is excepted which put all things under Him*, but, *it is manifest*, "for even if it be admitted," saith he, "nevertheless I make it sure<sup>3</sup>."

<sup>3</sup> ἀσφα-  
λίζομαι.

And that thou mayest learn, that this is the reason of the things spoken, I would ask thee this question: Doth an additional *subjection* at that time befall the Son? And how can this be other than impious and unworthy of God? For the greatest subjection and obedience is this, that He who is



God took the form of a servant. How then will He then be *subject*? Seest thou, that to take away the impious notion, he used this expression? and this too in a suitable though reserved sense? For as becomes a Son and a divine Person, so He obeys; not humanly, but as one acting freely, and having all authority. Otherwise how is he co-enthroned? How, *as the Father raiseth up, even so He, whom He will*? How are *all things that the Father hath, His*, and all that He hath, the Father's? For these phrases indicate to us an authority exactly measured by<sup>3</sup> that of Him that begat Him.

[11.] But what is this, *When He shall have delivered up the kingdom*? The Scripture acknowledges two kingdoms of God, the one by appropriation<sup>4</sup>, the other by creation<sup>5</sup>. Thus, He is king over all, both Greeks, and Jews, and devils, and His adversaries, in respect of His creation: but He is king of the faithful, and willing, and subject, in respect of His making them His own. This is the kingdom, which is said also to have a beginning. For concerning this He saith also in the second Psalm, *Ask of Me, and I shall give Thee the heathen for Thine inheritance*<sup>6</sup>. Touching this also, He Himself said to His disciples, *All power is given unto Me by My Father*<sup>7</sup>, referring all to Him that begat Him, not as though of Himself He were not sufficient, but to signify that He is a Son, and not unbegotten. This kingdom then he doth *deliver up*, i. e. "bring to a right end."

"What then," saith one, "can be the reason why He spake nothing of the Spirit?" Because of Him he was not discoursing now, nor doth he confound all things together. Since also where he saith, *There is one God the Father, and one Lord Jesus*, undoubtedly not as allowing the Spirit to be inferior, is he therefore silent, but because for the time it was not urgent, he so expressed himself. For he is wont also to make mention of the Father only, yet we must not therefore cast out the Son: he is wont to speak also of the Son and of the Spirit only, yet not for this are we to deny<sup>8</sup> the Father.

But what is, *that God may be all in all*? That all things may be dependent upon Him, that none may suppose two beginnings without a beginning, nor another kingdom sepa-

<sup>1</sup> This distinction, in these terms, is on 47 (48) Psalm, v. 1; on 1 Tim. 6. 11: found elsewhere in St. Chrysostom; as as quoted by Suicer, v. Basilian.



**HOMIL.** rated off. For when the enemies shall be lying under the  
**XXXIX.** feet of the Son, and He having them cast under His feet beat  
no variance with His Father, but at concord with Him in  
entire perfection, then He shall Himself *be all in all*.

But some say that he spake this to declare the removal of  
wickedness, as though all would yield thenceforth, and none  
would resist, nor do iniquity. For when there is no sin, it is  
evident that *God shall be all in all*.

[12.] But if bodies do not rise again, how are these things  
true? For the worst enemy of all, death, remains, having  
wrought whatever he listed. "Nay," saith one, "for they  
shall sin no more." And what of that? For he is not dis-  
coursing here of the death of the soul, but of that of the  
body? How then is he *put down*? For victory is this, the  
winning of those things which have been carried off and  
detained. But if men's bodies are to be detained in the earth,  
it follows that the tyranny of death remains, these bodies for  
their part being holden, and there being no other body for  
him to be vanquished in. But if this, which Paul spake of,  
ensue, as undoubtedly it will ensue, God's victory will appear,  
and that a glorious one, in His being able to raise again the  
bodies which were holden thereby. Since an enemy too is  
then vanquished, when a man takes the spoils, not when he  
suffers them to remain in the other's possession: but unless  
one venture to take what is his, how can we say that he is  
(7.) vanquished? After this manner of victory doth Christ Him-  
self say in the Gospels that He hath been victorious, thus  
speaking, *When he shall bind the strong man, then shall he  
also spoil his goods*<sup>1</sup>. Since if this were not so, it would not  
be at all a manifest victory. For as in the death of the soul,  
<sup>1</sup> Matt. 12. 29. *he that is dead is freed from sin*<sup>2</sup>; (and yet we cannot say  
<sup>2</sup> Rom. 6. 7. that this is a victory, for he is not the victor, who adds no  
more to his wickedness, but he who hath done away the  
former captivity of his passions;) just so in this instance also.  
I should not call death's being stayed from feeding on the  
bodies of men a splendid victory, but rather that the bodies  
heretofore holden by him should be snatched away from him.

But if they should still be contentious, and should say that  
these things were spoken of the soul's death, how is this  
*destroyed last*? since in the case of each one at his Baptism

it hath been destroyed perfectly. If however thou speakest <sup>1 Cor.</sup> of the body, the expression is admissible; I mean, such a <sup>15. 27.</sup> saying as that it will be *last destroyed*.

But if any should doubt why, discoursing of the resurrection, he did not bring forward the bodies which rose again in the time of our Lord, our answer might be the following: that this could not be alleged in behalf of the resurrection. For to point out those who had risen dying again, suited not one employed in proving that death is entirely destroyed. Yea, this is the very reason why he said that he is *destroyed last*, that thou mightest never more suspect his rising again. For when sin is taken away, much more shall death cease: it being out of all reason, when the fountain is dried up, that the stream flowing from it should still subsist; and when the root is annihilated, that the fruit should remain.

[13.] Since then in the last day the enemies of God shall be destroyed, together with death, and the devil, and the evil spirits, let us not be dejected at the prosperity of the enemies of God. For the enemies of the Lord, in the moment of their glory and exaltation, fail; *yea, like smoke have they failed away*<sup>1</sup>. When thou seest any enemy of God wealthy, with <sup>1 Pa. 37.</sup> armed attendants, and many flatterers, be not cast down, but <sup>20.</sup> lament, weep, call upon God, that He may enrol him amongst His friends: and the more he prospers being God's enemy, so much the more do thou mourn for him. For sinners we ought always to bewail, but especially when they enjoy wealth, and abundance of good days; even as one should the sick, when they eat and drink to excess.

But there are some, who, when they hear these words, are of so unhappy a disposition, as to sigh bitterly thereupon, and say, "Tears are due to me, who have nothing." Thou hast well said, "who have nothing," not because thou hast not what another hath, but because thou accountest the thing such, as to be called happy; yea, for this cause art thou worthy of infinite lamentations: even as, if a person living in health, should count happy him that is sick, and lying on a soft couch, this latter is not near so wretched and miserable as he, because he hath no sense of his own advantages. Just such a result one may observe in these men's case also: nay, and hereby our whole life is confounded and disordered. For

HOMIL. these sayings have undone many, and betrayed them to the  
 XXXIX. devil, and made them more pitiable than such as are wasted  
 with famine. Yea, that those who long after more, are more  
 wretched than mendicants, as being possessed with a greater  
 and bitterer sorrow than they, is evident from what follows.

A drought once overtook our city, and all were trembling  
 for the last of evils, and were beseeching God to rid them of this  
 fear. And one might see then that which was spoken of by  
 1 Deut. Moses; *'the heavens become brass*, and a death, of all deaths  
 28. 23. the most horrible, waited for every day. But afterwards, when  
 it seemed good to the merciful God, beyond all expectation  
 there was wasted down from heaven a great and plentiful rain,  
 and thenceforth all were in holiday and feasting, as having  
 come up from the very gates of death. But in the midst of  
 so great blessings, and the common gladness of all, one of  
 these exceeding wealthy people, with a gloomy and down-  
 cast countenance, went about quite dead with sorrow; and  
 when many enquired the reason, wherefore in the common joy  
 of all men he alone is sorrowful, he could not even keep  
 within him this savage passion, but goaded by the tyranny of  
 the disease, he declared before them all the reason. "Why,"  
 saith he, "having in my possession ten thousand measures of  
 wheat, I have no means of disposing of them left." Shall we  
 then count him happy, tell me, for these words, for which he  
 deserved to be stoned? Him that was more cruel than any  
 wild beast, the common enemy? What sayest thou, man?  
 Art thou sad because all did not perish, that thou mightest  
 gather gold? Hast thou not heard what Solomon saith<sup>2</sup>, *He*  
 2 Prov. 11. 26. *that withholdeth<sup>3</sup> corn, the people shall curse him?* but  
 3 *ἀντιμαρτυρῶν*  
 4 *ἀντὶ*  
 Theodo- goest about a common enemy of the blessings of the world,  
 tion. and a foe to the liberality of the Lord of the world, and a  
 5 *ἐναντίον*  
 LX X. friend of Mammon, or rather his slave? Nay, doth not that  
 tongue deserve to be cut out, and the heart to be quenched,  
 that brought forth these words?

(8.) [14.] Seest thou how gold doth not suffer men to be men, but  
 wild beasts and fiends? For what can be more pitiful than  
 this rich man, whose daily prayer is, that there may be famine,  
 in order that he may have a little gold? Yea, and his passion  
 by this time is come round to the contrary of itself: he not  
 even rejoicing in his abundant store of the fruits of the earth,



but on this very account grieving the rather, (to such a pass <sup>1 Cor.</sup> is he come,) that his possessions are infinite. Although one <sup>15. 27.</sup> who hath much, ought to be joyful: but this man on that very account is dejected. Seest thou that, as I said, the rich do not reap as much pleasure from what is present, as they endure sorrow for what hath not yet been added? For he that had innumerable quantities of wheat did more grieve and lament than he who suffered hunger. And while the one, on merely having his necessary food, was crowning himself, and leaping for joy, and giving thanks to God; the other, who had so much, was fretting, and thought he was undone. It is not then the superfluity which causes our pleasure, but a self-controlling mind: since without this, though one obtain and have all, he will feel as one deprived of all, and will mourn accordingly: inasmuch as this man too, of whom we are now speaking, even if he had sold all he had for as large a sum as he wished, would again have grieved that it was not for more; and if he could have had more, he would again have sought another advance; and if he had disposed of the bushel for one pound, he would even then have been distracted for sorrow, that the half bushel could not be sold for as much. And if the price were not set so high at first, marvel not. Since drunkards also are not at first inflamed, but when they have loaded themselves with much wine, then they kindle the flame into greater fierceness: so these men, by how much more they have grasped, in so much the greater poverty do they find themselves, and they who gain more than others, are the very persons to be most in want.

[15.] But I say these things, not only to this man, but also to each one of those who are so diseased; those, I say, who raise the price of their wares, and make a traffic of the poverty of their neighbours. For of humanity none any where makes account; but every where the covetous desire brings out many at the time of sale. And oil and wine is sold by one quicker, by another more slowly, but by neither out of regard to others; rather the one seeks gain, the other to avoid loss by the spoiling of his produce. Thus, because most men, not making much account of the laws of God, shut up and keep all in doors, God, by other means leading them to humanity,—that, were it but of necessity, they may do something kind,—hath infused into them the fear of greater loss,



HOMIL. not allowing the fruits of the earth to keep any long time.  
 XXXIX. in order that out of mere dread of the damage from their spoiling, they may expose for sale to the needy, even against their will, such things as they wickedly bury at home and keep. However, after all this, some are so insatiable, as not even thereby to be corrected. Many, for example, have gone so far as to empty whole casks, not giving even a cup-full to the poor man, nor a piece of silver's worth to the needy, but after it hath become vinegar, they dash it all upon the ground, and destroy besides their casks together with the fruit. Others again who would not give a part of a single cake to the hungry, have thrown whole granaries into some river; and because they listened not to God, who bade them give to the needy, at the bidding of the moth, even unwillingly, they exhausted all they had in their houses in most utter destruction and waste; drawing down upon their own heads, together with this loss, much scorn, and many a curse.

And such is the course of their affairs here; but the hereafter, what words shall set before us? For as these men in this world cast their moth-eaten grain, become useless, into rivers; even so the doers of such things, on this very account become useless, God casts into the river of fire. Because, as the grain by the moth and the worm, so are their souls devoured by cruelty and inhumanity. And the reason of these things is, their being nailed to things present, and gaping after this life only. Whence also such men are full of infinite sadness; for name whatever pleasure thou wilt, the fear of their end is enough to annihilate all, and such an one *is dead, while he*

<sup>1</sup> 1 Tim. *is yet alive*<sup>1</sup>.

5. 6.

Now then, that unbelievers should have these feelings, is no marvel; but when they who have partaken of so great mysteries, and learned such high rules of self-denial concerning things to come, delight to dwell in things present, what indulgence do they deserve?

[16.] Whence then arises their loving to dwell in present things? From giving their mind to luxury, and fattening their flesh, and making their soul delicate, and rendering their burden heavy, and their darkness great, and their veil thick. For in all luxury, the better part is enslaved, but the worse prevails; and the former is blinded on every side, and dragged on in its maimed condition; while the other draws and leads men

about every where, though it ought to be in the rank of things <sup>1 Cor.</sup> that are led. <sup>15. 27.</sup>

Since great indeed is the bond between the soul and the body; the Maker having contrived this, lest any should induce us to abhor it as alien. For God indeed bade us love (9.) our enemies; but the devil hath so far prevailed, as to induce some<sup>d</sup> even to hate their own body. Since, when a man saith that it is of the devil, he proves nothing else than this; which is the extreme of dotage. For if it be of the devil, what is this so perfect harmony, such as to render it meet in every way for the energies of the self-controlling soul? "Nay," saith one, "if it be meet, how doth the body blind it?" It is not the body which blinds the soul; far from it, O man; but the luxury. But whence do we desire the luxury? Not from our having a body, by no means; but from an evil choice. For the body requires feeding, not high feeding<sup>1</sup>, the body needs nourishing, not breaking up and falling apart. <sup>of the</sup> You see that not to the soul only, but to the very body also, <sup>of the</sup> which receives the nourishment, the luxury is hostile. For it becomes weaker instead of strong, and softer instead of firm, and sickly instead of healthful, and heavier instead of light, and slighter instead of compact, and illfavoured instead of handsome, and unsavoury instead of fragrant, and impure instead of clean, and full of pain instead of being at ease, and useless instead of useful, and old instead of young, and decaying instead of strong, and slow and dull instead of quick, and maimed instead of whole. Whereas if it were of the devil, it ought not to receive injury from the things of the devil, I mean, from sin.

[17.] But neither is the body, nor meats, of the devil, but luxury alone. For by means of it that malignant fiend brings to pass his innumerable evils. Thus did he make victims of<sup>2</sup> a whole people. For the beloved waxed fat, saith one, and <sup>of the</sup> grew thick, and was enlarged, and kicked<sup>3</sup>. And thence<sup>4</sup> was the beginning of those thunderbolts also on Sodom. <sup>Deut.</sup> And to declare this, Ezekiel said, *But this was the iniquity of Sodom, in pride, and fulness of bread, and refinements<sup>5</sup> they waxed wanton<sup>6</sup>.* Therefore also Paul said, *She that liveth in pleasure<sup>7</sup>, is dead while she liveth.* How should this be?

<sup>d</sup> The Manichæans, and Gnostic sects.

<sup>1</sup> *εὐφροσύνη*  
<sup>2</sup> *κατακτείνω*

<sup>3</sup> *ἐκπαύω*  
<sup>4</sup> *ἐκ*  
<sup>5</sup> *ἐκ*  
<sup>6</sup> *ἐκ*  
<sup>7</sup> *ἐκ*

**HOMIL.** Because as a sepulchre she bears about her body, bound close  
**XXXIX.** to innumerable evils\*. And if the body so perish, how will the soul be affected; what disorder, what waves, what a tempest will she be filled with? Hereby, you see, she becomes unfitted for every duty, and will have no power easily to speak, nor hear, nor take counsel, nor do any thing that is needful. But as a pilot, when the storm hath got the better of his skill, is plunged into the deep, vessel and sailors and all: so also the soul together with the body is drowned in the grievous abyss of insensibility.

For, in fact, God hath set the stomach in our bodies as a kind of mill, giving it a proportionate power, and appointing a set measure, which it ought to grind every day. If therefore one cast in more, remaining unground it doth injury to the whole body. Hence diseases, and weaknesses, and deformities: since in truth luxury makes the beautiful woman not only sickly, but also foul to look upon. For when she is continually breathing out foul exhalations, and out of her mouth come fumes of stale wine, and her countenance is more florid than it ought to be, and she tramples on the order that beseems a woman, and loses all her seemliness, and her body becomes flabby, her eyelids bloodshot and distended, and her bulk unduly great, and her flesh an useless load; consider what a disgust it all produces.

Moreover, I have heard physicians say, that many have been hindered from reaching their proper height by nothing so much as luxurious living. For the breath being obstructed by the multitude of things which are cast in, and being occupied in the digestion of such things, that which ought to serve for growth, is spent on this digestion of superfluities. Why need one speak of gout, rheum dispersed every where, the other diseases hence arising, the whole abomination? For nothing is so disgusting, as a woman pampering herself with much food. Therefore among the poorer women one may see more of beauty: the superfluities being consumed, and not cleaving to them, like some superfluous clay, of no use and benefit. For their daily exercise, and labours, and

\* "It is thy own soul, wretched woman, that thou hast lost; the spiritual life gone, thou for a while ledest on a life of thine own, and movest about, wearing thy death upon thee." *S. Cypr. of the Lapsed*, c. 19.

hardships, and their frugal table, and spare diet, minister <sup>1 Cor.</sup>  
unto them much soundness of body, and thence also much <sup>16. 27.</sup>  
bloom.

[18.] But if thou talkest of the pleasure of luxury, thou wilt find it to go no farther than the throat: since as soon as it hath passed the tongue, it is flown away, leaving behind in the body much that is disgusting. For do not I pray look on the voluptuaries at table only, but when you see them rise up, then follow them, and you will see bodies rather of wild beasts and irrational creatures, than of human beings. You will see them with headache, distended, bound up, needing a bed, and a couch, and plenty of rest, and like men who are tossed in a great tempest, and require others to save them, and long for that condition in which they were before they were swelled even to bursting<sup>1</sup>: they carrying their bellies about with a burden like that of women with child,<sup>1</sup> and can scarce step forward, and scarce see, and scarce speak, and scarce do any thing. But if it should chance that they sleep a little, they see again strange dreams, and full of all manner of fancies.

What should one say of that other madness of theirs? the madness of lust, I mean, for this also hath its fountains from hence. Yea, as horses wild after the female, so they, goaded on by the sting of their drunkenness, leap upon all, more irrational than they, and more frantic in their boundings; and committing many more unseemlinesses, which but to name is unlawful. For they know not in fact any longer what they suffer, nor what they do.

But not so he that keeps from luxury: rather he sits in harbour, beholding other men's shipwrecks, and enjoys a pleasure pure and lasting, following after that life which becomes him that is free. Knowing therefore these things, let us flee from the evil banquets of luxury, and cleave to a spare table; that being of a good habit both of soul and body, we may both practise all virtue, and attain the good things to come, through the grace and mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ, with Whom to the Father, with the Holy Ghost, be glory, power, and honour, now and ever, and world without end. Amen.



## HOMILY XL.

I COR. XV. 29.

*Else what shall they do which are baptized for the dead? if the dead rise not at all, why are they then baptized for the dead?*

HE takes in hand again another topic, establishing what <sup>1</sup> *scilicet* he said at one time from what God doeth<sup>1</sup>, and at another from the very things which they practise<sup>2</sup>. And this also is no small plea for the defence of any cause, when a man brings forward the gainsayers themselves as witnessing by their own actions what he affirms. What then is that which he means? Or will ye that I should first mention, how they who are infected with the Marcionite heresy pervert this expression? And I know indeed that I shall excite much laughter; nevertheless, even on this account most of all I will mention it, that you may the more completely avoid this disease: viz. when any Catechumen departs among them, having concealed the living man under the couch of the dead, they approach the corpse, and talk with him, and ask him if he wishes to receive baptism; then, when he makes no answer, he that is concealed underneath saith in his stead, that of course he should wish to be baptized; and so they baptize him instead of the departed, like men jesting upon the stage\*. So great power hath the devil over the souls of careless sinners. Then being called to account, they allege this expression, saying, that even the Apostle hath said, *They who are baptized for the dead*. Seest thou their extreme ridiculousness? Is it meet then to answer

\* Epiphanius relates the same thing of the followers of Cerinthus, another section of the Gnostics, and says it was continued in his time by a kind of tradition in Asia Minor and in Galatia. Hær. 28. §. 6.

these things? I trow not; unless it were necessary to dis- <sup>1 COR.</sup>  
course with madmen of what they in their frenzy utter. But <sup>15. 29.</sup>  
that none of the more exceedingly simple folk may be led  
captive, one must needs submit to answer even these men.  
As thus, if this was Paul's meaning, wherefore did God  
threaten him that is not baptized? For it is impossible that  
any should not be baptized henceforth, this being once  
devised: and besides, the fault no longer lies with the dead,  
but with the living. But to whom spake he, *Unless ye eat*  
*My flesh, and drink My blood, ye have no life in you*? To <sup>1 John</sup>  
the living, or to the dead, tell me? And again, *Unless a man* <sup>6. 53.</sup>  
*be born again of water and of the Spirit, he cannot see the*  
*kingdom of God*? For if this be permitted, and there be no <sup>1 John</sup>  
need of the mind of the receiver, nor of his assent while <sup>8. 5.</sup>  
he lives, what hinders both Greeks and Jews thus to become  
believers, other men after their decease doing these things in  
their stead?

But not to prolong fruitless toil in cutting asunder their  
petty spiders' webs<sup>3</sup>, come let us unfold unto you the force <sup>3 δεσφύ-  
δια δια-  
κρίτων.</sup>  
of this expression. What then is Paul speaking of?

[2.] But first I wish to remind you who are initiated of <sup>vis.</sup>  
the response, which on<sup>a</sup> that evening they who introduce <sup>4 φέρων.</sup>  
you to the mysteries bid you make; and then I will also  
explain the saying of Paul: so this likewise will be clearer to  
you; we, after all other things ended, adding this, which  
Paul now saith. And I desire indeed expressly to utter it,  
but I dare not, on account of the uninitiated; for these add  
a difficulty to our exposition, compelling us either not to  
speak clearly, or to declare unto them the ineffable mysteries.  
Nevertheless, as I may be able, I will speak as through  
a veil<sup>5</sup>.

As thus: after the enunciation of those mystical and fear- <sup>5 στυγνός-  
αόφρων.</sup>  
ful words, and the awful rules of the doctrines which have  
come down from heaven, this also we add at the end, when  
we are about to baptize, bidding them say; *I believe in the*  
*resurrection of the dead*, and upon this faith we are baptized.  
I say, after we have confessed this together with the rest,  
then at last are we let down into the fountain of those sacred  
streams. This therefore Paul recalling to their minds, said,

<sup>a</sup> Probably Easter Eve. Vid. Pingham's Antiquities, ii. 6. c. 7. S. Cyril, Lect. 19, 1.

**HOMIL.** **XL.** *if there be no resurrection, why art thou then baptized for the dead?* i. e. the dead bodies. For in fact, with a view to this art thou baptized, affirming a resurrection of thy dead body, that it no longer remains dead. And thou indeed in the words makest mention of a resurrection of the dead; but the priest, as in a kind of image, signifies to thee by very deed, the things which thou hast believed and confessed in the appointed words. When without a sign thou believest, then he gives thee the sign also; when thou hast done thine own part, then also doth God fully assure thee. How, and in what manner? By the water. For the being baptized and immersed, and then emerging, is a symbol of the descent into hell, and the return thence. Wherefore also Paul calls baptism a burial, saying, *Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death*<sup>1</sup>. By this he makes that also which is to come credible, I mean, the resurrection of our bodies. For the blotting out sins is a much greater thing than the raising up of a body. And this Christ declaring, said, *For whether is easier to say, Thy sins be forgiven thee, or to say, Take up thy bed, and walk?*<sup>2</sup> "The former is the more difficult," saith He, "but since ye disbelieve it, as being hidden, and make the easier instead of the more difficult the demonstration of my power, neither will I refuse to afford you this proof. Then saith He to the paralytic, Arise, take up thy bed, and go into thine house."

<sup>1</sup> Rom.  
6. 4.

<sup>2</sup> Matt.  
9. 5.

- (2.) "And how is this difficult," saith one, "when it is possible to kings also, and rulers? For they too forgive adulterers and homicides." Thou art jesting, O man, who sayest these things. For to forgive sins, with God only is possible. But rulers and kings, whether it is adulterers whom they forgive, or homicides, release them indeed from the present punishment; but their sin they do not purge out. Though they should advance to offices them that have been forgiven, though they should invest them with the purple itself, though they should set the diadem upon their heads, yet so they would only make them kings, but could not free them from their sin. It being God alone who doeth this; which accord-

<sup>b</sup> See before, Hom. 23, §. 3. p. 312.

<sup>c</sup> i. e. the very act of immersion and emersion affirms the spiritual death and

resurrection of thine own body. cf. Rom. vi. 3-5. as quoted below, and the parallel places.

ingly in the Laver of Regeneration He will bring to pass. <sup>1 Con. 15. 31.</sup> For His grace touches the very soul, and thence plucks up the sin by the root. Here is the reason why he that hath been forgiven by the king may be seen with his soul yet impure, but of him that is baptized no longer so, rather the very sun-beams are less pure than it, and it is such as it was originally formed, nay rather much better than that. For it is blessed with a Spirit, on every side enkindling it, and making its holiness intense. And as when thou art recasting iron or gold, thou makest it pure and new once more, just so the Holy Ghost also, recasting the soul in baptism as in a furnace, and consuming its sins, causes it to glisten with more purity than all purest gold.

Further, the credibility of the resurrection of our bodies he signifies to thee again from what follows: viz. that since sin brought in death, now that the root is dried up, one must not after that doubt of the destruction of the fruit. Therefore having first mentioned *the forgiveness of sins*, thou dost next confess also *the resurrection of the dead*; the one guides thee, as by hand, on to the other.

Yet again, because the term Resurrection is not sufficient to indicate the whole: for many, after rising, have again departed, as those in the Old Testament, as Lazarus, as they at the time of the crucifixion: one is bid to say, *and the life everlasting*, that none may any longer have a notion of death, after that resurrection.

These words therefore Paul recalling to their minds, saith, *What shall they do which are baptized for the dead?* "For if there be no resurrection," saith he, "these words are but scenery. If there be no resurrection, how persuade we them to believe things which we do not bestow?" Just as if a person bidding another to sign and deliver a document, to the effect that he had received so much, should never give the sum named therein, yet after the subscription, should demand of him the specified monies. What then will remain for the subscriber to do, now that he hath made himself responsible, without having received what he admitted he had received? This then he here saith of those who are baptized also. *What shall they do which are bap-*



574 *The Resurrection proved by the Apostles' Sufferings:*

HOMIL. *fized*, saith he, "having subscribed to the resurrection of  
XL. dead bodies, and not receiving it, but suffering fraud? And what need was there at all of this confession, if the fact did not follow?"

[3.] Ver. 30. *And why stand we in jeopardy every hour?*

Ver. 31. *I protest by your rejoicing which I have in Christ Jesus our Lord, I die daily.*

See again whence he endeavours to establish the doctrine, from his own suffrage: or rather not from his only, but from that also of the other apostles. And this too is no small thing; that the teachers, whom you produce were full of vehement conviction, and signified the same not by words only, but also by very deeds. Therefore, you see, he doth not say simply, "we are persuaded," for this alone was not sufficient to persuade them, but he also furnishes the proof by facts: as if he should say, "in words to confess these things, haply seems to you no marvel; but if we should also produce unto you the voice which deeds send forth, what can ye have to say against that? Hear ye then, how by our perils also day by day we confess these things?" And he said not, "I," but *we*, taking along with him all the apostles together, and thereby at once speaking modestly, and adding credibility to his discourse.

For what can ye have to say? that we are deceiving you, when we preach these things, and that our doctrines come of vain-glory? Nay, our perils suffer you not to pass such a sentence. For who would choose to be in continual jeopardy to no purpose and with no effect? Wherefore also he said, *And why stand we in jeopardy every hour?* For if one should even choose it through vain-glory, such his choice will be but for once and again, not all his life long, like ours. For we have assigned our whole life to this purpose.

*I protest by your rejoicing which I have in Christ Jesus our Lord, I die daily:* by *rejoicing* here, meaning their advancement. Thus, since he had intimated that his perils were many, lest he might seem to say this by way of lamentation, "far from grieving," saith he, "I even rejoice in suffering this for your sake." And doubly, he saith, he takes

delight in it, both as being in jeopardy for their sakes, and as <sup>1 Cor.</sup> beholding their proficiency. Then doing what is usual with <sup>15. 31.</sup> him, because he had uttered great things, he refers both to Christ.

But how doth he *die daily*? by his readiness, and preparation for that event. And wherefore saith he these words? Again, by these also, to establish the doctrine of the resurrection. "For who would choose," saith he, "to undergo so many deaths, if there be no resurrection, nor life after this? Yea, if they who believe in the resurrection would scarcely put themselves in jeopardy for it except they were very noble of heart: much more would not the unbeliever (so he speaks) choose to undergo so many deaths, and so terrible." Thus, see by degrees how very high he mounts up. He had said, *we stand in jeopardy*, he added, *every hour*, then, *daily*, then, I not only *stand in jeopardy*, saith he, but I even *die*: he concludes accordingly by pointing out also what kind of deaths they were; thus saying,

Ver. 32. *If after the manner of men I have fought with beasts at Ephesus, what advantageth it me?*

What is, *if after the manner of men*? As far as pertains to men, I fought with beasts: for what if God snatched me out of those dangers? So that I am he who ought most to be in care about these things; I, who endure so great dangers, and have not yet received any return. For if no time of recompense is at hand, but our reward is shut up in this present world, ours is the greater loss. For ye have believed without jeopardy, but we are slaughtered every day." (3.)

But all these things he said, not because he had no advantage even in the very suffering, but on account of the weakness of the many, and to establish them in the doctrine of the resurrection: not because he himself was running for hire; for it was a sufficient recompense to him, to do that which was pleasing to God. So that when he adds, *If in this life only we have hope in Christ, we are of all men most miserable*, it is there again for their sakes, that he might by the fear of this misery overthrow their unbelief of the resurrection. And in condescension to their weakness, he thus speaks. Since in truth, the great reward is to please Christ

HOMIL. at all times : and without the recompense, it is a very great  
 XL. return to be in jeopardy for His sake.

[4.] *If the dead rise not, let us eat and drink ; for to-morrow we die.*

This word, be sure, is spoken in mockery : wherefore neither did he bring it forward of himself, but summoned that prophet, of loftiest sound, Isaiah, who, discoursing of certain insensible and reprobate persons, made use of these words, *Who slay oren and kill sheep, to eat flesh and drink wine ; who say, Let us eat and drink, for to-morrow we die. These things are revealed to the ears of the Lord of Hosts,*

<sup>1</sup> Is. 22. *and this iniquity shall not be forgiven you, till ye die*<sup>1</sup>. Now  
 13, 14.  
 LXX. if then they were deprived of pardon, who spake thus, much more in the time of Grace.

Then, that he might not make his discourse too rough, he dwells, not long upon his *reductio ad absurdum*, but again turns his discourse to exhortation, saying,

Ver. 33. *Be not deceived : evil communications corrupt good manners.*

And this he said, both to rebuke them, as without understanding, (for here he by a charitable expression, calls *good* that which is easily deceived,) and also, as far as he could, to make some allowance for them in respect of what he had mentioned, and to remove from them and transfer to others the greater part of his charges, and so by this way also to allure them to repentance. Which he doth likewise in the Epistle to the Galatians, saying, *But he that troubleth you shall bear*

<sup>2</sup> Gal. 5. *his judgment, whosoever he be*<sup>2</sup>.

<sup>10.</sup>

<sup>3</sup> *divinior.*

Ver. 34. *Awake up righteously<sup>3</sup>, and sin not.*

As if he were speaking to drunkards and madmen. For suddenly to cast every thing out of their hands, was the part of drunkards and madmen, in not seeing any longer what they saw, nor believing what they had before confessed. But what is, *righteously*? with a view to what is profitable and useful. For it is possible to awake up unrighteously, when a man is thoroughly roused up to the injury of his own soul. And well did he add, *sin not*, implying that hence were the seeds of their unbelief. And in many places he covertly signifies this, that a corrupt life is the parent of evil doctrines ; as

when he saith, *The love of money is the root of all evil, which while some coveted after, they have erred from the faith*.<sup>1 Cor. 15. 34. 1 Tim. 6. 10.</sup> Yea, and many of those who are conscious of wickedness, and would fain not pay its penalty, are by this fear damaged also in their faith of the resurrection: even as they who do very virtuously desire even daily to behold it.

*For some have not the knowledge of God: I speak this to your shame.*

See how again he transfers his accusations to others. For he said not, *Ye have not the knowledge*, but, *some have not the knowledge*. Because disbelieving the resurrection is the temper of one not fully aware that the irresistible power of God is sufficient for this also. For if, out of the things which are not, He made the things that are, much more will He be able to raise again those which have been dissolved.

And because he had touched them to the quick, and exceedingly mocked them, accusing them of gluttony, of folly, of madness; mitigating those expressions, he saith, *I speak to your shame*, that is, to set upright, to bring back, to make you better, by this shame of yours. For he feared, lest, if he cut too deep, he should cause them to start away.

[5.] But let us not consider these things as spoken to them only, but as addressed now also to all who labour under the same disease, and live a corrupt life. Since in truth not they who hold corrupt doctrines only, but they too who are holden of grievous sins, are both drunken and frantic. Wherefore also to them may it be justly said, *Awake*, and especially to those who are weighed down by the lethargy of avarice; who rob wickedly. For there is a robbery which is good, the robbery of Heaven, which injures not. And although in respect of money it is impossible for one to become rich, unless another first become poor: yet in spiritual things this is not so, but wholly the reverse: it is impossible that any should become rich without making another's store plentiful. For if thou help no one, thou wilt not be able to grow wealthy. Thus, whereas in temporal things imparting causes diminution: in spiritual things, on the contrary, imparting works increase, and the not imparting, this produces great poverty, and brings on extreme punishment. And this is signified by him who buried the talent. Yea, and he too who hath a word of



HOMIL. wisdom, by imparting to another, increases his own abundance, by making many wise: but he that buries it at home, deprives himself of his abundance, by neglecting to win the profit of the many. Again, he that had other gifts, by healing many augmented his own gift: and was neither himself emptied by the imparting, and filled many others with his own spiritual gift. And in all spiritual things this rule abides unshaken. Thus also in the Kingdom, he that makes many partakers with himself of the Kingdom, will hereby the more completely have the fruits of it in return: but he that studies not to have any partaker, will himself be cast out of those many blessings. For if the wisdom of this world of sense is not spent, though ten thousand are forcibly seizing it; nor doth the artificer, by making many artificers, lose his own skill; much less doth he who seizes the Kingdom make it less, but then will our riches be increased when we call many to us for that purpose.

Let us seize then the things which cannot be spent, but increase whilst we seize them: let us seize the things which admit of none to defraud us of them by false accusation, none to envy us for them. For so, if there were a place which had a fountain of gold gushing forth with continual flood, and so much the more it flowed on as more was drawn from it; and there were another place which had a treasure buried in the earth; from which wouldest thou desire to be enriched? would it not be from the first? Plainly. But that this may not be a mere fiction of ours in words, consider the saying in reference to the air and the sun. For these are seized hold of by all, and satisfy all. These, however, whether men enjoy, or do not enjoy them, abide the same undiminished: but what I spake of, is a much greater thing; for spiritual wisdom abides not the same distributed or not distributed: but it increases rather in the distribution.

But if any endure not what I have said, but still cleave to the poverty of worldly things, snatching at the things which endure diminution: even in respect of those again, let him call to mind the food of manna<sup>1</sup>, and tremble at the example of that punishment. For what happened in that instance, this same result may one now also see in the case of covetous men. But what then happened? worms were bred from their covet-

<sup>1</sup> Exod.  
16. 20.

ousness. This also now happens in their case. For the measure of the food is the same for all; we having but one stomach to fill; only thou who feedest luxuriously hast more to get rid of. And as in that case they who in their houses gathered more than the lawful quantity, gathered not manna, but more worms and rottenness; just so both in luxury and in covetousness, the gluttonous and drunken gather not more dainties, but more corruption.

[6.] Nevertheless, so much worse than they are the men of our time, in that they underwent this once for all, and received correction; but these every day bringing into their own houses this worm much more grievous than that, neither perceive it, nor are satiated. For that these things do resemble those in respect of our useless labour on them: (for in regard of punishment these are much worse:) here is the proof for thee to consider.

Wherein, I ask, differs the rich man from the poor? Hath he not one body to clothe? one belly to feed? In what then hath he the advantage? In cares, in spending himself, in disobeying God, in corrupting the flesh, in wasting the soul. Yea, these are the things in which he hath the advantage of the poor: since if he had many stomachs to fill, perhaps he might have somewhat to say, as that his need was more, and the necessity of expense greater. But even "now they may," saith one, reply, "that they fill many bellies, those of their domestics, those of their hand-maidens." But this is done, not through need, nor for humanity's sake, but from mere pride: whence one cannot put up with their excuse.

For why hath he many servants? Since as in our apparel (5.) we ought to follow our need only, and in our table, so also in our servants. What need is there then? None at all. For, in fact, one master need only employ one servant; or rather two or three masters one servant. But if this be grievous, consider them that have none, and enjoy more prompt attendance. For God hath made men sufficient to minister unto themselves, or rather unto their neighbour also. And if thou believe it not, hear Paul saying, *These hands have ministered unto my necessities, and to them that were with me*<sup>1</sup>. After<sup>1</sup> Acts 20.  
34.  
that he, the teacher of the world, and worthy of heaven, disdained not to serve innumerable others; dost thou think it

**HOMIL.** a disgrace, unless thou carriest about whole herds of slaves,  
**XI.** not knowing that this in truth is what most of all brings shame upon thee? For to that end did God grant us both hands and feet, that we might not stand in need of servants. Since not at all for need's sake was the class of slaves introduced, else even along with Adam had a slave been formed; but it is the penalty of sin, and the punishment of disobedience. But when Christ came, he put an end also to this.

<sup>1</sup> Gal. 3. *For in Christ Jesus there is neither bond nor free*<sup>1</sup>. So that it is not necessary to have a slave: or if it be at all necessary, let it be about one only, or at the most two. What mean the swarms of servants? For as the sellers of sheep, and the slave-dealers, so do our rich men take their round, in the baths and in the forum.

However, I will not be too exact. We will allow you to keep a second servant. But if thou collect many, thou dost it not for humanity's sake, but in self-indulgence. Since if it be in care of them, I bid thee occupy none of them in ministering to thyself, but when thou hast purchased them, and hast taught them trades whereby to support themselves, let them go free. But when thou scourgest, when thou puttest them in chains, it is no more a work of humanity.

And I know that I am giving disgust to my hearers. But what must I do? For this I am set, and I shall not cease to say these things, whether any thing come of them, or not. For what means thy clearing the way before thee in the market-place? Art thou walking then among wild beasts, that thou drivest away them that meet thee? Be not afraid; none of these bite who approach thee, and walk near thee. But dost thou consider it an insult to walk along side of other men? What madness is this, what prodigious folly, when a horse is following close after thee, to think not of his bringing on thee any insult; but if it be a man, unless he be driven an hundred miles off, to reckon that he disgraces thee. And why hast thou also servants to carry fasces, employing freemen as slaves, or rather thyself living more dishonourably than any slave? For, in truth, meaner than any servant is he who bears about with him so much pride.

Therefore they shall not so much as have a sight of the real liberty, who have enslaved themselves to this grievous

passion. Nay, if thou must drive and clear away, let it not be them that come nigh thee, but thine own pride which thou drivest away; not by thy servant, but by thyself: not with this scourge, but with that which is spiritual. Since now thy servant drives away them that walk by thy side, but thou art thyself driven from thine high place more disgracefully, by thine own self-will, than any servant can drive thy neighbour. But if, descending from thy horse, thou wilt drive away pride by humility, thou shalt sit higher, and place thyself in greater honour, needing no servant to do this. I mean, that when thou art become modest, and walkest on the ground, thou wilt be seated on the car of humility, which bears thee up to the very heavens, that car which hath winged steeds<sup>d</sup>: but if falling from it, thou pass into that of arrogance, thou wilt be in no better state than the reptiles which trail along the ground, nay even much more wretched and pitiable than they: since them the imperfection of their bodies compels thus to trail along, but thee the disease of thine own arrogance. *For so every one that exalteth himself*, saith He, *shall be abased*<sup>1</sup>. That we then may not be abased, but exalted, let<sup>1</sup> *us approach towards that exaltation*. For thus also shall we *find rest for our souls*, according to the divine oracle, and shall obtain the true and most exalted honour; the which may we all obtain, through the grace and mercy, &c. &c.

<sup>d</sup> Alluding perhaps to the story of Bellerophon.

<sup>1</sup> *Con.*  
*15. 34.*

<sup>1</sup> *Matt.*  
*23. 12.*



## HOMILY XLI.

---

I COR. xv. 35, 36.

*But some man will say, How are the dead raised up? and with what body do they come? Thou fool, that which thou sowest is not quickened, except it die.*

GENTLE and lowly as the apostle is, to a great degree, every where, he here adopts a style which may be called rather pungent, because of the impiety of the gainsayers. He is not however content with this, but he also employs reasons and examples, subduing thereby even the very contentious. And above he saith, *Since by man came death, by man came also the resurrection of the dead*; but here he solves an objection brought in by the Gentiles. And see how again he abates the vehemence of his censure; in that he said not, "but perhaps ye will say," but he set down the objector indefinitely, in order that, although employing his impetuous style with all freedom, he might not too severely wound his hearers. And he states two difficulties, one touching the manner of the resurrection, the other, the kind of bodies. For of both, they on their part made a question, saying, "*How* is that which hath been dissolved *raised up*?" and, "*with what body do they come*?" But what means, *with what body*? It is as if they had said, "with this which hath been wasted, which hath perished, or with some other?"

Then, to point out that the objects of their enquiry are not questionable, but admitted points, he at once meets them more sharply, saying, *Thou fool, that which thou sowest is not quickened, except it die*. Which kind of thing we also are wont to do in the case of those who gainsay things acknowledged.

[2.] And wherefore did he not at once fly to the power

of God? Because he is discoursing with unbelievers. For <sup>1 Cor. 15. 36.</sup> when his discourse is addressed to believers, he hath not much need of reasons. Wherefore having said elsewhere, *He shall change your vile body, that it may be fashioned like unto His glorious body*<sup>1</sup>, and having indicated somewhat more<sup>1 Phil. 3. 21.</sup> than the resurrection, he stated no analogies, but instead of any demonstration, he brought forward the power of God, going on to say, *according to the mighty working whereby He is able to subdue all things to Himself*. But here he also urges reasons. That is, having established it from the Scriptures, he adds also, in what comes after, these things over and above, with an eye to them who do not obey the Scriptures; and he saith, *O fool, that which THOU sowest*: i. e. “from thyself thou hast the proof of these things, by what thou doest every day, and doubttest thou yet? Therefore do I call thee a fool, because of the things daily done by thine own self thou art ignorant, and being thyself an artificer of a resurrection, thou doubttest concerning God.” Wherefore very emphatically he said, *what THOU sowest*<sup>2</sup>, thou who art<sup>2</sup> *corrupt*.<sup>21.</sup> mortal and perishing’.

And see how he orders his expressions in a way appropriate to the purpose he had in view: thus, *it is not quickened*, saith he, *except it die*. Leaving, you see, the expressions appropriate to seeds, as that “it buds,” and “grows,” and “is dissolved,” he adopts those which correspond to our flesh, viz. *it is quickened*, and, *except it die*; which do not properly belong to seeds, but to bodies.

And he said not, “after it is dead it lives,” but, which is a greater thing, “therefore it lives, because it dies.” Seest thou, what I am always observing, that he continually gives their argument the contrary turn? Thus, what they made a sure sign of our not rising again, the same he makes a demonstration of our rising. For they said, “the body rises not again, because it is dead.” What then doth he, retorting their argument, say?

\* “Our apostle’s inference is as firm and strong, as it is emphatical; *Stulte! Tu quod seminas &c.* O fool! That which THOU sowest &c. The force or emphasis may be gathered thus. If God doth give a body unto that seed which thou sowest for thine own use and bene-

fit, much more will the same God give a body unto the seed which He Himself doth sow, seeing the end why He sows it, is not thy temporal benefit or commodity, but His own immortal glory.” Dr. Jackson’s Works, vol. iii. 438. See also vol. iii. 433—443.

HOMIL.  
XLI.

"Nay, but unless it were dead, it could not rise again: and therefore it rises again, because it is dead." For as Christ more clearly signifies this very thing, in the words, *Except a corn of wheat fall into the ground and die, it abideth alone: but if it die, it bringeth forth much fruit*<sup>1</sup>; thence also Paul, drawing this example, said not, "it doth not live," but, *is not quickened*; again assuming the power of God, and implying, that not the nature of the ground, but God himself, brings it all to pass.

<sup>1</sup> John  
12. 24.

And what can be the reason that he did not bring that forward, which was more akin to the subject: I mean, the seed of mankind? (For our generation too begins from a sort of decay, even as that of the corn.) Because it was not of equal force, but the latter was a more complete instance: for he wants a case of something that perished entirely, whereas this was but a part; wherefore he rather alleges the other. Besides, that proceeds from a living body, and falls into a living womb; but here it is no flesh, but the earth, into which the seed is cast, and into the same it is dissolved, like the body which is dead. You see that on this account too the example was more appropriate.

[3.] Ver. 37. *And he who soweth, soweth not that body that shall be*<sup>b</sup>.

For the things before spoken meet the question, *how they are raised*; but this, the doubt, *with what body they come*. But what is, *thou sowest not that body which shall be*? Not an entire ear of corn, nor new grain. For here his discourse no longer regards the resurrection, but the manner of the resurrection, what is the kind of body which shall rise again; as whether it be of the same kind, or more excellent, and more glorious. And he takes both from the same analogy, intimating that it will be much more excellent.

(2.) But the heretics, considering none of these things, dart in upon us and say, "one body falls, and another body rises again. How then is there a resurrection? For the resurrection is of that which was fallen. But where is that wonderful and surprising trophy over death, if one body fall and another rise again? For he will no longer appear to

<sup>b</sup> This seems like a different reading: but it appears afterwards that S. Chrysostom read the verse as it stands.

He quotes it therefore here in substance, not *verbatim*.

have given back that which he took captive. And how can the alleged analogy suit the things before mentioned?" Why, it is not one substance that is sown, and another that is raised, but the same substance improved. Else neither will Christ have resumed the same body, when He became the first-fruits of them that rise again: but according to you He threw aside the former body, although it had not sinned, and took another. Whence then is that other? For this body was from the Virgin, but that, whence was it? Seest thou to what absurdity the argument hath come round? For wherefore shews He the very prints of the nails? Was it not with purpose of proving this, that it is that same body which was crucified, and the same again that rose from the dead? And what means also His type of Jonah? For surely it was not one Jonah that was swallowed up, and another that was cast out upon dry land. And why did He also say, *Destroy this temple, and in three days I will raise it up?* For that which was destroyed, the same, clearly, He raised again. Wherefore also the Evangelist added, that *He spake of the temple of His body*<sup>1</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> Cor.  
16. 37.

What is that then which he saith, *Thou seest not that body that shall be?* i. e. not the ear of corn: for it is the same, and not the same; the same, because the substance is the same; but not the same, because this is more excellent, the substance remaining the same, but its beauty becoming greater, and the same body rising up new. Since if this were not so, there were no need of a resurrection, I mean if it were not to rise again improved. For why did He at all pull down His house, except He were about to build it more glorious?

<sup>1</sup> John  
2. 19,  
21.

This now, you see, he said to them who think that it is utter corruption<sup>2</sup>. Next, that none again might suspect from this place that another body is spoken of, he qualifies the dark saying, and himself interprets what he had spoken, not allowing the hearer to turn his thoughts from hence in any other direction. What need is there then of our reasonings? Hear himself speaking, and explaining the phrase, *Thou seest not that body that shall be*. For he straightway adds, *but bare grain, it may chance of wheat, or of some other grain*; i. e. it is not the body that shall be; not so

<sup>2</sup> *corrupt.*  
The reading is perhaps corrupt.



HOMIL. clothed, for instance; not having a stalk and beard, but bare  
 XLI. *grain, it may chance of wheat, or of some other grain.*

Ver. 38. *But God giveth it a body, as it hath pleased Him.*

"Yes," saith one, "but in that case it is the work of nature." Of what nature, tell me? For in that case likewise God surely doeth the whole; not nature, nor the earth, nor the rain. Wherefore also he making these things manifest, leaves out both earth and rain, atmosphere, sun, and hands of husbandmen, and subjoins, *God giveth it a body as it hath pleased Him.* Do not thou therefore curiously inquire, nor busy thyself with the how, and in what manner, when thou hearest of the power and will of God.

*And to every seed his own body.* Where then is the alien matter, which they speak of? For He giveth to each *his own*. So that when he saith, *Thou sowest not that which shall be*, he saith not this, that one substance is raised up instead of another, but that it is improved, that it is more glorious. For *to each of the seeds*, saith he, *his own body*.

[4.] From hence, in what follows, he introduces also the difference of the resurrection which shall then be. For do not suppose, because grain is sown, and all come up ears of corn, that therefore there is also in the resurrection an equality of honour. For in the first place, neither in seeds is there only one rank, but some are more valuable, and some inferior. Wherefore also he added, *to every seed his own body*.

However, he is not content with this, but seeks another difference greater and more manifest. For that thou mayest not, when hearing, as I said, that all rise again, suppose that all enjoy the same reward; he laid before even in the preceding verses the seeds of this thought, saying, *But every man in his own order*. But he brings it out here also more clearly, saying,

Ver. 39. *All flesh is not the same flesh.* For why speak I, saith he, in respect of seeds? In respect of bodies let us agitate this point, concerning which we are discoursing now. Wherefore also he addeth, and saith,

*But there is one kind of flesh of men, another flesh of beasts, another of birds, and another of fishes.*

Ver. 40. *There are also celestial bodies, and bodies terres-*

*some vile, some glorious; and each in sundry Degrees.* 587

*trial: but the glory of the celestial is one, and the glory of*<sup>1 COR.</sup>  
*the terrestrial is another.*<sup>15. 41.</sup>

Ver. 41. *There is one glory of the sun, and another glory of the moon, and another glory of the stars: for one star differeth from another star in glory.*

And what means he by these expressions? Wherefore (3.) from the resurrection of the body did he throw himself into the discourse of the stars and the sun? He did not throw himself out, neither did he break off from his purpose; far from it: but he still keeps to it. For whereas he had established the doctrine concerning the resurrection, he intimates in what follows, that great will be then the difference of glory, though there be but one resurrection. And for the present he divides the whole into two: into *bodies celestial*, and *bodies terrestrial*. For that the bodies are raised again, he signified by the corn: but that they are not all in the same glory, he signifies by this. For as the disbelief of the resurrection makes men supine, so again it makes them indolent to think that all are vouchsafed the same reward. Wherefore he corrects both. And the one in the preceding verses he had completed; but this he begins now. And having made two ranks, of the righteous, and of sinners, these same two he subdivides again into many parts, signifying that neither righteous nor sinners shall obtain the same; neither righteous men, all of them, alike with other righteous, nor sinners with other sinners.

Now he makes, you see, first, one separation between righteous and sinners, where he says, *bodies celestial*, and *bodies terrestrial*: by the *terrestrial* intimating the latter, and by the *celestial*, the former. Then farther he introduces a difference of sinners with sinners, saying, *All flesh is not the same flesh, but there is one kind of flesh of fishes, another of birds, and another of beasts*. And yet all are bodies; but some are in more, and some in lesser vileness. And that in their manner of living too, and in their very apparel.

And having said this, he ascends again to the heaven, saying, *There is one glory of the sun, and another glory of the moon*. For as in the earthly bodies there is a difference, so also in the heavenly; and that difference no ordinary one, but reaching even to the uttermost: there being not only a

HOMIL. difference between sun and moon, and between moon and  
 XLI. stars, but also between stars and stars. For what though they be all in the heaven? yet some have a larger, others a less share of glory. Observe now: what do we learn from hence? That although they be all in God's kingdom, all shall not enjoy the same reward; and though all sinners be in hell, all shall not endure the same punishment. Wherefore he added,

Ver. 42. *So also is the resurrection of the dead.*

So, in a manner, with considerable difference. Then leaving this doctrine as sufficiently proved, he again comes to the proof itself of the resurrection, and the manner of it, saying,

[5.] *It is sown in corruption, it is raised in incorruption.*

And observe his consideration. As in the case of seeds, he used the term proper to bodies, saying, *it is not quickened, except it die*: so in the case of bodies, the expression belonging to seeds, saying, *it is sown in corruption, it is*  
 1 *quiescens*, *raised in incorruption*. He said not, "is produced<sup>1</sup>," that thou mightest not think it a work of the earth, but is *raised*. And by sowing here, he means not our generation in the womb, but the burial in the earth of our dead bodies, their dissolution, their ashes. Wherefore having said, *it is sown in corruption, it is raised in incorruption*, he adds,

Ver. 43. *It is sown in dishonour.* For what is more unsightly than a corpse in dissolution? *It is raised in glory.*

*It is sown in weakness.* For before thirty days the whole is gone, and the flesh cannot keep itself together, nor hold out for one day. *It is raised in power.* For there shall nothing prevail against it for all the future.

Here is why he stood in need of those former analogies, lest many on hearing of these things, that they are *raised in incorruption, and in glory, and in power*, might suppose that there is no difference among those who rise again. For all indeed rise again, both in power, and in incorruption, and in this glory of their incorruption; yet are not all in the same state of honour and safety.

Ver. 44. *It is sown a natural body, it is raised a spiritual body.* There is a natural body, and there is a spiritual body.

What sayest thou? Is not *this* body too spiritual? It is <sup>1</sup> *Cor.* indeed spiritual, but that will be much more so. For now <sup>15. 46.</sup> oftentimes both the abundant grace of the Holy Ghost flies away, on men's committing great sins;—and again, the Spirit continuing present, the animal<sup>c</sup> life fleets away:—from our flesh: and the result in such case is a void, without the Spirit<sup>d</sup>. But in that day not so: rather He abides continually in the flesh of the righteous, and the victory shall be His, the natural soul also being present<sup>e</sup>.

For either it was some such thing which he intimated, by saying, *a spiritual body*, or that it shall be lighter and more subtle, and such as even to be wafted upon air; or rather he meant both these. And if thou disbelieve the doctrine, behold the heavenly bodies which are so glorious and (for this time) so durable, and abide in undecaying tranquillity; and believe thou from hence, that God can also make these corruptible bodies, incorruptible, and much more excellent than those which are visible.

[6.] Ver. 45. *And so it is written<sup>1</sup>, the first man Adam was<sup>1</sup> Gen. 2. made a living soul: the last Adam was made a quickening<sup>7</sup> Spirit.*

And yet the one indeed is written, but the other not written. How then said he, *it is written*? He modified the expression according to the issue of events: as he is wont continually to do: and indeed as it is the way of every prophet. For so Jerusalem, the prophet said, should be *called the city of righteousness<sup>2</sup>*; yet it was not so called. What then? Did <sup>Is. 1. 26.</sup> the prophet speak false? By no means. For he is speaking of the issue of events. And that Christ too should be called Emmanuel<sup>3</sup>; yet was he not so called. But the facts utter <sup>Is. 7. 14.</sup> this voice; so also here, *the last Adam was made a quickening Spirit*.

And these things he said, that thou mayest learn, that the

<sup>c</sup> τῆς ψυχῆς ἡ ζωὴ: "the life of the animal soul:" alluding to the threefold being of the perfect man, in spirit, and soul, and body: cf. 1 Thess. 5. 23.

<sup>d</sup> τοῦτον ἄνθρωπον. i. e. the remains, when deprived of the natural life, are an empty vessel without the Holy Ghost, in that its quickening Power is not put forth in them for the time.

<sup>e</sup> i. e. It is true the body may be

called spiritual, because of the Spirit's indwelling: but it is not wholly and entirely so. For sometimes the Spirit leaves men when they sin, and even when the Spirit does not leave them, vitality leaves the body, which then becomes untenanted; whereas at the resurrection the body being quickened, the Spirit remains in them for ever.



**HOMIL.** signs and pledges both of the present life and of that which  
**XLI.** is to come have already come upon us; to wit, of the present life, Adam, and of the life to come, Christ. For since he sets down the better things as matters of hope, he signifies that their beginning hath already come to pass, and their root and their fountain been brought to light. But if the root and the fountain be evident to all, there is no need to doubt of the fruits. Wherefore he saith, *The last Adam was made a quickening Spirit.* And elsewhere too, *He shall quicken your mortal bodies by His Spirit that dwelleth in you*<sup>1</sup>. It is the Spirit's work then, to quicken.

<sup>1</sup> Rom.  
8. 11.

Further, lest any should say, "why are the worse things the elder? and why hath the one sort, to wit, the natural, come to pass, not merely as far as the first-fruits, but altogether; the other as far as the first-fruits only?"—he signifies that the principles also of each were so ordered<sup>1</sup>.

Ver. 46. *For, that was not first, saith he, which is spiritual, but that which is natural, and afterward that which is spiritual.*

And he saith not, why, but is content with the ordinance of God, having the evidence from the facts, testifying to that most excellent economy of God, and implying that our state is always going forward to the better; at the same time by this also adding credibility to his argument. For if the lesser have come to pass, much more ought we to expect the better.

[7.] Since then we are to enjoy so great blessings, let us take our station in this array; and bewail not the departed, but rather those that have ended their life ill. For so the husbandman, when he sees the grain dissolving, doth not mourn; rather, as long as he beholds it continuing solid in the ground, he is in fear and trembling, but when he sees it dissolved, rejoices. For the beginning of the future crop is its dissolving. So let us also then rejoice, when the corruptible house falls, when the man is sown. And marvel not, if

i. e. Why does the worst principle come first? Why is the natural principle wholly developed, not only in Adam, the first-fruits, but in us and all mankind? And why is the spiritual principle, which is to produce the resur-

rection, not yet developed in us, but only in Christ our first-fruits? The answer is, So is the will of God, by whose ordinance it is, that the natural should come first, the spiritual afterwards.

he called the burial "a sowing;" for, in truth, this is the better sowing: inasmuch as that sowing is succeeded by <sup>1 Con.</sup> 15. 46. deaths, and labours, and dangers, and cares; but this, if we live well, by crowns and rewards; and that, by corruption and death; but this by incorruption, and immortality, and those infinite blessings. To that kind of sowing, there went embraces, and pleasures, and sleep: but to this, only a voice coming down from heaven, and all is at once brought to perfection. And he that rises again is no more led for the future to a life full of toil, but to a place where anguish, and sorrow, and sighing are fled away.

If thou requirest protection, and therefore mournest thy husband, betake thyself to God, the common Protector and Saviour and Benefactor of all, to that irresistible alliance, to that ready aid, to that abiding shelter, which is every where present, and is as a wall unto us on every side.

"But your intercourse was a thing desirable and lovely." I too know it. But if thou wilt trust sound reason with this grief, and wilt consider with thyself who hath taken him away, and that by nobly bearing it thou offerest thy mind as a sacrifice to our God, even this wave will not be too strong for thee to stem. And that which time brings to pass, the same do thou by thy self-command. But if thou shalt yield to weakness, thine emotion will cease indeed in time, but it will bring thee no reward.

And together with these reasons collect also examples, some in the present life, some in the Holy Scriptures. Consider that Abraham slew his own son, and neither shed a tear, nor uttered a bitter word. "But he," you say, "was Abraham." Nay, thou surely hast been called to a nobler field of action<sup>1</sup>. And Job grieved indeed, but so much as was <sup>1</sup> *μίσσητον* proper for a father, who loved his children, and was very *συνδυ-* solicitous for the departed; whereas what we now do, is surely *μαρτυ-* the part of haters and enemies. For if, when a man was taken up to court, and crowned, thou wert smiting thyself and lamenting, I should not say that thou wast a friend of him who was crowned, but a great enemy and adversary unto him. "Nay," say you, "not even as it is do I mourn for him, but for myself." Well, but this is not the part of an affectionate person, to wish for thine own sake that he were still in the conflict, and subject to the uncertainty of the

**HOMIL.** future, when he might be crowned and come to anchor; or  
**XLI.** that he should be tossed in mid ocean, when he might have been in port.

[8.] "But I know not whither he hath gone," say you. Wherefore knowest thou not, tell me? For according as he lived well or otherwise, it is evident whither he will go. "Nay, on this very account I lament," say you, "because he departed with sin remaining<sup>a</sup>." This is a mere pretext and excuse. For if this were the reason of thy mourning for the departed, thou oughtest to have reformed and corrected him, when he was alive. The fact is, thou dost every where look to what concerns thyself, not him.

But grant that he departed with sin upon him, even on this account one ought to rejoice, that he was stopped short in his sins, and added not to his iniquity; and to help him as far as possible, not by tears, but by prayers, and supplications, and alms, and offerings. For not unmeaningly have these things been devised, nor do we in vain make mention of the departed in the course of the divine mysteries, and approach God in their behalf, beseeching the Lamb, Who is before us, Who taketh away the sin of the world;—not in vain, but that some refreshment may thereby ensue to them. Nor in vain doth he that standeth by the altar cry out, when the tremendous mysteries are being celebrated, "For all that have fallen asleep in Christ, and for those who perform commemorations in their behalf<sup>b</sup>." For if there were no commemorations for them, these things would not have been spoken: since our service is not mere scenery, God forbid! yea, it is by ordinance of the Spirit that these things are done.

(5.) Let us then give them aid, and perform commemoration for them. For if the children of Job were purged by the

<sup>a</sup> Bingham observes, lib. xv. cap. 3. sect. 16. "Another reason for praying for the dead was, they conceived all men to die with some remainders of frailty and corruption, and therefore desired that God would deal with them according to His mercy, and not in strict justice according to their merits." "These prayers," he proceeds to say, see lib. xxiii. cap. 3. sect. 3. and 13. "are not made upon the Romish supposition of the soul's being in purgatory or any place of torment, but on principles that perfectly overthrow it." For

they call those for whom they offer. Saints; including among them the Blessed Virgin, the Apostles and Prophets: and they represent them as having "pleased God," "being at rest," "sleeping in Christ," "departed in His Faith," and other equivalent expressions. Vid. Brett's Liturgies, p. 270—273. Ed. 1838. See also Hp. Bull. vol. ii. 261. Oxford Ed.

<sup>b</sup> These expressions are not *verbatim* either in St. Chrysostom's or in any other of the Liturgies translated by Brett: but in substance they are in all

sacrifice of their father, why dost thou doubt, that when we too offer for the departed, some consolation arises to them? <sup>1 Cor. 16. 46.</sup> since God is wont to grant the petitions of those who ask for others. And this Paul signified, saying, *that in a manifold Person<sup>1</sup> your gift towards us, bestowed by many, may be acknowledged with thanksgiving for your good<sup>1</sup>.* Let us not then be weary in giving aid to the departed, and of offering <sup>1. 11.</sup> prayers for them: for the common Expiation of the world is even before us. Therefore with boldness do we then intreat for the whole world, and name their names with those of martyrs, of confessors, of priests. For in truth one body are we all, though some members are more glorious than others; and it is possible from every source to gather pardon<sup>2</sup> for <sup>συγγνωμῶν.</sup> them, from our prayers, from our gifts in their behalf, from those whose names are named with theirs. Why therefore dost thou grieve? Why mourn, when it is in thy power to gather so much pardon for the departed?

[9.] Is it then that thou art become desolate, and hast lost a protector? Nay, never mention this. For thou hast not surely lost thy God. And so, as long as thou hast Him, He will be better to thee than husband, and father, and child, and kinsman: since even when they were alive, He it was who did all things.

These things therefore think upon, and say with David, *The Lord is my light and my Saviour<sup>2</sup>, whom shall I fear<sup>3</sup>?* <sup>εὐχόμενος</sup> Say, *Thou art a Father of the fatherless, and a Judge of* <sup>LXX. Ps. 27.</sup> *the widows<sup>5</sup>:* and draw down His aid, and thou shalt have Him to care for thee now, more than before, by how <sup>Ps. 68.</sup> <sup>6.</sup> much thou art in a state of greater difficulty.

Or hast thou lost a child? Thou hast not lost it, say not so. This thing is sleep, not death; removal, not destruction; a journeying from the worse unto the better<sup>4</sup>. Do not then provoke God to anger; but propitiate Him.

<sup>1</sup> ἡ πολλῇ προσώπῳ: "in a great Person," "the Person of a manifold Being, i. e. of the whole Church." The common reading is ἡ πολλῶν προσώπων. St. Chrysostom may have thought that the Apostle was alluding to the Liturgical Service as the voice of the whole mystical Body of Christ. See his comment on the place in Hom. 2. on 2 Cor. §. 3, 4. Ed. Bened.

<sup>2</sup> The same idea is thus expressed by Tertullian. "Why mourn, if thy faith be that he hath not perished? Why bear impatiently *his* being withdrawn for a while, of whom thou believest that he will return? It is but a journey, which thou accountest death. It is not meet to mourn for him who is gone before, but simply to miss him and long for him." De Patient. c. 9.



HOMIL. XLII. For if thou bearest it nobly, there will thence accrue some relief both to the departed and to thyself; but if the contrary, thou dost the more kindle God's anger. For if when a servant was chastised by his master, thou didst stand by and complain, thou wouldest the more exasperate the master against thyself. Do not then so; but give thanks, that hereby also this cloud of sadness may be scattered from thee. Say with that blessed one, *the Lord gave, and the Lord hath taken away*<sup>1</sup>. Consider how many more well-pleasing in His sight have never received children at all, nor been called fathers. "Nor would I wish to have been so," say you, "for surely it were better not to have had experience, than after having tasted the pleasure, to fall from it." Nay, I beseech thee, say not so, provoke not thus also the Lord to wrath: but for what thou hast received, give Him thanks; and for what thou hast not to the end, give Him glory. Job said not, that which thou sayest unthankfully, "it were better not to have received," but both for the one he gave thanks, saying, *The Lord gave*; and for the other he blessed God, saying, *The Lord hath taken away, blessed be the name of the Lord for ever*. And his wife he thus silenced, justifying himself against her, and uttering those admirable words, *Have we received good at the hand of the Lord, and shall we not receive evil?* And yet after this a fiercer temptation befel him: yet was he not even thus unnerved, but in like manner bore it nobly, and glorified God.

This also do thou, and consider with thyself, that man hath not taken him, but God who made him, who more than thyself cares for him, and knows what is good for him: who is no enemy, nor lier-in-wait. See how many, living, have made life intolerable to their parents. "But seest thou not the right hearted ones?" say you. I see these too, but even these are not so safe as thy child is. For though they are now approved, yet it is uncertain what their end will be; but for him thou hast no longer any fear, nor dost thou tremble lest any thing should happen to him, or lest he experience any change.

These things also do thou consider respecting a good wife, and guardian of thine house, and for all things give

thanks unto God. And even if thou shalt lose a wife, <sup>1 Cor.</sup> give thanks. Perhaps God's will is to lead thee to conti-<sup>15. 46.</sup>  
nence, He calls thee to a nobler field of conflict, He was  
pleased to set thee free from this bond. If we thus command  
ourselves, we shall both gain the joy of this life, and obtain  
the crowns which are to come, &c. &c.

## HOMILY XLII.

---

1 COR. xv. 47.

*The first man is of the earth, earthy: the second man is the Lord from heaven.*

HAVING said that *the natural* was *first*, and *the spiritual* *afterward*, he again states another difference, speaking of *the earthy* and *the heavenly*. For the first difference was between the present life, and that which is to come: but this between that before grace, and that after grace. And he stated it with a view to the most excellent way of life, saying,—(for to hinder men, as I said, from such confidence in the resurrection as would make them neglectful of their practice, and of perfection, from this topic also again he renders them anxious, and exhorts to virtue, saying,)—*The first man is of the earth, earthy; the second man is the Lord from heaven*: calling the whole by the name of *man*<sup>a</sup>, and naming the one from the better, and the other from the worst part.

Ver. 48. *As is the earthy, such are they also that are earthy*: so shall they perish and have an end. *As is the heavenly, such are they also that are heavenly*: so shall they abide, immortal and glorious.

What then? Did not This Man too die? He died indeed, but received no injury therefrom, yea rather by this He put an end to death. Seest thou how, on this part of his subject also, he makes use of death to establish the doctrine of the resurrection? “For having, as I said before, the beginning and the head,” so he speaks, “doubt not of the whole body.”

<sup>a</sup> i. e. embodying as it were the whole of the two states of being which he is describing in the personal appellation of Man: as in the phrase, Old and New Man: &c.

Moreover also he frames hereby in the most excellent way <sup>1 Cor.</sup> his advice concerning our conversation, setting down standards <sup>15. 49.</sup> of a lofty and severe life, and of that which is not such, and bringing forward the principles of both these, of the one Christ, but of the other Adam. Therefore neither did he simply say, *of the earth*, but *earthy*, i. e. "gross, nailed down to things present:" and again with respect to Christ the reverse, *the Lord from heaven*.

[2.] But if any should say, "therefore the Lord hath not a body," because He is said to be *from heaven*, although what is said before is enough to stop their mouths: yet nothing hinders our silencing them from this consideration also: viz. what is, *the Lord from heaven*? Doth he speak of His nature, or His most perfect life? It is I suppose evident to every one, that he speaks of His life. Wherefore also he adds,

Ver. 49. *As we have borne the image of the earthy*, i. e. as we have done evil, *let us also bear<sup>b</sup> the image of the heavenly*: i. e. let us practise all goodness.

But besides this, I would fain ask thee, is it of nature that it is said, *he that is of the earth, earthy*, and, *the Lord from heaven*? "Yea," saith one. What then? Was Adam only *earthy*, or had he also another kind of substance congenial with heavenly and incorporeal beings, which the Scripture calls *soul*, and *spirit*? Every one sees, that he had this also. Therefore neither was the Lord from above only, although He is said to be *from heaven*, but He had also assumed our flesh. But Paul's meaning is such as this: *as we have borne the image of the earthy*, i. e. evil deeds, *let us also bear the image of the heavenly*, the conversation which is in the heavens. Whereas if he were speaking of nature, the thing needed not exhortation, nor advice. So that hence also it is evident, that the expression relates to our conversation.

Wherefore also he introduces the saying in the manner of advice, and calls it an *image*, here too again shewing that he is speaking of conduct, not of nature. For therefore are we

<sup>a</sup> As the Manichees did, and before them the Gnostic sects.

<sup>b</sup> *φωτισμῶς*. This reading is supported, according to Scholz, by the Alexandrian and six other uncial MSS. It is found in several versions, and has the authority of Irenæus, Origen, Basil, Tertullian,

Cyprian, and other Fathers. In favour of the reading in our text, *φωτισμῶς*, is the Vatican MSS. with others of less authority. Theodoret's words are remarkable; "*φωτισμῶς*, He used the expression prophetically, not hortatively."



**HOMIL. XLII.** become earthy, because we have done evil: not because we were originally formed *earthy*, but because we sinned. And so sin came first, and then death, and the sentence, *Dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return*<sup>1</sup>. Then also entered in the swarm of the passions. For it is not simply, the being born *of earth*, that makes a man *earthy*, (since the Lord also was of this mass and lump<sup>2</sup>;) but the doing earthly things even as also he is made *heavenly*, by performing things meet for heaven.

But enough: for why need I labour overmuch in the proof of this, when the apostle himself goes on to unfold the thought to us, thus saying,

Ver. 50. *Now this I say, brethren, that flesh and blood shall not inherit the kingdom of God.*

Seest thou how he explains himself again, relieving us of the trouble? which he often doth: for by flesh, he here denotes men's evil deeds, which he hath done also elsewhere, as when he saith, *But ye are not in the flesh*: and again, *So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God*<sup>3</sup>. So that when he saith, *Now this I say*, he means nothing else than this: "therefore said I these things, that thou mayest learn that evil deeds conduct not to a kingdom." Thus from the resurrection he straightway introduced also the doctrine of the kingdom also; wherefore also he adds, *neither doth corruption inherit incorruption*<sup>4</sup>, i. e. neither shall wickedness inherit that glory, and the enjoyment of the things incorruptible. For in many other places he calls wickedness by this name, saying, *He that soweth to the flesh, shall of the*

<sup>a</sup> Gal. 6. *flesh reap corruption*<sup>s</sup>. Now if he were speaking of the body, and not of evil doing, he would not have said *corruption*. For he no where calls the body *corruption*, since neither is it corruption, but a thing corruptible: wherefore proceeding to discourse also of it, he calls it not "corruption," but *corruptible*, saying, *for this corruptible must put on incorruption*.

[9.] Next, having completed his advice concerning our conversation, according to his constant custom, blending closely subject with subject, he passes again to the doctrine of the resurrection of the body: as follows:

Ver. 51. *Behold, I shew you a mystery.*

It is something awful and ineffable, and which all know <sup>1 Cor. 15. 53.</sup> not, which he is about to speak of; which also indicates the greatness of the honour he confers on them; I mean, his speaking mysteries to them. But what is this? (2.)

*We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed.* He means as follows: "we shall not all die, *but we shall all be changed*," even those who die not. For they too are mortal. "Do not thou therefore, because thou diest, on this account fear," saith he, "as if thou shouldest not rise again: for there are, there are some, who shall even escape this, and yet this suffices them not for that resurrection, but even those bodies which die not must be changed, and be transformed into incorruption."

Ver. 52. *In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump.*

After he had discoursed much of the resurrection, then opportunely he points out also its very marvellous character. As thus: "not this only," saith he, "is wonderful, that our bodies first turn to corruption, and then are raised; nor that the bodies which rise again after their corruption are better than these present ones; nor that they pass on to a much better state, nor that each receives back his own, and none that of another; but that things so many and so great, and surpassing all man's reason and conception, are done *in a moment*, i. e. in an instant of time: and to shew this more clearly, *in the twinkling of an eye*, saith he, "while one can wink one's eyelid." Further, because he had said a great thing, and full of astonishment; that so many and so great results should take place so quickly; he alleges, to prove it, the credibility of Him who performs it; as follows, *For the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed.* The expression, *we*, he uses not of himself, but of them that are then found alive.

Ver. 53. *For this corruptible must put on incorruption.*

Thus, lest any, hearing that *flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God*, should suppose that our bodies do not rise again; he adds, *this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality.* Now the body is *corruptible*, the body is *mortal*: so that the body indeed remains, for it is the body which is put on; but its mortality and corruption vanish away, when immortality and incorruption come

HOMIL. upon it. Do not thou therefore question hereafter how it  
 XLII. shall live an endless life, now that thou hast heard of its becoming incorruptible.

[4.] Ver. 54. *But when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory.*

Thus, since he was speaking of great and secret things, he again takes prophecy<sup>1</sup> to confirm his word. *Death is swallowed up in victory*<sup>2</sup>; i. e. utterly; not so much as a fragment of it remains, nor a hope of returning, incorruption<sup>3</sup> having consumed corruption.

Ver. 55. *O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory?*

Seest thou his noble soul? how even as one who is offering sacrifices for victory, having become inspired, and seeing already things future as things past, he leaps and tramples upon death fallen at his feet, and shouts a cry of triumph over his head where it lies, exclaiming mightily, and saying, *O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory?* It is clean gone, it is perished, it is utterly vanished away, and in vain hast thou done all those former things. For He not only disarmed death, and vanquished it, but even destroyed it, and made it quite cease from being.

Ver. 56. *Now the sting of death is sin; and the strength of sin is the law.*

Seest thou how the discourse is of the death of the body? therefore also of the resurrection of the body. For if these bodies do not rise again, how is death *swallowed up*? And not this only, but how is *the law the strength of sin*? For that *sin* indeed is *the sting of death*, and more bitter than it, and by it hath its power, is evident; but how is *the law also the strength* thereof? Because without the law sin was weak, being practised indeed, but not able so entirely to condemn: since although the evil took place, it was not so clearly pointed out. So that it was no small change which the law brought in, first causing us to know sin better, and then enhancing the punishment. And if, meaning to check sin, it did but develope it more fearfully, this is no charge against the physician, but against the abuse of the remedy. Since

even the presence of Christ made the Jews' burden heavier, <sup>1 Cor. 15. 57.</sup> yet must we not therefore blame it, but while we the more admire it, we must hate them the more, for having been injured by things which ought to have profited them? Yea, to shew that it was not the law of itself which gives strength to sin, Christ himself fulfilled it all, and was without sin.

But I would have thee consider, how from this topic also he confirms the resurrection. For if this were the cause of death, viz. our committing sin, and if Christ came and took away sin, and delivered us from it through baptism, and together with sin put an end also to the law, in the transgression of which sin consists, why doubttest thou any more of the resurrection? For whence, after all this, is death to prevail? Through the law? Nay, it is done away. Through sin? Nay, it is clean destroyed.

Ver. 57. *But thanks be to God, which giveth us the victory, through our Lord Jesus Christ.*

For the trophy He Himself erected, but the crowns He (3.) hath caused us also to partake of. And this not of debt, but of mere mercy.

[5.] Ver. 58. *Therefore<sup>1</sup>, brethren, be ye stedfast, unmoveable.* <sup>1 μὴ ἀγνοή-  
τε, omit-  
ted.</sup>

Just and seasonable is this exhortation, after all that had gone before. For nothing so disquiets as the thought that we are buffeted without cause or profit.

*Always abounding in the work of the Lord:* i. e. in the pure life. And he said not, "working that which is good," but *abounding*; that we might do it abundantly<sup>2</sup>, and might <sup>2 περισ-  
σεύ-  
ειν.</sup> overpass the lists.

*Knowing that your labour is not in vain in the Lord.*

What sayest thou? Labour again? But followed by crowns, and those above the heavens. For that former labour on man's expulsion from paradise, was the punishment of his transgressions; but this is the ground of the rewards to come. So that it cannot in fact be labour, both on this account, and by reason of the great help which it receives from above: which is the cause of his adding also, *in the Lord*. For the purpose of the former was, that we might suffer punishment; but of this, that we might obtain the good things to come.

Let us not therefore sleep, my beloved. For it cannot, it cannot be that any one by sloth should attain to the kingdom



HOMIL. of heaven, nor they that live luxuriously and softly. Yea it  
 XLII. is a great thing, if straining ourselves and *keeping under<sup>1</sup> the*  
<sup>1</sup>*δυναμὶς*  
<sup>2</sup>*ζωῆς* body, and enduring innumerable labours, we are able to reach those blessings. See ye not how vast this distance between heaven and earth? And how great a conflict is at hand? And how prone a thing to evil man is? And how easily sin *besets us*? And how many snares are in the way?

Why then do we draw upon ourselves so great cares over and above those of nature, and give ourselves more trouble, and make our burdens greater? Is it not enough, our having to care for our food, and clothing, and houses? Is it not enough to take thought for things necessary? Although even from these Christ withdraws us, saying, *Take no thought for your life, what ye shall eat, neither for your body, what ye shall*  
<sup>3</sup> Matt. *put on<sup>2</sup>*. But if one ought not to take thought for necessary  
 6. 25. food and clothing, nor for to-morrow; they who bring upon themselves so great a mass of rubbish, and bury themselves under it, when shall they have power to emerge? Hast thou not heard Paul saying, *No man that warreth entangleth*

<sup>3</sup> 2 Tim. *himself with the cares of this life<sup>3</sup>*? But we even live luxu-  
 2. 4. riously, and eat and drink to excess, and endure buffeting for  
<sup>4</sup> *μαρτυ-*  
<sup>5</sup> *μαρ.* external things, but in the things of heaven behave ourselves  
<sup>6</sup> *μαρ.* unmanly. Know ye not, that the promise is too high for  
<sup>7</sup> *μαρ.* man? It cannot be that one walking on the ground should ascend the arches of heaven. But we do not even study to live like men, but are become worse than the very brutes. Know ye not before what a tribunal we are to stand? Do ye not consider, that both of our words and thoughts, an account is demanded of us. And we take no heed even to our actions. *For whosoever looketh on a woman, saith He, to lust*

<sup>4</sup> Matt. *after her, hath already committed adultery with her<sup>4</sup>*. And  
 5. 28. yet they who must be accountable for a mere idle look, shrink not nor refuse to lie rotting in that sin itself. *Whosoever*

<sup>5</sup> Matt. *shall say to his brother, Thou fool, shall be cast into hell fire<sup>5</sup>*.  
 5. 29. But we disgrace them with ten thousand reproaches, and plot against them craftily, and draw not back. *He that loveth*

<sup>6</sup> Matt. *another, loving him, is no better than the heathen<sup>6</sup>*; but we  
 5. 46, 47. even envy them. What indulgence then shall we have, when commanded as we are to pass over the old lines, we weave ourselves a thread of life by a yet more scanty measure than

theirs? What plea shall deliver us? Who will stand up and help us when we are punished? There is no man; but it must needs be that in wailing, and weeping, and gnashing of teeth, we shall be led away tortured into that rayless gloom, those pangs which no prayer can avert, those punishments which cannot be assuaged. 1 Cor. 15. 57.

Wherefore I entreat and beseech, and lay hold of your very knees, that whilst we have this scant viaticum of life, you would be pricked in your hearts by what has been said, that you would be converted, that you would become better men; that we may not, like that rich man, lament to no purpose in that world, after our departure, and continue thenceforth in incurable wailings. For though thou shouldest have father, or son, or friend, or any soever who hath confidence towards God, none of these shall ever deliver thee, thine own works having destroyed thee. For such is that tribunal: it judges by our actions alone, and in no other way is it possible there to be saved.

And these things I say, not to grieve you, nor to throw you into despair, but for fear of our finding vain and cold hopes to nourish us, and placing confidence in this person, or that, and so neglecting our own proper goodness. For if we be slothful, there will be neither righteous man, nor prophet, nor apostle, nor any one, to stand by us; but if we have been earnest, having in sufficiency the plea which comes from each man's own works<sup>1</sup>, we shall with freedom of heart partake of the good things also laid up for them that love God; to which may we all attain, &c. &c. ἐν τῇ ἀρετῇ  
ᾧ ἡμεῖς  
ἡμεῖς ἐργάζομεθα.

## HOMILY XLIII.

---

1 COR. xvi. 1.

*Now concerning the collection for the saints, as I have given order to the Churches of Galatia, even so do ye.*

HAVING completed his discourse concerning doctrines, and being on the point of embarking upon that which belonged rather to morals, he dismisses every thing else, and proceeds to the chief of good things, discoursing about alms. And when he hath treated of this matter alone, he leaves off. A thing however obviously unlike what he hath done every where else. But of alms, and of temperance, and of meekness, and of long-suffering, and of all the rest, he treats in the other Epistles in the conclusion. For what reason then doth he handle here this part only of practical morality? Because the greater part also of what had been spoken before was rather nearly connected with morals: I mean, where he chastised the fornicator; where he was correcting those who go to law among Gentiles; where he terrified the drunkards and the gluttons; where he condemned the seditious, the contentious, and those who loved to have the preeminence; where those who unworthily approach the Mysteries were delivered over by him unto that intolerable sentence; where he discoursed concerning charity. For this cause, I say, the subject which most pressed on him, viz. the aid required for the saints, this he makes mention of alone.

And observe his consideration. When he had persuaded them concerning the resurrection, and made them more earnest, then and not till then he discusses this point also.

*St. Paul's Judiciousness in introducing the Topic of Alms. 605*

It is true indeed that on these matters he had spoken to them before, when he said, *If we have sown unto you spiritual things, is it a great matter if we shall reap your carnal things?* And, *Who planteth a vineyard, and eateth not of the fruit thereof?* But because he knew the greatness of this moral achievement, he refuses not to add a fresh mention at the end of his letter.

And he calls the collection *λογισμὸς*, (a contribution,) immediately from the very first making out the thing to be easy. For when contribution is made by all together, that becomes light, which is charged upon each.

But having spoken about the collection, he did not say immediately, "Let every one of you lay up in store with himself; although this of course was the natural consequence; but having first said, *As I have given order unto the Churches of Galatia*, he added this, kindling their emulation by the account of the well-doings of others, and putting it in the form of a narration. And this also he did when writing to the Romans; for to them also while appearing to narrate the reason why he was going away to Jerusalem, he introduces thereupon his discourse about alms; *But now I go unto Jerusalem to minister unto the saints: for Macedonia and Achaia have been well pleased to make a certain distribution to the poor saints*<sup>1</sup>. Only those he stimulates by mention of Macedonians and Corinthians; these of Galatians.<sup>1 Cor. 16. 1.</sup> For he saith, *As I have given order unto the Churches of Galatia, so also do ye*: for they would surely feel ashamed ever afterwards, to be found inferior to Galatians. And he saith not, "I have advised," and, "I have counselled;" but *I have given order*, which is more authoritative. And he doth not bring forward a single city, or two, or three, but an entire nation: which also he doth in his doctrinal instructions, saying, *Even as also in all the Churches of the saints*. For if this be potent for conviction of doctrines, much more for imitation of actions.

[2.] "What then, I ask, didst thou give order about?"

Ver. 2. *On the first day of the week*, that is, the Lord's day, *let each one of you lay up by himself in store whatever he may be prospering in*. Mark how he exhorts them even from the time: for indeed the day was enough to lead them



HOMIL. to almsgiving. Wherefore "call to mind," saith he, "what  
 XLIII. ye attained to on this day: how all the unutterable blessings, and that which is the root and the beginning of our life, took place on this day. But not in this regard only is the season convenient for a zealous benevolence, but also because it hath rest and immunity from toils: the soul when released from labours becoming readier and apter to shew mercy. Moreover, the communicating also on that day in Mysteries so tremendous and immortal, instils great zealously. On it, accordingly, *let each one of you*, not merely this or that individual, but *each one of you*, whether poor or rich; woman or man; slave or free; *lay up in store by himself*. He said not, "Let him bring it into the church," lest they might feel ashamed because of the smallness of the sum; but "having by gradual additions swelled his contribution, let him then produce it, when I am come: but for the present lay it up," saith he, "at home, and make thine house a church; thy little box, a treasury. Become a guardian of sacred wealth, a self-ordained steward of the poor. Thy benevolent mind assigns to thee this priesthood."

Of this our treasury\* even now is a sign: but the sign remains, the thing itself no where.

[8.] Now I am aware that many of this congregation will again find fault with me when I treat of these subjects, and say, "Be not, I beseech you, be not harsh and disagreeable to your audience. Make allowances for their disposition; give some way to the mind of the hearers. For in this case you really do put us to shame; you make us blush." But I may not endure such words: since neither was Paul ashamed to be continually troublesome upon such points as these, and to speak words such as mendicants use. I grant indeed, that if

\* *οὐκ ἐν τῷ θυσιαστηρίῳ*. Bingham, viii. 7. 11. says, "The Church had her *gazophylacia*, or Treasuries, as well as the Temple; which appears from a Canon of the Fourth Council of Carthage," (93. ap. Harduin. i. 984.) "which forbids the offerings of persons at variance with one another to be received *either in the Treasury or the Sanctuary*. So that the Treasury was a distinct place from the Corban in the Sanctuary. . . . Here all such offerings of the people were laid up as were not thought proper

to be brought to the Altar." He further refers to the Apostolical Canons, 4 and 5, "That beside Bread and Wine, nothing should be brought to the Altar, save only new ears of corn and grapes, and oil for the lamps, and incense for the time of the oblation. But all other fruits should be sent *eis αἶνος*, to the Repository, or Treasury it may be, as first-fruits for the Bishop and Presbyters, and not be brought to the Altar, but be by them divided among the Bishops and Clergy." See Harduin, i. 10.

I said, "give it me," and "lay it up in my house," there <sup>1 Cor.</sup> might perchance be something to be ashamed of in what I <sup>16. 3.</sup> said: hardly however even in that case; for *they who wait at the altar*, we read, *are partakers with the altar*<sup>1</sup>. However, <sup>c. 9. 13.</sup> (2.) some one perhaps might find fault, as with one framing his argument for his own interest. But now it is for the poor that I make my supplication; nay, not so much for the poor, as for your sake who bestow the gift. Wherefore also I am bold to speak out. For what shame is it to say, Give unto thy Lord in His hunger: Put raiment on Him, going about naked; Receive Him, being a stranger? Thy Lord is not ashamed before the whole world to speak thus: *I was an hungred, and ye gave Me not to eat*, He who is void of all want, and requires nothing. And am I to be ashamed and hesitate? Away with this. This shame is of the snare of the devil. I will not then be ashamed, but will say, and that boldly, "Give to the needy;" I will say it with a louder voice than the needy themselves. True it is, if any one can shew and prove that in saying these things we are drawing you over unto ourselves, and under the pretence of the poor are ourselves making gain, such a course would be worthy, I say not of shame, but even of ten thousand thunderbolts; and life itself would be more than persons so behaving would deserve. If, on the contrary, by the grace of God, we are in nothing troublesome about ourselves, but *have made the Gospel without cost* to you; labouring indeed in no wise like Paul, but being contented with our own;—with all boldness of speech I will say, "Give unto the needy:" yea, and I will not leave off saying it, and of those who give not I will be a severe accuser. For so, if I were a general and had soldiers, I should not feel ashamed at demanding food for my men: for I vehemently set my heart upon your salvation.

[4.] But that my argument may both be more forcible and more effective, I will take Paul for my comrade, and like him will discourse and say, *Let every one of you lay up by himself in store whatsoever he may prosper in*. Now observe also how he avoids being burthensome. He said not, "so much," or "so much," but *whatsoever he may have been prospered in*, whether much or little. Neither said he, "what any one may have gained," but, *whatsoever he may have been pros-*

HOMIL. *pered in*: signifying that the supply is of God. And not  
 XLIII. only so, but also by his not enjoining them to deposit all at once, he makes his counsel easy: since the gathering by little and little hinders all perception of the burthen<sup>1</sup> and the cost. Here you see the reason too for his not enjoining them to produce it immediately, but giving them a long day<sup>2</sup>; whereof adding the cause, he saith, *That there be no gatherings when I come*: which means, that ye may not when the season is come for paying in contributions, just then be compelled to collect them. And this too in no ordinary degree encouraged them again: the expectation of Paul being sure to make them more earnest.

Ver. 3. *But when I come, whomsoever ye may approve of by your letters, them will I send to carry back your kind*  
<sup>3</sup> *gift<sup>3</sup> to Jerusalem.*

He said not, "this person," and "that," but, *whomsoever ye shall approve*, whomsoever you shall choose, thus freeing his ministration from suspicion. Wherefore to them he leaves the right of voting in the choice of those who are to convey it. He is far enough from saying, "The payment is yours, but the privilege of selecting those who are to carry it is not yours." Next, that they might not think him quite absent, he adds his letters, saying, *Whomsoever you approve, I will send by letters*. As if he had said, I also will be with them, and share in the ministration, by my letters. And he said not, "These will I send to bear your alms," but, *your kind*  
<sup>4</sup> *liberal-gift<sup>4</sup>*; to signify that they were doing great deeds; to mark  
 ity, Eng. that they were gainers themselves. And elsewhere he calls  
 Version. it both *a blessing* and *a communication*<sup>5</sup>. The one that  
<sup>5</sup> 2 Cor. 9. 5, 15. he might not make them less active, the other that he might not elate them. But in no case whatever hath he called it *alms*.

Ver. 4. *But if it be meet that I go also, they shall go with me.*

Here again he exhorts them to liberality. As thus: "if it be so much," saith he, "as to require my presence also, neither will I decline this." But he did not in the first instance promise this, nor say, "When I am come I will carry it." For he would not have made so much of it, if he had so set it down from the first. Afterwards however he adds it well



and seasonably. Here then you have the reason why he did not immediately promise, nor yet altogether hold his peace concerning it: but having said, *I will send*, then at length he adds himself also. And here too again he leaves it to their own decision, in saying, *If it is meet that I also should go*: whereas this rested with them, namely, to make their collection large; so large even, as to affect his plans, and cause him in person to make the journey.

[5.] Ver. 5. *But I will come to you*, saith he, *when I pass through Macedonia*. This he had said also above; then however with anger: at least he added, <sup>1</sup> *And I will know not* <sup>1</sup> c. iv. 19. *the speech of them that are puffed up, but the power*: but here, more mildly; that they might even long for his coming. Then, that they might not say, "why is it that you honour the Macedonians above us?" he said not, "When I depart," but, *When I shall pass through Macedonia: for I shall pass through Macedonia*.

Ver. 6. *And with you, it may be, I shall stay, or even spend the winter*. For I do not at all wish to take you merely in my way, but to continue among you, and spend some time." For when he wrote this letter, he was in Ephesus, and it was winter; as you may know by his saying, *Until Pentecost I shall remain at Ephesus: but after this I shall go away to Macedonia, and after having gone through it, I will be with you in the summer; and perhaps I shall even spend the winter with you*.

But why did he say, *perhaps*; and did not positively affirm it? Because Paul did not foreknow all things; for good purposes. Wherefore neither doth he absolutely affirm, in order that if it came not to pass, he might have something to resort to; first his previous mention of it having been indefinite; and next, the power of the Spirit leading him wheresoever It willed, not where he himself desired. And this also he expresses in the second Epistle, when excusing himself on account of his delay, and saying, *Or the things which I counsel, do I counsel according to the flesh, that with me there should be yea yea, and nay nay?*

<sup>2</sup> 2 Cor.  
1. 17.

*That ye may bring me on my journey, wheresoever I go*. This also is a mark of love, and great strength of affection.

Ver. 7. *For I do not wish now to see you as I pass through*.



HOMIL. XLIII. *For I hope to remain some time with you, if the Lord permit.*

Now these things he said, both to signify his love, and also to terrify the sinners, not however openly, but with outward demonstration of friendship.

Ver. 8. *But I shall abide at Ephesus until Pentecost.*

As we should expect, he tells them all exactly, informing them as friends. For this too is a mark of friendship, to say the reason why he was not with them, why he delayed, and where he was staying.

Ver. 9. *For a great door and effectual is opened unto me, and there are many adversaries.*

Now if it was *great*, how could there be *adversaries*? Why, on this very account the adversaries were many, because men's faith was great; because the entrance was great and wide. But what means, *A great door*? There are many prepared to receive the faith, many ready to approach and be converted. There is a spacious entrance for me, things being now come to that point, that the mind of those approaching is at its prime for the obedience of the faith. On this account, vehement was the blast of the breath of the devil, because he saw many turning away from him.

You see then on both accounts it was needful for him to stay; both because the gain was abundant, and because the struggle was great. And herewith also he cheered them up, namely, by saying, that henceforth the word works every where, and springs up readily. And if there be many who plot against it, this also is a sign of the advance of the Gospel. For at no time doth that evil demon wax fierce, except on seeing his goods made spoil of abundantly<sup>1</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> See  
S. Mat.  
12.

[6.] Let us then, when we desire to effect any thing great and noble, not regard this, the greatness of the labour which it brings, but let us rather look to the gain. Mark, for instance, Paul, not therefore lingering, not therefore shrinking back, because *there were many adversaries*; but because *there was a great door*, pressing on and persevering. Yea, and as I was saying, this was a sign that the devil was being stripped, for it is not, depend on it, by little and mean achievements, that men provoke that evil monster to wrath. And so, when thou seest a righteous man performing great and excellent deeds,

yet suffering innumerable ills, marvel not; on the contrary, <sup>1</sup> Con. 16. 9. one might well marvel, if the devil receiving so many blows were to keep quiet and bear the wounds meekly. Even as you ought not to be surprised were a serpent, continually goaded, to grow fierce, and spring on the person that goaded it. Now no serpent steals on you so fierce as the devil, leaping up against all; and, like a scorpion with its sting raised, he raises himself upright. Let not this then disturb you: since of course he that returns from war and victory and slaughter must needs be bloody, and oftentimes also have received wounds. Do thou, then, for thy part, when thou seest any one doing alms, and performing numberless other good works, and so curtailing the power of the devil, and then falling into temptations and perils; be not troubled thereupon. This is the very reason why he fell into temptations, because he mightily smote the devil.

“And how did God permit it,” you will say? That he might be crowned more signally: that the other might receive a severer wound. For when after benefits conferred a man suffers, and that grievously, and yet continually gives thanks, it is a blow to the devil. For it is a great thing, even when our affairs are flowing on prosperously, to shew mercy, and to adhere to virtue: but it is far greater in grievous calamity, not to desist from this noble occupation; this is he who may be most truly said to do so for God’s sake. So then, though we be in peril, beloved, though we suffer ever so greatly, let us with the greater zeal apply ourselves to our labours for virtue’s sake. For this is not at all the season for retribution.

Here then let us not ask for our crowns, lest when the crowns come in their season, we diminish our recompense. For as in the case of artificers, they who support themselves and work receive higher pay; while those who have their maintenance with their employers, are curtailed in no small part of the wages; so also in regard to the saints: he that doth immense good and suffers extreme evil hath his reward unimpaired, and a far more abundant recompense, not only for the good things which he hath done, but also for the evil which he hath suffered. But he that enjoys rest and luxury here, hath not such bright crowns there. Let us not then

HOMIL. XLIII. seek for our recompense here. But *then* of all times let us rejoice, when doing well we suffer ill. For God hath in store for us in that world not only the reward of our good deeds, but that of our temptations also.

- (4.) But to explain myself more clearly: suppose two rich merciful men, and let them give to the poor: then let one continue in his riches and enjoy all prosperity: the other fall into poverty and diseases and calamities, and give God thanks. Now when these are gone away into the other world, which will receive the greater reward? Is it not quite plain that it will be he who is sick and in adversity, seeing that though he did well and suffered ill he felt not according to human infirmity? I suppose this is plain to every one. And in truth, this is the adamantine statue, this is the considerate servant<sup>1</sup>. But if we ought not to do any thing good for the hope of the kingdom, but because it so pleaseth God, which is more than any kingdom; what doth he deserve, who because he doth not receive his recompense here, is become more remiss concerning virtue?

<sup>1</sup> See S.  
Matt. 25.  
21.

Let us then not be troubled, when we see that such an one who invited widows and made continual feasts lost his house by fire, or sustained some other such like disaster. Yea, for this very thing he shall receive his reward. For even Job was not so much admired for his almsdeeds as he was for his sufferings afterwards. For this reason his friends also are little esteemed, and deemed of no account; because they sought for the recompenses of the present world, and with a view to this gave sentence against the just man. Let us then not seek for our return here when we have become poor and needy; since surely it is of extreme meanness, when heaven is proposed, and things which are above the heaven, to be looking round on the things which are here. Let us not by any means do so; but whichsoever of His unexpected commands come upon us, hold we fast unto God continually, and obey the blessed Paul.

[7.] And let us make a little chest for the poor at home; and near the place at which you stand praying, there let it be put: and as often as you enter in to pray, first deposit your alms, and then send up your prayer; and as you would

not wish to pray with unwashen hands\*, so neither do so without alms: since not even the Gospel hanging by our bed<sup>b</sup> is more important than that alms should be laid up for you; for if you hang up the Gospel and do nothing, it will do you no such great good. But if you have this little coffer, you have a defence against the devil, you give wings to your prayer, you make your house holy, having meat for the King<sup>c</sup> there laid up in store. And for this reason let the little coffer be placed also near the bed<sup>d</sup>, and the night will not be troubled with fantasies. Only let nothing be cast into it, which is the fruit of injustice. For this thing is charity; and it cannot be that charity should ever spring out of hardheartedness.

Will you have mention also of the resources, out of which you should make your deposits, so as in this respect also to make this kind of contribution easy? The handicraft man, for instance, the sandal-maker, or the leather-cutter, or the brass-founder, or any other artificer,—when he sells any article of his trade, let him give the first-fruits of its price unto God: let him cast in a small portion here, and assign something to God out of his portion, though it be rather scanty<sup>e</sup>. For neither do I ask any great thing; but so much<sup>f</sup> as the childish ones among the Jews<sup>g</sup>, full as they are of innumerable evils, just so much let us cast in, we who look forward to heaven. And this I say not as laying down a law, neither as forbidding more, but as recommending a deposit of not less than a tenth part. And this also do thou practise not in selling only, but also in buying. Let those also who possess land observe this law in regard to their rents: yea, let it be a

\* S. Chrys. on St. Matt. xv. Hom. 51. "We see this kind of custom prevailing in the Church with most people; they are anxious to come in with clean garments and to wash their hands, but make no account of presenting their soul clean unto God." Ed. Sav. t. ii. 328; cf. Hom. 73. p. 861; in Eph. 3. p. 778. "Tell me, wouldest thou choose with unwashen hands to approach the Sacrifice? Far from it, to my thinking. Thou wouldest rather not come at all, than with defiled hands. Shall the next thing be, that while thou art so scrupulous in that which is but a trifle, thou

approachest with a soul defiled, and darest to touch It?"

<sup>b</sup> The custom here alluded to may perhaps explain the traditional wish or invocation,

"Matthew, Mark, Luke and John  
Bless the bed that I lie on."

<sup>c</sup> The reading seems corrupt. It is rendered as if it were *ὡς εὐχόμενος καὶ προσευχόμενος* *πρὸς τὸν βασιλέα*.

<sup>d</sup> Among whom it was a common saying, "Tithes are the Hedge of the Law." Hooker, E. P. y. 79. 8. See S. Luke xviii. 12.

<sup>1</sup> Con.  
16. 9.

<sup>18</sup> Mat.  
25. 34.

<sup>g</sup> *μαρτυ-  
ρῶντες  
τοὺς ὀφθαλμοὺς  
ἐν τῷ οὐρανῷ*  
*καὶ τὴν καρδίαν  
ἐν τῷ οὐρανῷ*  
*καὶ τὴν  
ψυχὴν ἐν τῷ  
οὐρανῷ*



614 *Beneficial Effect of but one good Habit of Life.*

**HOMIL.** law for all who gather their incomes in an honest way. For  
**XLIII.** with those who commend usury I have no concern, neither  
with soldiers who do violence to others, and turn to their own  
advantage their neighbours' calamities. Since from that quarter  
God will accept nothing. But these things I say to those who  
gather their substance by righteous labour.

Yea, and if we establish ourselves in this kind of habit, we  
are ever after stung by our conscience if ever we omit this  
rule; and after a while we shall not even think it a hard  
thing; and by degrees we shall arrive at the greater things,  
and by practising how to despise wealth, and by pulling up  
the root of evils, we shall first pass the present life in peace,  
and then obtain possession of the life to come; which may it  
be the portion of us all to attain unto, &c. &c.

## HOMILY XLIV.

---

1 COR. xvi. 10.

*But if Timotheus come to you<sup>1</sup>, see that he may be with you<sup>2</sup> without fear.*

<sup>1</sup> *πρὸς ὑμᾶς* not in rec. text.

PERHAPS some one may think there is something unworthy of Timothy's courage in this piece of advice. But not on Timothy's account is this said, but for the hearers' sake: lest by their design against him they should hurt themselves: since he for his part had his station always in the way of dangers<sup>3</sup>.

*For as a son with a father, saith he, he hath served with me in the Gospel<sup>4</sup>. But lest from boldness towards the disciple they should proceed also to the teacher, and become worse, he checks them from afar off, saying, that he may be with you without fear; that is, that none of those desperate persons rise up against him. For he intended perhaps to rebuke them about the things, concerning which Paul also had written: and indeed Paul professed to send him for this very reason. For I have sent Timothy unto you, saith he<sup>5</sup>, who shall bring you in mind of my ways in Christ, as every where in every Church I teach. In order then that they might not through confidence in their high birth and wealth, and the support of the people, and the wisdom from without, attack him, and spit upon him, and plot against him, being grieved at the reproofs which came from him; or lest in revenge for the teacher's rebuke, they should demand satisfaction of him, so punishing the other; therefore he saith, that he may be without fear among you. As if he had said, "Tell me not of those who are without, the Gentiles and unbelievers. It is your part that I require, you for whom also the whole Epistle was composed," the persons also whom in*

<sup>2</sup> *πρὸς αὐτὸν* <sup>3</sup> *δύναμις ἡ* <sup>4</sup> *παρρησία* <sup>5</sup> *βιβλαμίστος.* <sup>6</sup> Phil. 2. 22.

HOMIL. the beginning and the outset he had frightened. Wherefore  
 XLIV. he saith, *among you.*

Then in virtue of his ministry he sets him forth as a person to be fully trusted; saying, *For the work of the Lord he worketh.* That is; "look not," saith he, "to this, his not being rich, namely, nor highly educated, nor old: but what commands are laid upon him, what work he is doing. *For the work of the Lord he worketh.*" And this serves him instead of all nobility, and wealth, and age, and wisdom.

And he is not content with this, but adds, *Even as I also.* And some way above, *Who is my beloved son in the Lord; he shall bring you in remembrance of my ways in Christ.* Seeing then that he was both young, and had been singly entrusted with the improvement of so numerous a people, both of which things tended to bring him into contempt, he adds, as we might expect,

Ver. 11. *Let no one therefore despise him.*

And not this only doth he demand of them, but also greater honour; wherefore also he saith, *but conduct him forth in peace;* that is, without fear; causing no fightings or contentions, no enmities or hatreds, but subjection and honour; giving heed as to a master.

*That he may come unto me: for I look for him with the brethren.* This also was the language of one that would alarm them. That is, in order that they might become more considerate, as knowing that all would be told him whatever Timothy's treatment might be, he adds therefore, *for I expect him.* And besides, hereby he both shews that Timothy is worthy of their confidence; since being on the point of departing he waits for him; and also signifies the love which he hath towards them, it appearing that for their sakes he sent away one so useful to him.

Ver. 12. *But concerning Apollos our brother, I greatly desired him to come unto you together with the brethren.*

This man appears to have been both well-educated, and also older than Timothy. Lest they should say then, "For what possible reason did he not send the man grown, but the youth instead of him?" observe how he softens down this point also, both calling him a brother, and saying that he had often desired him. For lest he should seem to have held

Timothy in higher honour than him, and on this account not to have sent him, and cause their envy to burst out more abundantly, he adds, *I have often entreated him to come.* What then: did not the other yield, nor consent? did he resist and shew himself contentious? He saith not this, but that he might not excite prejudice against him, and also might make excuse for himself, he saith, *and his will was not at all to come at this time.* Then to prevent their saying that all this was an excuse and pretence, he added, *but he will come to you when he shall have convenient time.* This was both an excuse for him, and a refreshment to them, desiring to see him, by the hope which it gave of his coming.

[2.] Afterwards indicating, that not in the teachers but in themselves they ought to have their hopes of salvation, he saith, Ver. 13. *Watch ye, stand fast in the faith.*

Not in the wisdom which is without: for there it is not possible to stand, but to be borne along; even as *in the faith ye may stand.* *Quit you like men, be strong.* *Let all your things be done in charity.* Now in saying these things, he seems indeed to advise; but he is reprimanding them as indolent. Wherefore he saith, *Watch*, as though they slept; *Stand*, as though they were rocking to and fro: *Quit you like men*, as though they were playing the coward: *Let all your things be done with charity*, as though they were in dissensions. And the first caution refers to the deceivers, viz. *Watch, stand*: the next, to those who plot against us, *Quit you like men*: the third, to those who make parties and endeavour to distract, *Let all your things be done with charity*; which thing is *the bond of perfectness*, and the root and the fountain of all blessings.

But what means, *All things with charity*? "Whether any one rebuke," saith he, "or rule, or be ruled, or learn, or teach, let all be with charity:" since in fact all the things which have been mentioned arose from neglect of it. For if this had not been neglected, they would not have been puffed up, they would not have said, *I am of Paul, and I of Apollos.* If this had existed, they would not have gone to law before heathens, or rather they would not have gone to law at all. If this had existed, that notorious person would not have taken his father's wife; they would not have despised the

1 Cor.  
16. 13.



HOMIL  
XLIV. weak brethren; there would have been no heresies among them; they would not have been vain-glorious about their gifts. Therefore it is that he saith, *Let all things be done with charity.*

[8.] Ver. 15. *And I beseech you, brethren;—ye know the house of Stephanas, that it is the first-fruits of Achaia, and that they have addicted themselves unto the ministry of the saints.*

(2.) In the beginning too he mentions this man, saying, *I baptized also the house of Stephanas:* and now he speaks of him as *the first-fruits* not of Corinth only, but also of all Greece. And this too is no small encomium, that he was the first to come to Christ. Wherefore also in the Epistle to the Romans, praising certain persons on this account, he said, *Who also were in Christ before me*<sup>1</sup>. And he said not, that they were the first who believed, but were *the first-fruits*; implying that together with their faith they shewed forth also a most excellent life, in every way proving themselves worthy, as in the case of fruits. For so the first-fruits ought to be better than the rest of those things whereof they are the first-fruits: a kind of praise which Paul hath attributed to these also by this expression: namely, that they not only had a genuine faith, as I was saying, but also they exhibited great piety, and the prime of all virtue, and liberality in almsgiving.

<sup>1</sup> Rom.  
16. 7.

And not from hence only, but from another topic likewise he indicates their piety, i. e. from their having filled their whole house also with godliness.

And that they flourished in good works also, he declares by what follows, saying, *They have addicted themselves unto the ministry of the saints.* Hear ye, how vast are the praises of their hospitality! For he did not say, “they minister,” but, *have addicted themselves*: this kind of life they have chosen altogether, this is their business in which they are always busy.

*That ye also submit yourselves unto such*, that is, “that ye take a share with them both in expenditure of money, and in your personal ministry: that ye be partakers with them.” For both to them the labour will be light when they have comrades, and the results of their active benevolence will extend to more.

And he said not merely, *be fellow-helpers*, but added, <sup>1 Cor.</sup> "whatsoever directions they give, obey;" implying the <sup>16. 18.</sup> strictest sort of obedience. And that he might not appear to be favouring them, he adds, *and to every one that laboureth and worketh together with us*. "Let this," saith he, "be a general rule: for I do not speak about them individually, but if there be any one like them, let him also have the same advantages." And therefore when he begins to commend, he calls upon themselves as witnesses, saying, *I beseech you, ye know the house of Stephanus*. "For ye also yourselves are aware," saith he, "how they labour, and have no need to learn from us."

Ver. 17. *But I was glad of the coming of Stephanus and Fortunatus and Achaicus, for that which was lacking on your part they have supplied.*

Ver. 18. *For they have refreshed my spirit and yours.*

Thus, since it was natural for them to be greatly irritated against these persons, for it was they who had come and shewed him all about the division, inasmuch as by them also they had written the questions about the virgins, and those about the married persons:—mark how he softened them down; both in the beginning of his Epistle by saying, *For it hath been shewed me by them which are of the house of Chloe*; thus at once concealing these and bringing forward the others: (for it should seem that the latter had given their information by means of the former :) and in this place again, *They have supplied your lack, and refreshed my spirit and yours*: signifying that they had come for all, and had chosen to undertake so great a journey on their behalf. How then may this, their peculiar praise, become common? "If you will solace me for what was wanting on your part by your kindness towards them; if you will honour, if you will receive them, if you will communicate with them in doing good." Wherefore he saith, *Acknowledge ye then them that are such*. And while praising those that came, he embraces also the others in his praise, the senders together with the sent: where he saith, "*They have refreshed my spirit and yours, therefore acknowledge such as these*, because for your sakes they left country and home." Dost thou perceive his consideration? He implies that they had obliged not Paul only,

HOMIL.  
XIIV. but the Corinthians likewise, in that they bore about in themselves the whole city. A thing which both added credit to them, and did not allow the others to sever themselves from them, inasmuch as in their persons they had presented themselves to Paul.

Ver. 19. *All the Churches of Asia salute you.* He is continually making the members combine and cleave together in one by means of the salutation.

*Aquila and Priscilla salute you much in the Lord;*—for with them he was lodging, being a tent-maker—*together with the Church which is in their house.* This thing too is no small excellency, that they had made their very house a Church.

[4.] Ver. 20. *All the brethren salute you. Salute ye one another with an holy kiss.* This addition of the *holy kiss* he makes only here. What may the reason be? They had been widely at variance with one another on account of their saying, *I am of Paul, and I of Apollos, and I of Cephas, and I of Christ;* on account of *one being hungry, and another drunken;* on account of their having contentions and jealousies and suits. And from the gifts there was much envying and great pride. Having then knit them together by his exhortation, he naturally bids them use the *holy kiss*\* also as a mean of union: for this unites, and produces one body. This is holy, when free from deceit and hypocrisy.

Ver. 21. *The salutation of me Paul by mine own hand;* intimates that the Epistle was composed with great seriousness; and therefore he added,

Ver. 22. *If any man love not our Lord Jesus Christ, let him be anathema.*

By this one word he strikes fear into all: those who made their members the members of an harlot; those who put stumbling-blocks in the way of their brethren by the things offered in sacrifice unto idols; those who named themselves after men; those who refuse to believe the resurrection. And he not only strikes fear, but also points out the way of all virtue, and the fountain of all vice, viz. that as when our love towards Him hath become intense, there is no kind of

\* That is, the kiss of peace, constantly used as part of the ceremonial of the holy Eucharist; as appears by all the Primitive Liturgies.



sin but is extinguished and cast out thereby; so when it is too weak, it causes the same to spring up. 1 Cor.  
16. 24.

*Maranatha.* For what reason is this word used? And wherefore too in the Hebrew tongue? Seeing that arrogance was the cause of all the evils, and this arrogance the wisdom from without produced, and this was the sum and substance of all the evils, a thing which especially distracted Corinth; in repressing their arrogance he did not even use the Greek tongue, but the Hebrew: signifying that so far from being ashamed of that sort of simplicity, he even embraces it with much warmth.

But what is the meaning of *Maranatha*? "Our Lord is come." For what reason then doth he use this phrase in particular? To confirm the doctrine of the Economy: out of which class of topics more than any other he hath put together those arguments which are the seeds of the Resurrection<sup>1</sup>. And not only this, but also to rebuke them; as if he had said, "The common Lord of all hath condescended to come down thus far, and are ye in the same state, and do ye abide in your sins? Are ye not thrilled with the excess of His love, the crown of His blessings? Yea, consider but this one thing," saith he, "and it will suffice thee for progress in all virtue, and thou shalt be able to extinguish all sin." 16. 24.  
μὴ δὲ  
τὰς ἐν-  
μαρτυ-  
ρίαις  
τοῦ  
κύριου

Ver. 23. *The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you.*

This is like a teacher, to help not only with advice, but also with prayers.

Ver. 24. *My love be with you all in Christ Jesus, Amen.*

Thus to hinder them from thinking, that in flattery to them he so ended, he saith, *In Christ Jesus*. It having nothing in it human or carnal, but being of a sort of spiritual nature. Wherefore it is thoroughly genuine. For indeed the expression was that of one who loves deeply. As thus; because he was separated from them as regards place, as it were by the stretching out of a right hand he incloses them with the arms of his love, saying, *My love be with you all*; just as if he said, "With all of you I am" Whereby he intimates that the things written came not of wrath or anger, but of provident care, seeing that after so heavy an accusation he doth not turn himself away, but rather loves them, and embraces them when they are afar off, by these epistles and writings throwing himself into their arms.



HOMIL.  
XLIV.

[5.] For so ought he that corrects to do : since he at least, who acts merely from anger, is but satisfying his own feeling; but he who after correcting the sinner, renders also the offices of love, gives signification that those words also, whatsoever he spake in reproof, were words of fond affection. Just so let us too chasten one another; and let neither the corrector be angry, (for this belongs not to correction, but to passion,) nor let he that is corrected take it ill. For what is done is healing, not despire. Now if physicians use cautery, and are not found fault with, and that too, frequently, though they quite miss their object; but even in their pain the subjects of the cautery and amputation esteem as benefactors those who excite this pain; much more ought he, who receives reproof, to be so disposed, and as to a physician, so to give heed to the corrector, and not as to an enemy. And let us also who rebuke approach with great gentleness, with great prudence. And if thou seest a brother committing sin, as Christ commanded, make not your rebuke public, but *between thee and him alone*<sup>1</sup>: not reproaching nor insulting over him when down, but in pain and with a melting heart<sup>2</sup>. And shew thyself ready also to receive reproof, if thou commit error in any thing.

<sup>1</sup>S. Mat.  
18. 16.  
<sup>2</sup> *τροπὴ*  
*μωροῦ.*

Now that what I say may be plainer, let us put an imaginary case, and so try our rule. For God forbid that in very deed we should be provided with such an illustration of it. Suppose any brother dwelling in the same house with a virgin, in honour and chastity, and yet not even so quite escaping evil report<sup>3</sup>. If then you should hear talk of this their dwelling together, be not contemptuous, nor say, "Why, hath he no understanding of his own? Doth he not himself know what is for his good? Get love for nothing, but do not for nothing get hatred. Why, what have I to do with taking

<sup>1</sup> St. Chrysostom "attacked in the first instance those ecclesiastics who, under pretence of charity, lived with virgins, whom they treated as adopted sisters, whom they called 'subintroductæ' or *ὑποφύλακες*. Their excuses were, to assist a maiden left desolate without relations or friends; to take care of her affairs, if rich, and to maintain her in charity, if poor. . . . On the other hand, the clergy said they cast on them the burden of their household, and those trifling cares for which

women are most proper, in order to be more at liberty for the offices of their ministry. For the rest, they affirmed that in this intimacy there was no sort of criminal liberty, not at all making the less profession of continence. So Chrysostom maintained the contrary; and we have two whole discourses of his on this subject, which seem to have been written about this time," the time of his promotion to the see of Constantinople. Fleury, E. H. b. 20. §. 38.

up a gratuitous enmity?" These are the doting words of wild beasts, or rather of demons: for it is not so, that he is hated for nothing, who doth this for his brother's correction, rather it is for great blessings and crowns unutterable.

But if thou sayest, "What? hath he no understanding?" thou shalt hear from me that he hath not: drunken as he is with his passion. For if in the heathen courts of justice\* those who are injured must not speak for themselves while glowing with wrath; (although there be no fault in that kind of sympathy;) how much more those whom evil habit holds in subjection. Wherefore I say, that manifold as his wisdom may be, he hath not his mind awake. For what can be wiser than David, the man who said, *The dark and the hidden things of Thy wisdom Thou hast made known unto me*<sup>1</sup>? But when he looked on the wife of the soldier with unjust eyes, then according to what he himself said <sup>2</sup>of those who sail on a raging sea, *all his wisdom was swallowed up*; and he stood in need of others to correct him, and did not even perceive amidst what evils he was. Wherefore also, bewailing his offences, he said, *As a heavy burden they have weighed grievously upon me: my wounds stank and were corrupt because of my folly*<sup>3</sup>. He is therefore that committeth sin hath no understanding. For he is drunken and is in darkness. Do not then say these things, neither add that other remark, "I care not at all about it. For every one shall bear his own burden"<sup>4</sup>. Nay, against thyself also it grows up into a grievous accusation, that seeing one in error thou didst not restore him. For if it was not right, according to the law of the Jews<sup>5</sup>, to slight the beast of one's enemy; he who despises not a beast of burthen, nor yet the soul of an enemy perishing, but that of a friend, what pardon shall he obtain?

Yea, neither is it enough for our excuse, that he hath understanding: since we too after our many and manifold exhortations have not been sufficient, nor proved useful, unto ourselves. Bear this in mind then in regard to him also that is in error; that it is natural he should receive the best counsel rather from thee than from himself.

And say not, "But what care I about these things?" Fear

\* The Areopagus, and other courts resembling it, which allowed no appeal to the passions.

1 Con. 16. 24.

1 Ps. 51.

6. ap.

LXX.

50. 6.

2 Ps.

107. 27.

(4.)

He is

therefore

that

committeth

sin

hath

no

understanding.

For

he

is

drunken

and

is

in

darkness.

Do

not

then

say

these

things,

neither

add

that

other

remark,

"I

care

not

at

all

about

it.

For

every

one

shall

bear

his

own

burden

6.

Gal. 6.

5.

Exod.

23. 4, 5.

HOMIL. thou him who first spoke this word; for the saying, *Am I*  
 XLIV. *my brother's keeper*<sup>1</sup>? tends to the same point as this. This

<sup>1</sup> Gen. 4. 9. is the mother of all our evils, that we esteem the concerns of our own body as foreign to us. What sayest thou? Thou carest not for thy brother? Who then is to care for him? the unbeliever, who rejoices over and reproaches and insults him? or the devil, who urges him on and supplants him?

And whence comes this? "Because," saith he, "I do no good though I speak and advise what is right." But how is it clear that thou wilt do no good? Why, this again is extreme folly, while the end remains in obscurity, to incur the manifold blame of confessed indifference. And yet God, who foresees the future, often speaks and doth no good; yet doth He not even so give up; and that, knowing that He shall not persuade men. Now if He who knows beforehand that He shall win no advantage, ceases not from the work of correction, what excuse wilt thou have, who art completely ignorant of the future, and yet faintest and art benumbed? Yea, and many have succeeded by frequent attempts: and when they most of all despaired, then did they most gain their point. And though thou shouldest gain no advantage, thou hast done thine own part.

Be not then inhuman, nor unmerciful, nor a despiser: for that these words come of cruelty and indifference, is plain from what follows: viz. What is the reason, that when one of the members of thy body is in pain, thou sayest not, "What care I?" Yet whence is it plain that if it be taken due care of it is restored? And yet thou leavest nothing undone, that even although thou profit not, thou mayest not have to blame thyself for the omission of any thing which ought to have been done. Hereupon I ask, are we to take such care for the members of our body, and to neglect those of Christ? Nay, how can such things deserve pardon?

For if I make no impression upon thee by saying, "Have a care of thine own member;" in order that thou mayest become better were it only through fear, I put thee in mind of the Body of Christ. For how can it be other than a matter of horror to see His flesh putrefying, and neglect it? And if thou hadst a slave or an ass afflicted with a mortifying sore, thou couldest not have the heart to neglect it: but seest thou



the Body of Christ full of leprosy<sup>1</sup>, and hurriest by? and thinkest not that such things deserve innumerable thunderbolts? For this cause all things are turned upside down, because of this our inhumanity, because of our indifference. Wherefore now, I beseech you, let this cruelty be cast out from among us.

[6.] Draw near to him whom I spoke of, as dwelling with the virgin, and speak some small praise of thy brother, making it up from the other excellencies which he hath. And foment him with thy commendations as it were with warm water, and so mitigate the tumour of his wound. Speak of thyself also as wretched; accuse the common race of mankind; point out that we all are in sins; ask for pardon, saying, that thou art undertaking things too great for thee, but charity persuades thee to dare all things. Then in giving thine advice, do it not imperiously, but in a brotherly way. And when by all these means thou hast reduced the swelling, and soothed the pain arising from the cutting reproof which is in store for him, and when thou hast again and again deprecated and besought him not to be angry: when thou hast bound him down with these things, then use the knife; neither pressing the matter too close, nor yet undoing it; that he may neither fly off on the one hand, nor on the other think little of it. For neither if thou strike not to the quick, hast thou done any good, and if thy blow be violent, thou makest him start away.

Wherefore, even after all this, being on the very point of thy reproof, mix up again commendation with thy censures. And seeing that this proceeding considered in itself cannot be matter of praise, (for it is not commendable to keep house with a damsel that is a virgin:) let the purpose of him who doth so be thy topic for effecting this; and say, "I know indeed that thou doest it for God's sake, and that the desolation and unprotected state of that poor woman met thine eye, and caused thee to stretch out thine hand to her." And although he may not be doing it with this intention, do thou speak so; and after this add what follows also; again excusing thyself, and saying, "These things I speak not to direct but to remind thee. Thou doest it for God's sake; I too know that. But let us see whether another



HOMIL. evil be not produced hereby. And if there be none, keep  
 XLIV. her in thine house, and cling to this excellent purpose.

There is no one to hinder thee. But if any mischief arise from hence exceeding the advantage, let us take care, I beseech you, lest while we are earnest to comfort one soul, we put a stumbling-block in the way of ten thousand." And do not add immediately the punishments due to those who give offence, but take his own testimony also, saying, "Thou hast no need to learn these things from me: thou thyself knowest, *if any one offend one of these little ones*, how great a penalty is threatened. And thus having sweetened thy speech, and smoothed down his wrath, apply the medicine of thy correction. And should he again urge her forlorn condition, do not thou even so expose his pretence, but say to him, "Let nothing of this sort make you afraid: thou wilt have an ample plea, the offence given to others: since not for indifference, but in care towards them, didst thou cease from this thy purpose."

- (5.) And let the matter of thine advice be brief, for there is no need of much teaching; but let the parts on the other hand which express your fellow-feeling be many and close upon one another. And continually have thou recourse to the topic of charity; throwing into shade the painfulness of what thou sayest, and giving him his full power, and saying, "This is what I for my part advise and recommend; but about taking the advice, thou only art judge: for I do not compel and force thee, but submit the whole thing to thine own discretion."

If we so manage our reproof, we shall easily be able to correct those in error: even as what we now do, is surely more like the conduct of wild beasts or irrational creatures than of men. For if any persons now perceive any one committing errors of this kind, with the person himself they do not at all confer, but themselves, like silly old women who have drunk too much, whisper about one with another. And the saying, "Get love for nothing, but do not get hatred for nothing," hath not here any place in their opinion. Rather, when they have a fancy to speak evil, they mind not being "hated for nothing," rather I should say, "being punished;" since it is not hatred alone that is hereby produced, but also punishment. But when there is need of correction, they allege both this,

and innumerable other pretexts. Whereas then would be the time to think of these things, when thou speakest evil, when thou calumniatest; I mean the saying, "Be not hated for nothing," and "it is no care of mine." But as things are, in the former case, thou art vehemently and idly curious, and carest not for hatred and ills innumerable; but when thou shouldst be taking thought for the salvation of thy brother, then it is thy pleasure to be a sort of unofficious, inoffensive person. And yet from evil speaking arises hatred both on God's part and on men's; and this is no great care to thee: but by giving advice privately, and reproofs of that kind, both he and God will be made thy friends. And even should he hate thee, God goes on loving thee the rather on this account. Nay, in fact, not even so will he hate thee, as when his hatred came from thine evil speaking: but in that case he will avoid thee as a foe and an enemy, whereas now he will consider thee more venerable than any father. And if he apparently take it ill, inwardly and privately he will feel much obliged to thee.

[7.] Bearing in mind these things therefore, let us have a care of our own members, and not sharpen the tongue against one another, nor speak words *which may do hurt*<sup>6</sup>, undermining the fame of our neighbour, and as in war and battle, giving and receiving blows. For what after all is the good of fasting or watching, when the tongue is drunken, and feasts itself at a table more unclean than of dog's flesh; when it is grown ravening after blood, and pours out filth, and makes the mouth a channel of a sewer, nay rather something more abominable than that? For that which proceeds from thence pollutes the body: but what comes from the tongue often suffocates the soul.

These things I say, not in fruitless anxiety about those who have an ill report: for they are worthy even of crowns, when they bear what is said nobly; but in anxiety for you that so speak. For him that is evil reported of falsely, the Scriptures pronounce "blessed:" but the evil-speaker they

<sup>6</sup> *ἡμῶν καὶ ἀλλήλων*. Ps. 52. 4. ap. LXX. 51. 4. "Words of swallowing up in the sea;" i. e. as St. Augustin on the place intimates, "words so sinful

that they plunge the swimmer again in the deep, and complete his shipwreck, when by repentance he ought to lay hold of the Cross."

HOMIL. expel from the holy mysteries, or rather from the very outer  
 XLIV. precincts. For it is said<sup>1</sup>, *Him that privily speaketh against*  
<sup>1</sup> Ps. his neighbour, *this man did I chase out.* And he saith too  
 101. 5. that such an one is unworthy to read the sacred books. For  
<sup>2</sup> Ps. 50. *Why, saith He<sup>2</sup>, dost thou preach My righteous laws, and*  
 16. *takest My covenant in thy mouth?* Then, annexing the  
<sup>3</sup> v. 20. cause, He saith<sup>3</sup>, *Thou satest and spakest against thy brother.*  
 And here indeed he doth not distinctly add, "whether they  
 be things true or false which he speaks." But elsewhere this  
 too makes part of His prohibition: He implying that even  
 though thou speak truths, yet such things are not to be  
 uttered by thee. For, *Judge not*, saith He, *that ye be not*  
<sup>4</sup> S. Mat. *judged*<sup>4</sup>: since he too who spoke evil of the publican was  
 7. 1. condemned, although it was true which he laid to his  
 neighbour's charge.

"What then," you will say, "if any one be daring and  
 polluted, must we not correct him? must we not expose  
 him?" We must both expose and correct: but in the way  
 which I mentioned before. But if thou do it upbraiding him,  
 take heed, lest thine imitation of that Pharisee cause thee to  
 fall into his state. For no advantage accrues from hence;  
 none to thee who speakest, none to him who hears thee, none  
 to the person so accused. But the latter, for his part,  
 becomes more reckless: since as long as he is unobserved,  
 he is sensible of shame; but as soon as he becomes manifest  
 and notorious, he casts off the curb also, which that feeling  
 imposed on him.

And the hearer will in his turn be yet more injured. For  
 whether he be conscious to himself of good deeds, he  
 becomes puffed and swoln up with the accusation brought  
 against another; or of faults, he then becomes more eager  
 for iniquity.

Thirdly, the speaker too himself will both incur the bad  
 opinion of him that fears him, and will provoke God to more  
 anger against himself.

Wherefore, I beseech you, let us cast from us every word  
 that is unsavoury. If there be any thing good unto edifi-  
 cation, this let us speak.

But hast thou a fancy to avenge thyself on the other  
 person? Why then punish thyself instead of him? Nay,

do thou, who art so earnestly seeking redress from those <sup>1 Cor.</sup> who have annoyed thee, avenge thyself as Paul recommended 16. 24. to take vengeance. *If thine enemy hunger, feed him; if he thirst, give him drink*<sup>1</sup>. But if thou do not so, but only plot <sup>1 Rom.</sup> against him, thou pointest the sword against thyself. <sup>12. 20.</sup>

Wherefore if that other speak evil, answer him with praises and commendations. For so wilt thou be able both to take vengeance on him, and wilt deliver thyself from evil surmising. Since he that feels pain at hearing ill of himself, is thought to be so affected because of some consciousness of evil: but he that laughs what is said to scorn, exhibits a most unquestionable token of his not being conscious to himself of any evil thing.

Seeing then that thou profitest neither thine hearer, nor thyself, nor him that is accused, and dost but point thy sword at thine own self, even from such considerations do thou learn more soberness. For one ought indeed to be moved by the thought of the kingdom of heaven, and of what pleases God: but since thou art of grosser disposition, and bitest like a wild beast, hereby even be thou instructed; that these arguments having corrected thee, thou mayest be able to order thyself simply from consideration of what pleases God; and having come to be above every passion, mayest obtain the heavenly blessings:—which may God grant us all to obtain, through the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, and His mercy towards mankind; with Whom, to the Father, and the Holy Spirit, be glory, power, honour, now, and henceforth, and unto everlasting ages. Amen.





# INDEX OF TEXTS.

## GENESIS.

2, 5. vii. 8.  
7. xli. 6.  
23. xvii. 4. xxvi. 3.  
24. xxxiii. 5. xxxiv. 5.  
3, 4. vii. 9.  
16. xix. 2. xxvi. 3. xxxvii. 1.  
19. xlii. 2.  
4, 9. xlii. 5.  
12. xxx. 8.  
12. 14. vii. 9.  
11, 1. xxxiv. 7.  
12, 16. xxxv. 10.  
17. i. 3.  
13, 8. i. 5. xxxv. 10.  
9. xxv. 4.  
14, 8. xxxv. 10.  
21—24. i. 5.  
23. xxxiv. 10.  
18, 8. xxxv. 10.  
27. i. 4.  
19, 17. xxv. 5.  
2. 24. xxxiii. 5.  
23, 6. xxxv. 10.  
2. 24. xxxv. 10.  
25, 27. xxxiii. 8.  
27, 13, &c. xxxiii. 2.  
29, 30. xxxiii. 2.  
31, 38. xxxiii. 8.  
37, 14. xxv. 4.  
39, 8, &c. xxxii. 13.  
47, 9. xxxix. 7.

## EXODUS.

1, 2. i. 4.  
3, 2. xxxviii. 4.  
6. xxix. 7.  
16. xxxvii. 1.  
12, 4. xv. 7.  
16, 20. xl. 5.  
17, 4. v. 9.  
18, 24. i. 4.  
19, 10, 20. ix. 1.  
17. xxv. 5.  
23, 4, 5. xlii. 5.  
32, 32. xxv. 4. xxxiii. 5. 8.

## LEVITICUS.

18, 6. xxxiv. 6.

## NUMBERS.

12, 3. i. 4.  
14, 10. v. 9.  
31, 8, 11, 15, 16. xxxiii. 4.

## DEUTERONOMY.

17, 7. xvi. 3.  
22, 5. xxxvi. 4.  
9. xxi. 5.  
28, 23. xxxix. 13.  
32, 15. xxxix. 17.  
21. xxiv. 6.

## JOSHUA.

7. xi. 9.

## 1 SAMUEL.

20, 30. xxxiii. 2.

## 2 SAMUEL.

24, 17. xxv. 4.

## 1 KINGS.

19, 10. v. 9.  
22, 23. xxxix. 1.

## 2 KINGS.

5, 26. xv. 3.  
6, 5—7. iv. 5.  
8, 13. ix. 9.  
22, 8. vii. 6.

## 2 CHRONICLES.

34, 14. vii. 6.

## INDEX OF TEXTS.

## JOB.

- 1, 21. x. 5. xxviii. 4. xli. 9.  
 2, 6. xv. 4.  
 10. xxviii. 5. xxxiv. 10.  
     xxxviii. 8.  
 21. xli. 19.  
 5, 13. x. 3.  
 31, 31. xxiv. 7.  
 32. xxxiv. 10.

## PSALMS.

- 2, 8. xxxix. 11.  
 6, 7. xv. 10.  
 15, 4. xxix. 9.  
 16, 10. xxxviii. 4.  
 18, 45. xv. 10.  
 19, 1. ii. 9.  
     5. xxiv. 7.  
 22, 16. xxxviii. 2.  
 27, 1. xli. 9.  
 36, 6. xxix. 7.  
 37, 1. 2. xv. 12.  
     20. xxxix. 13.  
 38, 5. xlii. 5.  
 39, 7. x. 6.  
 43, 4. ii. 2.  
 45, 8. xx. 6.  
 49, 16. xxix. 9.  
     20. ix. 10.  
 50, 18, 20. xlii. 7.  
     21. xvi. 8.  
 51, 6. xlii. 5.  
     17. i. 4.  
 52, 4. xlii. 7.  
 55, 23. xvi. 11.  
 63, 1. ii. 2.  
 68, 5. xli. 9.  
 71, 7. xxxvi. 2.  
 73, 27. viii. 7.  
 78, 24. xxxiv. 10.  
 86, 17. xxxvi. 2.  
 90, 2. xxxix. 8.  
 94, 11. x. 3.  
 101, 5. xlii. 7.  
 102, 25. iv. 4.  
     27. xxxix. 8.  
 107, 27. xlii. 5.  
 110, 1. xx. 6.  
     2. iv. 10.  
 111, 8. xxi. 10.  
 119, 89. xxxix. 8.  
 120, 5. xxxiii. 5.  
 137, 1. xxxiii. 5.  
 139, 12. xi. 6.  
     14. x. 6.  
     21. xxxiii. 5.  
 144, 4. xii. 2.

## PROVERBS.

- 10, 3. xvi. 11.  
 11, 28. xxxix. 13.  
 14, 29, 31. xxxiii. 1.  
 19, 17. xv. 15.

## ECCLESIASTES.

- 1, 2. xi. 2.  
 12, 13. xxix. 9.

## CANTICLES.

- 8, 6. xxxiii. 9.

## ISAIAH.

- 1, 17. xxxiii. 6.  
     18. viii. 8.  
     19. xiv. 5.  
     26. xli. 6.  
     5, 4. ii. 9.  
     7, 14. xli. 6.  
 22, 13, 14. xl. 4.  
 40, 6. xxxix. 9.  
     23. iv. 4.  
 41, 22, 23. xxxii. 3.  
 43, 26. xl. 4. xxxiii. 6.  
 44, 27. xxxiv. 10.  
 46, 4. xxxix. 8.  
 50, 4. vii. 6.  
 52, 7. xiii. 6.  
     15. vii. 6. xxxviii. 3.  
 53, 8, 10, 11. xxxviii. 4.  
 57, 17. xxxiii. 6.  
     17, 18. viii. 8.  
 64, 4. vii. 6.

## JEREMIAH.

- 1, 6. xxxix. 2.  
 6, 10. xxxiii. 6.  
 7, 17, 18. viii. 8.  
 8, 4. xxxiii. 6.  
 10, 11. xx. 5.  
 15, 19. iii. 9.

## EZEKIEL.

- 3, 15. xxxix. 2.  
 9, 8. xxxiii. 5.  
 16, 4. xxxix. 17.  
     21, 22. xxvi. 5.  
 20, 25. vii. 9.

## DANIEL.

- 2, 47. xxxvi. 3.  
 3, 17. xviii. 6.  
     17, 18. xx. 12.  
     28. xviii. 5.  
 4, 27. xxxiii. 6.  
 7, 9. xv. 10.  
 14. xxxix. 6.

	HOSEA.		5, 40.	xvi. 9.
6, 6.	xxxii. 9.		46. 47.	xlii. 5.
13, 14.	xlii. 4.		6, 14.	xxiii. 6.
			23.	xxiii. 8.
	JOEL.		24.	i. 2.
2, 28.	xxvi. 4.		25.	xlii. 5.
			33.	xv. 15.
	JONAH.		7, 1.	xi. 1. xlii. 7.
			3. 1.	xli. 2.
1, 3.	xxix. 2.		6.	vii. 3.
3, 4.	xv. 9.		12.	xxvi. 5.
			22.	ix. 1. xxxii. 3.
	HAGGAI.		22. 23.	viii. 2.
2, 8.	xxxiv. 9.		8, 20.	xxiv. 8.
			9, 5.	xi. 2.
	ZECHARIAH.		13.	xxxii. 9.
12, 10.	xxxviii. 3.		16.	xxxiii. 7.
			10, 9.	xxxiv. 10.
	ECCLESIASTICUS.		10.	xxi. 4.
1, 16.	xiv. 4.		16.	xxxvi. 1.
9, 9.	xv. 10.		27.	vii. 2.
15, 16.	xiv. 5.		38. 34.	vii. 16.
18, 16. 17.	xxxii. 9.		39. 32.	xxxii. 10.
25, 11.	xxix. 9.		11, 13.	xxxii. 2.
27, 14.	xxii. 7.		30.	xiv. 7.
			12, 25.	xxxi. 7.
	SONG OF THE THREE		39.	xxxix. 12.
	CHILDREN.		36.	vii. 16.
ver. 6. 10.	xviii. 6.		38.	xxxiv. 10.
			40.	xxxviii. 4.
	HISTORY OF SUSANNAH.		42.	xvi. 5.
ver. 52.	xv. 10.		45.	xliii. 5.
			13, 17.	xxi. 2.
	BEL AND THE DRAGON.		15, 11.	xx. 1.
ver. 27.	xxiv. 7. xxxviii. 4.		16, 18.	vi. 6. vii. 18.
			17, 20.	xxix. 8. xxxii. 7.
	ST. MATTHEW.		18, 7.	xxvii. 8.
2, 23.	vii. 6. note		15.	xlii. 5.
3, 15.	xxxviii. 3.		33.	ix. 10.
5, 2.	xlii. 5.		19, 9.	xix. 4.
16.	vi. 8.		21.	xxxii. 8. xxxiv. 10.
23.	xlii. 5.		27.	x. 5.
24.	xix. 4.		29.	vii. 18.
28. 25.	vii. 16.		20, 16.	xxxviii. 6.
28.	xlii. 5.		23.	xxxii. 10.
32.	xix. 4.		26.	xxxii. 10.
			26. 27.	xli. 2.
			23, 1.	xv. 6.
			29.	xvii. 4.
			37. 39.	xxxii. 11.
			23, 2.	xxi. 11.
			24, 14.	vi. 6.
			28.	xxiv. 7.
			25, 12.	xxx. 9.
			21.	xliii. 6.
			34.	xxx. 9. xliii. 7.
			41.	xvi. 5.
			42.	x. 6. xxi. 11.
			46.	ix. 1.
			26, 13.	vi. 6.
			41.	xviii. 6.
			27, 41. 42.	iv. 3.
			28, 18.	xxxix. 11.
			20.	vi. 6.



- 2, 7. xxxviii. 8.  
 8. xv. 9.  
 11. xxxviii. 1.  
 3, 10. xxxiv. 3.  
 4, 3. vii. 2.  
 5, 7. vi. 5.  
 10. xxxix. 4.  
 21. v. 4. xxxviii. 3.  
 6, 10. xv. 13.  
 9, 5, 15. xliii. 4.  
 10, 5. ix. 6.  
 10. xi. 2. xxxv. 11.  
 11, 8. xxv. 3.  
 8, 9. xxi. 7.  
 14, 15. xxvii. 3.  
 15. xvi. 5.  
 20. xxi. 6.  
 24, 25. xlii. 6.  
 27. xv. 13.  
 29. xxxii. 14.  
 30, 32. vi. 2.  
 12, 9. v. 2.  
 10. vi. 2.  
 12, 13. ii. 4.  
 12. xxi. 2.  
 20. xxi. 6.  
 21. xi. 4.  
 13, 3. ii. 7.  
 5. xxviii. 1.  
 14. xx. 7.

## GALATIANS.

- 1, 8. xxvii. 3. xxxii. 9.  
 2, 6. xxxix. 1.  
 8. xxxix. 4.  
 9. xxxix. 1.  
 3, 13. xxxviii. 3.  
 28. xli. 12. xl. 6.  
 4, 13, 14. vi. 2.  
 5, 2. xxvii. 3.  
 4. xxvii. 3.  
 10. xxxviii. 2. xl. 4.  
 6, 5. xlii. 5.  
 8. xlii. 2.

## EPHESIANS.

- 2, 8. i. 1.  
 15. xx. 5.  
 3, 8. vii. 4.  
 10. vii. 2.  
 4, 5. ix. 5.  
 11, 12. viii. 2.  
 14. xxxviii. 1.  
 17. xv. 1.  
 5, 1. xlii. 5.  
 4. vii. 16.  
 23. xxvi. 3.  
 25, 33. xix. 2.  
 6, 1—4. xxvi. 6.  
 12. xxxix. 6.

## PHILIPPIANS.

- 1, 29. xxxiii. 7.  
 2, 6, 7, 8, 9. xxxix. 7.  
 7. iv. 2.  
 10. xxxii. 6.  
 12. xiv. 1. xxxviii. 3.  
 15. iv. 11.  
 18. xiv. 1.  
 22. xlii. 1.  
 3, 2. xxvii. 3.  
 4—7. xxxv. 7.  
 6. viii. 4.  
 19. xvii. 1. xxxiv. 10.  
 21. xxxix. 9. xli. 2.  
 4, 4. xv. 6.  
 6. ii. 1.

## COLOSSIANS.

- 1, 6. xxxvii. 2.  
 24. xiv. 7.  
 2, 15. xxiv. 7. xxxviii. 3.  
 3, 4. vii. 19.  
 6, 7. xv. 1.  
 10. ix. 10.

## 1 THESSALONIANS.

- 1, 8. xxxvii. 2.  
 2, 19. xxxiii. 3.  
 4, 4, 5. xv. 1.  
 18. ix. 5.  
 5, 11. ix. 5.  
 14. xxxiii. 5.  
 20, 21. xxix. 5.

## 2 THESSALONIANS.

- 1, 9. ix. 1.  
 3, 14. xvi. 2. xxxiii. 6.

## 1 TIMOTHY.

- 1, 9. xvi. 9.  
 12, 13. xxxviii. 7.  
 13, 16. xxi. 6.  
 2, 1. xxxiii. 5.  
 6. vi. 1.  
 9. xxvi. 6.  
 14. xxvi. 3.  
 3, 7. xvi. 2.  
 4, 2. xxvii. 3.  
 13, 14. xxix. 5.  
 14. xxxii. 2.  
 5, 6. xxvii. 7. xxxix. 16, 17.  
 17. iii. 6. xxix. 5. xxxii. 2.  
 6, 1, 2. xix. 5.  
 8. xlii. 7. xvii. 1. xxxv. 9.  
 9. xlii. 7. xxxvi. 3.  
 10. xliii. 8. xxxi. 7. xl. 4.

6, 4. xi. 2.  
7. xi. 5. xxxix. 12.  
19. xxiv. 1.  
8, 8. 9. xlii. 2.  
11. xli. 6.  
24. xxxiv. 5.  
27. vii. 7. xi. 5.  
32. iii. 5.  
38. xxxii. 9.  
39. xxii. 6.  
9, 3. xxv. 4. xxxiii. 2. 5.  
5. xx. 6.  
20. xxix. 6.  
10, 1. xxxiii. 5.  
3. i. 4.  
11, 1. 2. 11. vii. 5.  
13. xxix. 4.  
14. xxxi. 7. xxxiii. 5.  
29. ii. 8.  
12, 4—8. xxix. 1.  
15. xxxiii. 4.  
20. xlv. 7.  
21. xvii. 1.  
13, 8. ix. 1.  
14. xlii. 7.  
14, 10. xi. 3. xx. 1.  
12. xxi. 11.  
15. xx. 10.  
21. xlii. 6.  
15, 3. xxiv. 6.  
8. viii. 5.  
19. vi. 8. xlii. 6.  
21. vii. 6.  
25. xliii. 1.  
16, 7. xlv. 3.

1 CORINTHIANS.

1, 3. xvii. 2.  
11. xv. 1. xxvii. 2.  
30. xx. 5.  
2, 3. xxiv. 1.  
11. xxix. 6. xxxiv. 4.  
11. 12. vii. 7.  
16. vii. 6.  
3, 1. Arg. 3. ii. 4.  
1. 2. Arg. 3.  
5. 6. x. 4.  
6. v. 4.  
9. x. 4.  
10. ix. 5.  
11. xxi. 3.  
13. xxx. 9.  
18. xxvi. 1.  
22. viii. 2.  
22. 23. xxvi. 3.  
4, 3. 6. Arg. 3.  
4. xxxix. 5.  
6. v. 4. xxx. 3.  
7. x. 5.  
8. Arg. 2.  
11. vi. 8. xvi. 11. xxi. 3. 7.  
17. xxxvii. 2. xlv. 1.  
18. xxvi. 1. xxviii. 3.

4, 18. 21. ii. 7.  
19. xliii. 5.  
5, 1. xxxvi. 1.  
2. Arg. 2.  
12. xxv. 2.  
6, 2. xi. 2.  
7. 8. xxxvi. 1.  
9. ix. 1. xvi. 8.  
9. 10. xxxvii. 3.  
10. xvi. 8.  
13. xlii. 6. xxxiii. 2.  
19. 20. x. 6.  
20. xxvi. 1.  
25. xvi. 9.  
7, 1. Arg. 3.  
4. xxxiii. 3.  
8. xix. 3.  
9. xix. 3.  
11. xix. 4.  
23. xvii. 1.  
28. xix. 7.  
28. 32. xxxvi. 3.  
8, 8. xxxiii. 2. xxv. 2.  
13. xlii. 6.  
9, 2. Arg. 3.  
13. xliii. 3.  
15. xxxii. 14.  
18. xxxii. 14.  
24. xxx. 1.  
27. xlii. 7.  
10, 12. xxxviii. 8.  
15. xxvi. 5.  
24. xxxiii. 3.  
32. xxvi. 2.  
33. xxiv. 6.  
11, 4. xii. 14.  
7. xxvi. 5.  
14. xxxvii. 1.  
14. 15. xxx. 1.  
16. xxvi. 2. xxxvii. 3.  
22. xxxvi. 9.  
32. xv. 4. xvi. 2.  
33. xxxvii. 3.  
12, 4. xx. 7.  
7. xxxix. 1.  
27. xviii. 1. xxvi. 2.  
13, 3. xxv. 5.  
9. vii. 3.  
12. xx. 3.  
14, 7. xxxvi. 6.  
26. 29. ii. 4.  
29. xxxii. 2.  
33. xxxvii. 2.  
15, 8. xi. 2. xxi. 2.  
10. x. 5. xxxii. 14.  
31. x. 5.  
51. vii. 2.  
16, 10. 11. xiv. 1.  
15. ii. 4.

2 CORINTHIANS.

1, 11. xli. 8.  
17. xliii. 5.

# INDEX OF TEXTS.

637

## 2 TIMOTHY.

1, 3. viii. 4.  
6. xxix. 4.  
3, 4. xlii. 5.  
9. xlii. 6.  
10. xxxiii. 3.  
12. ii. 8.  
17. xxxviii. 1.  
24, 25. xxxiii. 5.  
4, 5. xxix. 4.

## HEBREWS.

1, 2. vii. 4.  
4, 7. xxxviii. 8.  
12. xi. 6.  
6, 1. viii. 1.  
9. viii. 1.  
8, 13. xv. 10.  
10, 31. ix. 3.  
11, 1. xxxiv. 5.

11, 24—26.

26. i. 4.  
12, 4. xxv. 4.  
12. xxiv. 1.  
14. xxxviii. 8.  
13, 4. ix. 1.  
xii. 11.

## JAMES.

4, 6. i. 4.

## 1 ST. PETER.

2, 11. x. 5.  
3, 15. iii. 8.

## REVELATIONS.

3, 20. xxvii. 7.

*Baptism*, its necessity, iii. 6; its connection with the remission of sins, iii. 6, and note; vii. 19; xl. 2; and so a pledge of our resurrection, ib. great things spoken of it, vii. 2; the laver of regeneration, vii. 19; of no avail to us without good works, xxiii. 3.

*Baptized for the dead*, xxiii. 3; xl. 2.

*Beggars*, led to imposture by the inhumanity of others, xxi. 8.

*Bereavement*, how we may learn to bear it, x. 6; xli. 7. See *Mourning*.

*Body*, its constitution not for evil, but good, xxii. 7; not evil in itself, xxiii. 2, 311; not the body, but the mind, the cause of sin, xxxix. 16; ruined by luxury, ib. like a walking sepulchre in such, ib. in what respect more spiritual in the next world, xli. 6; an example of the Church, xxx. 1; its members both one, and many, ib. 2-5.

*Body of Christ*, reverence due to It, xxiv. 7; Its mighty power, and victory over death, 8; honoured by the wise men, ib.

*Body and Blood of the Lord*, to be understood spiritually, not carnally, xxiii. 3, 312; see Ep. Taylor, vol. x. 86. we partake of in the Eucharist, xxiv. 3, 7.

*Brethren of the Lord*, freed from their first unbelief, yet attained not to the Apostles, xxi. 3.

*Burning bush*, variously interpreted by the Fathers without contradiction, xxxviii. 4, note.

## C.

*Cain*, a slave to envy, xix. 6.

*Catechumens*, not allowed to be present at the Communion, but to hear the Scriptures read, xxxvi. 8, note.

*Catholic truth*, to be learned by universal consent, xxxvii. 2.

*Cerinthian heretics*, how they perverted the Scriptures, xl. 1, note.

*Celsus*, a witness to the Scriptures, vi. 6, 73.

*Charity*, the way of gifts, xxxii. 5; unites men when gifts divide them, ib. greater than all gifts, 6, 7; more than alms and martyrdom, 8; the way to perfection, 10; would remove all evils, if fully practised, ib. superior to other virtues in having no attendant evils, ib. the great sign of love to God, ib. turns all evil to good, 12; contrasted with sensual passion, ib. Joseph an example of,

12; Paul to be admired for rather than his miracles, 14; our Lord most perfect pattern of, ib. its various excellencies depicted with a painter's art, xxxiii. 1; centre in long-suffering, ib. the qualities of charity, ib. keeps all else in due proportion, ib. examples of in our Lord, Jonathan, Rebecca, ib. leads to the same result with true self-love, 3; prevents unkind thoughts, ib. makes men angels, ib. is felt towards heathens and wicked men, 6; more perfect under the Gospel, ib. more attractive than miracles, 6; S. Paul before Agrippa an example of, 7; its power to teach courage, moderation, chastity, and all virtues, 8, 9; S. Paul's delineation of suited to correct the Corinthians' errors, xxxiv. 1; more lasting than faith and hope, 3; many hindrances to the exercise of, 5; the final cause of the relation between the sexes, and of consanguinity, society, commerce, and language, 6, 6, 7; also of government, ib. *charity doth not behave herself unseemly*, explained, xxxiii. 2; exemplified, ib. See *Almsgiving*, and *Love*.

*Chanting*, used in churches, xxxvi. 9.

*Cheerfulness*, how to be nourished, xxxviii. 10.

*Chest for the poor*, xliii. 7.

*Christ*, the centre of unity to the Church, i. 2; His Presence implied in the word Revelation, ii. 6; His glory enhanced by His sufferings, iv. 3; how made unto us wisdom and righteousness, v. 4; the bond of unity, viii. 7; the Christian's Foundation, ix. 4; "is God's," how to be understood, x. 4; His indwelling presence in S. Paul, xiii. 6; present in the sentence of excommunication, xv. 4; the head of Christians only, xxvi. 2; His inferiority to the Father asserted by heretics from 1 Cor. xi. 3. and refuted, ib. 2, 3; *ἰσοῦς* with the Father, ib. 3; subject to the Father, but as a son, as God, ib. *ἰστέον* and *σὺμβουλος*, ib. how the head of the Church, ib. argument from the nature of the woman's subjection to the man to shew that Christ is of the same nature with the Father, ib. His condescension to Judas, xlvii. 4; our perfect pattern of charity, xxii. 14; xxxiii. 2; His love to us, xix. 4; has the sum of knowledge, xxiv. 3; left some things voluntary, xxi. 8.

*Christians*, to abide in their calling, xix. 5; cannot be slaves, 6; have almost all fallen from grace, xliii. 6.



- Church*, a stronger ground of union, than nations are of separation, i. 2; both one and many, xxx. 1; a manifold person, xli. 8; its unity in the Spirit, xxx. 2; wounded when its members transgress, xv. 1; its fallen state, xxxvi. 7; certain places used as churches in the Apostles' times, xxii. 4, 376; not to be made a common place, ib. irreverent behaviour in them common, xxxvi. 8; motives for reverence, ib. irreverence contrasted with men's behaviour in the theatre, ib. parts of the building in which the poor were placed, xxx. 7, note; chanting used in, xxxvi. 9. See *Unity*.
- Church-allowance*, what, and to whom given, xxi. 11.
- Church-discipline*, to be preceded by mourning and prayer, xv. 2; towards Heathens impossible, xvi. 1; punishments in the Old Testament analogous to it, ib. 3.
- Clergy*, Right of Maintenance, proved by examples, xxi. 3; sanctioned by the Mosaic law, ib. 5; xxii. 1; enforced by the mystical meaning of Mosiacal precepts, xxi. 5; by the value of spiritual things, ib. 6; by a comparison of the conduct of schismatics, ib. what kind of men the Clergy ought to be, xxi. 3; evil lives of, no excuse for disobeying their precepts, xxi. 11; often unjustly suspected, ib. must endeavour to save all, though all will not be saved, xxii. 5; must not be discouraged though bearers be disobedient, xxvii. 7. See *Ministers*.
- Chronology* of the LXX, how differing from the Hebrew, ix. 2.
- Comforts of life*, their ill effect, vi. 8.
- Community of God's gifts should teach generosity of spirit, x. 7.
- Commerce*, should teach public spirit, x. 7; selfishness incident to, xxxix. 15; contrary to God's intention, ib.
- Communion*, why so called, xxiv. 3.
- Conscience*, when it seems clear, does not therefore justify, xi. 3.
- Condescension* for a brother's sake no degradation, xxii. 6.
- Consolations* under loss of relatives, xli. 9. See *Hereavement*, *Mourning*.
- Conversion*, a greater charity than alms, iii. 9; of ordinary persons to the Gospel, a presumption of its truth, v. 1, 2; vi. 6; of the world might be effected without miracles if Christians led holy lives, vi. 8. See *Propagation of the Gospel*.
- Corinth*, why its inhabitants likely to be proud, Arg. 1; some of that Church still very holy, ib. 3; ii. 4; the errors of some of them, Arg. ii. 2; their childishness, xiv. 2.
- Cornelius*, v. 11; blessed with knowledge because of his love, xx. 2.
- Counsels of perfection*, xxi. 8; xxii. 3; their use and reward, ib. 4.
- Covetousness*, its brutalizing effect, ix. 9; never rests, xi. 7; blinds men, ib. compared with contentedness, xiv. 8; compared to dropsy, 9; a present hell, ib. compared to heaven, xv. 11; answerable for the impositions of the poor, xxi. 8; its cruelty, ib. folly and evils attending it, xxiii. 8; antidote to it in the creation, ib. found among rich and poor, ib. 322; renders men worse than labourers in the mines, ib. 321; preys both on the living and the dead, xxxv. 12; how to be tamed, ib. is worse than a dream, xxxvi. 10; its unsatiableness, xxxvii. 4; worse than poverty, xxxix. 13; example of its cruelty in a corn-factor, ib. and in men in trade, 15; makes men poor, xl. 5.
- Creed* of the oriental Churches probably alluded to, iii. 6.
- Creation*, analogy between it and redemption, iv. 5; works of, why men told to study them, v. 3.
- Crimes*, some require a life of repentance, xv. 9.
- The *Cross*, its glory above reason, iv. 3; seemed contrary to all signs, 5; type of it in time of Elisha, ib. the Cross, not amulets, the true protection of children, xli. 13, 14, and note.
- Cup of blessing*, why so called, xxiv. 3.
- Curiosity* and rash judgment, its inexcusableness, xi. 1.
- Custom*, its exceeding power, vii. 14, 15.

## D.

- David*, his love to his people, xxv. 4; to his rebellion, xxiii. 4; things spoken of him in the Psalms not spoken of David's person, ib. 5; full of troubles, xxix. 7.
- Day* revealed by fire, the day of judgment, xxx. 9.
- Deacon's office* discharged by S. Paul, iii. 6; commanded silence in the churches, xxxvi. 8, note.
- Democracy*, its evils, xli. 8.
- Democritus* wasted his land out of vain-glory, xxxv. 8.
- Demons*, by what means supposed to be introduced into men, xxix. 2; why they confessed Christ, and were rebuked, ib. 3.

- Dependency* of man, its final cause, v. 3. *Escom*  
*Despair*, of improvement, never to be *Esprei*  
indulged in, iii. 9; xi. 9; S. Paul's *selve*  
example, xxii. 6; of forgiveness, *sens*  
viii. 9. *Estort*  
*"Destruction* of the flesh, that the spirit *Ezekie*  
may be saved," what, xv. 4.  
*Dice-playing*, not discouraged by the  
heathen, xii. 9.  
*Diogenes*, the Cynic, why he lived in a  
cask, xxxv. 9.  
*Dionysius*, his treatment of Plato, iv. 9. *Faith*,  
*Diogenes*, the Atheist, iv. 9. *prev*  
*Discerning the Lord's Body*, what, *men*  
xxviii. 2. *by o*  
*Discipline*, a token of love, xiv. 4. *jecti*  
*Discontent*, progress of, xxxviii. 9. *ficie*  
*end,*  
*Faith,*  
*are*  
*361.*  
*Fatah*  
*xxii*  
*Fastin*  
*ix. 1*  
*spir*  
*xxv*  
*Feast*  
*tom*  
*que*  
*Con*  
*Fellow*  
*to 1*  
*xxi*  
*Festin*  
*whc*  
*Follow*  
*Forgi*  
*of a*  
*Forni*  
*the*  
*evil*  
*sens*  
*2.*  
*Free-*  
*of s*  
*the*  
*10;*  
*stan*  
*thal*  
*3.*  
*" Fro*  
*to t*  
*Game*  
*xxi*  
*Garm*  
*drei*  
*Genti*
- E.**
- Elymas* the sorcerer, xiv. 4.  
*Emulation*, contrasted with envy, xxxi. 7.  
*Envy*, its evils, ib. examples of, ib.  
*Ephesus*, mistaken for Corinth in Acts  
18. Arg. 1.  
*Eras*, rich though unrighteous, xxix. 7;  
his carnal and cruel disposition,  
xxxiii. 8.  
*Eternal punishment*, doubted of by some,  
xxi. 9; shewn from history of the  
Israelites, xxiii. 4, 5; its fearful na-  
ture, xxiii. 8.  
*Ethiopian Eunuch*, an example of dili-  
gent reading of Holy Scripture,  
xxxvi. 9.  
*Eucharist*, in it we partake of Christ's  
Body and Blood, xxiv. 3, 7; by par-  
taking we are the Body of Christ,  
ib. 3; reverence due to Christ's Body,  
6; unworthy partakers of it waste  
Christ's Blood, xxvii. 6; the Apostles  
patterus of devotion after receiving it,  
7; drunkenness a horrible sin in those  
who have received, ib. what things  
inconsistent with a right reception, ib.  
xxviii. 1; not to be received at festi-  
vals only, ib. not to be performed in  
an unknown tongue, xxxv. 6. See  
*Lord's Supper*.  
*Euphemism* and the contrary, examples  
of them in St. Paul, ix. 6.  
*Evidences of the Gospel*, should be learned  
by Christians for the good of the  
Heathens, v. 10; made up always of  
signs from heaven, and testimonies  
from men, vi. 4; best evidence in one  
sense a good life, iii. 9. See *Propa-*  
*gation of the Gospel*.  
*Boil* not made by God, xiii. 8; encour-  
agement of it sometimes worse than  
the doing, xxi. 9.

*Gifts spiritual* of the Corinthians, reconciled with their being carnal, ii. 4; when first granted, xxix. 1; a cause of schism, ib. (comp. Rom. xii. 4); all from one source, ib. 4; gifts, operations, administrations, all the same thing, ib. from the equality of the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, 5; those that had the lesser gifts comforted, 4, 5; gifts of healing and working miracles, their difference, ib. application of the rule about gifts to rich and poor, 7; examples from the Old Testament, ib. why bestowed in various degrees, xxxii. 4; charity the greatest of all gifts, xxxiv. 1; S. Paul a pattern for the right use of, xxxv. 7; directions for using, and checks against the abuse of, xxxvi. 6.

*Gift of prophecy*, difference between it and soothsaying, xxix. 2, 3; its use voluntary, ib. how not for a sign, xxxvi. 2; compared with gift of tongues, ib. its superiority, ib. and 3; directions for the use of, 6.

*Gift of tongues*, its greatness, xxix. 5; why set last, xxxii. 1; why granted first, xxxv. 1; xxxvi. 2; compared with prophecy, but not disparaged, ib. requires an interpreter, xxxv. 4; both to be prayed for, ib. 5; gift of interpretation greatest of all, xxix. 5.

*Glass*, workers in, xvii. 3.

*Gluttony*, a slavish passion, xvii. 1; inconsistent with our being members of Christ, ib. and condemned by the doctrine of the Resurrection, 2; danger of, xxiii. 2; its effects described, especially on the female sex, xxxix. 17, 18.

*God* and Lord, applied both to the Father and the Son, xx. 6; God "all in all," what, xxxix. 11.

*Going to law*, a reproach to Christians, xvi. 4; such disputes to be settled within the Church, ib. 6; Christian privileges a reason for not taking legal proceedings, ib. 9; men led to do this by covetousness, ib. the conqueror in such matters is he who yields, ib. 10; reason from our Lord's example, 11.

*Gospel*, its precepts and doctrines unattractive, vii. 16, 17. See *Propagation*.

*Grace and peace*, how united, i. 3; Grace to whom given, 8; source of all blessings, ii. 3.

*Greek Nation*, its childishness, iv. 11.

## H.

*Hagar*, why taken by Abraham, xxxi.

7; her insulting treatment of her mistress, ib.

*Hearers*, apt to think of other men's duties, not their own, xxvi. 6; no excuse for their sins, ib.

*Heathen*, compassion for, iv. 1; how to be dealt with, ib. 11; xxxiii. 7; *heathen philosophy*, its ill effect on the Corinthians, Arg. 2; why the Apostles had it not, iii. 7; an obstacle to faith, vii. 6; not afterwards disallowed, ib. 8; its proper work, iv. 4; superseded by Faith, ib. this a predicted work of the Gospel, v. 1; vi. 1; in a certain sense a part of God's education of our race, v. 3.

*Hebrew Christians*, in a better state than the Corinthians, viii. 1.

*Helps, governments*, what, xxxii. 3.

*Hell-fire*, eternal, v. 11; ix. 1—3; this hinted in 1 Cor. 3. 15. doctrine of, how to be made use of, xi. 10. See *Eternal Punishment*.

*Hercules*, alluded to, vi. 3.

*Heresies*, what meant by the term, xxxvii. 3; must needs be, ib. do not destroy free will, ib. worse than mere schism, ib.

*Heretical Teachers*, profess to teach more than the Church, Arg. 2. 2. and note.

*High birth* of Christians, v. 4; x. 1.

*Holiness* of the first Christians a kind of sign, vi. 7; the best argument against Infidels, vii. 13; (see *Evidence, Propagation*;) glorifies God more than his visible works, xviii. 4, 6.

*Horoscope*, in use among the Heathen, iv. 11.

*Human learning* and talent a check to belief, not a disqualification for it, v. 2; *human wisdom*, its weakness, vii. 9; curbed by the Law, ib.

*Humiliation*, must prepare a man for penitence, xi. 4.

*Humility*, its tokens and blessing, i. 4; its origin, ib. 6; exalts to heaven, xl. 6.

*Husbands*, not to beat their wives, xxvi. 6; how to treat them, 8; Abraham a pattern for, 7.

## I.

*Idol sacrifices* shew contempt of God and carelessness of others' good, xxiv. 6; St. Paul's caution respecting them, xxv. 1; idol feasts a way to idolatry, xx. 1.

*Idolatry*, began from Pride, v. 4; principle of argument against it, xx. 4; held by the wiser heathen in a different sense from the vulgar, ib.



- Gifts spiritual* of the Corinthians, reconciled with their being carnal, ii. 4; when first granted, xxix. 1; a cause of schism, ib. (comp. Rom. xii. 4); all from one source, ib. 4; gifts, operations, administrations, all the same thing, ib. from the equality of the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, 5; those that had the lesser gifts comforted, 4, 5; gifts of healing and working miracles, their difference, ib. application of the rule about gifts to rich and poor, 7; examples from the Old Testament, ib. why bestowed in various degrees, xxxii. 4; charity the greatest of all gifts, xxxiv. 1; S. Paul a pattern for the right use of, xxxv. 7; directions for using, and checks against the abuse of, xxxvi. 6.
- Gift of prophecy*, difference between it and soothsaying, xxix. 2, 3; its use voluntary, ib. how not for a sign, xxxvi. 2; compared with gift of tongues, ib. its superiority, ib. and 3; directions for the use of, 6.
- Gift of tongues*, its greatness, xxix. 5; why set last, xxxii. 1; why granted first, xxxv. 1; xxxvi. 2; compared with prophecy, but not disparaged, ib. requires an interpreter, xxxv. 4; both to be prayed for, ib. 5; gift of interpretation greatest of all, xxxix. 5.
- Glass*, workers in, xvii. 3.
- Guttony*, a slavish passion, xvii. 1; inconsistent with our being members of Christ, ib. and condemned by the doctrine of the Resurrection, 2; danger of, xxiii. 2; its effects described, especially on the female sex, xxxix. 17, 18.
- God and Lord*, applied both to the Father and the Son, xx. 6; God "all in all," what, xxxix. 11.
- Going to law*, a reproach to Christians, xvi. 4; such disputes to be settled within the Church, ib. 6; Christian privileges a reason for not taking legal proceedings, ib. 9; men led to do this by covetousness, ib. the conqueror in such matters is he who yields, ib. 10; reason from our Lord's example, 11.
- Gospel*, its precepts and doctrines unattractive, vii. 16, 17. See *Propagation*.
- Grace and peace*, how united, i. 3; Grace to whom given, 8; source of all blessings, ii. 3.
- Greek Nation*, its childishness, iv. 11.
- H.
- Hagar*, why taken by Abraham, xxxi. 7; her insulting treatment of her mistress, ib.
- Hearers*, apt to think of other men's duties, not their own, xxvi. 6; no excuse for their sins, ib.
- Heathen*, compassion for, iv. 1; how to be dealt with, ib. 11; xxxiii. 7; *heathen philosophy*, its ill effect on the Corinthians, Arg. 2; why the Apostles had it not, iii. 7; an obstacle to faith, vii. 6; not afterwards disallowed, ib. 8; its proper work, iv. 4; superseded by Faith, ib. this a predicted work of the Gospel, v. 1; vi. 1; in a certain sense a part of God's education of our race, v. 3.
- Hebrew Christians*, in a better state than the Corinthians, viii. 1.
- Helps, governments*, what, xxxii. 3.
- Hell-fire*, eternal, v. 11; ix. 1—3; this hinted in 1 Cor. 3. 15. doctrine of, how to be made use of, xi. 10. See *Eternal Punishment*.
- Hercules*, alluded to, vi. 3.
- Heresies*, what meant by the term, xxxvii. 3; must needs be, ib. do not destroy free will, ib. worse than mere schism, ib.
- Heretical Teachers*, profess to teach more than the Church, Arg. 2. 2. and note.
- High birth* of Christians, v. 4; x. 1.
- Holiness* of the first Christians a kind of sign, vi. 7; the best argument against Infidels, vii. 13; (see *Evidence, Propagation*;) glorifies God more than his visible works, xviii. 4, 5.
- Horoscope*, in use among the Heathen, iv. 11.
- Human learning* and talent a check to belief, not a disqualification for it, v. 2; *human wisdom*, its weakness, vii. 9; curbed by the Law, ib.
- Humiliation*, must prepare a man for penitence, xi. 4.
- Humility*, its tokens and blessing, i. 4; its origin, ib. 6; exalts to heaven, xl. 6.
- Husbands*, not to beat their wives, xxvi. 6; how to treat them, 8; Abraham a pattern for, 7.

## I.

*Idol sacrifices* show contempt of God and carelessness of others' good, xxiv. 6; St. Paul's caution respecting them, xxv. 1; idol feasts a way to idolatry, xx. 1.

*Idolatry*, began from Pride, v. 4; principle of argument against it, xx. 4; held by the wiser heathen in a different sense from the vulgar, ib.



*Ignatius*, why called Theophorus, xviii. 3, marg. note.

*Ignorance*, the cause of many sins, vii. 5.

*Image*, which Nebuchadnezzar set up supposed to correspond to what he saw in his dream, xviii. 5, note; *of the heavenly*, what, xlii. 2.

*Immortality of the soul*, vainly taught by Plato, iv. 6.

*Incest*, its foulness, xv. 2.

*Indians*, early date of their Church, vi. 8.

*In sufficiency of man* to supply his desires, v. 3.

"*I think I have the Spirit of God*," an express claim to inspiration, xix. 4.

## J.

*Jacob*, sought not his own, xxv. 4; poor and in bondage, xxix. 7; naturally timid, 8; his charity overcame shame and mockery, xxxiii. 2.

*James*, ordained by the Lord, and made Bishop of Jerusalem, xxviii. 5.

*Jeremiah*, excused himself for not delivering his message, xxix. 2.

*Jewish* types of Christian sacraments, xxiii. 3; custom of searching for heaven, xv. 7, note.

*Jews*, pride the cause of their fall, i. 4; their conduct to the Prophets must have been a warning to the Apostles, v. 9; their punishments an earnest of ours, yet ours greater, xxiii. 4, 5; their sins types of ours, ib. 4; causes of their fall, 6; some things in their covenant not typical, but apply to Christ alone, xv. 7; their passover compared to ours, xxxiv. 3.

*Joh*, his charity to the poor, xxxiv. 10; his great patience, xvi. 10; xxviii. 4; Satan's tempting of him, ib. 5; his wife's cruelty, ib. his example to mourners, ib.

*Jonathan*, pattern of charity, xxiii. 2.

*Jonah*, sought his own profit, xxv. 4; fled from his duty, xxix. 2.

*Joseph*, a disinterested character, xxv. 4; a slave yet free, xix. 5; his mistress rather a slave, ib. 6; a pattern of charity, xxxii. 13.

*Judas*, his commission no plea for the sacrilegious and covetous, xxi. 11, 294.

*Judgment*, rash, of the Corinthians, xi. 1; of others' conduct allowable in respect of definite, but not of indefinite, duties, ib. 3; in respect of their general characters impossible, and

why, 5; false judgment of men is regard to the things of the world, xii. 8, 9.

*Justification*, by giving the Spirit, v. 4; means liberation from sin, xi. 5.

## K.

*Kingdom*, of Christ, how delivered up to the Father, xxxix. 6; twofold, ib. 11.

*Kiss of peace* used at the Holy Eucharist, xlii. 4.

*Knowledge*, is common property, xi. 1; nothing without Charity, 2; imperfect in the present state, 3; in what sense to be done away, xxxiv. 2; of God in the future state, ib. before and after the Gospel compared, ib. 3; impiety of our claiming perfect knowledge, 4; such knowledge possessed by the Spirit and the Son, ib.

## L.

*Law*, used by S. Paul for the Old Testament, xxvi. 1; *old law* contrasted with the more perfect dispensation of the Gospel, xxii. 1; xxvi. 7; *law of Moses*, mystical meaning of, xxi. 5; *law of nature*, harmonizes with God's law, xxvi. 8; *under the law, without law*, what, xxiii. 5; *law* how the strength of sin, xlii. 4.

*Liberty*, what it is, xxv. 2.

*Life*, a good, preparation for faith, viii. 3; of primitive Christians, compared with those of later times, vi. 8.

*Lord's Supper*, preparation for, xxiv. 7, and note; partakers of, one body with Christ, 8; prepares us for the next world, ib. not to partake of is famine and death, ib. to partake of unworthily dangerous, ib. a common banquet not a private meal, xxvii. 4; the remembrance of it enough to move a heart of stone, ib. 6; a sacrifice of thanksgiving, ib. 5; the presence of Christ at it the highest motive for reverence, ib. 6; xxvi. 8, and note. preceded the feast of Charity, xxvi. 1. See *Eucharist*.

*Lot*, his want of generosity and disinterestedness, xxv. 4; xxvi. 7.

*Love*, of Christ to us, xxiv. 4; of the primitive Church greater than ours, ib. love to Christ casts out all sin, xlii. 3.

*Luxury*, examples of, xxi. 10; xl. 5; how it unfits for Heaven, xlii. 5.

## M.

*Macedonian* controversy, alluded to by S. Chrysostom, xxix. 6, 405, note.  
*Magic*, the suspicion of it in miracles obviated, vi. 3; *magical verses* quoted, xxix. 2.  
*Magnanimity*, true and false, i. 5.  
*Man*, first and second, why those expressions used, xlii. 1; *men*, made to depend on each other, xxv. 5; x. 7; how superior to women, xxvi. 5.  
*Manes*, his system, vii. 8, note.  
*Marcionite* way of perverting the expression "baptized for the dead," xl. 1.  
*Marriage*, heathen ceremonies at, condemned, xii. 11, 12; *mixed*, rules for, xix. 4; reasons for continuance in, ib. *second marriages*, when unlawful, ib. 7; with kindred forbidden, ib. in order to lead us to charity, xxxiv. 6. See *Husbands and Wives*.  
*Mary* the sister of Lazarus, vi. 1;  
*Mary*, the first who saw Christ, xxxviii. 5.  
*Maranatha*, meaning of, xliv. 3; why used in this place, ib.  
*Manifestation* of the Spirit, what, xxix. 5.  
*Marcellas* of Ancyra, his heresy, xxxix. 6, note.  
*Martyrs*, compared with Socrates, iv. 7; their astonishing tortures, ib. *martyrdom*, a name appropriate to our Lord's death, vi. 1; nothing without love, xxv. 5, 347.  
*Matthew*, his immediate cure, xi. 9.  
*Materialists*, v. 4.  
*Mercy* of God no plea for our negligence, xxiii. 7; a cause why men should fear, ix. 2, 3.  
*Merchant*, portraiture of a generous one, x. 8; for the contrary, see *Commerce*.  
*Merit*, of human works altogether disclaimed, i. 1; ii. 3; this disclaimer involved in the doctrine of Baptismal Regeneration, ib.  
*Mind*, not the body, cause of sin, xvii. 5; xxxi. 2. See *Body*.  
*Miners*, their misery, xxiii. 8.  
*Ministers*, for the sake of the people, x. 4; not to grow weary of repeating plain truths, vi. 9; their unworthiness does not hinder the effect of the Sacraments, viii. 3; only stewards, and not to be puffed up by their stewardship, x. 5.  
*Miracles* visible, why they ceased, vi. 5; may be wrought by bad men, viii. 2; why inferior to prophecy and teaching, xxxii. 3.  
*Misquotation* of Scripture, danger of, xxxiv. 9.

*Mistaken* way of defending the Gospel, iii. 8, 31.  
*Moses*, with Jethro, an example of humility, i. 4; also in joining his oppressed people, ib. was stoned by the Jews, v. 9; more famous for love to others than for miracles, xxv. 4.  
*Mourners*, hired at funerals, xii. 14.  
*Mourning* not to be excessive, ib. xxviii. 4, and note; for others' sins, xv. 2; *for the dead* if excessive, against analogy, Providence, and Scriptural examples, xli. 7. See *Consolations, Bereavements*.  
*Monks*, an order of (perhaps) married, xxx. 7, note.  
*Mutilation* of the body, punished even by the Heathen, xxxi. 2.  
*Mysteries*, why the Gospel so called, vii. 2; and the Sacraments, ib. exclude human explanations, ib. how the preaching them consists with reserve, 3; how believers and unbelievers look upon them, ib. danger of making them too cheap, ib.

## N.

*Names of men*, a token of unsound doctrine, i. 1; *of apostles*, sectarian use of, iii. 3; *of Paul, Apollos, and Cephas* used by way of supposition for Teachers not named, iii. 4; *of Christ*, supersedes all human names, i. 1; why continually repeated, ii. 7; used schismatically, iii. 5; *names given to children*, ought to be those of the saints, xii. 13.  
*Narthex*, what part of the Church, xxx. 7, note.  
*Nature*, its corruption no excuse for sin, ii. 11; another name for God, xxvi. 4.  
*Necessity*, God allows men to make a virtue of it, x. 5.  
*Noah*, left in the deluge as a spark to rekindle a new race, xxxiv. 7.  
*Nocturnal processions* at marriage, condemned, xii. 11.  
*"Not I, but the Lord,"* refers to an express word of Christ, xix. 4.  
*Nurses*, their superstitious foolery, xii. 13, and note.

## O.

*O fool, that which thou sowest*, meaning of, xli. 1. and note.  
*O God my God*, force of that expression in the Prophets, ii. 11.  
*One God*, applied to the Father does not prevent the application of the expression to the Son, xx. 6.

*Obscurity of Scriptures* no reason for inattention, xxxvi. 9.

*Economy* practised by S. Paul, ii. 5, 8; of the divine Persons, a doctrine necessary to explain many parts of Holy Scripture, xxxix. 7.

*Offence*, see *Scandal*.

*Old heaven*, what, xv. 10.

*Olympus* the Sophist, xx. 5, note.

*Opposition to the truth*, sometimes an encouragement, xliii. 5.

*Orders*, distinction of in the ministry, typified in the old law, xxii. 1.

# P.

*Party spirit*, springs from the people, viii. 5.

*S. Paul*, beaten at Corinth, Arg. 1; his modesty, i. 1; praises the Corinthians for what end, ii. 4; his use of the name of Christ, ib. 7; prudence in not committing his informants, iii. 3; prefers S. Peter to himself, 4; why he did not commonly baptize, 6; bolder on coming to quotations from Scripture, iv. 4; his later grace, a crown on his improvement of the former, v. 11; military cast of his character, vi. 1; not eloquent, ib. had a strong sense of fear, vi. 2; prepares skillfully for topics to come, ix. 4; puts cases in his own and S. Peter's name, x. 4; why he declines the judgment of men, xi. 2; his skillful mode of dealing with the Corinthians, xiii. 1; his tenderness towards them, ib. 3, 4; portraiture of the apostle in his imitation of Christ, 5, 6, 7; his policy in sending Timothy, xiv. 1; like a lion to the Corinthians, 2; tempered meekness with severity, 4, and note; cites the heathen as a reproach to Christians, xv. 1; his good sense, ib. 2; his energy, 3; exercising the power of the keys, 4; his reserve in declaring pardon to the fornicator, an imitation of Christ, ib. 9; his voluntary poverty, 13; how he possessed all, 14; method of speaking incidentally on other subjects, xvi. 4; xxviii. 1; xxxviii. 3; extraordinary and unexpected turns in his arguments, xvii. 1; mode of awakening sinners, xviii. 1; xx. 1; varies his discourse as the matter required, xix. 1; his rule on mixed marriages, 4; his doctrine of liberty and slavery, ib. 5; rules concerning

virginity, 7; care of avoiding scandal, xx. 11; xxi. 1; suffered poverty to avoid it, ib. 7; his modest assertion of his right to maintenance, ib. 2; the Apostle of the world, ib. his wisdom, xxi. 5; xiii. 1, 3, 5; his moderation, and condescension to all, ib. 5; why he circumcised others, ib. avoided display, ib. 3; his conversion, an argument against fatalism, ib. 6; mode of dealing with sins, xxiii. 4, 315; xxvi. 1; his fear for himself, a warning against presumption, ib. 2; his method of convincing, xxiv. 1, 2; xxxvii. 3; his care for the common good, ib. 6; xxv. 3, 4; excelled all the old saints in charity, ib. 4; method of using common examples, xxi. 1; mode of praise and censure, xxvi. 2; appeals to high principles on ordinary topics, ib. his very presence a visitation, xxviii. 3; more to be admired for his charity than his miracles, xxxii. 14; paid rent for his house at Rome, xxxv. 9; how he overcame vain-glory, xxxv. 11; his humility, xxxviii. 6; an example to us, 7; his delicacy in speaking of others, xlv. 3, 619.

*Peace*, given by the Bishop, xxxvi. 7.

*Persecution*, not needed for our trial, xiii. 7; for Christ's sake, a token of God's favour, ib. 1.

*S. Peter*, confounded with S. Paul, vi. 1; x. 5; was crucified, 6; the Corypheus, xxi. 3; why allowed to see Christ the first after the resurrection, xxxviii. 6.

*S. Philip's* daughters, prophetesses, xxvi. 4, 356; xxxii. 1; a fulfilment of Joel's prophecy, ib.

*Philosophers*, let their hair and beard grow as a token of study, xxi. 2, note.

*Plato*, wrongly compared with S. Paul, iii. 8; persecuted by Dionysius, iv. 9, note; comparative uselessness of his speculations, ib. 6; unable to prevail against custom, vii. 15; his testimony respecting soothsayers, xxix. 2.

*Plenary* effusion of the Spirit in Baptism, vii. 3, 79.

*Pleasure*, of virtue and vice compared, xxii. 7, 8; of this world shortlived, xxx. 7; of beholding God in his works, xxiii. 7; of covetousness a poor one, ib. 8; of charity, xxxii. 12; of a right use of riches, xxxiv. 10; present pleasure of chastity more than uncleanness, xxxvii. 6; of gluttony only momentary, xxxix. 17. See *Luxury*, *Virtue*, *Vice*.

- Poor*, not to be despised, xx. 11; to be entertained, ib. 12; where placed in the Church to receive alms, xxx. 7, note; intercessors for the rich, ib. tokens of this world's frailty, ib. indignities offered to them, done against the Church, xxvii. 4, 375.
- Poverty*, brings with it a kind of asceticism, v. 11; when voluntary, rewarded in this life, xiii. 8; sought by S. Peter and S. Paul, xv. 13; true riches, ib. 14; excessive dread of, makes us poor, xxx. 8.
- Porphyry*, a witness to the Scriptures, vi. 6; his remarks on magical verses, xxix. 2, note.
- Portraiture of S. Paul* in his imitation of Christ, xlii. 5, 6, 7.
- Preaching*, compared with Baptism, iii. 6.
- Prepositions* implying agency, (*ὑπὸ*, &c.) why used in speaking of God the Father, ii. 8.
- Prayer* in an unknown tongue inexpedient, xxxv. 6; *for the dead* why used, xli. 8; inconsistent with Purgatory, ib. note; in all the Ancient Liturgies, ib. offered up at the time of the Eucharist, ib.
- Pride, of knowledge*, its danger, xxlii. 5; *of life*, to be trodden under foot, xxiv. 8, 336.
- Profit*, our own how to be sought, xxv. 5; xxxiii. 3; *our neighbour's*, the canon of Christianity, xxv. 3; no high virtue without this, ib. 3; how men made by Providence to seek it, 5; xxxiii. 3; xxxiv. 7; examples of those who sought their own, but found it not, xxv. 4; and of those who sought others' and found their own, ib. excuses for selfishness answered, 5; even Martyrdom nothing without it, 4, 5.
- Prophecy*, fulfilled, a kind of miracle, vi. 6; double sense of, vii. 6, 83. See *Gifts of Prophecy*.
- Propagation of the Gospel*, a kind of sign, vi. 7; why now at a stand, 8; why attended with miracles, 4; why effected by the unlearned, v. 2; ib. 3; against the tyranny of ancient custom, vii. 14, 15; proof of the divine nature of the Gospel, iv. 8; ib. 10; v. 5; vii. 14—19; of the power of the cross, iv. 6. See *Evidence*.
- Punishments*, human, their analogy with the threats of Scripture, ix. 2, 3; Apostolical and miraculous, xiv. 4. See *Eternal, Hell fire*.
- Pythian Priestess*, her madness, xxix. 2.
- R.
- Rationalizing*, a source of early heresy, Arg. 2; foolishness of it in things human and divine, iv. 2; compared to a smith using the tongs with his hand, v. 2; exemplified in Adam, 3; excludes stability of doctrine, 4; compared to a pilot without a ship, vii. 1.
- Reading the Scriptures* in public a motive to reverence, xxxvi. 8, note.
- Reasoning* from analogy, proper for infidels, xli. 1.
- Rebecca*, her charity to Jacob, xxxlii. 2, note; her conduct why vindicated by the Fathers generally, ib.
- Repentance*, tokens of, viii. 8; produced by severe censure, xi. 4; never too late in this world, not to be obtained in the next, xxlii. 7. See *Crimes*.
- Regeneration*, in baptism, xxx. 2.
- Reserve* necessary in teaching, vii. 2; how consistent with full preaching, 3; S. Paul's practice of in declaring pardon to the incestuous person, xv. 9; necessary in speaking of the Sacraments, xl. 2.
- Reproof*, of a brother how to be practised, xlii. 5; example of, ib.
- Resurrection*, a work ascribed both to the Father and the Son, xvii. 2; its credibility proved by analogies from nature and art, 3; objections of rationalists not to be listened to, ib. an evil conscience the ground of men's unbelief of, ib. creation a type of, ib. its importance as a doctrine of Christianity, xxxviii. 1; two opposite errors concerning it, ib. design of Satan in attacking it, ib. course of S. Paul's argument for it, ib. 2, 3; Manichean notion of, confuted, ib. 3, 5; xxxix. 4, and note; *reality of Christ's resurrection*, proved by his death, 3; and his burial, 4; and by eye-witnesses, 5; five-fold proof of it, 2; mutual relation between Christ's and our own, 2, 3; implied in the hope of salvation, 4; and in Christ's final triumph, 12; in our baptism, xl. 2, 3; and in the Apostle's sufferings, ib. 3; and in our death, xli. 2; how far the same body raised, ib. 3; heretical objection to the identity of the body refuted, ib. the doctrine does not hinder degrees of glory, ib. 4; how far the body changed, xlii. 3; our deliverance from sin and the law proves the doctrine, ib.
- Restitution*, required by the Heathen, xv. 11; if neglected, visited on pos-



- terity, *ib.* Zaccheus a notable example of, *ib.* certain in the last day, *ib.*
- Reverence*, more paid to men than God, xii. 7; xxxvi. 8. See *Church*.
- Reward*, not to be impatiently expected, xliii. 6; increased by our sufferings, *ib.*
- Rhetorical skill*, its worthlessness, xiv. 3.
- Riches*, abused make men poor, xlii. 8. not evil in themselves, *ib.* the evils which accompany them, befall men living and dead, xxxv. 12, 13; those that thirst after them like dreamers, xxxvi. 10; the unreasonableness of this passion, xxxvii. 4; in what sense from God, in what not, xxix. 7; xxxiv. 9, 10; grow by distribution, xl. 5; manna a warning against hoarding them, *ib.* See *Covetousness*, *Wealth*.
- Rich men*, their contempt of the poor, xxvii. 1; their misery, xxix. 8; ignorant of the perishable nature of their riches, 9; need the poor as much as the poor need them, xxxiv. 8. See *Poor*.
- "Rock that followed them," xxiii. 3.
- Romans*, ix. 5. applied to Christ, xx. 6.
- Rulers* of this world, whom S. Paul calls such, vii. 1.
- S.
- Sabellianism*, S. Chrysostom's caution against it, v. 4.
- Saints*, how they will judge the world, xvi. 13; intercession of no avail for unholy persons, xlii. 5.
- Sanctification*, baptismal, i. 1.
- Sanctuaries*, of heaven, ἀψίδος, what, xxiv. 7, note.
- Sapphira*, xiv. 4.
- Sarah* a pattern for wives, xxvi. 7; her advice to Abraham to take Hagar then allowable, not so now, *ib.*
- Saul*, his reproaches of Jonathan meekly borne, xxxiii. 2.
- "*Saved by fire*," what, ix. 5, 6.
- Scandal*, how given, xxi. 9, 10; sin of giving it, *ib.* St. Paul's care to avoid, *ib.* 1, 2.
- Schism*, its formal nature, iii. 1; may originate in mind or in judgment, *ib.* 2; Corinthians guilty of it, xxvii. 2.
- Schismatical teachers*, their rapacious and mercenary spirit, xxi. 6.
- Scylla*, a heathen image of sin, ix. 9.
- Seal* of the cross in Baptism, xii. 14, and note.
- Self-love*, if true, leads to the same conduct as charity, xxxiii. 3.
- Separation*, without mutual consent unlawful, xix. 3.
- Servants*, our care of their souls, xii. 12.
- Sexes*, their relation a bond of charity, xxxiv. 6.
- Sign* of the cross, xxi. 2.
- Simon Magnus*, an instance of vain-glory, xxxv. 8.
- Sin*, makes men in some respect worse than the devils, ix. 10; its effect in blinding the soul, xi. 4; *original*, destroyed in baptism, xxxix. 12; some punished in this world, some in the next, xxviii. 2; best checked in its beginning, xi. 8; danger of little sins, viii. 9.
- Slavery*, not degrading to a good man, xix. 5; what kind is degrading, *ib.* not possible for a good man to be a slave, *ib.* 6.
- Slander*, a common evil, xlv. 6; hurts the slanderer more than the slandered, *ib.* its three-fold evil, *ib.* 7; when we forgive it, a proof of our innocence, *ib.*
- Smatterers*, harder to learn than the simply ignorant, v. 2.
- Socrates*, whether his death was voluntary, iv. 7; compared with martyrs, *ib.* considered an innovator, vii. 15; and Xantippe, xxvi. 8, 367.
- Sodom*, a witness to future punishments, ix. 3.
- Soldiers*, irreligious, reproved by the case of Cornelius, v. 11.
- Sosthenes*, inferior to Apollos, i. 1.
- Solomon*, enjoyed peace and plenty, xxix. 7.
- The Son*, how said to be subject to the Father, xxxix. 9, 10; his authority equal to the Father's, *ib.*
- Sorrow*, excessive, sinfulness of, xxxviii. 8. See *Mourning*.
- The Spirit*, how He dwells within us, xviii. 3; of Christ, dwells within us, *ib.* illustrated by example of a king's son, *ib.* why sometimes not named, xx. 7; xxxix. 11; equal to the Father and the Son, xxix. 6; his personality, and divinity, *ib.* given to all baptized persons, xxx. 2; possesses all knowledge, xxxiv. 3; *spirit, soul, and body*, how distinguished, xli. 6, and note.
- Spiritual things* compared with spiritual, vii. 8; *spiritual man* judges others, yet is not judged of them, *ib.* 11; *spiritual body*, Spirit always present in, xli. 4.
- Statues*, of Theodosius overthrown at Antioch, xviii. 6, note.
- Stephanas*, his household, their praise, xlv. 3; with Fortunatus and Achaicus

the persons who brought the account of the Corinthian Church to S. Paul, *ib.*  
*Stewardship*, the thought of it, a lesson of humility and resignation, x. 5; *ib.* 6; and that nothing is exclusively our own, *ib.* 7.  
*Suffering* for Christ a present reward, *xl.* 3.  
*Subintroducæ*, what, *xliv.* 5, note.  
*Superstition*, men's tendency to, *xii.* 14.

T.

*Temptations*, not to be endured without God's help, *xxiv.* 1.  
*That, Ise*, not always indicative of the cause, but simply of the event, *xxvii.* 3.  
*Thanksgiving*, disclaims merit, *ii.* 1; always due, *ib.*  
*Theodorus*, the atheist, *iv.* 9.  
*Theodoret*, (on 1 Cor. xv. 49.) *xliv.* 2.  
*Theudas*, a discouragement to the Apostles, *v.* 5.  
*Theology*, a matter of testimony throughout, *vi.* 4.  
*Theatrical entertainments*, their infamous character, *xii.* 10.  
*S. Thomas* forced to go into Judæa, *v.* 7.  
*Three children in the fire*, *iv.* 3.  
*Timidity*, no reproach to any one, *xxliii.* 8.  
*S. Timothy*, S. Paul's commission to him, *xiv.* 1; a courageous and faithful character, *xliv.* 1.  
*Tradition* of the Church, excludes human inventions, *vi.* 4; supplies us with information not to be obtained from the letter of Scripture, *vii.* 6, and note.  
*Treasury* of the Church, what, *xliv.* 2, note.  
*Trinity*, three Persons in, coequal, *xxix.* 4.

U. V.

*Unbelief* caused by the bad lives of Christians, *iii.* 9; compared with insanity in its treatment of those who would remedy it, *iv.* 1.  
*Uncleanliness*, eminently a profane vice, *ix.* 7; its misery, *xxxvii.* 5; compared with chastity, *ib.*  
*Unity* of the Church implied in its name, *i.* 1, 5, 6; *xxx.* 2; depending on communion with Christ, *i.* 2; *viii.* 7; *of the Spirit*, what, *xxx.* 2;

of the members forbids envy, 3; reason for contentment, *ib.* 4; taught by the beauty of proportion, 6; applied to various classes in the Church, *ib.* *of the members of the body*, *xxxi.* 2, 3; an example to the greater to care for the less, *ib.* 4; summary of the argument derived from the body, *xxxii.* 4.  
*Unleavened bread*, its typical meaning, *xv.* 7.  
*Until*, spoken of God, does not signify that his kingdom shall come to an end, *xxxix.* 8.  
*Unworthiness* of Ministers no bar to the grace of the Sacraments, *viii.* 2.  
*"Use it rather,"* spoken of continuance in slavery, *xix.* 5.  
*Utterance*, a special grace, *ii.* 3.  
*Vain-glory*, on behalf of others, *xii.* 2; on account of gifts, compared to proud flesh, *ib.* reproved on the ground that all is of grace, *ib.* 3; and by an argument ad verecundiam, *ib.* 4; its manifold evils, *xxxv.* 8, 9; a remedy for it, *ib.* 10; examples of victory over it, *ib.*  
*Vice and virtue*, the difference between them not subjective, *xiv.* 7; virtue in what sense easier than vice, *xiv.* 6, 7; *xxii.* 7; (see *Pleasure*;) vice, its misery, illustrated by an anecdote of a corn-dealer at Antioch, *xxxix.* 13.  
*Virgins*, choir of, *xxx.* 7.  
*Virginity*, commonly within men's power, *ix.* 3; a higher state than marriage in all, *xix.* 1; *ib.* 3; *ib.* 7; yet not compulsory on any, *ib.* 3; if once chosen solemnly, should not be given up, *ib.* 7; why a higher state, *ib.* Chrysostom's treatise on, referred to, *ib.* differs from continence, the last absolutely necessary to salvation, *ib.* 259.

W.

*"Weakness,"* means persecution, *vii.* 2.  
*Wealth*, its tendency in respect of Faith, *v.* 3; with what palliations the love of it may be abated, *xi.* 10. See *Riches*.  
*"Wheresoever the carcass is,"* explained, *xxiv.* 7.  
*Widows*, assemblies of, *xxx.* 7; *widow's mite* an encouragement to those who can do but a little good in the way of conversion, *iii.* 9.  
*Will* of God, reason for contentment, *xxx.* 4.

*Wives*, led to immodesty by bad customs, xii. 11; exhorted to obedience, xxvi. 6; by example of Sarah, ib. 7; not to be beaten, ib. not compelled by Heathen legislators to live with such husbands, ib. 8; bad wives how to be treated, ib. suitable wife to be chosen, ib. good wife better than house and lands, ib. conjugal peace a help in spiritual things, ib. an earnest of eternal peace, 368.

*Wisdom*, without goodness its utter degradation, ix. 8; how to be gained by becoming a fool, x. 2.

*Word* of wisdom and of knowledge, what, xxix. 5.

*Works*, good or bad, the Christian's building, ix. 4.

*Woman*, why subject to the man, xxvi. 8; before the fall not subject, ib.

why she ought to be covered, ib. women prophesied in 8. Paul's time, ib. dishonoured by taking the man's honour, 4; those who wear short hair all one as if uncovered, ib. custom of wearing short hair abolished, ib. 5, 361; why they should not teach in public, xxxvii. 1.

*Wrong doers*, the real sufferers, xvi. 11; they who suffer wrong under God's discipline, ib.

"*With thy spirit*," a liturgical response, xxxvi. 7, and note.

## Z.

*Zaccheus* had an appointed time for repentance, xxxiv. 10. See *Restitution*.

## INDEX OF GREEK WORDS.

## A

ἀγαπητοί μου om. xlii. 5.  
ἀγαπημένοι note, iii. 8.  
ἀγαπᾷ ἀγαπητοί rec. text, xxiv. 2.  
ἡδιστότερον xxix. 11.  
Ἄδης xxxviii. 4.  
αἰνίσματα (Is) vii. 9. xxxiv. 2.  
αἰσθητὸν (τάλημον) iv. 10.  
αἶνον xxi. 3.  
αἰῶνας (σὺν τῷ) vii. 4.  
αἰῶνται, rec. text ἡσώσεται vii. 2.  
ἀπαρχή τοῦ κινήτου xxxviii. 2.  
ἄλλοτε, rec. text ἄλλοτε viii. 4.  
ἀπὸ μέλους xxvi. 6.  
ἀναμνησται vii. 11.  
ἀναλόγως iv. 4.  
ἀπομαχλασθέντες iv. 7.  
ἀπομαχλασθέντες iv. 7.  
ἀπομαχλασθέντες vi. 6.  
ἀπὸ γὰρ xx. 12.  
ἀπὸ xiii. 6. xxiii. 7.  
ἀπὸ γὰρ, rec. text ἀπὸ γὰρ x. 3, 4.  
xxiv. 1.  
ἀπὸ γὰρ Sept. ix. 10.  
σὺν ἀπὸ γὰρ σου not in rec. text, xvi. 8.  
ἀπαρχή xxi. 2.  
ἀπὸ γὰρ vii. 18. xii. 1.  
ἀπὸ γὰρ βλαβήτων ὅδε xxix. 10.  
ἀπὸ γὰρ xxi. 11.  
ἀπὸ γὰρ xlv. 5.  
ἀπὸ γὰρ ii. 6.  
ἀπὸ γὰρ xlv. 5.  
ἀπὸ γὰρ ii. 8.  
ἀπὸ γὰρ xxix. 5.  
ἀπὸ γὰρ x. 2.  
ἀπὸ γὰρ ἐν γὰρ χρίστῳ xvii. 3.  
ἀπὸ γὰρ om. in rec. text, xviii. 3.  
ἀπὸ γὰρ διὰ τὸν x. 1.  
ἀπὸ γὰρ om. in rec. text, Arg. 1.  
ἀπὸ γὰρ Sav. ἀπὸ γὰρ Bened. xxxii. 1. = ἀπὸ γὰρ  
xxxix. 9.  
ἀρχαίως x. 4.  
ἀρχαίως ἐν ἀπὸ γὰρ xlii. 7.  
ἀρχαίως xii. 6.  
ἀρχαίως xxxix. 10. xviii. 6.  
ἀρχαίως xii. 10.  
ἀρχαίως vii. 9.  
ἀρχαίως (κατὰ) iii. 4.  
ἀρχαίως Sav. in margin. ἀπὸ γὰρ Bened.  
xxix. 3.  
ἀρχαίως Reg. ἀπὸ γὰρ Bened. xxiv. 7.  
ἀρχαίως ii. 8.  
ἀρχαίως xiv. 6. note.

**B.**

βαπτίζεσθαι viii. 8. xii. 11.  
βδιδύγματα xxvi. 5.  
βδιδύσσομαι i. 4.  
βιάζεσθαι χρόνῳ vi. 6.  
βλαπίει xxiv. 7.  
βλίπτει note, v. 1.

**F.**

γαζοφυλακίον note, xliii. 2.  
 γένειον λατοῦς λατουχῆσσι iv. 11.  
 γέννηται ix. 8. Sav. xxv. 3.  
 γομφῇ λατοῦς τῇ κεφαλῇ βαβ. xxviii. 2.  
 γοναποταχίς xxxiii. 2.

**Δ.**

διδάσκοντες = διδάσκοντες xi. 5.  
 διουήτης iii. 8.  
 διμήλια φοτε, διμήλια xii. 7.  
 διαβαστάζοντες iv. 11.  
 διαποσίν iii. 6.  
 διακρίους κατενόηθη δηλόν viii. 5.  
 διαμαρτόρηαι ix. 1.  
 διασίει xxxv. 5.  
 διασυνάμα ix. 1.  
 διασφαρ Sav xxix. 5.  
 διαφρασι πωλύτην γῆν xxi. 5.  
 διαχίτων iii. 2.  
 διακρίους xi. 4.  
 διαίοντες xxxiv. 5.  
 διαμαρτόρηαι, διαμαρτόρηαι rec. text, xxix. 9.  
 δέρεφ (is δ. μάλλον εις) note, xviii. 5.  
 δούρατος (δ' αλ' ε' καλ) xix. 5.

**R.**

ἡγάγμενος xxiv. 2.  
 ἰδοὺ xii. 11.  
 ἰδούσῃσι xxiii. 5.  
 ἰδοὺ ἔτι not in Sept. viii. 8.  
 ἰδιωλαίους conj. Sav. for ἰδιώλους, note,  
 xvn. 1.  
 ἰσπῶν conj. ἰσπῶν xxi. 1.  
 οἱς οὐκός 1. e. οἱς οὐκός xlii. 4.  
 οἱς 7. ἰφ' φ xxx. 2.  
 οἱς σάρεκα μέλου xxviii. 5.



είσπραχθῆναι x. 5.  
 ἑλδους xv. 3.  
 ἑλπίς γὰρ αὐτῷ ἵστί λωπὸν xxxiii. 3.  
 ἑκαπαίδριον note vi. 2.  
 ἑκαλογία i. 1.  
 ἑκαρματισμένους note vii. 2. ἑκαρματισμαί  
 xi. 5.

ἑκαρματισμένους xi. 5.  
 ἑλέγχων vii. 11. xxxvi. 2.  
 ἑλυσταίον xxi. 2.  
 ἑμβάς note i. 5.  
 ἑμφανίζω eis ἑσθρας x. 8.  
 ἐν δέντροις καὶ πύργοις xxxvi. 2.  
 ἐν πολλῇ περιστάσει note xli. 9.  
 ἐν πρώτοις xxxviii. 2.  
 ἐν τῷ φαρμακείῳ xxxvii. 4.  
 ἐν ἑμῶν not in S. Chrys. x. 1.  
 ἐν ᾧ for δι' εὐ ii. 3.  
 ἑκατα v. 5.  
 ἑκατόν xxix. 6. ib.  
 ἑκατόν vii. 17.  
 ἑκατομμύριον βήματα xii. 4.  
 ἑκατόν xii. 3.

ἐξ δὲ μάλιστα τὰ στίγματα τῆς ἀναστά-  
 σης συντίθενται xlv. 4.

ἑκταχθῆναι xxxvii. 6.  
 ἑκταστῶν xxxvi. 3.  
 ἑκταχθῆναι v. 4. xii. 10. xxxix. 17.  
 οὗτοι ἑκατὶ ἑκαταστάσεις Arg. 2.  
 ἐπ' αἵματος xxvii. 7.  
 ἐπ' ἑκατόν xxx. 6.  
 ἑκατολὼν xxi. 4.  
 ἑκατόν xxxviii. 5.  
 ἑκατόν xxi. 3.  
 ἑκατόν xxi. 6.  
 ἑκατόν vi. 4.  
 ἑκατόν Ms. Reg. ἑκατόν Edd.  
 xii. 5.

ἑκατόν xxxvi. 3.  
 ἑκατόν xxi. 4.  
 ἑκατόν (δι') xxxiv. 2.  
 ἑκατόν conj. San ἑκατόν Bened. xxxviii. 7.  
 ἐκείνους ἐφ' ὧν ἑκατόν iii. 1.  
 ἐκείνους xxxix. 17.  
 ἐκείνους rec. text, xix. 2.  
 ἐκείνους ἐκείνους xxxviii. 6.  
 ἐκείνους xxxvii. 5.  
 ἐκείνους xxxviii. 2.

Z.

ζάλην τὴν ταύτην xxvii. 7.  
 ζήλοισι xxxviii. 3.

H.

ἡ ἑκατομύρια om. xxxv. 8.  
 ἡ xii. 14.  
 ἡ ἐκείνη xxxviii. 1.  
 ἡ καὶ ἡ xxi. 3.

ἡμίς xi. 2.  
 ἡ τοῦ δέου for ἡ τοῦ δέου xi. 10.  
 ἡμίς xvi. 10.

Θ.

ἡμισυὶς xii. 9.  
 ἡμισυὶς μέγα πάθος xii. 7.  
 ἡμισυὶς (ἡ γὰρ) (ἀλλ' ἔτι ἡ rec. text.)  
 xxiv. 5.

I.

ἡμισυὶς αὐτὸν Sept. viii. 8.  
 ἡμισυὶς vi. 4. iii. 8. note xxxv. 6.  
 ἡμισυὶς om. in rec. text, xiv. 1.  
 ἡμισυὶς v. 8.  
 ἡμισυὶς, ἡμισυὶς τὴν ἡμίς viii. 8.  
 ἡμισυὶς xxi. 3.  
 ἡμισυὶς Bened. xix. 4.  
 ἡμισυὶς xxxvi. 5.

K.

καὶ ἡμισυὶς xxxvi. 5.  
 καὶ ἡμισυὶς Χριστοῦ xiii. 5.  
 καὶ om. in rec. text, xiv. 1.  
 καὶ Πατρὶς om. in rec. text, xx. 7.  
 καὶ note, xxxiii. 4.  
 οὐδὲ γὰρ καλύπτεται ἀλλὰ κατακαλύ-  
 πτεται xxi. 4.  
 καμίνου (ἐν τῇ) xvi. 5.  
 καμινάριον viii. 8.  
 κατακαλύπτεται xxxvii. 2.  
 κατακαλύπτεται, rec. text, καμινάριον xxxviii. 3.  
 κατακαλύπτεται xiv. 8. ib.  
 κατακαλύπτεται xxi. 2.  
 καμινάριον ἀνταρματισμένων xxxiii. 2.  
 καμινάριον rec. text, viii. 5.  
 καμινάριον ἀνταρματισμένων vii. 16.

Λ.

λαβὰς Reg. βλαβὰς Bened. iv. 10.  
 λαβὰς xxxv. 7.  
 λαβὰς xxi. 2.  
 λαβὰς xlii. 4.  
 λαβὰς vii. 1.  
 λαβὰς inserted xv. 1.  
 λαβὰς conj. λαβὰς xii. 12.

M.

μακαρίαις note, xii. 10.  
 μακαρίαις καὶ φαρμακείοις xlii. 2.  
 μακαρίαις Bened. xxxviii. 6.  
 μακαρίαις note, iv. 1.  
 μακαρίαις xxxviii. 1.

μεθύνων Reg. Mss. xiv. 6.  
μερίζεται τι προς σε xk. 12. μερίζεσθαι  
πρὸς τὸν Θεόν ἐξ ἰλαττοῦ μοίρας  
xliii. 7.

μερίμνης xliii. 5.  
μετάνοις eis om. xxiii. 5.  
μετάνοις (ις) ἀφῆσι xxvii. 3.  
μετρίᾳ xliii. 7.  
μηδὲν δύναν Reg. Mss. μὴ δύναντο Bened.  
iv. 6.

Μήλιος note, iv. 9.  
μικροψυχίας xix. 4. μικροψυχουῦντα xvi. 4.  
μόνον note, xxxi. 2.  
μυσταγωγῶν viii. 2. μυσταγωγίαν xxvii. 5.  
μυστήρια (διὰ τῶν βημάτων) (διὰ τῶν ἔργων)  
vii. 13.

## N.

ναρεῶν ix. 1. vii. 16.  
νῦν om. in rec. text, vi. 5.

## Ξ.

ξίτη καὶ πικρὴν xiv. 9.

## O.

ὁ ἱμοὶ λαλῶν xxxv. 3.  
οἰκίαι for οἰκίαι xi. 10.  
οἰκίαις xx. 5. xxxix. 11.  
οἰκίαν xxiii. 8.  
οἰκονομία vii. 18.  
οἰκονομηθῇ conj. for οἰκονομηθῇ note, xxv. 2.  
οἰκονομίας ii. 5. iii. 6.  
οἰκονομία xiv. 1. vii. 6. xii. 1. ἀρίστη xi.  
2. xiv. 1.

ὀνόμασι τοῖς τοῖς φύσιν xlii. 4.  
ὄρα Reg. 16η Bened. iv. 9.  
ὀρθαντες διανοίας xiv. 6.  
ὀρθάν xiv. 6.

οὐ βίλοντες Sav. conj. for οὐκ ὀφείλοντες  
xxxiv. 2.

οὐδὲς Sept. οὐδὲν xxxii. 13.  
οὐδὲν ἑμαυτῇ εὐνοῖα xxxix. 5.  
οὐκ ἔτι τῇ ἰγνοῦσθαι μένει δύναι conj. note,  
xxi. 7.  
οὐσιώσις v. 4.  
οὕτως Mss. Reg. οὕτως rec. text, xiv. 2.

## Π.

παγκρατίου xxiii. 2. παγκρατίστην xxx. 8.  
παθημάτων Sav. xxviii. 6.  
πανηγυρίζοντες xxxv. 1.  
πάντες Sav. πάντες Bened. xii. 10. om.  
xxiii. 3.

παρεβύτη (iv) xxxix. 1.  
παρεβύσεις xxvi. 1, 2.

παρεζηλούμεν xxiv. 6. ib.  
παρεμβιβλημένος ἢ πρὸς κινδύνου xlii. 1.  
πεινάσει conj. xlii. 7.  
πῶσαι Reg. xix. 4.  
περὶ αὐτῆς τοῦ πρὸς γάμου οἰκονομίας vii. 6.  
περίδουτος xxviii. 4.  
περίοντος (iv τοῦ πολλοῦ) v. 3.  
περιουσία φιλοσοφίας ii. 9. πολλὰ ἀληθείας  
iv. 10. xxi. 1. μισθὸς xlii. 5. πολλὰ  
πύχνηται xxxix. 10.

πλῆξαι xlii. 2.  
πληρωτὴν viii. 5.  
πῶς πρὸς τοὺς xl. 1. πῶς ἡ ἀλήθεια,  
ἐπίσης rec. text, xv. 6.  
πῶς αἰσθητὸν iv. 10.

πολλὰ χεῖρα. πολλῶν Bened. xiv. 5.  
πολὺς ὁ ἔχλος xli. 8.  
πολὺ μέγα xlii. 5. πλεῖστον xlii. 3.  
πορεύεται rec. text, xxvi. 5.  
τοῦ τὸ πρὸς γάμου κατὰ γένος viii. 5.  
πρωματῶν xlii. 5.  
πρὶν ἢ διαβῆναι xxxix. 8.  
προκαταρτῶνται xxi. 6.  
πρόσωπον xxxv. 8.  
προσηγουμένως οὐ τοῦτο εἶσι xvi. 6.  
προσηγουμένως xxxiv. 10. πολλὰ xlii. 4.  
προσηγουμένως viii. 2. note, xxvii. 7.  
προσηγουμένως xvi. 10.  
προσηγουμένως ii. 8.  
προσηγουμένως, προσηγουμένως note, xxxiii. 1.  
πρὸς ὁμῶς xlii. 1.  
πρὸς τὴν σφάραγδα τὴν λίαν ἔργον xxxv. 6.  
προσηγουμένως xxxix. 1.  
προσηγουμένως v. 2.  
προσηγουμένως εἶσι xxxii. 3.

## P.

ρήματα καταπονευμένου xlii. 7.  
ρήματος xl. 2.

## Σ.

σιῶν iv. 11.  
σιῶματα note, ii. 10. μίσηται xli. 7.  
σπαταλῶν xxxix. 17.  
σταυρὸν προσκυνεῖν xli. 14.  
στρίψας ἑαυτὸν καὶ πάντων viii. 1.  
οὐ δ' ἑστῆς xli. 1.  
συγγνωμὴν xli. 8.  
συγκατάβασιν iii. 5. xli. 1.  
σύμβολα xli. 13.  
συνάξις xxvii. 1.  
συνδράμην. (κατὰ) vi. 5. xli. 2. ib.  
συνεπρόκειτο xiv. 1.  
συνεπιστάμενος xl. 2.  
συνέχων xxxix. 18.  
συνήγορος τὴν ἀπὸ τῶν ἔργων xlii. 5.  
σφραγίζω τὸ μίτωπον τῇ χερὶ παυδιόντι  
xli. 14. xli. 2.

σφραγίς note, xii. 14.  
σφραγῶντα i. 5.  
σφραγισμένα xiv. 2.  
σώτης xli. 9.

ὑποτιμαίνεις ἀπὸ τοῦτο xxi. 3.  
ὠκυπέδοντος xli. 5.

Φ.

Τ.

τὰ τελεόμην viii. 2.  
τὰ τῆς κακοτηρίας ἔσονται τῆς παρὰ φύσιν  
note, xxi. 5.  
τεταπεινωμένοι i. 3.  
τεταπεινωμένην xxi. 5.  
τηλέμην xli. 5.  
τὸν ἀπὸ τοῦ φέρει xli. 3.  
τῆς λαοῦ. τὰς λαοῦ note, xii. 11.  
τῆς πεινῆς iv. 7.  
τὸ ψυχρὸν ἢ ζεῖον. τὸν ψυχρὸν note, xli. 5.  
τὸν for τὸν viii. 7.  
τιμῆ (καὶ) om. xv. 1. xix. 2.  
τιμολογῶν xxi. 13.  
τὸν λόγον ἐπαγγελισμένην ἄρτι xxi. 1.  
τὸ εἰσὶν ὅτι xxi. 5.  
τὸ ἀλλὰ 8. Chry. τὸ ἴσον rec. text,  
xvi. 4.  
τὸ cony. for τὸ xi. 2.  
τὸ Θιὸ om. xxi. 6.  
τὸ σώματος παρὰ μέρος παραμένει iv. 7.  
τὸ Χριστοῦ om. xxi. 3.  
τὸν ἀπὸ Sav. τὸν ἀπὸ Bened. v. 4.  
τὸν rec. text, xxi. 5.  
τρίστοι καὶ τριπλῶν xxi. 7.  
τρίστοις τὸ τριπλῶν xxi. 16.  
τὸν ἄρτι xxi. 4. rec. text, xxi. 5.  
τρίστοις ib.

φύει x. 4.  
φύει x. 11. iv. 11. vi. 6, 7. ἄρτι v. 8.  
φύει x. 9. v. 1. φύει xxi. 6.  
φύει x. 2. φύει x. 4. 6. vii.  
19. φύει xxi. 14.  
φύει x. 3. xxi. 2.  
φύει. φύει note, xli. 2.  
φύει x. 8. Sav. for φύει.  
φύει (τὸ διαβίον πάλιν) xxi. 11.  
φύει xxi. 7.  
φύει xli. 5.  
φύει note, iv. 9.

Χ.

χαίρει xv. 6.  
χαλὰ τὸν σῶν, ἀλλὰ λῆγον xxi. 4.  
χαλὰ τὸν note, xxi. 9.  
χαλὰ xxi. 4.  
χαλὰ xxi. 2.  
χαλὰ xxi. 8.  
χαλὰ iv. 4.  
χαλὰ vii. 2.  
χαλὰ xxi. 4.  
χαλὰ Δγ. 2.

Ψ.

ψυχαίους xxi. 2.  
ψυχαίους xxi. 2.  
ψυχαίους xxi. 8.  
ψυχαίους xli. 5.

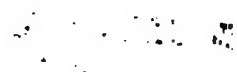
Ω.

ὡς ἐν τῇ σώματι ἵται ἐν xxi. 3.

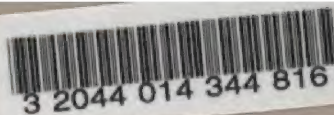
Τ.

ὡκυπέδοντος xxi. 9.  
ὡκυπέδοντος xxi. 3.  
ὡκυπέδοντος for ὡκυπέδοντος iii. 8.  
ὡκυπέδοντος, ὡκυπέδοντος rec. text, xxi. 7.  
ὡκυπέδοντος viii. 5.  
ὡκυπέδοντος x. 6. τὰς συλλέγειν xxi. 4.

FINIS.







THE BORROWER WILL BE CHARGED  
AN OVERDUE FEE IF THIS BOOK IS  
NOT RETURNED TO THE LIBRARY  
ON OR BEFORE THE LAST DATE  
STAMPED BELOW. NON-RECEIPT OF  
OVERDUE NOTICES DOES NOT  
EXEMPT THE BORROWER FROM  
OVERDUE FEES.

WIDENER  
BOOK DUE  
**CANCELLED**  
JUN 13 1988  
JUN 20 1988  
2695753

**CANCELLED**  
WIDENER  
FEB 10 1992  
FEB 7 1992  
BOOK DUE  
WIDENER  
**CANCELLED**  
MAR 2 1992

